# GOODMAN

— A —

# FAMILY HISTORY

CS 71
G654
1916
fol.
c.2
***

*The Author has the honor of*

*presenting this volume*

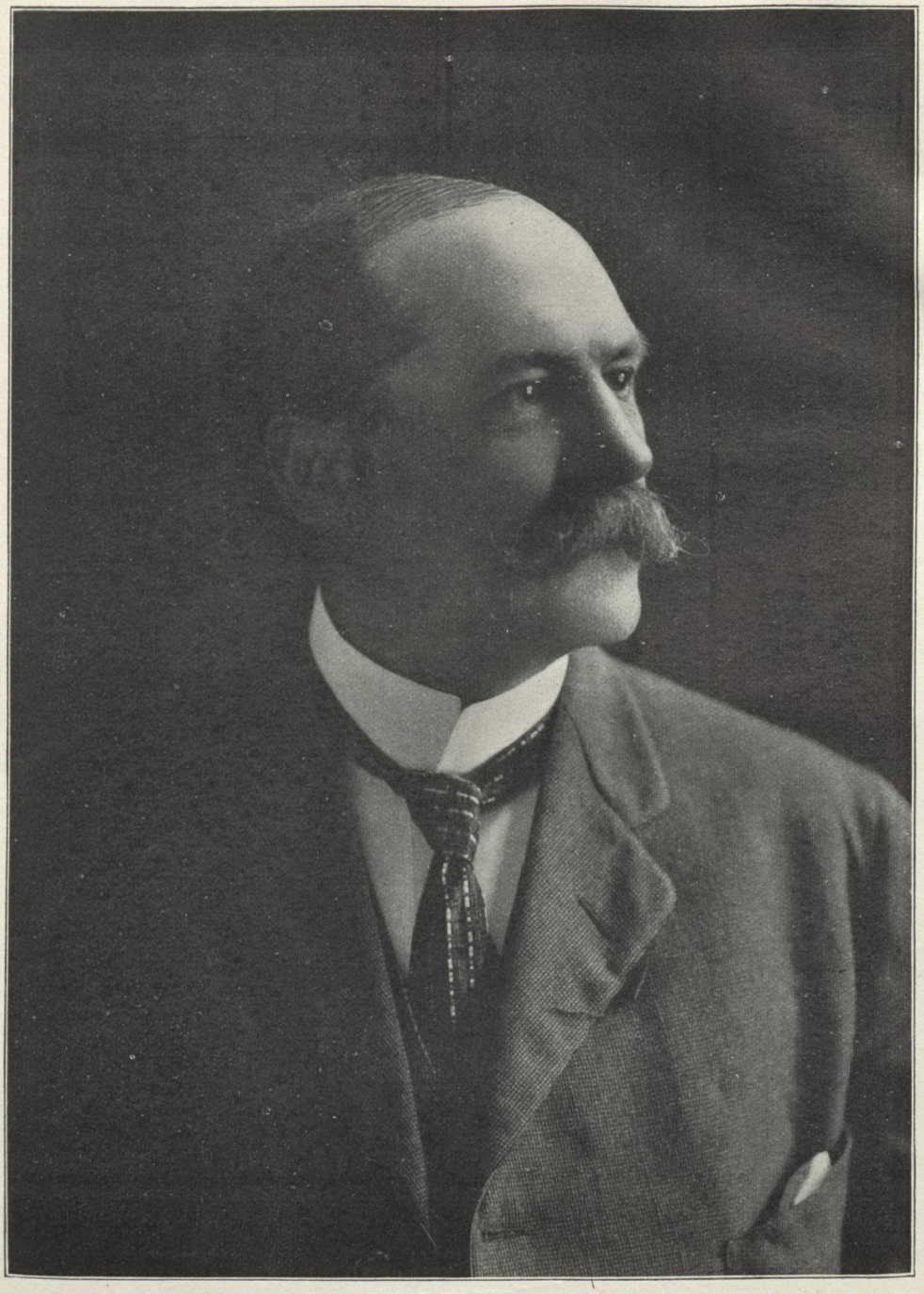
*To*

Frank Dibdin Hesseltine

My Good Friend

*A. E. Goodman*

*1133 Beach Ave.,* *Vancouver, B. C.*



ALFRED E. GOODMAN

(b)

# Prologue

## The Spirit of the Past

Twas the vision of a dreamer:
Grey and gaunt of grave demeanor,
Stood a presence there before him;
Thus it spake in bending o'er him:
Ever thinking, tender hearted;
Of the lives that have departed;
I have come to you at last;
With a message from the past,
So that time shall not efface,
Memories of our ancient race:
Build ye then a family altar;
Do not hesitate or falter,
Ere the words: "Too Late" are spoken;
Ere "The Golden Bowl Be Broken"
And above this sacred shrine,
Builded to our ancient line,
Cherish every honored name,
On our family roll of fame.
Brood no more upon the past;
Finish your alloted task,
Ere The Silver Cord You Sever,
And your deed shall live forever.
While the arms of Morpheus bound him:
Haunting memories hovered round him;
Dear familiar forms and faces,
Which his fancy fondly traces;
Half in pleasure, half in pain,
That he sees them thus again;
Hears with sad and deep contrition,
This, their ceaseless admonition,
Brood no more upon the past,
Finish your allotted task;
Hears the words so plainly spoken:
Ere The Golden Bowl Be Broken.

# Introduction

In the prologue, the author has suggested the possibility of his being urg ed to an exhausting task by a dominating thought, dream or vision if you will, We say that the mainspring of a watch starts the hands moving accurately. ticking off the seconds and minutes till we die. And that a thought originates a conception culminating in a triumph of mechanical or literary skill. But is it not true that after all it is the power behind the mainspring the power behind the thought? The mysterious inexplicable influence.

In the authors case if it had not been for this secret impelling influence he could not have found sufficient stimulus in the face of material difficulties, indifference and even opposition to have carried on his task successfully to the end. And until he did finish his labors he had no surcease from the thought, that a great obligation had devolved upon him and must be fulfilled. And after all is it not sad that the name of a family should die out, but it is sadder far that the race itself should be forgotten, and that the great deeds and virtues of our kith and kin should receive no recognition and that at length all knowledge of them should be lost in the misty vistas of the past.

How often we have heard the expression "Very few people care about their ancestors." They should be taught to care. It is a great absorbing, and intensely interesting problem, to trace step by step the intricate lines in the life map of our race.

And with this thought I have dared to raise my voice in the waste places of literature, where others who have sung far nobler and sweeter songs have been warned by the wise, laughed at by fools and mocked by the profane.

MEDITATION

CONCEPTION BY OUR IMMORTAL KINSMAN
JEREMY CROSS

# The Passing of the Race

Faded photographs and letters;
Silent harbingers of tears;
Shall we leave them in the litter,
Of the wasting of the years;
They are ancient family records;
Do we care to know the past;
Did they noble deeds or brave ones;
Were they honored at the last.
If we feel no pride in kinsmen
We may never find the grace,
To so act that we are honored
In the passing of our race.

●●●●

There were commoners among them,
Wielding destinies of State;
Famed for skill in Legislation,
And for wisdom in debate.
In the worlds great marts of commerce,
Gravid browed and gifted men;
Stately dames of grace and beauty;
Virtue as their diadem.
There was glory won in battle;
And in art, the highest place;
Kinsmen wrote their names immortal
In the passing of our race.

●●●●

There were pioneers among them:
Men of peace, but still they'd fight
With their bible in their left hand,
And their musket in their right.
In the Indian time of murder,
And of vengeance quick, condign,
Kin were killed and the suvivors
Were the forebears of our line.
They were men of brawn and action;
Took religion as their base;
So we write them down with honor
In the passing of our race.

If we read these ancient records
We shall feel an honest pride;
For our kin were pious minded;
So they lived and so they died;
And our souls will stir within us;
And our hearts will so incline;
To proclaim the many virtues
Of the kinsmen of our line.
We shall find that family honor
Never yielded to disgrace,
Shadowed forth in these old records
Of the passing of our race.

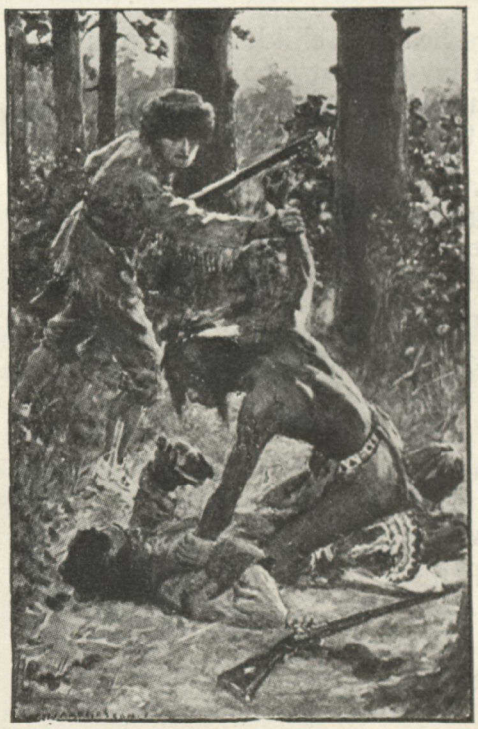
---

Is it not then interesting to study the lives of those who bore our names centuries ago, to follow their careers in peace and war and to rejoice and take pride in the fact that we sprang from worthy ancestors who were good citizens great commoners, loyal countrymen and famous warriors. In fact it has been ascertained that the list of kinsmen who fought in the past for patriotism and self preservation is a long one and not a coward or deserter among them.

# Our Warrior Race

They were at the Wall of Acre;
On the field of Agincourt;
At Cadiz, and in the Channel,
Sunk the Spanish hulks of war.
Nailed the flag to Pompey's Pillar,
And at Asabia Bay,
Benedoine and Barcelona
Fought to check Napoleon's sway.
So through centuries they struggled,
For Old England and the Crown;
Then we find them with the rebels
At the bridge at Concord Town;
Still they battled on for freedom;
Where the time or when the place;
Ever fought for truth and justice
In the passing of our race.

There was the periods of Indian massacres in the American wilderness when our ancestors had to kill or be killed. When the primal law of nature prevailed—the survival of the fittest—and slowly, but surely the enemy of progress was exterminated or subdued and thus did our ancestors help to win America for the world; but not before horrible cruelties were perpetrated, sad to say on both sides. Many of our kinsmen and several ancestors were murdered. Unfortunately women and children met the same fate as the fathers. There was no mercy or pity and the atrocities committed on the dependent members of the family are unthinkable. Description of the actual massacres are thus purposely avoided. The Pigwacket Indians were on the war path at the time that our maternal kinsmen were in their greatest strength in the wilderness and these atrocities were committed near Dunstable, Mass., where their cabins were located and which was the scene of the following recital.



# The Pigwacket Massacre

Moans the night wind, sighing, dying,
Sounding like a mother's croon;
And the red-man, murder minded,
Wails his war cry to the tune.

In the cabin on the outskirts
Of the woodland, go to rest
Little children, nestling closely
To their tired mother's breast.

Through the eerie whispering forest,
Bending closely to the breeze,
Comes the cruel, painted, Savage,
Creeping stealthily, through the trees.

Mothers hear the children praying:
"Now I lay me down to sleep"
Hear them as they're softly saying
"Hope the Lord my soul will keep."

Fiercer, louder, grows the tempest,
Roaring in an angry mood ;
Comes the painted Savage—shouting—
Suddenly from out the wood;

Then the maddening murder-clamor:
The Pigwacket Battle Cry,—
Sad it is that little children
Suffer so and so must die.

Let us draw the veil of pity
Tightly o'er the killing-place;
There was many a tragic chapter
In the passing of our race.

Mothers heard them softly praying
"If I die before I wake"
Heard the little children saying
"Hope the Lord my soul will take."

So their prayers had all been finished
Ere the children went to sleep;
But their resting was eternal;
And their souls the Lord will keep.

# In the Name of Cross

To My Kinsmen, Greeting :—

I have endeavored to arrange in comprehensive form the scattered fragments of the Cross family history.

This labor has been done in memory of my Mother.

Much is left unsettled, much unsaid, but how difficult it is to complete such a history in one man's life time.

I leave to others to finish what I have begun.

And now, after twenty-five years of research; aided, comforted and encouraged by loyal friends I sum up the evidence and give my verdict.

What my mother thought was true.

Scarcely whispered words, scarcely formed ideas, that somehow she had learned; by what someone had seen; and by what she read long years ago, that her family were of royal descent. That some of her ancestors fought in the crusades; that they were famous soldiers, patriots and statesmen of England and America, that the Lawrences, their kinsmen, gave a hundred heroes to the world; that on her father's side she was a descendant of the ancient Crosses, of Cross Hall, Lancashire and Charlynch, many of whom were knighted for valor in England's greatest battles; and lastly among her maternal ancestors were those puritans of New England. whose descendants stood in line at Concord, as "minute men," in the outbreak of the revolutionary war.

It has been my task to find facts to establish these family traditions as undying truths; a labor of love which I have accomplished to the best of my ability, and the completed effort is now handed over to the criticism or kindly consideration of all descendants of "Crosse".

I am convinced that the statements made in these pages are correct as set down; as to their all being susceptable of absolute proof it is difficult to

affirm. No evidence of genealogical research can be absolutely relied upon; even documentary evidence such as court records and parish registers, to say nothing of grave stone epitaphs are often inaccurate.

However, documentary evidence has been secured where it has been possible, and all statements have at least been proven to my own satisfaction, as well to the satisfaction of reputable professional genealogists engaged for the purpose, or from records on file in the libraries and Historical Associations of the United States and England.

It is true that the early history of every family gradually fades away into tradition, legend, fable and myth.

It is always difficult and it is sometimes impossible, to draw the line between historical certainty and fanciful invention. Indisputable facts and shadowy tales are mixed together in confusion, which the lapse of ages renders inextricable.

Oral testimony is certain to become modified in some particulars, and expanded in others, in the course of transmission from one generation to another.

It is not therefore a matter of surprise, however regretable, that I cannot claim for these records the merit of absolute reliability. This may be said however, that nothing has been set down as a fact unless endorsed by reliable genealogical authorities, and that which appears doubtful has been given the semblance of doubt.

It is undoubtedly true that the ancestors of my Mother can be traced back to remote times, the Lawrence line alone being accurately delineated by documentary evidence through many generations.

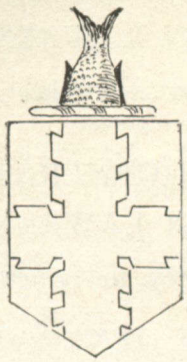
The families that appear conspicuously in the maternal line are: Lawrence, twenty generations; Wright, six generations; Cummings, seven generations; Cross, fourteen generations.

A great deal of information regarding collateral families has been collected, but only that which is of interest to the present generation of Cross descendants, and those who come after them, is recorded at any length.

We have first to deal with the Lawrences, as of our remote ancestors they are the most numerous yet recorded.

There is a genealogy still in print of the Lawrence family, as far back as 1150, when the first Lawrence of this line is mentioned. This was in the reign of Stephen of England.

It will be later shown that one of these Lawrences in our line married the daughter of JOHN WHITNEY, a descendant of the royal families of France and England, that their descendant in our line married JOHN WRIGHT, whose daughter married AMOS CUMMINGS, whose daughter married CALVIN BAILY CROSS, the father of Mrs. Edwin Goodman, nee Caroline Elizabeth Cross, my mother.



## LAWRENCE.

American Armory, P. A. 49.

Henry Lawrence came to New England from Wissett and Holton, County Suffolk, England, 1630 settled at Charleston, Mass., grandson of John Lawrence, of Ramburg, thirteenth in descent from Sir Robert Lawrence.

Arms—Argent, a cross rugely gules.

Crest—A demi turbet, tail upwards.

The original arms, sans crest, were given to Sir Robert Cross by King Richard I. for bravery in scaling the walls of Acre, 1191.

Cross—Rugely gules.

Our Lawrence line is as follows: Henry I., son of William the Conqueror, died in 1135, and there ascended to the throne of England, Stephen, a grandson of William 1st.

In 1150, during the latter years of Stephen's reign, was born

ROBERT LAWRENCE,

(evidently a combination of two Christian names). He was born at Lancashire. During the reign of Henry II. he arrived at manhood's estate, and became a soldier. When Richard I. came to the throne he was about forty years old, and followed his sovereign to the Holy Land. He distinguished himself at the siege of Acre, and was knighted by King Richard.

SIR ROBERT LAWRENCE, of Ashton Hall.

He wore a cross upon his shield to distinguish his family, "Ruguly, gules," a rough cross hewn from a tree, and the branches tied in the shape of a cross. Inscribed beneath was the motto: "In the name of Lawrence." Subsequently a stag head appears as a crest.

### SECOND GENERATION.

### SIR ROBERT LAWRENCE,

Lancashire, Ashton Hall, married a daughter of James Trafford, Esq.

### THIRD GENERATION.

### JAMES LAWRENCE,

of Ashton Hall, married in 1252, Matilda, daughter of John de Washington. (Respecting the name Lawrence and Washington—a brother of the first President of the United States—Lawrence Washington was one of the earliest proprietors of Mt. Vernon.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

of Ashton Hall, married Margaret, daughter of Walter Chosford, by whom he had a son, John, his heir and successor.

## FIFTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

married Elizabeth Holt, of Stabley, in Lancashire, in 1360, and had Robert, son and heir.

## SIXTH GENERATION.

### SIR ROBERT LAWRENCE, OF ASHTON HALL,

married Margaret Holden Lancashire, sons: Robert, Thomas, William, born 1425, fought under Lancaster at St. Albins; another son, Edmond, married a daughter of the famous Norman Miles de Stapleton. William was buried in the Abbey.

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

### SIR ROBERT LAWRENCE, OF ASHTON HALL,

married Amphilis, daughter Edward Langford, of Langford, had sons: James, his heir, who married Ciciley Soteler, who had issue, Robert, who married Margaret Lawrence, whose son, John, commanded a wing of the English army at Flodden Field. His brother William became a great land owner.

## EIGHTH GENERATION.

### NICHOLAS LAWRENCE, OF SYERCROFT,

son of Sir Robert. He had sons: Thomas, John, William, Henry, Oliver, Knt., whose son was knighted 1619. Oliver died 1601.

## NINTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

who was an ancestor of the St. James' Park Suffolk Lawrence's. He died 1496, leaving Thomas, of Ramburg, Suffolk.

## TENTH GENERATION.

### THOMAS LAWRENCE,

Ramburg. He held lands also in Holten, Wisset and South Elcinham. He married and had sons, John and Richard, of St. Ives. His will is dated 1471.

## ELEVENTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

married Margory, by whom he had a son Robert. His will was made July 10th, 1504. His wife died 1507. Both buried in Ramburg church.

## TWELFTH GENERATION.

### ROBERT LAWRENCE.

He is named in his father's will, and his wife in that of her mother-in-law. Their issue was John.

## THIRTEENTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

Ramburg, married Elizabeth, by whom he had: Henry, John, Agnes, Margaret, Kate and William, of Eleinham; exiled by Mary, he returned, and preached in Elizabeth's reign.

## FOURTEENTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

married Agnes, and had John, Richard, died 1596, Susan, Elizabeth, Margaret. Wife died 1583. His will is dated 1590. He was buried at Ramburg.

## FIFTEENTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

was of Wisset, Suffolk. Married Johan. They had Henry, Robert. Will dated 1614. (Names his kinsman Laxfield and grandson of Earl North) Margery, Kate. Will of John, of Wisset 1606.

## SIXTEENTH GENERATION.

### HENRY LAWRENCE,

married Mary. His father's will says he moved to New England from Wisset. He settled in Charlestown, Massachusetts, 1635. His name is among the inhabitants, and among those who received the first division of land. He received five acres and a house.

## SEVENTEENTH GENERATION.

### JOHN LAWRENCE,

of Wisset, England, born 1609. Also of Charlestown, Boston, Watertown and Groton, Mass. He married first, Elizabeth; second, Susanna Bachelor, died at Groton, 1669. He had John, Nathaniel, Joseph, Peleg, Jonathan, Mary, Enoch, Samuel, Elizabeth, Zacharia, Susan.

## EIGHTEENTH GENERATION.

### ENOCH LAWRENCE,

Born Jan. 5th, 1649, Watertown; married Ruth, daughter of John Whitney. She was widow of John Shattuck.

John Whitney was descended from Alfred the Great, of England, and Henry first, of France. The offspring of this marriage claim Royal descent.

## NINETEENTH GENERATION.

### ZACHARIA LAWRENCE,

married first, Abagail Parker; second, Rebecca Powers. He was born May 5th, 1708.

## TWENTIETH GENERATION.

### ZACHARIA LAWRENCE,

died 1780; married in 1734, Sarah, daughter of Nathaniel Lawrence, and granddaughter of Zacharia Lawrence the first, and great grand-daughter of Enoch. They were cousins.

## TWENTY-FIRST GENERATION.

### SARAH,

born April 6th, 1738; married John Wright, near Westford, Mass., 1754, at sixteen years of age. This is the connecting link on the maternal side of the Wrights and the Lawrences.

Before proceeding further it may be well at this stage to fix in the mind of the reader the Whitney connection with the Lawrences which occurred in the eighteenth generation, and to point out again that the Whitneys were of royal descent to make this more emphatic and to bring it home to the reader this descent is here introduced with authorities. For the final proof of this connection I am indebted to Mrs. Elsie Cross, wife of A. D. Cross, of Alameda, Cal., whose children will later be shown to have doubly descended from the European monarchs.

THE ROYAL DESCENT of children of Mrs. Edwin Goodman, nee Caroline Elizabeth Cross:

Alfred the Great, King of England—Lady Elswitha.
Edward the Elder, King of England—Lady Edgiva.
Edmund the Elder, King of England—Lady Elgifa.
Edgar, King of England—Lady Elfrida.
Ethelred II., the Unready, King of England—Lady Elgifa.
Edmund II., Ironsides, King of England—Lady Algitha.
Edward the Exile, Prince Royal of England—Lady Agatha, of Germany.
Malcolm III. Canmore, King of Scots—Princess Margaret, of England.
Henry I., King of England—Princess Matilda, of Scotland.

Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou—Empress Maud, of Germany.
Henry II., King of England—Lady Eleanor, of Aquitaine.
John, King of England—Lady Isabella, of Angouleme.
Henry III., King of England—Lady Eleanor, of Provence.
Edward I., King of England—Lady Eleanor, of Castle.
Humphrey, Earl of Hereford—Princess Elizabeth Plantagenet.
Robert, Baron Ferrers, of Chartley—Lady Agnes de Bohun.
John, Baron Ferrers, of Chartley—Lady Elizabeth de Stafford.
Robert, Baron Ferrers, of Chartley—Lady Margaret le Despencer.
Edmund, Baron Ferrers, of Chartley—Lady Eleanor de la Roche.
William, Baron Ferrers, of Chartley—Lady Elizabeth Belknap.
Sir Walter Devereaux, Baron Ferrers, of Chartley—Lady Anne de Ferrers, of Chartley.

James Baskerville, K.B., Sheriff of Hereford—Katherine Devereaux.

Sir Walter Baskerville, K.B., Sheriff of Hereford—Anne, vch. Morgan ap Jenkyn.

Sir James Baskerville, Kt., of Eardisley—Elizabeth Breynton.
Sir Robert Whitney, M.P.—Sybil Baskerville.
Robert Whitney, of Whitney—Elizabeth, vch. William ap Morgan.
Thomas Whitney of Westminster—Mary Bray.
John Whitney, London in Watertown, Mass., 1635—Elinor.
John Whitney, of Watertown, 1621, 1692—Ruth Reynolds.
Taken from Americans of Royal Descent, by Chas. H. Browning, page 418, sixth edition.

## FRENCH DESCENT.

The Emperor Charlemagne had:
Louis I., Emperor of France.
Louis I., King of Bavaria.
Carloman, King of Bavaria.
Arnoul, King of Germany, who had:
Hedwige, M. Otto, of Saxony, and had:
Henry, Emperor of Germany, who had:
Hedwige M. Hugh, Duke of France, and had:
Hugh Capet, King of France, who had:

Henry I., King of France, had by his wife, Lady Anne, daughter of Jaroslaus, Grand Duke, or Czar, of Russia;

Hugh the Great, Duke of France and Burgundy, Count de Vermandois, who married, thirdly, Adela, Countess de Vermandois, and had by her:

Lady Isabel de Vermandois, died 1131, who married first in 1096, Robert Baron de Bellomont, Earl of Mellent and Leicester, and had:

Robert de Bellomont, second Earl of Leicester, justiciary of England, died 1168, who married Lady Amicia de Waer, daughter of Ralph, Earl of Norfolk, Suffolk and Cambridge, and had:

Robert de Bellomont, third Earl of Leicester, lord high steward of England, died 1196, who married, 1167, Lady Petronella, daughter of Hugh, Baron de Grentesmaismil, and had:

Lady Margaret de Bellomont, who married Saher de Quincey, one of the twenty-five trustees of the Magna Charta, created, 1207, Earl of Winchester, died 1219, and had:

Lady Hawise de Quincy, who married Hugh de Vere, fourth Earl of Oxford, great high Chamberlain, died 1263, and had:

Robert de Vere, fifth Earl of Oxford, died 1296; married Alice, daughter of Gilbert de Saundford, chamberlain in fee to Queen Eleanor, 1250, and had;

Alphonsus de Vere, second son, d. v. p., who married Jane, daughter of Sir Richard Foliot, and had:

Devereaux Arms

Walter Devereaux, Earl of Essex

John de Vere, seventh Earl of Oxford, who fought at Cressy, commanded at Poictiers, and was knighted at Rheims, 14th June, 1360. He married Lady Maud, widow of Robert Fitzpayne and daughter of Bartholomew, Baron de Badlesmere, executed in 1322, and his wife, Lady Margaret de Clare, also of Royal Descent, and had :

HOME OF EARLY DEVEREAUX

View of Chartley Before the Fire of 1871:

Lady Margaret de Vere, widow of Henry de Beaumont, died 1369, who married secondly, Sir John Devereaux, and had :

Sir William Deveraux, who married Anne, daughter of Sir John Barre, and had:

Sir Walter Devereaux, knighted 1402, who married Agnes Crophull, and had:

Elizabeth Devereaux, who married Sir John Milbourne, and had:

Simon Milbourne, who married Jane, daughter of Sir Ralph Baskerville, of Erdisley, Hereford, also of Royal Descent, and had:

Blanche Milbourne, who married James Whitney, of Newport in the Marches, and had:

Sir Robert Whitney, K.B., a Gloucestershire magistrate, who married Margaret Wye, and had:

Sir Robert Whitney, knighted 2nd October, 1553, died 5th August, 1567; married Sybil, daughter of Sir James Baskerville, also of Royal Descent, and had:

Robert Whitney, who married Elizabeth Morgan, and had:

Thomas Whitney, of Lambeth Marsh, London, died April, 1637; married 12th May, 1583, Mary, (died 25th September, 1629); daughter of John Bray, and had:

John Whitney, born 1589; baptized, 20th July, 1592; came from Islesworth parish, near London. with his wife, Elinor, and five sons, to New England in June, 1635, and died at Watertown, Massachusetts, 1st June, 1673. He married first in London, Elinor ——, who died at Watertown 2nd May, 1659, aged 60 years (see Pierce's "John Whitney, of Watertown," W. L. Whitney's "Whitney family," Henry Melville's "Ancestry of John Whitney," "Magna Charta Barons and their American Descendants," page 181, etc.),

Browning, page 227.

## ANOTHER ROYAL DESCENT

1. Charlemagne, Emperor of the West—Lady Hildegarde, of Savoy.
2. Louis I., King of France—Lady Judith of Bavaria.
3. Charles II., King of France—Lady Richildis (second wife).
4. Princess Judith, of France—Baldwin I., Count of Flanders.
5. Baldwin II., Count of Flanders—Ethelwida, daughter Alfred the Great, of England.
6. Arnoul, Count of Flanders—Lady Alix, of Vermandois.
7. Baldwin III., Count of Flanders—Lady Matilda, of Saxony.
8. Arnoul II., Count of Flanders—Lady Susanna d' Inree, of Italy.
9. Baldwin IV., Count of Flanders—Lady Agiva, of Luxemburg.
10. Baldwin V., Count of Flanders—Adela, grand daughter Hugh Capet.
11. Lady Matilda, of Flanders—William I., King of England.
12. Henry I., King of England—Matilda, daughter Malcolm III., of Scotland.
13. Maud, Empress of Germany—Geoffroi, Count of Anjou.
14. Henry II., King of England—Eleanor, Duchess of Aquaitaine.

Thus merging again into the English line.

Browning, page 210, sixth edition.

So that this Sarah Lawrence, a romantic character in our history, was the twenty-first in descent from Lawrence the Crusader, and it should be remarked that she was the great grand-daughter of that Ruth Whitney.

My mother often spoke of the Lawrences, and at one time showed me a book entitled "Amos Lawrence, Poor Boy and Merchant Prince," telling me that this Amos Lawrence, of Boston,was a great philanthropist and was her kinsman.

Twenty years after my mother's death I found among her effects the History of Wesford and the family record of the Wrights. In this record was the following: John Wright Married Sarah ——, at Dunstable, and had Sarah and Mary, afterwards moving to Westfield, Mass. My mother had written in pencil in the blank space after Sarah the word Lawrence.

In an old scrap book of my Mother's there was a brief history of Captain Lawrence of the Chesapeake, him who said: "Don't give up the ship." My Mother also claimed him as a kinsman, but I believe he was a collateral line.

The Wrights, Cummings and Lawrences spread all over Massachusetts in those days and the families frequently intermarried, often cousins marrying each other, and at an early age. In fact our Sarah Lawrence's mother married her cousin, and her daughter Anne, married her cousin and a Lawrence.

Here is the case where the family intermarried twice:

Henry Lawrence, of Wissett, England

Had John Lawrence, of Watertown, Mass;

Had Enoch Lawrence, of Groton, Mass.

Enoch had Nathaniel;

Enoch had Zacharia.

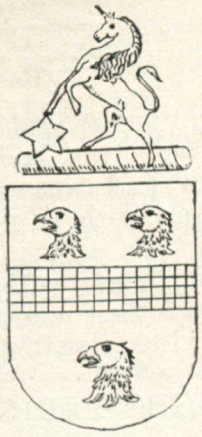
Now this Zacharia's son, Zacharia the second, married Sarah, Nathaniel's daughter.

Their daughter Sarah married John Wright.

Now Nathaniel had another son James, whose son James married Anna, daughter of Sarah Lawrence and John Wright.

These matters were more or less familiar to my Mother as she was eighteen years old, a very understandable age, at the time the daughter of this Sarah Lawrence was living in the same house with them, and being her grandmother she would learn many facts from her.

Sarah Lawrence was married to John Wright in 1754 at sixteen years of age, whilst her daughter Anne married the Lawrence referred to at fifteen years of age.



Arms Or—A fesse chequy argent and azure between three eagles heads erased by the third.
Crest—A unicorn passant regaurdant the dexter paw resting on a mullet or.

## WHO WAS OUR JOHN WRIGHT?

We will now, for the time, discontinue the Lawrence line, and consider our kinsmen, the Wrights.

The Lawrences were of noble birth in England, but, "for conscience sake" Henry, the founder of the American race, moved to America, and became a humble farmer. In an old scrap book of my mother's is the signature of Reuben Lawrence, cut from a letter, and there are other evidences of a closer intimacy between the Lawrences and Wrights.

There is nothing known of the Wrights before their arrival in to New England, but, no doubt, like Henry Lawrence, our first John Wright migrated that he might enjoy freedom of religious thought.

John Wright, who married Sarah Lawrence, was my mother's great-grandfather. He was a farmer, like seventy-five per cent. of the population of his native town of Westford, Mass.

I have before me a history of Westford by Edwin R. Hodgman. Extracts from this history will be of interest. So numerous did the Wright family become in Westford, that travelers passing through, jokingly affirmed that the "Town was all Wright."

The place was first called Chelmsford, the plantation being granted in 1653, and the Wrights are heard of as "contributing to its growth." In 1660 the township of Westford was partitioned off, and "ceased to be the hunting ground of the Indians."

In Westford the land was not surveyed; each man chose a homestead and took possession, and here we notice that John Wright, emigrant ancestor of our John, squatted on six acres at Westford in 1659 (a year before it was called Westford).

It was in this town that our ancestors flourished for many generations, and took an active part in making history in revolutionary times.

Hodgman says:

"Not from the court or council hall, not from the home of wealth and pride,
From title, rank, or great or small, with greed of gain unsatisfied,
Came they who first a pathway cleared, through the wide forest thick and drear,
Built their rude cabins and upreared a house for Him they all revered.
Strong, hardy men, with instincts true, laid the foundation of the town;
They kept a noble end in view, and worked for God, not for renown.
The Old World cast them out with hate; the New World took them in with love;
And here they built a Christian State, with faith and hope in God above.
Were they not heroes, though their names are blazoned not on roles?
True men, whose sterling virtues shame the meanness of some modern souls?"

## WRIGHT PEDIGREE.

(From the History of Woburn, Mass.)

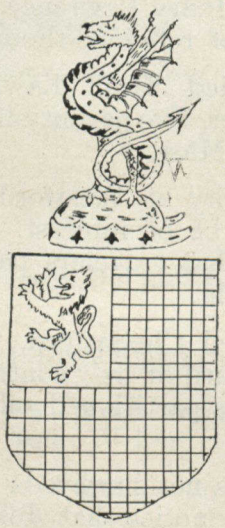
### FIRST GENERATION.

John Wright, born about 1610, migrated from England in the reign of Charles the First. He is first heard of as a settler at Woburn, Mass. He was one of the subscribers to the town orders, agreed upon at Charlestown, Dec. 8, 1640.

He was a Selectman of Woburn, 1645 to 1647, 1649 to 1658, and 1680 to 1681. He was Deacon of Woburn church from November 10th, 1664, until his death in 1688, and Commissioner of the rate between 1646 and 1671.

He must have been a man of some prominence among the early settlers to have been so long entrusted with these public offices.

He married Priscilla, who died 1687.



American Armory, P. A. 80. Arthur Warren of Weymouth, Mass. (Father of Abagail Warren, who married John Wright the Second.) Arms—Chequy or, and azure on a canton gules. A Lion rampant argent. Crest—On a chapeau. gulew turned ermine, a wyvern argent, wings expanded cheqye or and azure.

## SECOND GENERATION.

John Wright, Woburn and Chelmsford, Mass., died April 30th, 1741, aged 83. (Grave-stone in Woburn's first burying ground). He married Abigail Warren, of Chelmsford, May 10th, 1661. She was a daughter of Arthur Warren, of Weymouth. She died April 6, 1726, aged 85.

Like his father, he served as Selectman at Woburn, 1680, 1681 and 1690. His will, dated 1701, mentions his wife Abigail, and sons, John, jr., Joseph and Ebenezor, all in Chelmsford, and son Josiah in Woburn. His four daughters, Ruth Butterfield, Priscilla, Deborah and Lydia. His wife and son Josiah, executors.

## THIRD GENERATION.

(from History of Westford).

John Wright, married first, Mary Stevens, children: Jacob, Ebenezer, Edward, Jacob, Henry, John and Mary. Married second, Hannah Fletcher, children: Hannah, Thomas, Simeon, The first child was born 1692, the last, 1710.

John Wright was a man of parts. He was one of the first to manufacture tar and turpentine, by tapping the trees; and in the earliest records is mentioned a license to John Wright to tap 500 trees.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

Jacob Wright, born 1698. Settled in North part of Westford, and married Abigail ——, children: Sarah, 1721; John, 1723; Ephraim, 1725; Mary, 1727; Sarah, 1730; Jacob, 1732; Poletiah, 1734; Joseph, 1736; Benjamin, 1738.

## FIFTH GENERATION.

John, born 1723, married in Dunstable, Sarah Lawrence, children: Sarah, born in Dunstable, 1755; Mary, born in Dunstable, 1757; Oliver, born 1759; Deborrah, 1762; John, 1764; Elizar, 1765; Rachel, 1767; Isaac, 1770: Anna, 1772; Elizabeth, 1775; Ebenezer, 1777.

The first tax list of Westford contained 88 names, and there were four Wrights and one Cummings on the list. One of the Wrights was Jacob, our John's father.

The plantation of Chelmsford was granted in 1653, and incorporated 1655. The petitioners were twenty in number, and were from Concord and Woburn Mass. Our first John Wright being one of them.

The Wrights are mentioned as "contributing very much to the growth of the place.

The Indians at that time were friendly, and one of the Chiefs of that day in a "talk" to the whites, stated that through his intercession with his people,

they had been allowed to settle in the Red man's country without molestation.

## INDIAN TROUBLES

There is a tradition, however, that in these early times isolated murders took place. One story is to the effect that the Indians gathered around one settler's house at night, and made a noise like a swine, and that when the man went out to see what was the matter his wife waited for his return in vain. She then barred the door and sat up all night with her children, and in the morning found her husband's head stuck on a pole.

## TADMUCKS

"The early settlers appropriated swamps and meadows for their cattle. These meadows were called 'Tadmucks.' Thos. Adams, one of the ancestors of the famous Adams family of American history, was allowed six acres on the east side of Tadmuck Hill. And regarding our second John Wright, one of the founders of the town, the history of Westford has this to say: 'John Wright also had 3 acres at Farther Tadmuck.' This was in 1659, only there years from the beginning of the plantation, and these were probably the earliest allotments of land, and the records speak of no others."

## JOHN WRIGHT FOUNDER OF CHELMSFORD

It was apparently not until 1707 that our Cummings kinsmen appeared on the scene. This history says: "In the vicinity of Stoney Creek was the farm of John Cummings, and still further up was the farm of John Waldo Cummings." About 1663 the first garrison house was built on Fraser Hill and another on Brookside.

## SOUGHT SAFETY IN GARRISON HOUSE

"When night came on, and the deep gloom of the forest settled down upon them, the women and children hastened from their homes to these garrisons, where they often heard the yell of the savages startling the night air. This was the time of King Philip's war.

## WESFORD

On September 20th, 1729, the worst precinct of Chelmsford was chartered under the name of Wesford (spelt without the "t.")

At the first town meeting Deacon John Cummings was chosen Moderator and Hy. Wright, Policeman.

The town of Wesford at that time consisted of 87 taxpayers. Among them there was only one Cummings, and that was Deacon John. There was, however, Jacob Wright, son of John the second, and our direct ancestor, also Ebenezer Wright, Sr. and and Jr. and H. Wright, all kinsmen.

Ebenezer Wright, the brother of our Jacob Wright, father of the third

John, was appointed Ensign in Captain Choat's Company in 1745, when Wesford sent a goodly number of her sons to the capture of Louisburg.

## COLONIES FIGHT FOR MOTHERLAND

After the peace of Utrecht, 1713, the French, as a security to their navigation and fishing, built the town of Louisburg on the Island of Breton, and fortified it with a rampart of stone thirty feet high and a ditch 80 feet wide.

The six bastions contained 48 cannon and four mortars. On an island at the entrance there were batteries containing thirty cannon, whilst opposite the entrance were twenty-eight forty-two pound cannon and two eighteen pounders. At the entrance to the town were sixteen twenty-four pound cannon. The French took 25 years to build these works at a cost of thirty million livers. The place was so strong as to be called the Dunkirk of America, and it enabled France to ruin the fisheries of New England. (We were all British then.)

In 1745 Governor Shirley proposed to the General Court of Massachussets that he be allowed to destroy these works. At first the General Court refused to listen to him, thinking such a task impossible. The proposal was finally carried by one vote.

Wm. Pepperell was appointed commander. The New England army, drawn from all towns, sailed March 24th, 1745 and arrived at Canso, April 4th. There were 4,000 troops in all. They waited three weeks for the ice to break up around Cape Breton. The troops were landed April 30th. With extreme difficulty cannon were drawn for fourteen nights through morass up to the men's knees. Horses and oxen were also used. The men were harnessed with the beasts, with straps over their shoulders. The New Englanders got inside the works, and Louisburg capitulated on June 16th, 1745.

The plan for the reduction of this fortress was drawn by a lawyer and executed by a merchant. Out of 4,000 men, Massachussets furnished 3,250.

## WESFORD HELPS ACADIA'S REFUGEES

The peninsula of Nova Scotia acceded to the English in 1713, was inhabited by French people, who adhered to the catholic religion. The boundary was unsettled. The English claimed the St. Lawrence, and the French restricted them to the peninsula of Acadia or Nova Scotia. The French occupied forts to contest their claims, and New England gave many of her sons to the opposing English army. On May 20th, 1753, the Massachusetts troops embarked, seized the forts, and took possession of the country. The difficulty arose as to what should be done with the inhabitants, some of them actually bearing arms against the New Englanders. Those who did not bear arms were given the option of taking an oath of allegiance to England or leave the country. They unanimously refused, and they were scattered throughout the colonies. This situation gave rise to Longfellow's poem of "Evangeline." Westford supported many of these refugees. They were very humane to them. Among the refugees at Wesford was a family named Robeshaw. The

mother, age 83, being very feeble, and the young man Lise Robeshaw being very sick. Finally the town selectmen (including Wright & Cummings) and afterwards the general Court of Massachusetts helped these people. They appear to have been well taken care of, as far as Massachusetts was concerned. These refugees were allotted to the different towns.

## EVANGELINE

Here is what Longfellow says about them :

" Far asunder, on separate coasts, the Acadians landed,
Scattered were they like flakes of snow, when the wind from the northeast
Strikes aslant through the fogs that darken the banks of Newfoundland.
Friends they sought and homes ; and many despairing, heartbroken
Asked of the earth but a grave, and no longer a friend nor a fireside."

In 1748 there was a skirmish with the Indians on the frontier and many Wesford boys were engaged. In 1754 the Indians were again attacked, and Colonel John Cummings, a relative, was in command of one of the companies.

## OUR KINSMEN FIGHT THE FRENCH

In 1757 the French and the Indians were at war with England and Massachusetts still provided her young men. We find our kinsman Samuel Wright fighting in Captain Sam Davis' Company, and in Jonas Prescott's Company our kinsman Thomas Wright of Wesford who was made Sergeant, also John Wright Oliver Wright, Joel Wright and Joseph Cummings. This last Company was sent to relieve Fort William Henry, but it was captured by Montcalm before they could get there.

In 1758 there was gloom in the Colonies. Things seemed to be going against them. The English had given Louisburg back to France—Louisburg so hardly won by Massachussets. General Amherst was sent to re-capture Louisburg. General Abercrombie was sent against Ticonderego and Crown Point and General Forbes against Fort Du Quesne.

General Amherst took Louisburg, Fort Du Quesne was taken and named Pittsburg, but General Abercrombie was repulsed at Ticonderego. But Fort Frontenac was reduced by General Bradstreet. These achievements dispelled the gloom. Wesford boys were again prominent in the fight. At the battle of Half Way Brook, Sergeant Oliver Wright, in Captain Lawrence's company was reported missing. In Captain Wm. Lawrence's Company was Isaac Cummings a kinsman, aged fourteen. Age made no difference. There were many children from fourteen to eighteen, and some men of from thirty-eight to fifty-six. In Captain Whiting's Company there was another Isaac Cummings and Reuben Wright. Our kinsman Reuben Wright was evidently wounded, for he was in the hospital from November 23 to December 9th and then discharged. In Captain Barton's company was Silas Wright.

In 1760 Montreal was reduced and Canada captured from the French. Many Wesford boys went to fight the French and never returned.

## WESFORD BOYCOTTS GREAT BRITAIN THOUGH EXPRESSING RESPECT FOR HER PARLIAMENT

(Terms of Resolution)

In 1768 the town remonstrated against the English Stamp Act, by a long resolution, and by another resolution decided to prevent the use of imported English superfluities. In 1773 a resolution was passed expressing regret that judges received their instructions from the Crown alone. A committee was appointed to correspond with Boston in this respect, and Zaccheus Wright, who became very prominent afterwards recorded this resolution. The committee sent their thanks to "that zealous patriot, 'John Hancock.'" In 1774 Zaccheus was appointed chairman of the committee on correspondence to Boston. Afterwards he was chosen to meet the Boston Committee, regarding the trouble with England, and pay them the town portion, the town having refused to pay it to the English representatives. Zaccheus was son of Ebenezer, who was son of our second John.

The period of the revolution was one of great significance in the Town of Westford. Westford troops took part in the first armed resistance, and among them were many of our kin. Rev. Willard Hall, and two other men, remained steadfast to the king. Hall until his death.

The resolutions passed when the Wrights and Cummings' flourished in Westford, will be interesting. They were kin, and took an active part in the town affairs. The wording is moderate, and in the light of future events appears reasonable.

"We, the freeholders and other inhabitants of the Town of Westford, in Town Meeting assembled the 31st day of October, 1765, professing the greatest loyalty to our most Gracious Sovereign, and our sincere regard and profound reverence for the British Parliament, as the most powerful and respectable body on earth, yet at the same time being deeply sensible of the difficulties and distress to which that august body's late exertion of their power, in and by the Stamp Act, must necessarily expose us, think it proper in the present critical conjunction of affairs, to give the following instructions:—"

The instructions are addressed to Captain Prescott, their representative at Boston, as follows, after preamble, :

"We are alarmed and astonished at an act called the Stamp Act, by which a very grievous, and we apprehend, unconstitutional, act is laid upon us. We humbly apprehend by the royal charter granted to our forefathers, that they had power of making laws for our internal government, and for making taxes, invested in the general assembly; and by the same charter the inhabitants of this Province are entitled to all the rights and privileges of natural free-born subjects of Great Britain. The most essential rights of a British subject are those of being represented in the same body which exercised the power of

levying taxes on them and having their properties tried by juries. These are the common privileges of mankind, and we apprehend we were not represented in parliament of Great Britain when the said act was made, and it is certain this act admits of our properties being tried by Courts of Admiralty without a jury; so at once we are deprived of our most valued rights and privileges, which is contained in our charter, as we humbly conceive (and more to the same effect).....

We, therefore, think it is our indispensable duty to ourselves and our dear children, as it is our undoubted privilege, in the most open and unreserved manner, but in decent and respectful terms, to declare our great dissatisfaction with the Stamp Act, and we think it incumbent on you to by no means join in countenancing and assisting in the execution of the said act, that our children who come after us may not accuse us of tamely giving our rights away.

We also instruct you to see that the money in the Province treasury may not be applied for any other purpose than that intended in the Act for supplying the treasury."

Then followed in 1768 and 1770 resolutions discouraging the importation of British Goods, and in 1773, objecting to the judges of the Supreme Court being made independent of the people.

In 1774 Boston asked Westford to express their views on the strained relations between England and America; they did so as follows:

".....But beholding the general union of the colonies with their uninterrupted exertions in the cause of liberty, so inspires our breasts that we are constrained in a peculiar manner, to assert our readiness in all necessary occasions, to unite with the colonies in general and this Province in particular in every constitutional method for the redress of grievance, and continuousness of our liberties, though we do not mean to approve of any riotous conduct or in the least to indicate any disregard to our Sovereign Majesty, or the dignity of the Crown. Neither do we plead for anarchy, but we seek the enjoyment of those charter privileges which Americans have long enjoyed heretofore in which time a happy harmony existed between Great Britain and her colonies. It is the opinion of this Town that if the plan of administration so far succeed that as the general use of dutied tea should take place among the Colonies, it would be attended with very destructive consequences, nor do we think there are any good advantages to accrue from the use of East India tea, considered without a duty, which might not be obtained from plants of our own production. Therefore, resolved that we will not purchase or use or approve to be used any tea whatever until such duty be repealed."

## FIGHTING MAD

On January 16th, 1775, the town voted to procure eight guns as a starting point. These guns cost $100.00. Cousin Zaccheus Wright was one of a committee of three to procure them.

On February 27th the following agreement was recorded by the town selectmen :—

"We, the subsribers, having seen the (articles of) Association drawn up by the grand American Continental Congress, respecting the non-importation, non-cousumption and non-exportation of goods, etc., signed by the delegates of this, and the delegates of other colonies of this continent, and having attentively considered the same, do heartily approve thereof, and to every part of them, and in order to make the same (articles of) association, etc., our personal act, do by these presents, under the sacred ties of virtue, honor and the love of our country, firmly agree and associate fully and completely to observe and keep every article and clause in the (articles of) Association, with respect to importation, exportation and non-consumption, and will duly inform and give notice of every evasion or contravention of said agreement, as far as we may be able so to do, and that we will, as far as we can, encourage and promote a general union thereof."

This agreement was signed, or voted to be signed by every inhabitant of the town.

On May 25th, 1775, the Selectman voted that Capt. Jonathan Minot and Oliver Bates have charge of all the men in this town from 16 to 60, and train them, and to take care that the "alarm men" (John Wright was one of them) were properly equipped. The "alarm men" were those who were directed practically to sleep on their arms, to be called out at a minute's notice. They were also called "minute men" for the same reason.

## WESFORD WANTS INDEPENDENCE

"We, your committee to draft a letter to Boston, report as follows :

"That in our humble opinion, nothing short of a state of independency will so well answer for our safety and in case should the Congress declare a state of independence, we will acquiesce thereto, and risk our lives and fortunes in support thereof. Voted to by 300 weight of powder ball and flint answerable to the powder and to purchase fifteen guns to add to our store." It was voted to give twenty-four pounds to each man for continental service for three years. In 1780 the Committee on Correspondence, a very important post, which meant really the mouthpiece of Congress in the town, comprised among others Thomas and Hy. Wright.

## THE FIGHT AT CONCORD

### The First Armed Resistance

On April 19th, 1775, the British arrived at Concord to seize munitions of war stored in the cellars of private houses of the Colonials. On that day they were met at Concord Bridge by the Massachussett "minute men." Major Butterick and Colonel Robinson were together. Although Major Butterick was in command, he asked Colonel Robinson to act as his superior, being a senior officer in another regiment. This was refused and they marched

side by side. Rev. Dr. Ripley who was at the fight, said fifty years after that when the bridge at Concord was reached the British were sighted on the other side. A British soldier fired the first shot, the bullet passing under Colonel Robinson's arm, and wounding Luther Blanchard, a Fifer. Colonel Robinson was a Westford man, and the Westford Company were in Concord when the first shot was fired. There is little doubt that when the fight commenced Robinson and Butterick were marching breast to breast and Bancroft says with their fuses trailed. There were three companies engaged in the fight that day, slaughter took place among the British. The Colonials hiding behind trees and banks of the earth, firing on them as they marched down the highways. The Wrights had rushed to the front. John joined the "minute men" my great-great-grandfather fights at 52.

## JOHN WRIGHT, AGED 52

We find a Sergeant in Captain Underwood's Company at Concord in the brunt of the first struggle with the British, and his cousin Ebenezer was a private in the same company. They helped to drive the English back from Concord with severe loss. In Captain Bates Company that same day was Joseph Wright, Jr., a cousin, and Ephraim and Peletiah Wright, our John's own brothers. All the Westford boys were drafted from sixteen to sixty. When the British were advancing these companies fired without orders and were censored.

In the company of Oliver Bates engaged the same day was Timothy Cummings, drummer.

In Johnathon Minot's Company cousin Zaccheus Wright was first lieutenant in command, and Amos Wright, his brother Jacob, son of our Jacob Wright was corporal, and James Wright private.

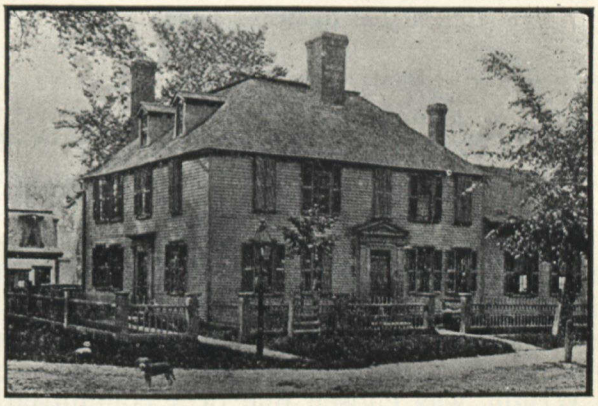
CONCORD BRIDGE

*The Bridge at Concord where the first armed resistance took place.*

MERIAM'S CORNER

*Where our Wright and Cummings ancestors fired upon the British*

*The British Troops retreating from the Old North Bridge*
*were here attacked in flank by the men of Concord*
*and neighboring towns and driven under*
*a hot fire to Charlestown.*



WRIGHT'S TAVERN

*This tavern was run by one of our kinsmen*

*One of the first places of interest that attracts the visitor entering Concord Square is the quaint old hostelry known for generations as Wright's Tavern. The town records show beyond the peradventure of a doubt that it was erected in 1747, and a study of its interior, with its generous old fire-places, deep wainscotting and low ceilings, emphasizes the truth of the records. But it is not alone its age that makes it appeal to the sight-seer. The old tavern has a history that adds greatly to its interest. Prior to the Revolution, in its capacity of Town Tavern, it was the rendezvous of the earnest agitators of the great conflict to come, while on April 19 it was the place, by appointment, at which the Minute Men were to meet in case of an alarm being given of the approach of the British. Later in the day, when the Minute Men had gone to the Battle Ground, Colonel Smith of the 10th British Regiment made the Tavern his headquarters. The story is told, whenever mention is made of the Wright Tavern, that Major Pitcairn, while stirring his toddy with his fingers, on that eventful Nineteenth of April, boasted to the officers and men about him: "In this way we will stir the blood of the damn rebels before night."*

*Pitcairn stirring the brandy*

## NINE WRIGHTS RALLIED ROUND ROBINSON AT CONCORD

## TEN FOUGHT LATER IN THE REVOLUTION

On June 14th, 1776, the selectmen sent three delegates to the General court, instructing them that to say that nothing short of independency would satisfy the town.

In 1777 Zac. Wright was chosen one of a committee to look after the families of the men killed in battle. In 1778 the town voted for the perpetual union of the thirteen states of America, and they instructed their representatives in Congress to vote that way.

In 1781 the town, including 1200 persons, was divided into three classes to provide soldiers for the army. Zac. Wright was at the head of Class One. The taxes were heavy on those 1200. Besides the war tax, there were the State Silver Tax, the Single rate, Silver Money Rate, Corn rate, Beef rate, Continental rate, Town rate, Minister rate, and Highway rate.

In 1781 Zac. Wright was on the Committee of Correspondence with Boston, the highest honor in town. In 1783 Great Britain acknowledged the independence of the United States, leaving that country impoverished, and its finances ruined. The Congress in that year was instructed to prevent British sympathisers returning to Massachusetts, and as the coutry groaned under an immense debt, to be frugal.

According to an alphabetical list compiled, ten Wrights are mentioned as serving in the Revolutionary war, but there were, undoubtedly, more. The list is as follows: Abraham Wright, Amos. Ezekial, James, Joseph, Jonas, Oliver, Peletiah, Peter, Stephen, and Zaccheus Wright. Abraham was grandson of our Jacob, and son of Ephraim; Amos, son of Eleazer and grandson of of third John; James, son of Simeon, grandson of our third John; Joseph, son of our Jacob; Jonas, son of Thomas and grandson of our third John; Benjamin and Peletiah, sons of Jacob; Oliver, son of my great-great-grandfather, John; and Peter, son of Thomas, grandson of our third John.

In 1776, in Jonathan Minot's company, was Henry Wright, grandson of John Wright and Mary Stevens and son of Henry Wright, also Joseph Wright son of Jacob Wright, my great-great grandfather. In the company of Zacchareous Wright there was Stephen Wright, who was present at the battle of White Plains, 1776. He was grandson of John and Hannah Fletcher, and son of Henry Wright. In Captain Fletcher's company, 1776, there was Peter Wright, who was grandson of John and Hannah Fletcher, and son of Thomas. In Jonathan Minot's company, Amos Wright served from Dec. 1776 to May 1777. He was grandson of John and Mary Stevens, and son of Ebenezar. In Captain Butterfield's company there was Abraham Wright and Ebenezar, grandson of John and Mary Stevens and son of Ebenezar. In Oliver Bate's regiment there was Jos. Wright, son of Jacob, my ancestor, and Peletiah and Ephraim, also sons of Jacob, so that they would be my great-great uncles. In Captain Parker's regiment there was Jonas Wright, grandson of John and Hannah Fletcher, and son of Thomas. He is described as nineteen years of age, and five feet four in stature. In Colonel Brook's company, Concord, 1777 and 1779, Peter Wright, sergeant, served for two years and was paid £91 12s. 9d. by the continental Congress. He was grandson of John Wright and Hannah Fletcher, and son of Thomas. In Colonel Reed's regiment, which went to the relief of General Gates, there were Ezekial and Abraham Wright. In Captain Isaac Wood's company 1778, there was Abel Wright, grandson of John and Hannah Fletcher, and son of Thomas Wright.

On May 25th, 1783, Zach. Wright was chosen one of a committee to take into consideration the new form of Government, submitted for the independent colonies.

The town accepted the Declaration of Rights from Congress, with the exception of Clause 3, to the effect that the State should control the Church. They would not stand for that: They said it would lead impiety. They agreed as to the liberty of the press; that ministers be exempt from taxation. They wished to substitute the following: "That all men have a natural and inalienable right to worship God according to their own conscience, etc." Westford did not prevail. The Boston convention decided that the Church and State should not be separated. Westford was ahead of its time, that was all. After about fifty years, in 1883, Congress amended this Clause 3.

## WESFORD WAS ALL WRIGHT

It would be tedious to enumerate the names of all the children and grand

children born to John Wright and his two wives in Chelmsford and Westford, sufficient to say that in five generations, and in a period of about 125 years, 303 Wrights were born, and this is only counting the male issue that is in the name of Wright. If the same record had been kept up since, and the Wrights have not migrated extensively, no wonder passing commercial travelers through that town said that one can never make a mistake in speaking to a stranger, that he is sure to be a Wright.

A few more notes regarding the Wrights, and the Cummings' line will be taken up.

## WRIGHTS AS CIVIL SERVANTS

### ZACCHEUS BECAME WESTFORD'S FIRST CITIZEN

Regarding our kinsman, Zaccheus Wright: He rose much in public favor after the Revolution, he being representative at the General Court at Boston for the following years, 1777, 1788, 1789, 1791, 1792, 1793 and 1794. In 1794 he was made Justice of Peace, and held the position until 1803, He died March 20, 1811, aged 72, and the record call him Zaccheus Wright, Esquire, which they have done in no other case noticed.

In 1742 Henry Wright, brother of our Jacob, was selectman, and again in 1753. In 1765 the son of this Henry Wright was selectman, Henry, Jr., and in 1766 Zaccheus was selectman, and Henry Jr., Treasurer, and in the following years Zaccheus was selectman: 1767, 1769, 1770, 1771, 1772, 1773, 1775 and 1776.

Zaccheus must have been a man of extraordinary talents to be in such great demand in the public service. He does not appear to have married, and he evidently devoted all his time to the interests of his fellow citizens and the town of his birth, and the State of Massachusetts. The Wrights, being so numerous, naturally were connected by marriage with a great many Massachusetts families. The Adams family gave two presidents to the United States. Esther Adams, of this family, married one of our kinsmen, Henry Wright.

## FAMILIES THE WRIGHTS MARRIED INTO

The Proctor family was a very prominent one. They were active in the Revolution and in town affairs. Thomas Wright, grandson of the third John, married Mary Proctor. Ten Proctors fought in the Revolution. Esther Wright married James Proctor in 1783, and Sarah Wright married John Proctor in 1771. Robert Prescott, who married Jane Heldrith, 1645, settled at Concord, Mass. In 1771 Peletiah Wright, son of our Jacob, married Alice Powers, and his brother Ephraim married Abigail Whittmore. The Prescotts were a noted family. Colonel William was at the forefront in the Revolution, and his regiment occupied the trenches at Bunker's Hill. Abram was Boston representative for years. In 1779 Zach. Wright, J. P. married Oliver Wright, son of John my great-great grandfather, to Dolly Prescott. In 1787 Stephen Wright, son of the third John, was married to Sarah Prescott. One Abigail Wright was married to Ebenezar Prescott, and another Abigail to David Prescott, while George Wright married Mary Ann Prescott. In 1788 there

were married by Zach. Wright, J. P., Sarah Wright, daughter of our fourth John, and John Hadlock. The founder of the Prescott family was John Prescott, who married Mary Platt, Standish, England, and landed in Boston 1640. Nathan Wright and Ann Trowbridge were married by Zach Wright, J. P. Nathan Wright's signature appears in the Polly Wright Bible on the fly leaf.

Fletcher: Lydia Wright married Andrew Fletcher, and Oliver Wright, grand daughter of our third John Wright, married Samuel Fletcher, who fought in the revolutionary army. The founder was Robert Fletcher, who came from England to Concord, Mass., in 1630.

Hildrith: Rhoda Hildrith married Levi Wright, Dorcas Hildrith married Simeon Wright, son of our Jacob, in 1737. In Hudson's history of the first resistance ot Concord Bridge, there are three men mentioned as being foremost in the fight: Col. Robinson, Major Butterick, and private Oliver Hildrith. There were ten Hildrith's who fought in the revolution. The founder of the family on this side of the Atlantic was Richard, who received the freedom of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, May 10, 1643.

Adams: Esther Adams married Henry Wright, son of our third John The founder was Henry Adams, who settled in Braintree, Mass., 1630. He gave two presidents to the United States. Samuel Adams was Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts for two years, and Governor for one year, Jonas Prescott was representative at Boston for ten years, C. P. Wright was representative in 1845, and Oliver Wright 1851.

Minot: James Wright married Mary Minot, 1757; Samuel Wright married Mary Minot, 1744; Jonathan Minot was captain of his company.

Butterfield: Ruth daughter of John Wright the Third, married Robt. Butterfield, 1750; Mary, daughter of our Jacob Wright, married Elizor Butterfield, 1749; Jacob, Jr., son of our Jacob Wright, married Lucy Butterfield, 1755; Reuben Butterfield was captain of a revolutionary company in 1777. Two other Butterfields fought in the revolution. The founder was Nathaniel and Benjamin. They settled in Wesford from Woburn, 1738.

Stevens: Deliverance Stevens married Ebenezar Wright in 1730. He was a son of our third John. Samuel Stevens married Ruth Wright, 1731. The Stevens were very intimate in my grandmother's family. One little Stevens girl of nine, worked a beautiful sampler for my grandmother, which I still have, and the Stevens family gave my grandmother Cross a large gold brooch, with the hair of the individual members of the Stevens family cleverly set therein, with the initials in tiny gold letters, designating whose hair it was. I have the brooch also.

Sarah Wright, daughter of our third John Wright, married Ebenezar Patch. Hannah Wright, daughter of our third John, married John Underwood, who was a revolutionary soldier. Joseph, the son of Joseph, was the founder of the family. He was first heard of at Reading, 1681. Ebenezar Wright, grand son of the third John, married Susanna Ayres. Ruth Wright, daughter of John the second, married John Knight, Sarah, daughter of John Wright the second, married Samuel Porter, killed at the Sudbury fight. Deborah, sister

of Ruth Wright, married Jas. Barnes, killed at the Sudbury fight. The sisters, were, no doubt, widowed on the same day. In April, 1775, when the first call to arms was made, Barnes and Oliver Bates had command of all the Westford men. Four Minots fought in the revolution. Mary Minot was sister of Captain Jonathan Minot, who led his army in the first fight at Concord. Lieut. Zaccheus Wright and James Wright, were in his company. The founder of the family in America was George Minot, of Dorchester, Mass., son of Thomas Minot of Essex, England.

Heald: Joseph, son of our Jacob Wright, married Dorothy Heald. Ephraim and Oliver Heald, who fought in the revolution, were both brothers of Dorothy. The founder was Josiah Heald, of Westford, 1729.

From the history of Westford, the brothers and sisters of Oliver Bates died of smallpox. He was born in 1720, and married in 1744 Ruth Wright, daughter of Ebenezar Wright (son of our third John) and Hannah his wife. At the head of his company as captain, he pursued the British from Concord Bridge, and received a wound which caused his death July 4, 1775. Our Jacob's sons, Peletiah and Ephraim, and Joseph, Jr., were all in this regiment, Joseph being sergeant, proof positive that they were in the thick of the first fight with the British.

Thus it will be seen that in every Wright home, whether it was mother or father, daughter or son, prayers were being offered up for the safety of loved ones in those tragic days of the revolution.

The Wrights were prolific pioneers raising up stalwart sons to protect the fireside from savage tribes, to fight Britain's battles, to mark out pathways, to lay down foundations for future generations and to aid in the up-building of a new nation

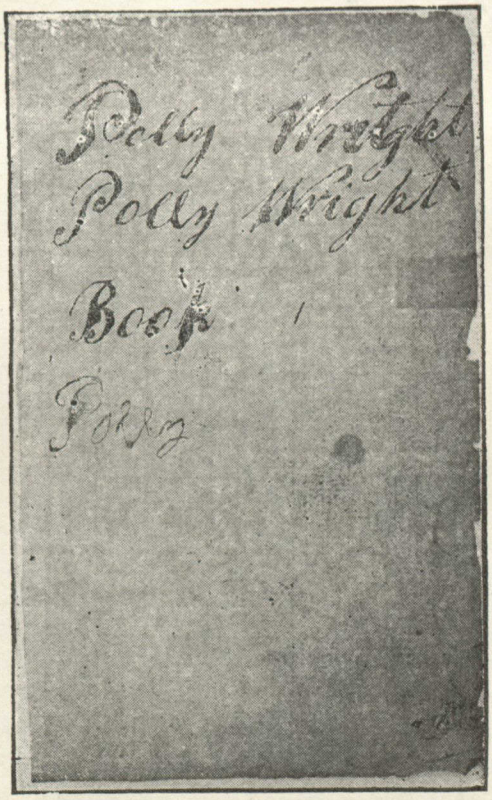
# THE WRIGHT BIBLES.

John Wright
A.D. 1773
Lavi Wright Oliver Wright

Westford March 14. 1796-
Amera Wright

Polly Wright
of Westford March 14 1796-

JOHN WRIGHT'S BIBLE




POLLY WRIGHT'S BIBLE

John Wright

John Wright his Book

Life is the time to Love
the Lord the time to
insure the great
and while the lamps
holds out to burn
the vilest sinner
may return 1783

John Wright

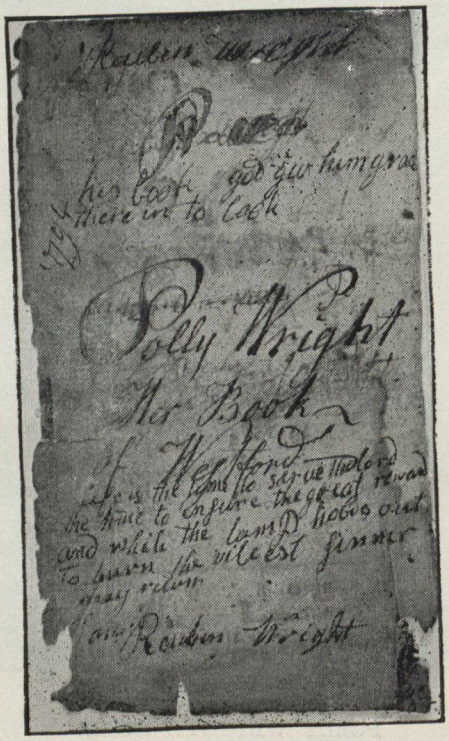
Anna 1-46

Anna Wright

Anna Wright

Susan

JOHN WR.GHT'S BIBLE




RUEBEN WRIGHT'S BIBLE

## WRIGHT BIBLES

Three Wright Bibles have fallen into my possession through my mother.

No. 1. The bible of John Wright who married Sarah Lawrence. On the blank leaf is the following: John Wright—His Book

"Life is the time to love the Lord
The time to earn the great reward
And while the lamp holds out to burn
The vilest sinner may return."

Wesford, 1789—The name of Anna Wright, his daughter, is also written in the book.

No. 2. Reuben Wright, a great uncle to Sarah's children, born 1734. On the front page Reuben Wright has written his name and the date 1773, as follows: Reuben Wright—His Book. May the Lord give him grace therein to look. After this Polly Wright evidently took possession and her name is written in several places. She was the first child of John Wright and Sarah Lawrence, and in our family this bible was known as "The Polly Wright Bible.'

No. 3. Ebenezar Wright, born 1740, another great uncle of John Wright's children. On the back page was written Ebenezar Wright—His Bible, 1804. Polly however also captured this bible for her name appears on the front page, where she has copied the verse written in the bible of her father, John Wright.

Elizabeth Wright, lovingly called "Betsy," was married on October 6th, 1799, to Amos Cummings. Zaccheus Wright, then Justice of Peace, officiating. From this marriage sprang another line, their daughter Caroline marrying my grandfather, Calvin B. Cross.

---

## CUMMINGS.

### ISAAC CUMMINGS

### GENERATION I

Isaac Cummings was the progenitor of the race in America. He undoubtedly left Old England for New England owing to religious persecution. Tradition says, however, that his family were from Scotland. According to this tradition, Isaac Cumins (as he spelt his name), was descended from "Red Cumin" of Badenoch, in Invernesshire. Here the clan flourished from 1080 to 1330. The first of the name who figured prominently was slain with Malcolm III in 1093, leaving two sons, John and William. From John all the Cumins of Scotland are said to have descended. Sir John, the Red Cumyn of Comyn, was the first Lord of Badenoch, and in 1240 was ambassador from Alexander II to Louis IX. His son John, called the Black Lord of Badenoch, vowed to support Queen Margaret, daughter of Alexander

III., and at her death he became an unsuccessful competitor for the crown of Scotland, as the son and heir of John, who was the son and heir of David, King of Scotland.

Another tradition runs :—Comins, Comyngs, Comyns, Comyn, Cumings, Cummings, a family which rose to great power in Scotland and England.

In 1445 one branch gave birth to the historian, Phillip de Comins, and another branch followed William the Norman to the conquest of England. Robert de Cumins, with 700 horse, seized Durham for William. His nephew, William, became Chancellor of Scotland. The family obtained the earldom of Angus and Athol.

Another John Comyn, son of the Earl of Badenoch, was an unsuccessful competitor for the Crown of Scotland. He was defeated by Bruce in a pitched battle in 1306. Those who were not slain in battle took refuge in England, and married into the best families.

Another tradition is from an educated American in Rome, who states that the family is very old, and was first heard from in Lombardy, Italy, in the fourth century. It then came over the Alps, and settled in the north part of France, where was founded the town of Cummines, where lived Phillip of Cummins, the father of Ancient History. Then they went to Scotland, England and Ireland. There is much more to this effect, but it will be more interesting to commence the tracing of our own American line.

Strangely enough, Isaac Cummings, the founder, was known as "Goodman" Isaac Cummings. No doubt, the prefix was given to him as a title by courtesy, owing to his goodness of character.

The first mention of Isaac Cummings is in the records of Essex County, where the clerk of Watertown notes that Isaac Cummings has received a grant of thirty-five acres in the earliest general land grant of 1636, called the "great dividends."

The town clerk of Ipswich also records that he owned a planting lot in Reedy Marsh in that town in 1638. In 1639 he owned a house in Ipswich village, next to Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, and was then known as a Commoner. In that year he sold land on the highway leading to Jeffrey's Neck. He was made a freeman May 18th, 1642, and was a proprietor in Watertown the same year, and at Topsfield afterwards, where he was Commoner with thirty others. Commoners were those who had a right to commonage or cattle.

In 1652 Isaac Cummings for thirty pounds bought 150 acres of land from Samuel Symonds. The farm was in Topsfield. It ran along each side of Howletts Brook. On March 28th, 1854, John Fuller brought suit against him. March 2nd, 1656, Isaac Cummings was witness against Wm. Douglas. March 1657, Isaac Cummings was sued for debt by Zerobabell Phillips, of Ipswich. On Dec. 13, 1656, Isaac Cummings brought suit against John Fuller, evidently a counter suit. All these law suits did not seem to hurt his standing, for he continued to prosper, and to be designated as "Goodman" Cummings. He was on the Grand Jury in 1675, and was moderator of the town Selectmen in in 1676. He died two years afterwards.

His last will and testament is of peculiar interest. It will be remembered in those days even lords and ladies spelt quaintly.

## THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF ISAAC COMINS, SENIOR

Original Spelling

I, being sencable of my approaching desolution, being att present weak in body yet perfect in my understanding, having by the grace of god bene helped to provid for my future state in another world; do now in ordering what god hath been pleased to bestow upon me of the blessings of this life, take care and order, that in the first place my debts be duly payd, nextly I doe by this my last will and testament confirme to my son Ifaas (Isaac) the ten acres of division land on the south side of the great river be more or less; nextly I doe giue vnto my son in law John Jewett ten pounds part in cattle and part in hovshovld goods. Next I do will and bequeath to my grandson Isaac, the son of my son Isaac, one year old heifer, one little sow, the indian corn he has planted for himself and the flax whiche he hath sowne, item I doe giue unto him my chest, the second in bignes, the lock and key, my history book, (books were scarce in those days) with such books as are his owne is a bible and testament, item I doe giue him ten povds to be payed at seuenteen years of age in Covntry pay, item I doe giue unto my son in law John Pease thirty povds to be payed out of the stock of cattle and hovshovld goods as much as may be att present, and the rest in two years, item, I doe make my son John my sole executor and doe giue unto him my hovse and lands being forty acres more or less, consisting in of vp-land and meadows with all the privileges and emolvments and apvrtainces therevnto belonging provided that this land shall stand bond in part and in wholl for the payment of these legacyes and in case the said legacyes shall not be paid according to this my will, the land shall be sovld and payment made out of the price thereof, and the remainder shall be the executors my will further is if any of these my children shall throvgh discontent att what is done for them in this my will; cause trovble to arise to the executor then there shall be nothing payed to him or them but the legacy or legacyes willed to them shall return too and remain in the hands of the executor as his proper right.
dated the eighth of the third month 1677.

My desire farther is that Isaac and Thomas Dorman would take care that this my will be duly performed.

Witness.

(signed) Isaac Cumings, Sr.
the mark x of John Poor, Sr.
Thomas Dorman
Isaac ffoster
Probated June 14, 1677

The inventory of chattels and household goods left by the founder of the Cummings race in America is sufficiently interesting to print in full, and it suggests to the imagination the personal appearance of this progenitor of ten thousand Cummings looked in the days of long ago, and also how the old homestead was furnished and the value of chattels.

| | Pounds | Shlgs. | Pence |
|---|---|---|---|
| Greay sute.. .. .. .. .. .. .. | 2 | | |
| Cloth sute.. .. .. .. .. .. .. | 3 | 15 | |
| 6 yards of cloth, with buttons, silk and thread as they cost at the merchants.. .. .. .. | 1 | 19 | 3 |
| An old Grat Coat 9s wascot 6s.. .. .. .. | | 15 | |
| A payer of Gren brchs & two payer drs .. .. | | 09 | |
| 3 payer shoos 1s : 5 payer stokins 8s.. .. .. | | 09 | |
| 4 shirts 10s, seven caps 7s, one silk cape 4s.. .. | 1 | 01 | |
| 10 bands 10s, 7 handcovehrs 3s.. .. .. .. | | 13 | |
| 4 hates 8s a cloth hood & startups 1 : 6 .. .. | | 09 | 6 |
| a fether beed & bolser & pillow.. .. .. .. | 4 | | |
| a nu couerlit 24s an old couerlet 5s.. .. .. | 1 | 09 | |
| Curtins & valants, beedsted cord and matt.. .. | 1 | 19 | |
| a smale beed with a pillow & a rugge.. .. .. | 1 | 15 | 6 |
| one payer sheets 30s & other payer 16s .. .. | 1 | 05 | |
| 3 pillow bers (?) 6s, 3 napkins 3s 6s.. .. .. | | 09 | 6 |
| 2 table cloths 5s 6s, 7 towels 5s 6s.. .. .. | | 11 | |
| two sacks and willit (?) one bage.. .. .. .. | | 10 | |
| 3 small remnents of cloth.. .. .. .. .. | | 02 | 6 |
| flax and tow .. .. .. .. .. .. | | 06 | |
| 6 pounds cotton woole .. .. .. .. .. | | 06 | |
| a broad howe 2s, a broad howe 3s 6s.. .. .. | | 05 | 6 |
| an iron foot (?) 1s 6d ; 3 hay forks 4s 6d .. .. | | 06 | |
| an iron spitt 3s 7 an ades 5s a hand saw 2s 6d .. | | 10 | 6 |
| axe 3s 6d & old spad 3s botle & 4 wedgis 6s .. .. | | 12 | 6 |
| a mare 40s yearling colt 15s sadle, panel with bridle & gurte & crooper 20s.. .. .. .. .. | 3 | 15 | |
| Brass pot 20s iron pott 9s 2 payer potthooks .. | 1 | 12 | |
| an old kettle 6s—3s 6d brass candle sticks 4s potlid 1s | | 14 | |
| pewter 18s tine 9d 1 glac 1s (glass was scarce) 5 spons 2s .. .. .. .. .. .. | 1 | 01 | 9 |
| earthen wrre 6s 8d tramel tongs Bellis 12.. .. | | 18 | 8 |
| hamer pinchers 5s fann 3s chern 5s.. .. .. | | 13 | |
| a nu powdering tub (?) 3s 6d 4 paiels 8s 8d.. .. | | 11 | 2 |
| 2 Kelors (?) 4s old o powdering tub 1 s 2 barels 2s | | 07 | |
| half bushel ; peck ; half peck.. .. .. .. | | 03 | 6 |
| 4 trays 4s 4 bouls 4s dishes and ladle 8s 8d one doz. tranchers 1s 2 barels 5s .. .. .. .. | | 06 | |
| 3 siues 3s 3 thayers 7s little table and form.. .. | | 14 | |
| a desk 6s 1 chest 21s 6d two old chests 4s.. .. | 1 | 01 | 6 |
| 3 books 10s a chest 5s two books 10s.. .. .. | 1 | 05 | |
| Corn 10s Malt 6s, baker 3s kneding trof 2s.. .. | 1 | 01 | |
| A Worming pan and friing pan .. .. .. | | 10 | |
| eight swine .. .. .. .. .. .. | 5 | | |
| 3 cows 12 pounds ; two year old ster, yearling .. | 10 | 06 | |
| howsing and lands with all priueledges & appurten- | | | |

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| ances, upland and meadow is about forty acres.. | 100 | | |
| depts due .. .. .. .. .. .. | 4 | | |
| | 125 | 12 | |
| (presumably cash on hand).. .. | 40 | 09 | 6 |
| | 166 | 1 | 6 |
| John Whipple | | | |
| John Howe | | | |
| Depts due from the estat about .. .. .. | 19 | 16 | 6 |

John Comings testified on oath before the Worshipfull Samuell Symonds Esq. Dep. ; Governor & maior (Mayor) Gen'll (General) Esq. & the clerk being present the 14th June 1677 and testifiee on oath this to be a true Inventory of the estate of his late father deceased to the best of his knowledge & if more appeare to add the same.

As attest. Sgnd Robert Lord Cler.

What an interestiug key this is to that old world in which Isaac Comings Sr., lived ; How many queries it suggests ! What a train of thought it starts ! Isaac Comings was a well-to-do farmer, and that his house was one of the chief places in his village. 230 years ago, he had rugges, brass candlesticks, brass pots, feather beds, coverlids, table cloths, napkins, hand covers (handkerchiefs) which I am confident in those days were luxuries. Some may be startled at the spelling of Isaac Sr., and Jr. I have the copy of a letter written by Sir Robert Cross, (a kinsman) to the then Lord Salisbury, and the spelling in that letter is far more phonetic, astounding and abbreviated than it was in Isaac Comings' will.

Isaac Comings, Sr., was born 1601, and died May, 1677. I have before me a book, written by A. O. Cummings, 614 pages, giving a detailed account of two thousand families, spreading from the original stock, and my own line is traced in this volume without a break through six generations, from 1601 to the death of Amos Cummings, 1865, 264 years. I have to thank the author for his many kind letters of explanation and good will written to me during my researches.

## JOHN WAS NOT COMMENDED BY THIS CHURCH

The children of Isaac Comings Sr., were John, born 1630 ; Isaac, born 1633 ; and Elizabeth, born 1661. Elizabeth married John Jewett, of Rowley, and Isaac, Sr., gave him as a marriage portion ten acres of land. She died two years after her father, 1679. My ancestor was John, son of Isaac, Sr., and his first born.

## GENERATION II.

This John was born 1630, and married Sarah, daughter of Ensign Thomas and Alice (French) Hewlett, of Ipswich. He received by his father's will the homestead, consisting of forty acres, and barns, orchards and fences, and in 1680 sold the same to Edward Nealand. This farm was bounded by land of this Nealand, by Tobija Perkins and the Ipswich Common Land (cattle run).

About 1658 he removed to Boxford, Mass. He was made freeman in 1673. Both he and his wife were members of the church at Topsford, Mass., 1685. The Topsford church records state, "Voted dismission to John Cumming and his wife." John Cummings without commendation (evidently John Cummings did not altogether agree with the minister), and his wife, with commendation, to the church to be shortly gathered at Dunstable. He removed with his family to Dunstable about 1680, where he was one of the first settlers. He was a selectman in 1682 and a member of the church 1684. He died Dec. 1, 1700, and his wife six days after.

His wife, Alice (French) Howlett, was the daughter of Sergt. Thomas Howlett, and the widow of Thomas French. This Thomas Howlett is said to have arrived at Ipswich with Winthrop's fleet in 1630. He was a planter in 1633. A deputy to the General Court in Boston 1630, and freeman March, 1633. He was one of the first settlers in Ipswich. His homestead adjoined the lot of Thomas Hardy. He was a Sergeant in the early Indian War, and subsequently an Ensign. His wife, Alice (French) Howlett, died June 26th, 1666.

The children of John Cummings and Alice, his wife, were: John, 1657; Thomas, 1658; Sarah, who married into this same French family; Abraham; Isaac; and Ebenezar, killed by the Indians, November 2nd, 1688, and not buried until the following November 28th; William and Eleazar, twins; and Benjamin born 1673; Samuel, 1677.

## GENERATION III.

### JOHN (JOHN—ISAAC)

John Cummings married Sept. 30, 1680, Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Brackett) Kinsley, born in Braintree, 1657. She was called "Goody Cummings." They settled in Nathaniel Cutler's place in the south part of Nashau, but lived for a time in Dunstable. While at Nashau in 1706, their home was attacked by Indians. His wife was killed, but he escaped with a broken arm to a swamp about half a mile south and near the present State line, and remained in hiding over night. Then he made his escape to Farwell Block House. (From Belknap's history).

He fought the Indians from his house, no, doubt, until his wife and the children were with him killed. He had probably sent the younger ones to the Block House earlier in the day. Their residence was half a mile east of Dunstable—"John saw military service. His house was one of the seven fortified houses of Dunstable 1711."

It would be interesting to know what that military service was. His wife and children killed by the Indians. (If he was a man of spirit) would make him a terror to hostile savages.

## THE PIGWACKET MASSACRE—1711.

THE AUTHOR

Wailing night wind through the forest; moaning in a mournful mood.
And the red-men murder-minded, stealthy-creeping through the wood.

In the cabin children praying just before they go to rest
While the mother draws them fondly, fondly, to her tired breast.
So she hears them softly praying, 'Now I lay me down to sleep'
Hears the little children saying, 'Pray the Lord my soul to keep.'

Wails the night wind through the forest. Moaning in a mournful mood.
Comes the red-men murder-minded, suddenly from out the wood.
Comes towards the cabin shouting, the Pigwacket battle cry
Then the awful tragic moment, 'twas a pity so to die.

Mothers heard the children praying 'If I die before I wake'
Heard the little children saying 'Pray the Lord my soul to take'
So the children finished praying just before they went to rest
But their sleeping was eternal, and their souls were with the blest.

Let us draw the veil of pity closely o'er the murder place
There was many a tragic chapter in the passing of our race.

John Cummings wife's grandfather, Stephen Kinsley, the emigrant died 1673, was made freeman 1640 was representative to General Court, a distinguished honor in those days, 1650. He was ordained a ruling elder of the Braintree church, 1639.

Samuel Kinsley or (Kingsley) son of Stephen, was born about 1636. He lived at Braintree and in Milton. He married Hannah Brackett, dying June 26th, 1662.

Captain Richard Brackett died in 1631, aged 80. In 1632 Samuel lived in Boston; and in Braintree, 1641; Freeman, 1636; joined the Artillery, 1639; ordained deacon, 1642; was town clerk for many years; and was finally captain of the Braintree Trained Band.

John Cummings, Jr., and Elizabeth, his wife, had eight children :—John, 1682; Samuel, 1684; Elizabeth, who married into the French family; Hannah, 1690; Ebenezer, (who, like his mother. was massacred by the Indians in 1724, with seven others, in another awful tragedy of which absolutely no details are given); Anna, 1698; Lydia, 1701; and William, 1702, (but four years old when his mother 'Goody' Cummings, was killed by the Indians. This William is our ancestor. If his father, as suggested, had not taken him to the Block House for safety, and he had met with the same fate as his mother and the other children, what then kinsmen?

(DEACON WILLIAM AVENGES HIS MOTHER'S DEATH. HIS LIFE SAVED BY AN ACCIDENT.)

## GENERATION IV.

## DEACON WILLIAM, SON OF JOHN JR. AND ELIZABETH (JOHN ISAAC)

Deacon William Cummings, son of the second John, was a prominent churchman. The Indians stirred up all the red blood in those Anglo Saxon pioneers, and they were not fighting them for glory, but to protect their homes and their firesides. William married Sarah, daughter of William and Esther Harwood, grand-daughter of Nathaniel Harwood. His wife was born in Dunstable 1706.

Nathaniel Harwood was born in England 1626, and his wife, Elizabeth, lived several years in Boston and removed about 1665 to Concord. He was made Freeman 1690 and died at Concord Feb. 7, 1716. His wife died April 25, 1715.

William Harwood, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Harwood, was born in Boston, March, 28, 1665. In his infancy the family removed to Concord, where Nathaniel, the father, died February 7, 1715-6. William, the son, married at Concord, May 11, 1692, Esther Perry, born August 11, 1674, daughter of Obadiah and Esther (Hassell) Perry, see. About 1700, they removed to Dunstable. He was a worthy man and a valued citizen. He was elected to office on many occasions. He died September 17, 1740. Esther, his wife, died October 8, 1747, Gravestones. Three children were born at Concord, and seven at Dunstable. Their gravestones are in the old cemetery at Nashau. They were :

1. Elizabeth, born July, 1694.
2. Esther, born January 10th, 1696-7 ; married in Concord, August 26, 1724, Joseph Baker of Marlboro.
3. John, born May 28, 1699. He was a soldier in Lovewell's third expedition and was killed at Pigwacket, May 8, 1725.
4. Thomas, born January 9, 1702. He was a prominent citizen.
5. Sarah, born June 26, 1706 ; married Dea. William Cummings, son of John and Elizabeth (Kinsley) Cummings.
6. Mary, born March 25, 1709 ; married Thomas Pollard of Dunstable. He was a son of Thomas and Sarah (Farmer) Pollard of Billerica,
7. Abigail, born April 9, 1710.
8. Rachel, born July 21, 1712.
9. Dorcas, born March 6, 1717 ; died December 11, 1723.
10. Lydia, born October 5, 1722.

John Harwood, born 1699, was one of Lovewell's muskateers. He was slain at Pigwacket, May 8, 1725. He was Sarah (Harwood) Cummings brother.

## HASSELL—PERRY

The Hassell and Perry lines have been given at some length for the purpose of showing how the families intermarried in those days which made it possible for the descendants of the New England Pioneers to have a common interest in so much that was good and great in their worthy kinsmen. These records also point out the great number who were killed by Indians.

Richard Hassell, born 1622, settled in Cambridge before 1643. He was admitted freeman, 1647. He and his wife, Joan, were early members of the church of Cambridge. In the division of Shawshin, now Billerica, by Cambridge in 1652, he received lot 69, of 60 acres. He removed to Billerica in 1676, and April 12, 1678, he was chosen "to inspect the lads on the Sabbath days." He removed from Billerica to Dunstable in 1679. He was an intelligent man and a worthy citizen. There is no record of his death.

CHILDREN

1. Elizabeth, born September 20, 1643; married November 1, 1661, Joseph Wright, born in Woburn about 1639, son of Dea. John and Priscilla Wright. He was a deacon and a selectman of Woburn. He died March 31, 1724; she died June 28, 1713. Eleven children.
2. Joseph, born September 20, 1645.
3. Esther, born December 6, 1648; married Obadiah Perry; married, second, Martin Townsend. See Perry family.
4. Alice, born about 1665, married Christopher Temple; married, second, Jacob Kendall. See Temple family.

Joseph Hassell, son of Richard, was born in Cambridge, September 20, 1645. He married August 21, 1667, Anna Perry, a daughter of William and Anna Perry of Watertown, In his life he was a good townsman and in the achievements of his descendants his name is boldy written in the annals of Dunstable. His daughter, Anna, was the mother of Capt. John Lovewell, his daughter, Abiah, was the mother of Col. Joseph Blanchard, and his granddaughter, Esther, was the wife of Col. Zaccheus Lovewell. Fox confuses this family with that of Richard, his father. Joseph Hassell and his wife and son, Benjamin, were slain by the Indians, September 2, 1691.

CHILDREN

1. Anna, born in Watertown, October 6, 1669; married December 7, 1686, John Lovewell. See Lovewell family.
2. Elizabeth, born in Concord, September 11, 1671; died June 19, 1672,
3. Abiah, born in Concord, May 13, 1673; married May 25, 1696, Capt. Joseph Blanchard. See Blanchard family.
4. Joseph, no record of birth.
5. Richard, captured by Indians during Queen Anne's war.
6. Benjamin, slain by Indians, 1691.

Joseph Hassell, son of Joseph, was born about 1675. He was a soldier under Lieut. William Tyng. His daughter, Esther, married Colonel Zaccheus Lovewell.

Benjamin Hassell, son of Joseph Hassell, Jr., was a soldier in Lovewell's third expedition. During the battle he left the field and returned to the fort. At the time he was censured he was the soldier whom Rev. Thomas Symmes refused to mention by name in his sermon. Subsequently he was a useful and respected citizen in Merrimack. His daughter, Adah, being the first child born in that town.

Elias, son of Benjamin, selectman, 1776. Signor of Association Test ; married Mary Morrill.

Deacon William, son of Elias, married Betsy Butterfield ; and secondly, her sister, Rhoda, (and widow of Nathan Powers.)

Jason, son of Benjamin. He served in Moore's Co.—Prescott's regiment. He was a Corporal in Capt. Peter Cross Company—(Probably a Cross Kinsman.)

## PERRY KILLED BY INDIANS.

Obadiah Perry, son of William and Anna Perry of Watertown ; married August 21, 1667, Esther Hassell, born Cambridge, December 6, 1648, daughter of Richard Hassell. See Hassell family. They lived a few years in Watertown and were one of the first families of Dunstable. On account of the exposure during King Philip's War, he removed to Concord and soon after, to Billerica. It is recorded in Billerica, "February 10, 1675-6, Obadiah Perry, belonging to Dunstable towne, now resident at Concord, but being inforced to remove from thence and not accounting it safe at ye present to remove to his owne at Dunstable, desiring at present to hire a house at Billerica, the selectmen, considering his condition, do grant him liberty to hire in this town."

He returned to Dunstable before 1680, and was there killed by the Indians, September 28, 1691. "Obadiah Perry and Christopher Temple dyed by the hand of our Indian enemies, September, the twenty eighth day in the morning." His widow, Esther, married second, August 30, 1693, Martin Townsend of Watertown. He died 1698.

Record is found of six children of Obadiah and Esther (Hassell) Perry.

1. Obadiah, born, Watertown, October 11, 1669.
2. Ebenezer, born, Watertown, November 20, 1671.
3. Esther, born, Watertown, August 11, 1674; married at Concord, May 11, 1692, to William Harwood. (See Harwood family.)
4. Samuel, born, Billerica, July 19, 1677 ; died November 25, 1677.
5. John, born, Dunstable, January 31, 1682.
6. Elizabeth, born, Dunstable, April 7, 1683.

## TO RETURN TO WILLIAM CUMMINGS, SON OF JOHN AND SARAH (HARWOOD) CUMMINGS.

He, William, was in the second expedition of the famous Captain John Lovewell, with his cousin, Jonathan Cummings, against the Peaquhat Indians. They left Dunstable Jan. 29, 1725, and triumphantly marched into Dover, and later into Boston, with ten Indian scalps stretched on hoops and elevated on poles, for which they received a bounty of one hundred pounds. William and Jonathan were also in the party of Captain Lovewell in his last and fatal expedition that left Dunstable about the sixteenth day of April, 1725, old style, which numbered forty-six men.

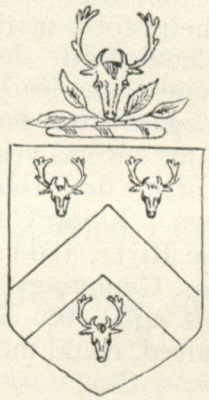
From "Potter's History of Manchester:"—"When out but a short time Toby, a friendly Indian, attached to the expedition, becoming lame was sent back, with great reluctance on his part, At Contoocook William Cummings, of Dunstable, became so lame in consequence of a wound receive fromd the

enemy sometime previous, that he was obliged to return home, his kinsman (Jonathan), returning with him to assist him on his way."

All the soldiers under Lovewell were grantees of land in reward for duty done. William Cummings was one of these grantees, of Suncook, now Pembroke, N.H. Soon after the grant he sold his interest in the township. He settled in that part of Dunstable now called Hudson, his farm lying on the Hudson River. He died 1757, his wife, 1769. If he had not come home lame, he would, undoubtedly, never have returned at all, for his company, perished.

William's children were :—Sarah, 1728 ; Ebenezer, 1730; JOHN HARWOOD, our ancestor, Dorcas, 1737 ; Rebecca, 1740 ; Joseph, 1742; Thaddeus, 1745.

John Harwood Cummings, son of Deacon William, was born April 4th, 1733, at Dunstable and died at Nottingham West, near Hampshire, or Hudson, as it is called at present, in 1767. He married at Groton, Mass,, May 5, 1763, Sarah, daughter of Benjamin and Sarah (Simons) Worcester.



Harwood Arms

John Harwood of Boston, Mass., 1645. Will proved in London 1685
Arms—Argent, a Chevron between three stags heads, cabossed sable
Crest—A stags' head, cabossed sable

## GENERATION V.

### JOHN HARWOOD CUMMINGS, SON OF DEACON WILLIAM CUMMINGS AND SARAH HARWOOD, (JOHN JR., JOHN SR., ISAAC)

Had issue: Benjamin, 1764 ; AMOS, my kinsman, born Sept. 11, 1767; John, who settled in New York ; and daughter, Elizabeth, 1773.

## GENERATION VI.

### AMOS P. CUMMINGS, SON OF JOHN HARWOOD CUMMINGS AND SARAH CUMMINGS, (WILLIAM, JOHN, JOHN, ISAAC)

Was born at Dunstable Sept. 11th, 1767. He married Elizabeth Wright, of Westford, Mass. She was born 1773, and died at Windsor (my mother's home), 1856, aged 83. He died Feb., 1865. Children : Lucinda, 1798 ; Be-

linda, 1802; Caroline R. (my grandmother), 1806; John Harwood, 1809; and Harriet, 1812." (History of Deerfield.)

And thus the Cummings line is as follows:

Isaac Cummings, born 1601; John Cummings, born 1630; John Cummings, born 1657; Deacon William Cummings, born 1702; John Harwood Cummings, born 1733; Amos Cummings, born 1767,

Before taking up the Cross line, it might be as well to record a few of the Cummings kinsmen who attained prominence in the Revolutionary War, etc.

Captain John Cummings was a prominent military man. He was grandson of our John the first. He died aged 72. Deacon Isaac, born 1633, was son of Isaac. He was sergeant in the British Colonial army. The British impressed him for the Narragansett expedition. Abraham, son of our first John, born Dunstable 1680, married our kinswoman, Elizabeth Wright, of Woburn. She had an extensive practice as midwife, and was distinguished for sagacity and energy. Thomas Cummings, grandson of Isaac, 1670, selectman at Boxford. Deacon John Cummings, son of our second John, born 1682, moderator first town meeting, Chelmsford, married into famous Adams family. He was selectman, and clerk of Chelmsford. Jonathan Cummings, grandson of our first John, was deacon and one of the leading men in the town of Merrimac, Mass. Ephraim Cummings, grandson of our second John, was moderator of the town of Nottingham West for several years, born 1706. Captain John Cummings, born 1698, grandson of our first John, was prominent in the militia and held various offices in the town. Elezar Cummings, born 1701, established the first ferry across the Merrimac River, and first hotel at Hudson, N.H. He was town selectman. Captain Jos. Cummings, adopted by Thomas Howlett at the age of twelve. He died in 1794, aged 102. He was strong mentally and physically, and when nearly one hundred, could mount his horse from the ground. He had 173 descendants.

Samuel Cummings, great-grandson of Isaac, married Prudence Lawrence of Groton, Mass., 1739. He signed the charter for Dunstable, Mass., and was first town clerk, Justice of Peace for Hollis, N.H., and town moderator or Mayor. In 1747 he was delegated to the General Court, New Hampshire. He held his commission of Justice of Peace from the king.

Lieut. Nathaniel Cummings, great-grandson of Isaac, born in Dunstable, soldier in Louisburg expedition.

Captain John Cummings, great-grandson of Isaac, revolutionary soldier, 1775, in Col. Prescott regiment.

Deacon John Cummings, first moderator of Westford, was son of second John. He married Elizabeth Adams. He was moderator of the first town meeting of Westford, clerk in 1736. He was very prominent in Westford affairs. His son, Lieut. John Cummings, married Sarah Lawrence, daughter of Elizor Lawrence of Littleton; so that father and son married into two famous families. He died at Hancock, aged 83. His daughter Abigail, married Jonathan Sawyer, and, strangely enough, this is the line of Mrs. Lorana Cross, of Lawrence, Mass.

Lieut. Benj. Cummings, grandson of second John, born Hollis, N.H., 1757, died aged 47. He was a minute man at Bunker Hill.

Nathaniel Cummings, great-great-grandson of our first John, was a minute man in Col. Prescott's Company, and reported on that fateful day, April 19, 1775.

Oliver Cummings, direct descendant from our first John, was a revolutionary soldier, being in his father's company as a rifler at White Plains.

Deacon Asa Cummings, revolutionary soldier, born at Ipswich, 1759, died aged 89. He was a prominent man at Albany, Me.

Daniel Cummings, direct descendant from Isaac, marched at the alarm, April 19, 1775.

Captain Free Cummings, born 1751, died aged 81, was minute man in Providence, R.I., Dec. 1776.

Moses, descendant of Isaac, was born at Ipswich, 1726, and married Esther Adams. He was remarkable chiefly as the son of Moses Cummings and Abigail Estey, whose mother was burned as a witch.

## EIGHT CUMMINGS SOLDIERS IN REVOLUTION

## MOSES CUMMINGS MOTHER BURNED AS A WITCH

In those days the belief in witchcraft generally prevailed, and thousands of innocent women were legally murdered as a result. Mary Estey was one of them. Where such a glaring error could exist amongst an enlightened people, it leads one to wonder if some of the beliefs almost universally shared by the peoples of the civilized world to-day, are not just as wrong, and will not be considered so in future ages.

Mary Estey's maiden name was Towne and she came from Norfolk, England. Her sister, Rebecca, on July 19, 1692, was found guilty, and executed as a witch. Mary was arrested April 21st, 1692, and kept in jail until May 18th, and released. On May 18th a second warrant was issued. She was called from her home at midnight and taken to Salem Jail, and placed in chains. She was tried, found guilty, and condemned to death, and on Sept., 1692, was executed with seven others.

Evidently the grandmother of Moses Cummings was a bright intelligent woman, and possessed an intellect of a superior mould to the blatant, ranting, religious fanatics around her. Her petition to governor Phipps is a master piece, and is worth re-producing. She said in her communication :—"The

humble petition of Mary Estey unto His Excellency William Phipps, and to the honored Judge and Bench now sitting in Judicature in Salem, and to the Rev. Ministers, humbly showeth that, whereas your poor and humble petitioner, be condemned to die, do humbly beg of you to take into your judicious and pious consideration that your poor and humble petitioner, knowing my own innocency, blessed be the Lord for it, and seeing plainly the wiles and subtility of my accusers, by myself cannot but judge charitably of others who are going the same way as myself, if the Lord steps not mightily in. I was confined a whole month upon the same account and then cleared by the afflicted persons, as some of your honors know, and in two days' time I was cried out upon them, and have been confined, and am now condemned to die. The Lord above knows my innocency then and likewise now, as the great day will be known to men and angels. I petition to your honors, not for my own life, because I know I must die, and my appointed time is set, and the Lord knows it is so, but if it be possible no more blood should be shed which cannot be avoided in the way and course you go in. I question not that Your Honors do to the utmost of your powers in the discovery and detecting of witchcraft and witches, and would not be guilty of innocent blood for the world, BY MY OWN INNOCENCY I KNOW YOU ARE IN THE WRONG WAY. I humbly beg that Your Honors examine these afflicted persons strictly and keep them apart for some time, and likewise to try some of these confessing witches, I being confident several of them have belied themselves and others, as will appear in the world to come, whither I am now going. I QUESTION NOT YOU WILL SEE AN ALTERATION IN THESE THINGS (prophesy). They say as myself and others have made a league with the Devil, we cannot confess. I know, and the Lord knows as well, they belie me, and so I question not they do others, I beg Your Honors not to deny this my humble petition from a poor dying innocent person."

It will be observed that she did not plead for her own life, and thus has been called by her descendants "The Self-Forgetful." After her execution her husband fought for years to have her good name restored. After twenty long years the General Court annulled the decision, and granted twenty pounds to the husband, to assist in defraying the expenses of his petition,—tardy and astoundingly inadequate reparation!

Dr. Palfry, in his history of New England, says: "The people of Massachusetts, like all other people of the seventeenth century, believed in witchcraft. They thought they had scripture for the belief, and knew they had law for it. The belief was common from the most learned to the uneducated. In 1484 Pope Innocent issued a Bull, punishing witchraft with death. Martin Luther wrote, 'I should have no compassion on these witches, I would burn them all.' Bishop Jewell, before Queen Elizabeth said, 'May it please your Grace, witches and sorcerers are increasing in our realm.' Lord Bacon, one of the wisest men that ever lived, acknowledged witchcraft as one of the declinations from religion. In 1664 Sir Matthew Hale ordered two witches to be hung. John Wesley said in effect, 'Giving up witchcraft is giving up the Bible.' During Cromwell's time sixty witches were hanged in Suffolk."

DEACON WILLIAM CUMMINGS

A LOVEWELL MUSKETEER

WHO DOUBLY AVENGED THE DEATH OF HIS MOTHER

There were pioneers among them, men of peace but still they'd fight
With their Bible in their left hand and their musket in their right
Oh! the Indian-time of murder, and of vengeance quick, condign
Kin were killed and the survivors were the forbears of our line
So these men of brawn and sinew took religion as their base
So we write them down WITH HONOR in the passing of our race

## THE LITTLE REBEL.

## ANOTHER IMMORTAL NAME ADDED TO OUR LIST OF KINSMEN. PRUDENCE (CUMMINGS) WRIGHT LEADS A COMPANY OF AMAZONS.

## DRESSED IN THEIR HUSBANDS CLOTHING THEY GUARD JEWETT'S BRIDGE AND ARREST A ROYALIST SPY.

## PRUDENCE REPRESENTS THREE OF OUR LINES, SHE WAS A CUMMINGS, A WRIGHT AND A GRAND-DAUGHTER OF A LAWRENCE.

Samuel Cummings, grandson of our second John, had a daughter, Prudence, who is historically mentioned in connection with the revolution. She married one of our kinsmen, David Wright, son of Samuel and Anna Lawrence Wright. The following is an abstract from "Loyalists of the American Revolution:" "After the departure of Col. Prescott's minute men, Mrs. David Wright, of Pepperell, Mrs. Jos. Shuttick and neighboring women collected at what is now Jewett's Bridge, over the Nasshau River between Pepperell and Groton, and, CLOTHED IN THEIR HUSBANDS APPAREL, left behind, and armed

with muskets, pitchforks, and other weapons, and having elected Mrs, Wright their commander, resolutely determined that "no foe to freedom" foreign or domestic, should pass that bridge. Soon there appeared Mr. Leonard Whiting on horseback, supposed to be treasonably engaged in carrying intelligence to the enemy. Whiting, by direction of Mrs. Wright, in her assumed position as sergeant of the Bridge Guard, was seized, taken from his horse, searched and detained as a prisoner. Despatches were found in his boots which were sent to the Committee of Observation at Groton." There now stands at the place where the incident took place, a stone two and a half feet by three and a half or four feet, with this inscription, 'Near this spot a party of patriotic women, under the leadership of Mrs. David Wright, of Pepperell, in April, 1775, captured Leonard Whiting, a tory, who was carrying treasonable despatches to the enemy at Boston. He was taken a prisoner to Groton, and the despatches taken to the Committee of Safety at Cambridge.' She died Dec. 2, 1823. He died 1819. Prudence Wright, Chapter D.A.R., of Pepperell, is named after her.

John Cummings, the great grandson of our first John, is interesting in as much as he married Sarah, daughter of Isaac and Rachel Howard, she being a member of the famous Howard family of England, and a direct descendant of King Edward I. They had two children, John and Willard, who, of course, share this distinction.

## THIRTY CUMMINGS KINSMEN FOUGHT IN THE REVOLUTION. SOME OF THEM ANSWERED THE FIRST CALL TO ARMS. AS A RACE THEY WERE OF FINE PHYSIQUE AND NOTED FOR LONGEVITY.

Amos Cummings, who married Elizabeth, daughter of John Wright and Sarah (Lawrence) Wright, died at my mother's home in his 98th year. He was six feet four inches and built in proportion.

## THE ELM OUTLASTS THE MAN. AN AGED CITIZEN.

### TAKEN FROM THE VERMONT JOURNAL.

Died, in Windsor, Feb. 6, 1865, Mr. Amos P. Cummings, in the ninety-eighth year of his age.

Mr. Cummings was born Sept. 11, 1767, in West Nottingham, N. H. In his seventh year he went from his home to live in Deerfield, Mass. This was before the revolutionary war. He remembered distinctly the beginning of the war, the excitement which was caused at Deerfield, by the intelligence of the first battle, and the efforts which were made to raise troops and equip them for the first Continental Army. There is standing in Deerfield an elm tree, which Mr. Cummings set out in May, 1775, two months before the declaration of Independence. Its trunk is fifteen feet and a half in circumference, and the tree formerly shaded one hundred and twenty-five feet of ground, though it has lost some of its branches.

In his thirteenth year he set out for Vermont with a family which was

moving to the town of Westerfield. On his way up, the party heard of the burning of Royalton, and on that account remained for a year or two in a place further down the river. He located in Windsor, Vermont, before the year 1800.

He joined the Congregational Church in his sixty-eighth year. His remarkably vigorous constitution enabled him to labor on the farm until his ninety-fifth year. He walked for a mile, and attended church on his ninety-fourth birthday. He became very familiar with the Scriptures, and liked to repeat a portion of them when he could no longer read. His last words were, "I am not afraid to die, because my God is with me."

Much of the information obtained regarding the early Cumings' was from a genealogy of the family by A. O. Cummings who claimed to have unearthed ten thousand descendants of the first pioneer Isaac of that name.

This claim was made years ago, and no doubt the number has been since materially increased. Isaac's descendants should be grateful to Mr. A. O. Cummings for his remarkable work.

As we read we marvel at the rapid growth of the human race and the wonder of it all, that the pioneer Isaac Cumings should have been able to give the heritage of his name to a thousand of his children's children unto the ninth and tenth generation.

GOING TO MARKET

1650—Isaac Cummings and Family—Ipswich, Mass.—1650

Isaac Cuming good old soul
Was born in 1601
Long, long ago, but I am told
His race is not yet run.
Not yet—indeed there seems no end
For this is what I hear
A thousand Cumingses descend
From this old pioneer.
And you who share the Cuming name
If this you'll have no doubt
The way you still keep 'Cuming' on
You'll never 'peter out.'

1390—Marriage of Sir William Crosse de Charlynge and Eleanor daughter of Ranulph of and Eleanor (Gamvil) Cotgreave (Lord de Hargrave Tarvin and Tattenham) 1390

Without wishing to appear flippant, it might be suggested that the split skirt had been introduced several centuries ago by the male portion of the human race.

## CROSS.

### SUB CRUCE SALUS

### THE FOUNDERS OF THE ENGLISH LINE FLOURISHED IN THE REIGN OF EDWARD I.

Cross—The family of De La Croys, de Cruce, Del Crosse, Crosses (spelled these ways in ancient deeds) were seated at Wigan Co., Lancaster, England, in the reign of the first Edward, 1230—1250; and about 1350 were seated at Crosse Hall. They were afterwards at Liverpool and Charlynch: (Patronimics Britannica Page 76.)

## WIGAN.

Camden writing in 1607 says—Here Dugless a small brook ; near which our Arthur (as Ninnius says) defeated the Saxons in a very memorable battle. Near the rise of it stands Wiggin, a town, formerly called Wibiggin as they affirm ; I have nothing to say of the name, but that the Lancashire men call buildings 'biggin' ; nor of the town, except that it is neat, and plentiful, and has a corporation consisting of Mayor and Burgesses, also that the rector of the church is, as I am lead to believe, Lord of the Town.

## THE FAMILY NAME OF CROSS.

The name was originally taken from the symbolic cross of the Christians. In the Crusades the cross-crosslet was used on the arms of the family. Their heraldic motto was 'sub cruce salus' (safety under the cross). The Maltese Cross in the beak of the heron is one of the few birds found in the early coats of arms.

## THE ENGLISH CROSSE FAMILY IS SEVEN CENTURIES OLD.

## LANCASTER AND SOMERSET CROSSES.

## LINKING UP THE LONG GENEALOGICAL CHAIN.

Undoubtedly the Crosses of Wiggin, Lancaster, were the ancestors of the Crosses of Crosse Hall, Lancaster, and they were in turn the ancestors of the Crosses of Charlynch, Somersetshire.

It has also been claimed that the descendants of John and William Cross of Haverhill, N.H., 1700, are of this Charlynch line.

It has been further asserted that the connecting link between the English and American Crosses was Robert Crosse, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass,, and that he had a son John Crosse, Sr., who married Ruth Swan and that these twain became the parents of the Crosses of Haverhill.

My attitude is as follows : I believe that my mother Elizabeth Caroline Cross (Goodman) descended from the Wiggan and Charlynch Crosses through Robert Cross, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass', and his descendant William Cross, of Haverhill.

I cannot prove these statements by documentary evidence, I can only affirm that I am satisfied to accept them as correct and to acknowledge the Charlynch Crosses as my English ancestors and Robert Cross, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass., as the founder of our American line.

It is probably of some importance that these assertions cannot be gainsaid. No, not with all the skill and resourcefullness of the most able genealogist of the day. It cannot be said 'here is the proof that you are wrong.' Unfortunately however the only evidence we can produce to back up our assertions is of a presumptive nature. For these reasons I feel it my duty to explain that while I am satisfied to enjoy whatever pleasure there is to be derived from reading the records of the illustrious English Crosses with the moral certainly

that they were (as Camden expresses it) "of our flock," I can do no more than to invite my Cross kinsmen to share my belief. As regards the presumptive evidence here introduced I hope it may prove as satisfactory to my readers as it is to me. It is no doubt wrong in many details—but in the essential points I believe it substantially correct.

The credit of binding together the weakened links must be given to Mrs. Lorana Cross, of Lawrence, Mass., a lady to whom is largely due whatever success may be attained by these earlier Cross memoirs.

There has hardly been a letter written, an article published or a book printed regarding the early history of the Cross family where it has not been found necessary to borrow the result of Mrs. Cross' labors. She is now 78 years of age but still actively following the bent of her inclinations in genealogical work. Many years ago she was colaborating in this field with kinsmen who have since passed away. Mrs. Cross remains, to encourage and inspire us to greater effort. She has often said that when she lays aside the work, she hoped others would take it up and persevere until happily they forged a perfect genealogical chain from the Wigan Crosses through seven centuries till to-day.

No matter what may occur in the future. No matter what may be the criticism of Mrs. Cross' contentions to-day, to her must go the greatest measure of praise, for what she has already accomplished. The attempt to prove our claim beyond the peradventure of a doubt by documentary evidence, has taxed the brains and resourcefullness of the most skillful genealogists of the past half century.

These facts make Mrs. Cross' presentation all the more remarkable and as this lady is perhaps the best able to speak on this subject she will present her own case in these memoirs.

Her contention is that Robert Cross, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass., was a son of John Cross, a sea captain, who sailed between Ipswich, England, and Ipswich, Mass., in the seventeenth century and who was a brother of Sir Robert Cross of Charlynch, Somersetshire, a soldier hero of the Elizabethian period.

That Robert Cross, Sr., settled in Ipswich, Mass., early in the seventeenth century and was the founder of our American line.

Undoubtedly, the presumptive evidence regarding the English Crosses is strong enough to carry conviction with it.

As to the period between Robert Cross, Sr., and John and William Cross, of Haverhill, N. H., some of the evidence may not be considered permissable, but much will be found that is permissable and seems difficult to set aside even should we so desire, and after all it is on the evidence as a whole that the case must rest.

It will then be understood that these Cross memoirs for the period mentioned—that is from the Wigan Crosses, of Lancaster, to John and William

Cross, of Haverhill, N. H.,—will be presented by Mrs. Cross in these pages and that it will be essentially in her own words, the author introducing the head lines and the illustrations originally taken from old prints representing the actual scenes and any documents which may have been sent to him from England. For these "subheaderies" and illustrations the author requests that his readers grant him a liberal literary license as his object is to stimulate interest in what many believe to be a rather dry subject.

Mrs. Cross' presentation is in the form of chronologically arranged extracts from the scores of intensely interesting letters written to the author by this gifted lady correspondent, whose genealogical labors, it must be remembered, were carried on wholly in the interests of her children and grandchildren, that she might be able to present to them in her life time a comprehensive record of their illustrious ancestors.

## BY MRS. LORANA CROSS.

The first paper here submitted, is one sent to the author by the Rev. William Bell, of Charlynch, Somersetshire. It is interesting as it bears the name of the great Camden and proves the connection between the Crosses, of Cross Hall, Lancaster, and the Crosses of Charlynch.

## VERBATIM COPY OF THE CROSSE AND COTGREAVE PEDIGREES.

Sir Ranulph Cotgreave, Lord de Hargrave, Tarvin, and Tattenhall, in the County Palatine of Chester, living in ye reigns of Henry IV. and Henry V., married Elinor, daughter of Sir Francis Gamvil de Mollington, in ye said Countie; and had issue:

1. Ranulph, his heir, who espoused Elinor, daughter of Tafford, Esq., de Bretton, in ye Countie of Flint.

2. Elinor, who wedded Sir William Crosse de Charlenge, in ye Countie of Somerset, and Sutton, Cheshire. And had issue:

William Crosse, Esq., de Charlenge and Sutton, his heirs, who wedded Isabel, daughter of Robert de Holme, Lord de Frannure, in ye first named Countie. And had issue:

John Crosse, Esq., de Charlenge and Sutton, who married Constance, daughter of William Boteler, or Butler, Esq., de Warrington, in ye Countie of Lancaster. And had issue:

John Crosse, Esq., de Charlenge and Sutton, who espoused Ursula, daughter of Thomas Wentworth, Esq., de Broughton, in ye Countie of Flint. And had issue:

Sir William Crosse de Charlenge and Sutton, who married Anghard, daughter of Mathew Ellis, Esq., de Overleigh, near Chester.

1390—Sir William Cross of Charlynge and Elinor daughter of Lord de Hargrave and Tattenhall—1390

## DEFINITION OF ARMORIAL BEARINGS CONNECTED WITH THE FAMILIES OF CROSSE AS DEPICTED IN THE COTGREAVE PEDIGREE.

1st Shield. Quarterly of 12—1st Quarter, Gules & Or, in the first and fourth quarters, a crosslet argent for Crosse. 2nd Argent, a canton sable for Sutton. 3rd Azure, a chief, and three chevronells in base, or for Fitz-hugh. 4th Or, on a fesse asure, three garbs of the first for Vernon. 5th Gules, a saltire argent, for Neville. 6th Gules, a cross fluery or, for Latimer. 7th Argent, a saltire gules, on a chief of the 2nd three escallope shells of the 1st, for Talboys. 8th Or, a lion rampant, double quewed sable, for Wells. 9th, Per pale asure and Or, a cross engrailed counterchanged, for Pole. 10th, Varier, Azure and argent, a fesse fretty gules, for Marmion. 11th, Argent, a cross engrailed gules, for Gournay. 12th, Azure, a lion rampant argent for Montalt, impaling gules a fesse indented ermine between three bugle horns or stringed argent, for Cotgreave.

2nd. Shield. Crosse with the said quarterings, impaling barry of six or and azure in dexter chief point, a canton argent charged with a rose gules, seedes and barbed proper, for Holme.

3rd Shield. Crosse with the same quarterings, impaling argent three covered cups in bend between two bendlets engrailed sable, for Boteler or Butler.

4th Shield. Crosse with the aforesaid quarterings, impaling sable a chevron between three leopards heads or, for Wentworth.

5th Shield. Crosse with the above quarterings, impaling ermine a lion rampant sable, for Ellis.

1415—Sir William Crosse at Agincourt—1415

Ye aforesaid Sir William Crosse de Charlenge and Sutton was descended from ye very ancient family of ye Crosses of Crosse Hall in ye County of Lancaster, quartered ye ensigns of ye above ancient families in right of his mother, Maude, daughter and Co-heirs of Sir William Sutton de Sutton and Elton in ye County Palatine of Chester; and was living temp: Henry V., and was slain whilst fighting under that monarch at ye Battle of Agincourt, A.D. 1415.

This is to certify that the above was compiled by me, from records in ye possession of the Cotgreaves de Hargrave, Tarvin and Tattenhall, in ye Countie Palatine of Chester.

[Signed] WILLIAM CAMDEN.

August 16th, 1598.

The aforesaid was extracted from a Pedigree, in my possession, of the Cotgreaves de Hargreave, etc., in the County of Chester, which family my father, the late Sir John Cotgreave, of Netherlegh House, near Chester, (through females) represented.

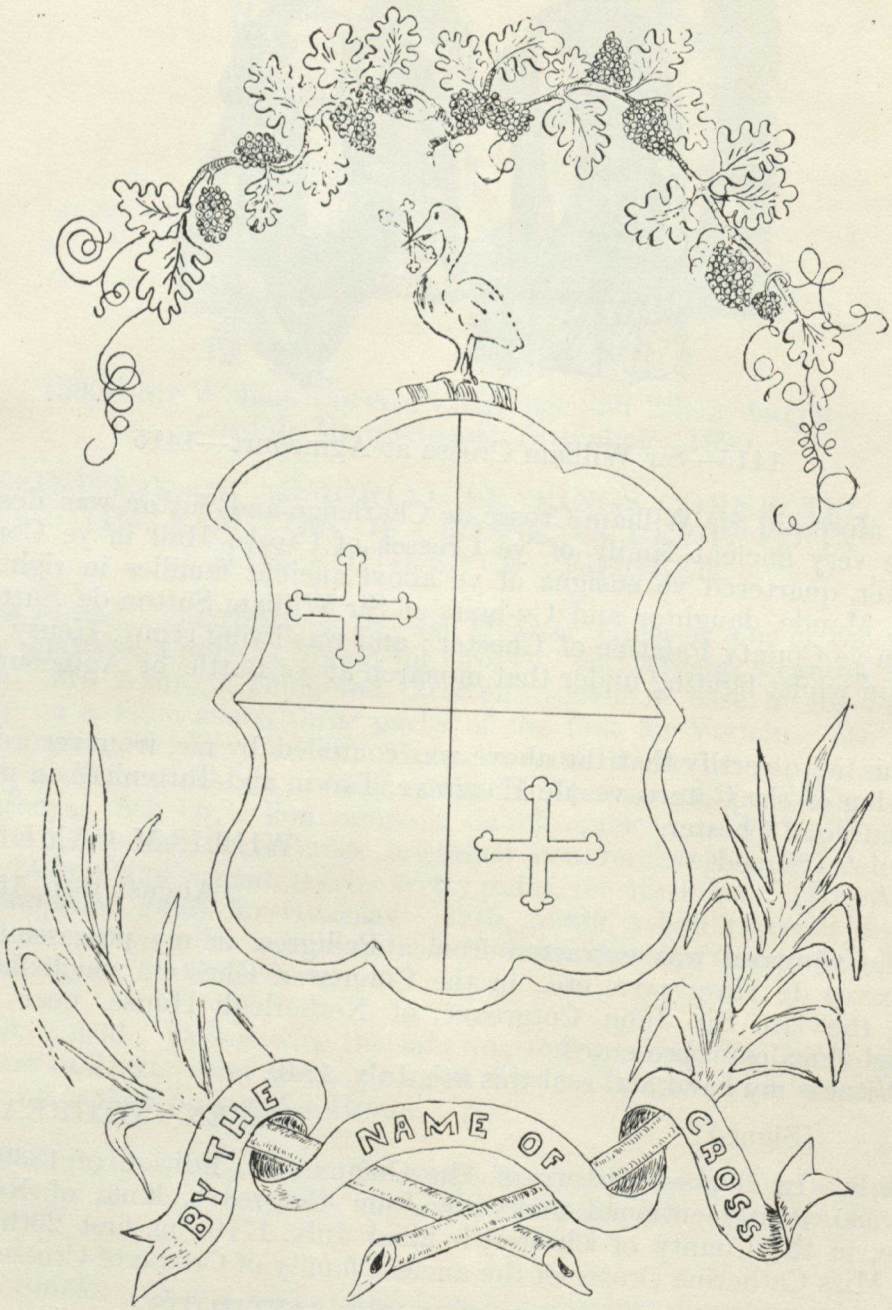
Witness my hand and seal this 9th July, 1849.

[Signed] ELLEN COTGREAVE.

N.B. In Burkes History of The Commoners, Edition of 1839, Vol. 1, Page 530, it is mentioned that: Sir John Cotgreave, Knt., of Netherlegh House, in the County of Chester, b. 22nd July, 1770; m. first 20th August, 1791, Miss Catherine Crosse of the ancient family of Crosse of Crosse Hall.

## SHERLOCK HOLMES METHODS.

In proving the connection, as between the English and American Crosses, and as between the Ipswich and Haverhill Crosses in America, the process of deductive reasoning had to be resorted to.




Arms of Charlynge Crosses. Traced from those originally painted by a London artist for Jeremy L. Cross, our kinsman. Clusters of grapes and stalks of corn tell their own story.

Ralph and Jeremy cross the brine
To purchase the arms of the Charlynch line.
Why should they have the same desire
To own the arms of Somersetshire?

"Jeremy L. Cross, of our line, made a trip to England one hundred years ago undoubtedly for the purpose of looking up his ancestors. While there he gave an order to a skillfull artist to paint for him the crest and armorial bearings of the Charlynch Crosses. He brought this painting back with him and gave it an honored place in his library at his own home."

"This act of Jeremy L. Cross can lead to no other belief than that he at least was convinced of his descent from the Somerset line."

Jeremy Cross had great literary ability and being a famous freemason and lecturer had accustomed himself to historical research. Again Miss Eliza Cross, his sister, was living in my time, and she assured me that her brother had proven the English connection, and not until he was convinced and had the documents in his possessions to substantiate his claim, did he purchase the Arms.

Miss Eliza stated that her brother had discovered that there was a knight in the family—Sir Robert Cross, and that Robert Cross, Sr., a member of this same Charlynch family to which Sir Robert belonged, had settled in Ipswich, Mass., and was the founder of the American line.

## MRS. LORANA CROSS' EVIDENCE CONTINUED.

## GENERAL RALPH CROSS ALSO BUYS THE CROSS ARMS.

## BEING A SOLDIER HE PREFERS THOSE OF SIR ROBERT CROSS.

One hundred and fifty years ago General Ralph Cross, of the Colonial army, gave an order to a well known London artist to paint for him the arms of Sir Robert Cross.

He was in London at the time and was evidently an American of distinction, as it is said that some guild, or other religious or philanthropic Society, presented him with a large family bible which was afterwards used by Whitfield, the great Divine, on the occasion of his evangelical work in the Colonies.

That General Ralph Cross purchased the arms in 1773, and that fifty years after, Jeremy L. Cross, his kinsman, also purchased the Cross arms (each time the work being performed by skilled artists) is significant in itself and seems to very strongly indicate that both of these distinguished kinsmen had no doubt whatever of the English connection."

Jeremy Cross was of the Haverhill N. H. Line; General Ralph Cross was of the Ipswich-Newburyport line. Still they had one thought in common to have in their possession the arms of the same ancestral family.

Does not this further suggest a connection between the Haverhill and Ipswich-Newbury lines? and the descent from a common ancestor Robert Cross Sr. of Ipswich, Mass.

"In 1773 the feeling was rather hostile between England and the American colonies, for in two years afterwards they openly rebelled. This is mentioned to create the impression that General Cross, a leader in the American army, would not have been inclined to purchase Sir Roberts arms purely from a sentimental notion, that, as he Sir Robert was of the same name and an English naval officer, he should like to have them.

Undoubtedly, a man of his standing and character, chosen to lead and manage men, would not encourage such a childish fancy; certainly not to such an extent as to have these arms painted by an artist and paraded on the walls of his home.

He must have genuinely believed he was a kinsman.

Robert Cross Sr. lived in Ipswich for many years; Robert's son and grandson would certainly have an absolute knowledge of this kinship, thus the information would come fresh and convincingly to General Ralph Cross, who consequently decided to have a visible token of his great warrior kinsman in his own keeping, that it might be treasured by his family for all time. These arms are now in possession of Professor Cross of the college of Technology, Boston, the great grandson of General Ralph Cross." And are here reproduced.

Sir Robert Cross' Arms.

Inscription:--Quarterly Argent and gules. In the first quarter a cross-crosslet of the second, was confirmed by William Camden in April 1602 in the 44th year of the reign of Elizabeth to Sir Robert Cross Kt. son of William Cross of Char-

lenge in the County of Somersett, Gentleman and a crest, then granted for his valorous and laudable service to God, his Prince, and Country, in sundry Military employments both by sea and land especially against the Spanish Armada 1588 at the overthrow and burning of the Spanish Navy and in bay of Cadiz, at the capture of the famous Town of Cadiz 1596. For which he most deservedly received the honors of Knighthood.

Faustina E. I. in Biblioth-Cotton—G. S. Earle pinxit 1773.

The Cross-Crosslet as it is called is of Teutonic or German origin. The order was of an ecclesiastic Nature.

Edmond's complete body of Heraldry says; "The family of Cross bore the Cross-Crosslet on their arms during the crusades. Sir Robert was Knighted by the Earl of Essex whose features appear in these memoirs. Lord Howard the High Lord Admiral assisted. It will be noted that the shield is a Norman shield, and refers to the Norman descent.

Arms were not registered until the reign of King James who succeeded Elizabeth. It was in King James time that Sir Robert got both his Coats registered, the first given him by Elizabeth eighteen years before.

General Ralph Cross actually made a trip to England to secure this painting.

Jeremy Cross obtained the arms of the Charlynch Crosses at the College of Heraldry. It was somewhat similar to Sir Robert's arms but did not have the Knights helmet as a crest.

Cross names run through 4 volumns of indices in the dooms day book of William I.

In ancient Somersetshire and Herald's Visitations, we learn that William Cross father of Sir Robert, was ignobled in 1623, also his two brothers, Charles and Andrew. The following is the record, as sent by Geo. Frederick Lee, D. D., vicar of All Saints, Lambeth, England. The following persons of the Tenderfield Hundred disclaimed Gentry before the Herald:

| | |
|---|---|
| Chas. Cross, Gentleman, | Ignoble Spaxton |
| Andrew Cross, Gentleman, | Ignoble Spaxton |
| William Cross, Gentleman, | Ignoble Charlinge |

This was Sir Roberts father, and his two uncles. I have read their fathers will, and he gave them all land in Spaxton."

It has been said that the Crosses, being farmers, (agriculturalists and vinticulturalists, as Jeremy Cross, the historian, seemed to have ascertained,) were not able to afford to keep up their connection with the nobility. I have been told by genealogists, however, that it was a common practice for the nobility in the 17th century, to snub the King's Heralds on their visitations by refusing to appear before them and give them money. They claimed that once noble, always noble, and although the Herald declared them ignoble, that it did not as a fact materially affect their standing among the nobility.

## ADMIRAL CROSS

Explanation of the Arms given by Mrs. Cross; Color, Silvery White.

Admiral's Ensign, Given in this Case to Sir Robert.

The wreath in the Cross Arms signifies the method in ancient times of fastening the crest to the helmet. The cross, unless expressly stated to be on chapeau, or coronet, is always on wreath. Robert Cross crest was a heron, with a Cross pattie.

The shield; Party per cross; party divided by lines; party per cross, divided by two lines. The one, perpendicular, the other horizontal crossing each other in the centre, which forms a quarterly and describes the Cross arms, and is called a Norman shield. The Norman shield varied in shape. It was first long and narrow, a board covered with hide. By degrees it ceased to be used in war, and became more and more used as an architectural ornament.

The mantling is a sort of cloak or mantle extended behind the shield sufficiently ample to include the whole achievement. It is generally represented flotant, which means jagged with a sword, an evidence of prowess. The mantling of Knight's were crimson lined with satin. Thus the mantle on the Cross arms.

The scroll, or ribbon, under the arms was for the order or motto of the Cross family. Sir Robert Cross became an Admiral. The letters "M. N." mean Majesty's Navy, and "L. L." Lord Lieut. of the country.

The S. S. Collar as seen on Robert's arms, entitled the wearer to silver spurs.

The S. Collar of Knighthood, from Berry's Encyclopedia of Heraldry.

"The king had agreed with his men that all those of his company who were not gentlemen, he would make them so, and give them warrants of it and have them henceforth enjoy such privileges as the gentlemen of England had; and to the end that they should be known from others, he gave them leave to wear a collar, powdered with the letters "S." meaning sovereign. Subsequently the titled nobility wore the "S. S." on their collar.

## REV. W. A. BELL BELIEVES.

Rev, W. A. Bell, rector of Charlynch the seat of the English Crosses who settled in Ipswich, Mass., in the seventeenth century wrote that he believed our American Crosses were descended from the Charlynch family. Mr. Bell wrote the Life and Times of Sir Robert Cross."

## STRACHEY SAYS 'ITS SO.'

Mr. Strachey the famous editor of the London Spectator carried on a brisk correspondence with the Author.

This distinguished journalist affirmed that the Massachusett Crosses sprang from the Charlynch line.

Years before this correspondence was in progress, he had written in his journal:

"In the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Sir Robert Cross with two other ships of the line, seized and sunk the Madre de Deo of the Crown of Portugal the largest of warships of the Armada.

Today we learn that on the defeat of the Spanish Navy by the Americans the Spanish Commanders sword was received by Lieut. Wainwright, a kinsman of Sir Robert Cross of the Spanish Armada. Thus three hundred years after his illustrious kinsman had gained immortal fame by assisting as commander to drive the Spaniards from the sea a warrior of the same blood acts a conspicuous part in again humbling the Spaniards to the dust."

Mr. Strachey suggested writing to the Countess of Malmsbury, this was done and the following letter received:

## EXTRACT FROM LETTER FROM THE COUNTESS OF MALMSBURY

115 Queen's Gate.

I am much obliged to you for your interesting letter. If I ever should be in that part of the world, I shall certainly try to visit the farm house (Cross homestead, Methuen,) where eight generations of the Crosses have lived. John and Robert are names in my family, of members who settled at Fayne Court, Bloomfield, near Bridgewater, before 1600, when the house was rebuilt. It was unfortunately burned down a few years ago, and every paper destroyed, including all those relating to Sir Robert Cross. I do not despair of eventually obtaining some of the information from other quarters,

and I am at present engaged in trying to reconstitute the family pedigree, which was also burnt.

I have never heard that Sir Robert Crosse was married, but he may have been. I have never heard that any member of our family lived at Ipswich, (Massachusetts.) Sir Robert's sister married into the Strachey family. Sutton Court belonged to her. My father took the name of Hamilton with a property from his mother's brother, Col. Hamilton. My brother John succeeded him, whose name was also John, and Capt. John Hamilton, the present head of the family, will, I trust, in time rebuild Fayne Court, when he inherits it at my mother's death.

Yours truly,

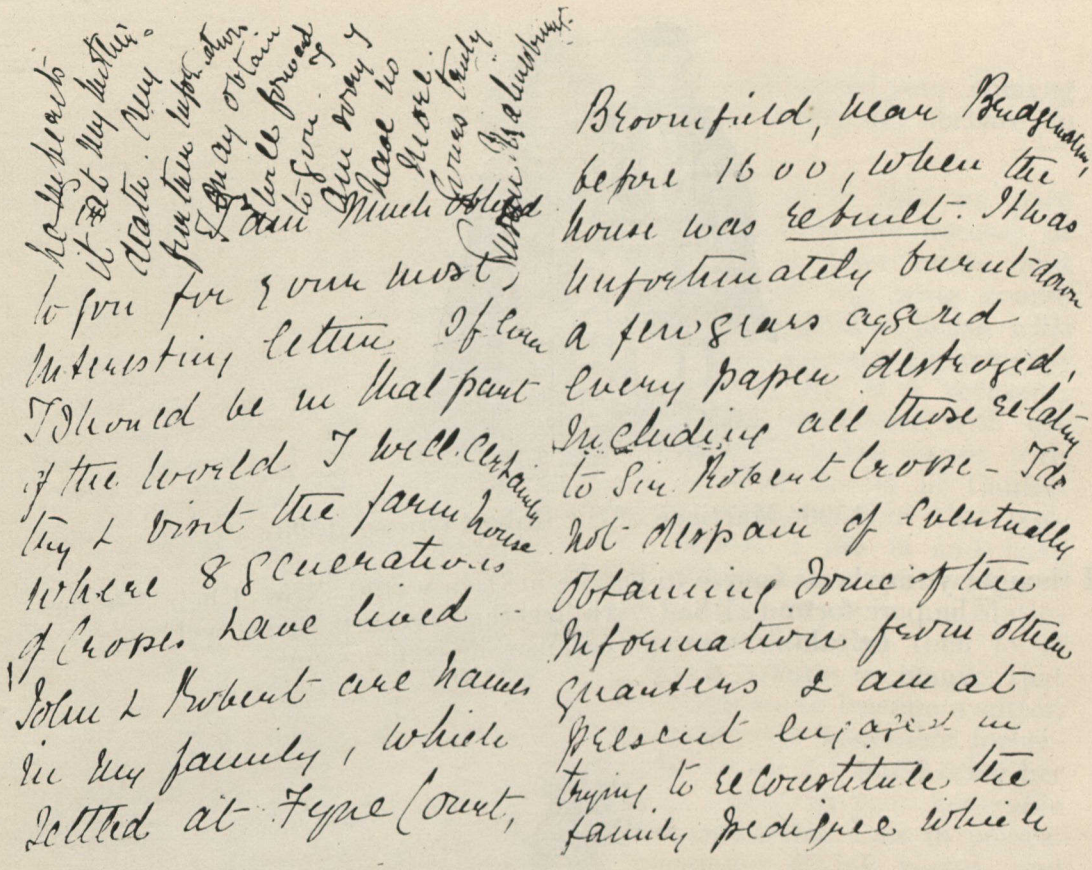
Susan Malemsbury."

Countess Malmesbury also enclosed a crest, (neatly executed in pencil by herself, for these memoirs) granted to Sir Robert by Queen Elizabeth for his services during the Spanish Armada Invasion.

Crest granted to Sir Robert Crosse by Queen Elizabeth, for his Services during the Spanish Armada, Motto: Se Inserit Asfeis.
Reproduced from the original drawing done by the
Countess of Malmsbury for these memoirs.

THE CUMMINGS ELM

All the old pioneer races seem to have had a family elm as well as a family bible. The Crosses and Cummings certainly had such a tree. The Washington elm of revolutionary days is typical of them all. Amos Cummings planted the Cummings elm two months before the revolution. It is symbolical of the Family Tree of Life. It may flourish for centuries and then its ample branches may become sapless; wither and drop off, until nothing is left but a memory "Here is where the old tree stood."



Letter from the Countess of Malmesbury, whose maiden name was Cross—
Changed by Law to Hamilton—She descended from the
Charlynch Crosses—and being Countess of
Malmesbury before her marriage,
retains the title.

The following copy of a most interesting letter, written by Sir Robert Cross, and sent by Rev. Mr. Bell, at once proves that Sir Robert was married, very much married; but had no issue.

## LETTER OF SIR ROBERT CROSSE TO LORD SALISBURY.

1606-7. Feb. 11. Martinabbe.

Right honorable and very good lord. I have som tims watted at your chamber, to showe my love and dutie to your Lo, & then have fond you so over bordened wythe matters of state, and abondences of sutters, & my bisnes so smale, that I thought yt fitter to forbare though once I had a good

1590 Marriage of Sir Robert Crosse 1590

"I thought yt my beste course to betake me to a wyffe—Now I heir say that
the pore fortune, I had wyth her, the two parts tharof wyl
be taking from me, because she is a recusant"

OUR "BOBS"

1595 Sir Robert Crosse on the occasion of his receiving Knighthood 1595

[Continued from page 59.]

desir to have been a humble sutter for a pore ward, and watted your comyng fourthe, and seeing your lo: accompaned with greatt lordes did forbare to presse or troble you then.

Now I do mouste humbly intrett your honerable favor in this my pore distressed cause, wch heir I mouste make relation of. After the decesse of of our latte soffren Quin Elizabeth, I found in myselfe a newe estate, and seeing ther woulde be no ymployment for me, I thought yt my beste course to betake me to a wyffe. wch then I did, thinking to have lived in pease with my selfe and the world, but now I heir say that the pore Fortune I had wythe her, the two parts tharof wyl be taking from me, because she is a recusant. I have my endevore to alter her from it. and have found that grasse with the lord of Cantelbury to com to my house, and sr Cristoffer Perkes twyse with Sr. Edware Hobbie once, and sithes Crissmase a divine of the lo of Cantelburies; but all thes neither I can yt alter her inward thoughts in that poynte, which hath ben some hindrance to me in the contrye I life in and have forborn to be a sutter or com to the courte, although ther wear reason to move me therunto, for I have loste blud and ben wonded twyse in his Maties serves, at the taking of the Cassel of Edden-boro wch Kirkadye then lo of Grandge had the keeping of, and Hering of his Matie bountie to manye that could Chalendge littel of deserte, might incouridge me to become a sutter, and had drawn a pettison to his Matie wit a desier of your honerable forberance and favor in it: but first I wld have ben glad to see if I could bring her from her popise opinion and seeing I cannot doo it, I maye by your honerable good means find this faver to enjoye this mye pore estate that I am in possession of, wherby I maye have meat to eate the remainder of my yeares, and not to be giving to another over my hed, that shal not bee so redy and wylling to doo the king serves as myselfe; thus being to tedious and troublesome) to you lo doo humble crave pardon, wthall my beste wyshes for your longe and happie lyfe.

Yours to be commanded,

(signed) Robert Crosse."

## PROFESSOR CROSS VISITS THE HOME OF (HIS) ANCESTORS.

Letter to Mrs. Cross.

"You will be interested to know that I visited Charlynch (now Charlinch, a few years ago (1888) for an afternoon. The little village is about five miles from Bridgewater. The old church, dating from the 13th century or earlier, is situated at the top of a very steep hill; close by it the rectory. The church is of stone—ivy-covered, with a painting copied from one in the National Gallery over the altar.

The list of rectors was on a marble slab; among them Francis Crosse, died 1604. I found in the churchyard close by, the tomb of William Crosse, father of Sir Robert, also of this Francis. The inscription could not all be traced."

## THE SPANISH ARMADA

### FRANCIS DRAKE FIRST TO ASSAIL—CROSS FIFTH CROSS SINKS A SHIP

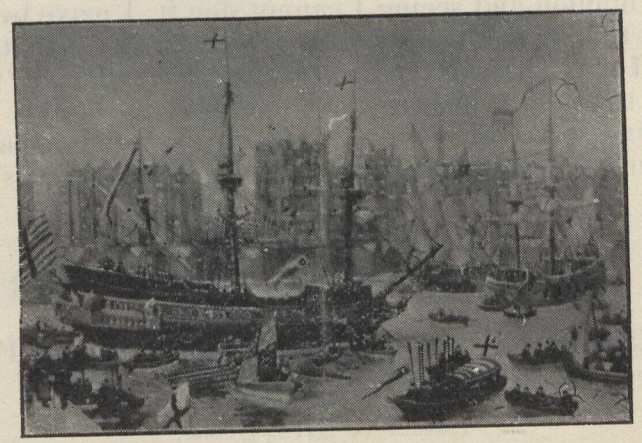
### EXTRACTS FROM SOUTHEY'S HISTORY OF THE ADMIRALS OF THE SPANISH ARMADA.—MADE BY MRS. CROSS

"Sir Francis Drake and Tenner were the first to assail; Fenton. Southwell, Beeton, Crosse and Reyman followed, then the Lord Admiral came up with Lord Thomas Howard and Lord Sheffield.

"They fought from 4 in the morning till 5 or 6 at night. The great ships of the enemy were found vulnerable in the close action of the day. Many of them were pierced through and through between wind and water. One was sunk by Captain Crosse in the Hope."

### THE CAPTURE

"They entered the Town without further opposition and possessed themselves of what little had been landed or drifted ashore from the wreck. What was of more consequence, they obtained from the prisoners by threats of violence, information that there was three large galleons at a little distance, and holding the same course.



"THE ARMADA SIGHTED".

### THE QUEEN'S SHIP FORESIGHT
### CAPTAIN CROSSE LEAVING DOVER FOR THE OPEN CHANNEL

"By this time more of Raleigh's vessels had come up, with Sir Robert Crosse in the Foresight—a Queen's ship. Their united numbers were now sufficient, by spreading from north to south, yet keeping sight of one another

to cover the two whole degrees. On the fifth day the Madre de Dios came in sight, one of the largest galleons belonging to the crown of Portugal. Thomas, who came up with her first, again and again, delivered his peals, as fast as he could fire and fall astern and load again, thus hindering her way, although somewhat at his own cost, until others could come up. Burrows in the Goldon Draggon came next.

A REMARKABLE PICTURE

Here the artist has caught the Crosse ship, the moment the Spaniards seized it by the shrouds. He tries to lower sail but is too late.

"Sir Robert Crosse coming up to give his broadside, came so near that becalming his sail he unwillingly fell aboard the galleon which lashed his ship fast by the shrouds and sailed away with her by his side."

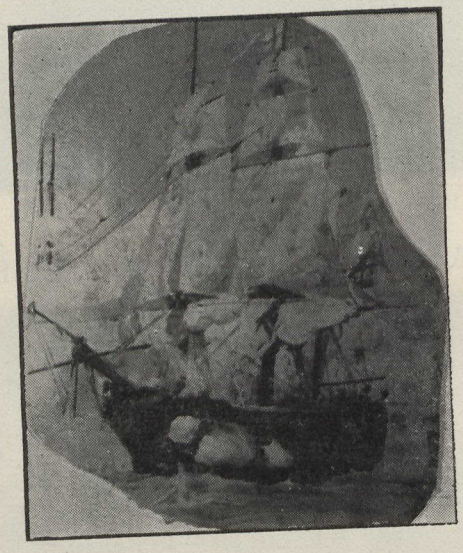
## "IF YE BE MEN SAVE THE QUEEN'S SHIP." CROSSE IS RESCUED AND THE ENEMY TAKEN.

Norton had no intention of boarding the enemy before daylight, if there had not been a cry from Captain Crosse's vessel The Foresight, "if ye be men, save the Queen's ship." Upon this he laid the galleon aboard on one side, while the Tiger boarded her through the foreside, A desperate struggle ensued when the men entered the "Channels," The Foresight being so low, without any resistance the getting up would have been difficult, but there was strong resistance, some irrecoverably falling by the board. The assault continued an hour and a half, so brave a booty making the men fight like dragons. But when the forecastle was won, the Portugese sought to hide themselves.

"The English turned to pillage, and each man lighted a candle, and by this they nearly lost their prize, for by their carelessness they fired the cabin where the cartridges were stored, and they were as eager to desert as to board her, if Norton and others had not quenched the flames.

"Then the prisoners were secured and the men had leisure to look around. The sight was a fearful one, to see those miserable creatures lying around torn with shot. A man could hardly walk without stepping upon a dead body or a bloody flow.

"The slaughter was mostly about the helm, for the greatness of the steerage required twelve men at once, and where they were massed our men often killed four or five with one shot. The General was moved with commiseration, and ordered our own surgeons to attend the wounded."



CROSS' SHIP "SWIFT SURE" 400 TONS, IN ACTION AT CADIZ.
REIGN QUEEN ELIZABETH.

CAPTURE OF CADIZ.

CROSSE WAS ORDERED TO RUSH IN AND SCATTER THE ENEMY. HE DID SO, AND RECEIVED KNIGHTHOOD FOR VALOR.

FROM ENGLISH BATTLES ON SEA AND LAND.
By John Grant.

The Queen's ships, fourteen in number. Warspite, 600 tons—Captain Sir Walter Raleigh, Repulse, 709—Sir Wm. Monson, with the Earl of Essex on board, Swift Sure, 400 tons—Captain Sir Robert Cross."

Every captain sailed with sealed orders, which were not to be opened until after they passed Cape St. Vincent, and this is the first record in history of English ships receiving such orders. On being opened the general Rendezvous was found to be Cadiz.

A dash into the harbor being decided upon, a contention arose, curiously enough, as to who was to lead the way. Asserting his commision, the Earl of Essex claimed the honor.

It was ultimately arranged that the next morning the ships that were the fleetest sailors and drew the lightest draught, under Lord Howard, Raleigh and Southwell and Vere, Carew and Cross, with a few others, should dash in and perform this service, by driving from its moorings the Spanish fleet of fifty sail, which lay across the bay.

Camden, whose name is on the Crosse coat of arms, says: "There were sixty English gentlemen who were Knignted for bravery on this occasion." Of course, one of the sixty was Sir Robert, and that same Earl of Essex knighted him after Queen Elizabeth bestowed the honor.

"The deeds of long-descended ancestors
Are but by grace of imputation, ours."

PARENTS OF SIR ROBERT CROSS

1540 Marriage of Sir William Cross and Anghard daughter of Mathew Ellis Esquire de Overleigh 1540.

"Sir Robert died without issue at Molsham Hall, the seat of Sir Thomas Mildmay, and was buried in St Mary's church on August 11th, 1611, according to the parish register. The epithet, "Ignobiles omnes," applied to Will-

iam, Charles and Andrew Crosse, in the visitation of 1623, is of no account. The commissioners, who conducted these visitations, were paid by fees, chargeable on those who registered their pedigrees. People did not always appear before them, not caring to pay the fees, so that commissioners entered the above in their report. In fact, in the visitation of 1672, as given by the Herald's College, these very same men are registered.

"The children of William Crosse of Charlenge, according to his own statement in his will, dated March 2nd, 1583, are: Robert, Francis, William, Charles, John, Edward and Andrew, and four daughters; Elizabeth, Agnes, Alice, Mary. Edward and Andrew were under twenty-one in 1583.

"Francis had issue; William, John, Thomas, Ann, Rebecca, Francis and Amy. William married Grace Perry of Halse, Som., and had issue: John, Rector of Stogumber, who married Susan, daughter of John Bourne, Canon of Wells, and a daughter, Elizabeth, who married first Samuel Jepp, second William Strachey, (Ancestor editor Spectator.)

Andrew in 1632 purchased a portion of the manor of Bloomfield, built Fayne Court, and founded that family.

## SIR ROBERT'S BROTHER JOHN

It will be noticed that all the sons of Willian Crosse are accounted for but Edward and John. Edward was under 21 in 1583. John Cross became a sea captain and sailed between Ipswich, England and Ipswich, Mass., thus the claim that it would have been John Cross and not any of the other brothers who was the father of Robert Cross Sr. who was in Ipswich, Mass., in 1635. The most exhaustive search has failed to uncover John Cross' marriage.

## THE AMERICAN DESCENT.

Here again the process of deductive reasoning must be resorted to :

## THE EMIGRANT

Robert Cross of Ipswich came from Ipswich, Eng., in the Mary and John in 1634.—This was likely his father's ship. He was born in 1613. He was in the Pequot War, for which six acres of marsh land were granted him. He married Ann Jordan before 1636. She died in 1677. Their known children were:

Elizabeth, born 1636, married William Nelson; Robert, Jr., born 1641-2, married, Feb. 19th, 1664-5, Martha Treadwell, and had eight or ten children, among them another Robert (Hammatt is wrong in making Martha Treadwell a second wife of the first Robert); Martha married William Durkee, Dec. 20, 1664; Captain Stephen, born 1646-7, married about 1665, Elizabeth Cheney, owned and lived on Cross Island; Sarah married William Butler, 1675; Ralph, born 1658, from whom, says Titus, came the Newburyport Crosses. Perhaps also Nathaniel, born probably after 1658.

This list gathered from different sources, gives seven children between 1636 and 1658, or later. The known dates of birth are as follows: 1636, 1641-2, 1646-7, 1658. Besides these, two daughters were married in 1664 and 1675. They may have been born, perhaps, in 1643 and 1654. He had however two more children John and George Cross.

Ann Jordan the wife of Robert Cross was the daughter of Stephen Jordan who married Susanna—and came to America sometime before 1640, he died 1670, she died 1673.

## FROM PROCEEDINGS OF THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY 1914.

Robert Cross, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass.—In the office of the clerk of the Supreme Judicial Court in Boston, in a volume of Births, Marriages and Deaths, fo. 85, is preserved the original manuscript of a deposition by Robert Cross, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass., made 5 Dec. 1693, which was probably at one time included among the papers in the suit of Robert Cross, Sr., v. John Burnham, Jr., for the recovery of 30 acres of Land in Ipswich. This case was tried in the Inferior Court at Ipswich in June 1693 and in May 1694, and the jury returned a verdict for the plaintiff. The defendant appealed to the higher court at Boston, and in Apr. 1695 the verdict in the lower court in favor of the plaintiff was upheld. Of the main question involved in the case, which is numbered 3138, nothing need be said; but in the forty odd folios of manuscript several items of interest may be found which add to our information about the pioneers of Ipswich and the metes and bonds of town grants on the east and south side of the Chebacco River, within the limits of the present town of Essex.

The statement of Robert Cross, Sr., is as follows:

Robert Cross, Senr. appeared and produced a Catalogue an account of ye birth of his Children to which he gave oth, that it was Entered in ye days of ye birth of them.

In which is Thus Written

Robert and Anna Cross was married ye 20th August in ye year 1635.

Elizabeth Cross was born ye 4 of August 1636 it being the 5th day of the week

Mary Cross was born ye 14 of June it being ye 4th day of ye week in ye year 1640.

Martha Cross was born ye 15th day of March. It being ye second day of ye week in ye year 1643.

Jura't. Dec'er ye 5th 1693 Before Thomas Wade Justice of Peace.

From this statement the date of the marriage of Robert Cross, Sr., is learned, though not the maiden name of his wife. Of the daughters named above, Elizabeth married William Nelson, Martha married William Dirkee, and Mary married Ephraim Herrick of Salem. In the papers concerning this case are depositions by the daughters Elizabeth and Martha, and also by the

sons of Robert Cross, Sr., viz., Robert, aged 52 years in 1695, and Stephen, aged 48 years in 1695. Robert Cross, Sr., was aged 70 years in 1682. Among others who made depositions were Lieut. John Andrews, aged 72 years in 1693, who styles Robert Cross, Sr., "my brother," and Walter Fairchild, aged 62 years, who deposes concerning Mary Herrick, the daughter of Robert Cross, Sr. Robert Cross, Sr., declares: "I am the ancientest man and first Proprietor that ever lived on the South side of Chebacco river." To his declaration is attached his autograph. In 1695 he would have been 83 years old. Just why his deposition does not include the birth dates of the sons Robert and Stephen and others who are strongly thought to be his children is not clear, but might perhaps be revealed by a more thorough investigation among the court records of Salem and Boston. This case furnishes to the historians of Ipswich and Essex interesting material for study concerning the immigrant ancestor of the Cross family.

SOMERVILLE, MASS. ANSON TITUS.

## LOST RECORDS

The Ipswich, Mass., records were destroyed by fire, one Hammett attempted to restore them from other sources, he was but partially successful which accounts for the names of many of the children of the early settlers being left out of his records, which were known as the "Hammett Papers."

## EXTRACT FROM A LETTER OF REV. CHAS. H. POPE, AUTHOR OF THE CHENEY GENEALOGY, ETC., TO REV. R. T. CROSS.

"I found that Stephen, son of the pioneer Robert Cross, received his Christian name from the father of his Mother, Stephen Gordan, who mentioned her and Robert Cross, his son-in-law, in his will. The age of Stephen Cross, according to his deposition, was sixteen and a half in 1663 and was not far from that of his wife, Elizabeth Cheney, who was born in 1647. The first mention of Robert Cross that I find, is his affidavit, dated Sept. 13, 1688, saying that he and two of his sisters, worked for William Cogswell of Ipswich, in a field near his father's island in the Chebacco River (Cross Island, called so to this day), and one of the sisters, Elizabeth Nelson, testified that she remembered the date thirty-seven years before. She gave her age at the time of testifying as fifty-two. Robert gave his age as forty-six. This shows that Robert and Elizabeth and one other sister were brother and sisters to Stephen and children of Robert, Sr., owner of the island, In 1651 there was a son Robert, who married Martha Treadwell Feb. 19, 1664, and who, with Martha, his wife, deeded his share of his father's estate to his brother, Captain Stephen Cross, Aug. 29, 1694. Certainly the pioneer had all these children, besides Martha, who married Wm. Durkee, and who presumably was the other sister of the turnip fields of Wm. Cogswell. The Christian names of Elizabeth, William and Robert continually recur in the Charlinch family, as they do in the early American families."

## STEPHEN JORDAN'S WILL,

(Original spelling.)

The last will and testiment of Stephen Jordon of Newbury in the County of Essex, writen this 5th of Aperall one thousand six hundred sixty and seven, having through Gods grace perfeckt sens and memory i doe comend my soule to God that give it and my Body to the earth in asured hope of the resurection of the just; and for what estat the lord hast given me i despose of it as following. ferst I give to my daughter Goose of Ipswich fifteen pound, which is in her husbands hand allredy alse I give to my daughter Androse of Ipswich feiftene pounds which is in her husbands hand allredy for my house and land in Newbury I give it to my wife duering her naturall life and after her deses I give it to Stephen Crose the son of Robert Crose of Ipswich my sonne in law. To cows I gieve to my wife halfe of my household goods I gieve to my wife and the other halfe to my to sonnes Robert Crose and Jno Andros equally divided. My will is that Steven Cross shall give to his wife and my grandchild Elizabeth Androse out of the land given unto him the some of five pound. Sined with my hand this 5th of Aperall 1667 in presence of us whose names are here written

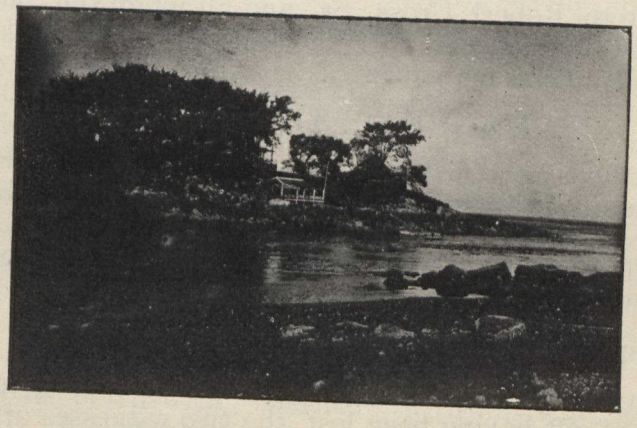
Susanna Wheller, (her marke.)

Mary M. Ayer, (her marke.)

Steven Jorden, x (his mark.)

Allowed 29 March 1670.

In these days it was customary for the early pioneers to provide for their elder sons during their life times, and to arrange for their younger sons in their wills.



CROSS ISLAND.

Narrows—Canoma Point Essex Massachusetts. Owned by Robert Cross, Sr., as well as the adjoining town 1654—1672. By his son Stephen Cross 1672—1700. Owned by the Choat family for the next 220 years. Now a beautiful summer Resort.

## ROMANTIC CROSS ISLAND

### ELIZABETH CHENEY'S MOTHER DRIVES A HARD BARGAIN WITH ROBERT CROSS. SHE DEMANDS CROSS ISLAND FOR A DOWRY.

(Extract from an Essex Newspaper.)

Cross island is a granite formation near our eastern border, which guards our gateway to the sea. It is a runaway child of Cape Ann; a strayed fragment of the great granite peninsula. Yet it is a finished production of nature, graceful, independent, rising up out of its watery bed north of the deep channel, thereby denying any connection with the ledges and quarries of the great cape. How happy a life the Indian race lived here in this very centre of fishing and hunting privileges we must leave the imagination to define. Alas! A nation without annals and without letters—when it dies, it dies indeed! Thus died the Indian race and left no record of this happy hunting ground.

Very early in the history of our town, in 1637, the town of Ipswich granted this Island and the adjoining farm on the point to John Perkins, Jr. This man let no grass grow under his feet, yet the island took not his name, neither has it brought down to us any momento of his ownership. This ownership was of short duration.

Nicholas Marble was another early owner, long ago forgotten from among men.

### THE CROSSES OWN THE TOWN.

Robert Cross, Sr.

July 16, 1654, the island and the adjoining town passed from the hands of Nicholas Marble to Robert Cross, Sr., and although the members of the Cross family owned it for nearly half a century, yet it was not called by their name until their ownership ceased.

### ROMANCE OF THE ISLAND

While Robert Cross, the father, was an extensive land owner, the son, Stephen, had no land, yet loved he a fair maiden of Newbury, Elizabeth Cheney by name. Elizabeth's mother withheld her consent to her marriage for a year, until the very island was made the make-weight which turned the scale and made two young hearts happy.

A romantic spot, indeed!

The father gave the son the island on which the young couple settled. The original deed of gift having been lost, the two witnesses of this deed were called into court 13 years later and the deposition of one of them was as follows: "Deposition of John Kendrick, aged 42 years.

"This deponent testifyeth and saith that in the year 1672, I, the said Deponent, was at the house of Quartermaster John Perkins in Ipswich; where was Robert Cross, Sen'r., and widdow Cheney of Newbury, and they were discoursing about and concerning their son and daughter, viz: Stephen Cross

ye sonn of said Robert Cross, and Elizabeth Cheney, daughter of the s'd widdow the said Robert Cross then desired the said widdow to give her daughter Elizabeth in marriage to his sonn Stephen; the s d widdow would not consent to the same except the said Robert would give his sonn Stephen sum land for to settle upon; the said Robert tould the s'd widdow that he had an island in Chebacco river, which he did intend for his sonn Stephen, which he valued to be worth two hundred pounds sterling or theire abouts; the said widdow then said unto the sald Robert that if he would give his sonn, the s'd Stephen, all that island that shee would then give her daughter Elizabeth unto the s'd Stephen in marriage, which he, the said Robert did freely promise to doe and immediately thereupon the s'd Robert Cross drew a deed of gift to his sonn Stephen of the s'd island and subscribed his hand to it; to the which deed I, the said deponent, was one witness, and Quartermaster John Perkins was the other witness, and upon these terms the said Robert Cross and widdow Cheney agreed and their sonn and daughter, in sum convenient time after, were joined together in matrimony."

"John Kendrick made oath to the truth of this court in Ipswich, March 31, 1685."

Reader. When you visit this island you can see to this day the remains of the cellar over which stood the house of this young bride, Elizabeth Cheney.

But was there not danger from the Indians in that early day? Yes; when our young couple had been two years on the island the Ipswich people so feared an assault upon themselves that the general court appointed a guard to protect the house of the public officer, who was absent from home on public duties, but whose house was near the present house of Alden Story.

How much more exposed was our Stephen by sea and by land?

Capt. Stephen Cross, this first settler, was a constant church-goer. During his first six years on the island, the Chebacco meetinghouse not having been built, he attended church at the North meetinghouse in Ipswich. He would go in his log canoe to the landing in the Argilla district of Ipswich, near the house of the late Alvin Story, and walk the rest of the way. Tradition says that for one year he did not miss a Sabbath.

But the closing year of the 17th century witnessed the passing of the island into other hands.

## THE ISLAND SOLD

Stephen Cross, of Ipswich, mariner, with his wife, Elizabeth, sold to John Appleton, Jr., Feb. 29, 1688, a tract of marsh land in the Chebacco in the said Parish of Ipswich, given him by his father, Robert Cross, Sr., part of the farm on which his father was then living. Signature of Captain Stephen Cross acknowledged June 12, 1694. Essex County Deeds 10-19.

Robert Cross, Jr., son of Robert Cross, Sr. entitled to rights of commonage in 1664; voted in town affairs, 1679. He married in 1664 Martha Treadwell, who died in 1677.

CHILDREN.

Ralph, Feb. 15, 1658.
Robert, Jan. 21, 1665.
Timothy, Nov. 29, 1667.
Martha, Mar. 15, 1670.
Abel, Apr. 5, 1676.
Stephen, Apr. 27, 1678.
Nathaniel?
Mary?
Ann?

## THE CROSSES WERE SHIPBUILDERS

Ralph Cross, Jr. grandson of Robert Sr., born in Ipswich August 1706 moved to Newburyport and married Sarah Johnson.

Their children were, Stephen, born 1731, and Ralph, born 1738, both brought up with their father, Ralph, in his ship yard. In Coffin's history of Newbury three Ralphs are mentioned, here are three Ralphs."

## CROSS—HUSE

## RALPH CROSS JR., LEAVES HOME ON ACCOUNT OF HIS STEP-MOTHER.

Professor Cross of Boston wrote to me that he remembers hearing from his own people that Ralph Cross his ancestor could not get along with his stepmother and left home to become a great shipbuilder.

And again the author has the same tradition in a letter from Harry Huse a naval officer who was second in command under our kinsman Lieut. Wainwright (who received the sword of the Spanish Commander.)

Extract from letter of Harry P. Huse :

"My grandfather, Ralph Cross Huse, was the son of Samuel Huse and his wife, Sarah Cross. I think the name was Sarah. My great-grandfather was Ralph Cross, who left Ipswich as a boy, because he could not get along with his step-mother. His father was Robert Cross, Jr., Prof. Cross, of the Boston College of Technology, is a descendent of Robert Cross, of Ipswich. Perhaps a letter to my father would elicit the information you desire."

## HUSE BIBLE THE BIBLE USED.

(Letter from Caleb Huse, Dated 1904 to the Author.)

My age is 73, I am the son of the late Ralph Cross Huse. My great-grandmother's name was Cross—She descended from the Ipswich Cross family (Robert Sr.)

The grandson of my father's second wife, was called Ralph Cross Huse. A large and very handsome bible which should have come to me, was left to him.

This was one of the bibles imported by Ralph Cross of Newburyport, Mass., and was used in a Meeting House when Whitfield preached there. This Ralph Cross was my great Uncle."

Letter from Mrs. Huse, wife of the above member, Ralph Cross Huse, Dated 1904.—"Caleb Huse is right. We have the bible. So precious is this book that we would not let it out of the house to be photographed as you suggest." (Note by Author—One ot these books was certainly used by the great divine Whitfield and is now called, the Whitfield Bible, being in possession of the church of that name, in Newbury, and is in such a decayed condition that it is kept under glass, and locked up.)

As before explained it was presented to Genl. Ralph Cross, during a visit to London.

These facts are mentioned incidently to clear the way for the argument in favor of the Robert Cross, Sr., connection.

## THE FIRST AXIOM IN EUCLID

## "THINGS WHICH ARE EQUAL TO THE SAME THING ARE EQUAL TO ONE ANOTHER.

For as one Stephen Cross was a descendent of one George Cross, who in turn was a descendent of Robert Cross, Sr., of Ipswich Mass. And again whereas Moses Cross was a descendant of the Haverhill line, and was a cousin of the said Stephen Cross, therefore the said Moses Cross as well as Stephen had Robert Cross, Sr., as a common ancestor.

It is further asserted that John Cross, Sr., our ancestor, married Ruth Swan, and that John Cross, Jr., was their son and that William Cross, our ancestor being a brother of the said John Cross, Jr., was also a son of John Cross, Sr.

## MRS. LORANA CROSS CONTINUES.

## THERE WAS DOCUMENTARY EVIDENCE ONCE.

It would appear that nearly 100 years ago, Jeremy L. Cross decided to secure documentary evidence proving his ascent (as was previously mentioned) not only from the Charlynch family, but from Robert, Sr. of Ipswich. This task he accomplished according to the statements of his own immediate family, who in their turn imparted the information to myself.

## THE WHITE HAIRED TRUNK.

## RECOLLECTIONS OF ELIZA CROSS. THE MISSING PROOFS PURLOINED BY MASONS.

In 1887, hearing of these precious documents whieh would prove my children's Cross descent, I visited the home of Miss Eliza Cross of Haverhill, N. H.—who was a sister of Jeremy Cross. It was my intention to copy these documents.

When I asked for them, Miss Eliza said: "They are all in the White haired trunk." This trunk was brought from the attic and examined. There were no papers in the trunk, they were gone.

The only explanation that Miss Eliza could give was that they had been taken by freemasons, who had been searching for masonic documents, as they often did when they visited her house. These masons, had evidently thought them, of masonic value, and had carried them away with other papers.

I then asked Miss Eliza to tell me from memory what the papers contained she replied as follows: "Well there was a knight in the family, Sir Robert Cross, and there was another Robert Cross, who came from Old England to New England and settled at Ipswich, and this Robert Cross had two sons John and George, among his children. Jeremy Cross learned that from his Father William who was born in 1742. This John Cross settled in Haverhill, N. H., and his brother George went to Newburyport, Mass.

George Cross, had a large family, his oldest son being William. The Newburyport Crosses were descendents from Ralph Cross they were brought up in the shipyard of their father Ralph Cross, Jr. They were descended from Robert Cross of Ipswich.

These statements of Miss Eliza were the basis of an exhaustive search made by me, I found they were susceptable of proof.

Miss Eliza said that George Cross' eldest son was William, and I found this to be the case and it reflected the light of creditability on all her story.

## MRS. LORANA CROSS CONTINUES.

"By a pedigree, known as the Preeble Document, it was found that this same George Cross was a son or grandson of Robert Sr. To prove the descent from Robert Sr. (if it could not be done directly,) we had to show relationship with this said George Cross and in doing so the fact, was shadowed forth, that, (as Miss Eliza said,) "John and George were brothers, John staying in Haverhill, and George going to Newburyport." We first got a record of Stephen which we knew was a son of the said George, and we find that Moses Cross (an ancestor of ours) was his cousin."

## COUSINS STEPHEN AND MOSES.

## EXTRACT FROM MRS. VOLE SMITH'S HISTORY OF NEWBURY

## AN INTERESTING GLIMPSE INTO COLONIAL MARINE HISTORY

### Our Ship-Building Kinsman.

Stephen and Ralph Cross of Newburyport, put the first flotilla on the great lakes (Oswego and Ontario,) among those to accompany them, under contract, to build vessels there for the Government was a relative Moses Cross. This was about the 15th of May, 1756. The Colonies were at war with France and the Crosses were captured. (They were all British then.) They were taken to France in their own ships. Stephen kept a journal, in it he says his uncle (Ralph) who was among those taken ill, was sent to the

hospital, that Stephen (with one other prisoner) was afterwards taken sick and also went to the hospital, there he met "His Relative Moses Cross," (Our Moses) in a violent fever and quite senseless. (This Moses Cross was born 1716.)

Stephen recovered and was returned to his native land, Moses improved in health but died 18 months afterwards (see name of this Moses mentioned in land deed.)

## THE LATE JUDSON CROSS SUSTAINED THIS EVIDENCE.

The Late Judson Cross was a brother of Rev. L. F. Cross and father of Mrs. Knappin of Vancouver, B. C., being descended from John Cross, the brother of William Cross our ancestor.

## MRS. LORANA CROSS CONTINUES

Judson Cross said when hearing of Mrs. Vale's record regarding the relationship of Moses and Stephen that the discovery pleased him very much, for it confirmed what he had already heard, and to his mind placed the question beyond dispute. He said his Grandmother had told him his kinsman Moses lived with the ship building family during the trouble with the French and as Moses was of his line he was now quite convinced that the relationship between the Methuen and Newbury Crosses spoken of by Miss Eliza was correct.

(Stephen we know to have been the son of George and George was the brother of our John Cross Sr.)

## EXTRACT FROM PREEBLE FAMILY TREE.

## SHOWING GEORGE THE DESCENDENT OF ROBERT SR.

There were two Preeble Genealogies. The one states that George Cross of Newbury may have been descended from Robert Sr. of Ipswich. The other declares positively that he was descended from Robert Sr. It is not necessary to publish the entire genealogical line.

The Preebles were descended from Sally Cross, who married Enoch Preebles. She was the daughter of Deacon Thomas Cross, son of Thomas Cross b. March 10th 1689 and Sarah Bordman of Ipswich and a descendent of Robert Crosse, a commoner of Ipwich in 1641, with the title of senior. Robert Cross had a seat appointed him, "one of the short seats" near the pulpit in the meeting house then recently built in 1700. These short seats seem to have been appropriated to the elderly people. He must have been more than eighty years old. It appears from a subscription toward a compensation for the military services of Major (afterwards General) Denison, in 1648, and a list of persons entitled to certain rights of commonage in 1664 that he was among the wealthier portion of the inhabitants. George (the George referred to) a son or grandson of Robert, had a son Thomas, born March 10, 1689, who was the father of Deacon Thomas (father of Sally Cross).

(The Author:—Anson Titus, the well known Massachusetts genealogist, was instructed to follow up these clues. He soon abandoned them for theories of his own. Failing to prove these new theories, he acknowledged Mrs. Cross' were the more probable, but he could not prove them or disprove them in the absence of documentary data which he was unable to find).

(Author:—It might be said in reference to the Moses Cross mentioned in Stephen Cross' diary that there was really two Moses Cross')

There was a Moses Cross, son of Nathanial, as well as a Moses Cross the descendent of John Cross Jr. of Haverhill Mass. The Moses, son of Nathanial, was born in Ipswich 1729, married Anna Goss of Newbury 1753.

(Still there is the direct statement of the late Judson Cross that his Grandmother had told him that it was his relative Moses that was with the Crosses in their shipbuilding) (This reference to another Moses is made not to throw discredit on Mrs. Cross' evidence,

## ROBERT CROSS DIGS UP A SAGAMORE. AND SITS IN THE STOCKS.

"In 1667, Robert Cross, for his barbarous and inhuman conduct by digging up the Sagamore, his grave, and carrying the skull upon a pole (and so forth) was sentenced to be imprisoned until next lecture day and then immediately after meeting to sit in the stocks. He was afterwards compelled, to make up, assisted by one John Andrews. "The Sagamore's tomb." This was probably Robert Cross, Jr., son of the patriarch of that name."

## MRS. CROSS CONTINUES.

Eliza Cross evidence regarding the statement of the brothers John and George Cross is supported. The brother of my husband as well as my husbands father said, that two brothers settled in Haverhill. Their name was Cross. One afterwards went to Newburyport and the other remained in Haverhill and that he was the ancestor of my children.

## WAR RECORDS OF BROTHERS JOHN AND GEORGE CROSS DISCLOSED.

King Phillip's War—Naragansett Bounty Land Grantees and claimants of Naragansett Township, now Buxton Main. George Cross, grantee his son William claimant. (Note that George brother of our John had a son William) see statement Eliza Cross. Other war records Mass. archives Vol. 6. In the list of Captain Mosley's company taken at Dedham, Dec. 7th, 1675.—John Cross. Again Farmers Genealogical Register—Names credited with military service under captain Mosely at Mt. Hope.—John Crosse. During the same period complaint made that John Crosse had credit under two captains, Henchman and Burbank. Credited under Captain Poole and Walden 1675—George Cross.

"Credited under Sundry Acceptance at Marblehead, August 24, 1676, George Crosse, one pound, sixteen shillings and eight pence.

"Aug. 20th, 1675, list of soldiers credited under Daniel Henchman, King Phillip's war, 1675, John Cross, one pound six shillings and six pence.

## THIS JOHN SAID TO BE A BROTHER OF ROBERT, SR.

In Coffin's History of Newbury, Mass., in speaking of John Cross, he says:

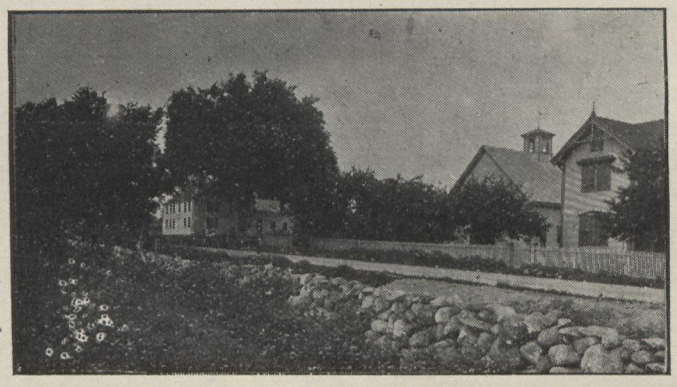
"John Ward and others of Newbury petitioned the General court for a place of settlement, referred to Governor Winthorp to consider Pentuckett, and so forth. They were granted Pentuckett, (then to be called Haverhill,) May 13, 1640, at Boston. Twelve men then went from Newbury to Haverhill (P. 23 Coffin.)"

"May, 1640, Edward Woodman (when the way was settled), Christopher Batt and John Cross were appointed to settle the ferry question, as they think meet. "Coffins History p. 33.)"

"In the June session 1641, appointed Jno. Woodridge, Matthew Bayse, Jno. Cross and George Giddings to lay out Salsbury, and Pentucket (Haverhill.) (Chases History of Haverhill, p.43.)"

"John Woodridge married a daughter of Governor Dudley. Edward Woodman lived in Newbury, Christopher Batt lived in Salisbury, and John Cross lived in Hampton. (Wincowit.)'

"Rev. Stephen Bachelor took a company from Newbury and Ipswich and formed a town of Hampton in 1639. John Cross and Ann, his wife, sailed from England to Ipswich, Mass., 1635. They moved to Hampton. He was admitted freeman, 1639. His child Hanna was baptized there by Rev. Stephen Bachelor. He was representative to the General Court 1640. Hence he was appointed one of the ferry commission for Merrimac River at Carr's Island, and to lay out Haverhill. He died 1652. He had a son John by his first wife, Mary, which son lived in Watertown where his widow went to live.



Showing the residence of George Cross, son of Lorana Cross and the last male descendant of his line. The Cross Homestead in the distance. Here can be seen a corner of the Estate bartered by red-men for 9 bolts of broadcloth.

THE CRADLE OF THE RACE.

## EIGHT GENERATIONS BORN OVER ONE CELLAR

Clipped from a newspaper

At the old Cross homestead, Methuen, the landmark for more than two and a half centuries, was born Dec. 21 to Mr. and Mrs. Homer F. Chase, a son. The mother was of the seventh generation, making the son of the eighth generation of the family in the house, though the latter does not bear the name of Cross. The family is one of the oldest in Methuen. The land was obtained from the proprietors of Haverhill of which it was a part. There was also an Indian title obtained from the Red Men by paying for the same in red broadcloth, for as much land as a man could walk around in a day. John Cross, the common ancestor, began his walk at the mouth of the Spicket, where his father-in-law, Robert Swan, of Haverhill owned the land, and chipped his way up Broadway to Salem, where he owned still other land, and came down what is now the division line between Methuen and Haverhill, at Hake's brook, arriving just as the sun was setting. The Indians reserved the right under the bank for fishing and hunting.

John Cross, being the store-keeper of Haverhill, undoubtedly furnished this same red broadcloth to the colonists from the Rowley fulling mill, the first to be built in the Western world, which was near his home in Ipswich.

The deeds of the land as they descended from father to son, were given in the town of Haverhill and Province of Mass. Bay, New England, mentioning the reign of George I, II and III. The house which was contemporaneous with the old Whittier homestead, was like that built with three rooms and a long low roof, but since then other additions have been made and although the old structure still forms the basis for the building, modern improvements have been added. It bids fair to shelter generations yet to come. These facts regarding the old homestead which is blessed by a new generation of the same family that has for years occupied the place reminds one of Longfellow's "Golden Milestone":

> Happy he whom neither wealth nor fashion,
> Nor the march of an encroaching city drives an exile
> From the hearth of his ancestral homestead.

## CROSS SWAN

It will be noticed that this article written many years ago besides announcing an important event in the Methuen Cross family, gives an interesting account of the first John Cross as a store keeper at Haverhill, and selling the cloth turned out by the Swans (he married into their family) at their fulling mills at Rowley, that his land joined the Swans and that he was in business touch with them.

## HAD SEEN BETTER DAYS

From records by Hammett: "The people of this Town, (Ipswich) many of them are of good rank, having had yearly rental from large estates in England before they came to this wilderness." Among the names here mentioned were John Cross and Robert Cross which reads well along with the statement that they were descended from the Charlynge Crosses.

## SIGNIFIGANCE OF A "LIST" OF NAMES.

Taken from a book entitled, "Ipswich—the body politic 1633—1700."
"From this time on, no man shall be admitted to the freedom of the body politic, but such as are members of churches, within the limits of the same."

Enrolled 1678,—these names appear consecutively as here given—"George Cross, Ralph Cross, Robert Cross, Stephen Cross." Undoubtedly they were enrolled at the same moment, came to the enrollment together, and George being the eldest took up his pen first. Were they not brothers and all descendents of Robert Cross, Sr?

It is for these reasons that the claim has been made, that Robert Cross, Sr., was the founder of the American line, and the first generation here recorded. It is also claimed that he had a son, John Cross, whom we will designate as Senior.

## MRS. LORANA CROSS CONTINUES

## GENERATION II.

## JOHN CROSS SR. SON OF ROBERT CROSS, SR.

The Claim would have been weak had I not found a wife and children for John Cross, Sr. It is claimed that, this time, there is some documentary evidence although unfortunately not immediately obtainable.

## DID ROBERT'S SON JOHN, MARRY RUTH SWAN ?

The first hint of his wife's name was suggested by a deed of gift of certain land by Robert Swan, Sr., to John Cross. This John Cross being the brother of William of Haverhill, N. H. People do not give large tracts of land away as a rule, why did Robert Swan do so? Surely he was a relative. He explained in his deed that it was because John Cross was a "nephew or a cousin and for the love he bore him."

Anson Titus followed up this clue and hitherto discovered an unrecorded daughter of Robt. Swan, Sr., one Ruth Swan. All other daughters had been accounted for. He also found a document showing the division of the estate of R. Swan, Sr., in 1724 and in this document there was a clause to the affect that Ruth Hartshorn of her heirs were to received their share etc. She had then been dead for many years, in fact a record was found that she had succumbed to smallpox in 1690. This seemed a great disappointment for Ruth Swan evidently married John Hartshorn and not John Cross.

However I made a careful search among the Libraries in Massachusetts that were within reasonable reach for Swan and Cross marriages and saw in one of the books submitted what appeared to me the record of the marriage of John Cross and Ruth Swan and a foot note that she had died of smallpox in 1690.

When I found this record it was late in the afternoon and I was in a hurry to get home, I took no note of the name of the book thinking to come back next day and make a proper copy of the entry. Unfortunately when I did return the librarian and his assistants were unable (search as they would) to find this same book for me again. Still I am sure I saw the record plain

enough. Thus it would appear that Ruth Swan first married John Cross and after the two boys John and William were born, John Crosse died, and she married Jno. Hartshorn under her maiden name which was sometimes done after short marriages in those days.

## HAVERHILL RECORD

John Hartshorn married Ruth Swan Sept. 19, 1672. Their children (1) John b. 1673; (2) Ruth born 1674; (3) Jonathan born May 14th 1677, married Sarah Cross, daughter of John Cross and Sarah Peacock 1729 ; (4) Susanna born 1680 (5) (6) and (7) Elizabeth Abigail and Martha, the last born 1688. Ruth his wife died of smallpox 1690.

(Author:—Thus it will be noted that according to these assertions John Cross married Ruth Swan and had John Cross Jr. and William. That after John Sr. died Ruth Swan married John Hartshorn and had Jonathan. This Jonathan, according to the records, married Sarah Cross, daughter of his half brother John Cross, who was the son of his mother's first husband John Cross Sr.; such a marriage though it would have been no doubt permitted by the church was unusual. It is possible there has been a confusion of names as there were several Hartshorn families flourishing in Haverhill at the time.)

(Author:—I wish to put my readers in possession of the theory which was entertained regarding the gift of land to John Cross by Robert Swan Sr. before Mrs. Cross made the announcement referred to as having found the marriage record of John Cross Sr. and Ruth Swan. It was this:—Robert Swan Sr, about the same date that he gave land to John Cross, sold land to his brother William Cross for hard cash, and sold it without any endearing terms of affection and without reference to him as a cousin or nephew. Why did he make this distinction? Undoubtedly Robert Swan Sr. was a relative or connected by marriage of John Cross, but did John's brother William share this relationship?

Thomas Hartshorn the second in line was the son of Thomas and Susanna Hartshorn; he was born in Reading Oct. 30th 1648. His first wife died soon, and he married secondly Oct. 21st 1674, Sarah Swan, a sister of Robert Swan who deeded the land as a gift to John Cross and sold it to William.

Thomas and Sarah (Swan) Hartshorn lived at Haverhill where several children were born. Among them was Sarah Hartshorn b. April 4th 1678. Now did this Sarah marry Peacock and then marry secondly John Cross. She would then be a niece of Robert Swan, and if she was the wife of John Cross, that would explain why Robert Swan Sr. gave the land to John Cross and called him "Nephew" and sold the land to William Cross with no such appelation. Of course Sarah Peacock, wife of John Cross may have been a niece of Robert Swan for some other reason.

1646 Deputy Richard Swan and Anna Trumbull, 1646

## THE SWAN FAMILY.

The Swan's were very early settlers. Richard was born in England about 1595, dying in 1678. He came to America in 1638. He was deputy of the General Court 1663-1673. He was in King Phillip's war and on a military expedition to Canada. He was proprietor of the Fulling mills at Rowley, Mass. He married first Ann who died in England and second Mrs. Ann Turnbull. (Author,—It is interesting to note that this Ann Turnbull is an ancestor by another route: This lady married three times, first Michael Hopkinson, second John Turnbull. By her second marriage she had a daughter Abigail who married Joseph Bailey; father of John Bailey; whose daughter Elizabeth married Jonathan Cross whose son Bailey married Susan Bagsley, whose son was Calvin Bailey Cross the author's grandfather.) Richard Swan was Ann's third husband. By his first wife he had Elizabeth; Francis; Robert; Jonathan; Susan; John.

1650 Deputy Robert Swan and Elizabeth Acie—In Boston Court Dress 1650

Robert Swan was born in England 1628, d. Feb. 11. 1698. He married first Elizabeth Acie, b. 1632, dau. of William Acie, came in 1638, d. 1689, married secondly Hanna Russ. He was in King Phillips war and was deputy from Haverhill, 1684.

CHILDREN OE FIRST WIFE.

1. Ruth, m. first John Cross, second Jno. Hartshorn
2. Elizabeth b. 1653, m. Mathew Harriman
3. Sarah b. 1655, m. Thomas Hartshorn
4. Robert b. 1657, m. Elizabeth Storey
5. Ann b. 1658, m. Nathanal Ayre (killed by Indians.)
6. Richard b 1660
7. Timothy b. 1663
8. Dorothy b. 1666 m. Saml. Dalton (killed by Indians.)
9. John b. 1668
10. Samuel b. 1670 d. 1671.
11. Samuel b. 1672
12. Joshua b. 1674
13. Caleb 1676

William Acie was born in England and died in 1690. He had a grant of land in Rowley, Mass., 1643. He was constable and held other town offices, he married Margaret.

## FULL TEXT
## ROBERT SWAN SR. GAVE LAND TO JOHN CROSS WITH EXPRESSIONS OF AFFECTION AND BY REASON OF HIS RELATIONSHIP

Know all men by these presents: That I, Robert Swan, Sen., of Haverhill, in the county of Essex in New England, for divers good causes and considerations me hereunto moving but especially for and in consideration of ye love that I have for and do bear unto my Cousin or Nephew John Cross where upon I do freely bequeath unto give and bestow upon my aforesaid Kinsman John Cross of ye same place, a certain tract or parcel of land lying and being in ye Township of Haverhill, namely ye one half of that tract or parcel of land which I purchased of John Merrill the one half for quantity and quality, the other half I have sold unto William Cross and ye land which I have disposed of unto William and John is bounded as followeth on ye South West by John-

ston Brook so called next unto Joshua Swan's land and go from Johnston's Brook on Merrimack River down the River to a Ledge of Rocks with a Stake by them, from there running Westerly to a White Oak Tree marked on three sides, go from there to a Pitch Pine Tree which is a division bound mark between Robert Swan and Josuha Swan, the one half of this land mentioned within these bounds for quantity and quality to him the said John Cross, to have and to hold and furthermore to describe ye whole of ye sd land that I have here given unto John Cross and sold William Cross. John Cross is to have one quarter or fourth part of sd undivided land both for quantity and quality ye parcel of undivided land is bounded as followeth. Running from ye forenamed Pitch Pine Westerly to a little White Oak marked, standing on ye West side of a Brook called Bloody Brook, from there North Easterly to a White Oak standing on the North side of a little Swamp from there to a Pine Tree by ye other land that is divided between Timothy Osgood and sd Robert Swan ye first above mentioned land and also this last named parcel of land both parcells of land as they are therein set out and described. To him the said John Cross, his heirs, Executors, Administrs or Assignee, to have and to hold, use, possess, occupy and enjoy and that forever. And I sd Robert Swan do warrentize this my gift and bequeathmt, and do avouch that at the time of ensealing and delivering hereof that I am ye legal and proper owner of the same and that I have good right to give and dispose of ye same and that it is free from all former sales, bargains, gifts or grants, judgements or executions thirds or dowengs or any incumbrance whatsoever and that henceforth ye sd John Cross may possess and enjoy and make use of ye same without a denial or disturbance, lett or hindrance made by me ye sd Robert Swan or my heirs, executors, administrs or by any other person or persons whatsoever in by form or under me to ye confirmation hereof I sd Robert Swan do bind myslf and heirs, executors or administrs unto John Cross, his heirs, executors, administrs or assigns firmly by these presents. In confirmation of ye same I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty-eighth of April, in the year 1709 ; and in the eighth year of ye reign of our Sovereign Lady Queen Anne of Great Britain

Signed and Sealed and Delivered in the
presence of us Witnesses — Robert Swan Sen.
James Turner — Seal.
Ebenezer Hartshorn
Acknowledged Feb. 22, 1714.
Recorded 31 ; Essex Co. Deeds, Salem, Mass.

## ROBERT SWAN SR. SELLS LAND TO WILLIAM CROSS JOHN'S BROTHER.

## NOTE THE DIFFERENCE—NOT FOR LOVE OR BY REASON OF RELATIONSHIP. THE ONLY CONSIDERATION BEING COLD CASH.

Know all men by these presents that I Robert Swan, Senr., of Haverhill in ye County of Essex in New England, for divers good causes and considerations, me thereto moving. But especially for and in consideration of ye Sume

of twenty pounds secured to me by Bill under ye hand of William Cross of ye same place ye which is to my full satisfaction and content, whereupon I have bargained and sold. And do by these presents bargain or sell Alienate make over dispose of and confirm unto and upon ye above s'd William Cross, a certain tract or p'cell of land lying and being in ye township of Haverhill, ye one half of that land which I purchased of John Merrill and it is bounded as followeth on ye west by Johnson's Brook so called next to Joshua Swanns land and so from Johnsons brook or Merrimack river down ye river to a ledge of rocks with a stake by them thence running westerly to a white oak tree marked on three sides so from thence to a pitch pine tree which is a division bound marke between Robert Swann and Joshua Swann ye one half of this land mentioned within these bounds both for quantity and quality to him ye s'd William Cross, and furthermore adding to ye tract of land that I do hereby sell unto ye s'd William Cross to make out unto him ye one half of ye land that I bought of John Merrill ye other being not divided but lyeth undivided between Timothy Osgord and ye s'd Robert Swann the which William Cross is to have one quarter or fourth part of for quantity and quality and ye whole of that undivided land is bounded as followeth running from ye bonus unto ye pitch pine westwardly to a white oak standing on the west side of a brook called Bloody Brook from thence northwesterly to a white oak standing on ye north side of a little swamp from thence to a pine tree by ye other land that is divided between s'd Osgord and s'd Swann and this last mentioned pine within these bounds, William Cross is to have ye quarter or ye forth part of to him and his Heirs Executors Administrators or Assignes, to have and to hold and that forever, and I myself and ye ensealing hereof to be ye true and lawful owner thereof and that it is free from all former sale or mortgages, gifts or grants, dowers or executions or any other incumbrances of what kind soever so yt henceforth ye sd William Cross may have ye whole use improve enjoyment of ye sd demised premises to him and his heirs or assignes and that forever with all ye priviledges therein and thereon both of wood and timber streams of water or springs or any other benefit as it is herein set forth and preserved to confirn sd Cross in ye title hereof according to this Bill of Sale I do bind myself and heirs and executors and admin'rs to ye sd William Cross his heirs and assignes. In witness hereof I have here to sett my hand and seal this 20th day of April in ye year 1709.

Robert Swann.

Signed sealed in presence of us

Witnesses:

Joshua Swann;
Robert Swann.

Essex is in Andover ye 22nd of Feb'ry., 1714.

Robert Swan personally appeared and acknowledged this statement to be his Act and Deed.

Before me Nehimiah Jewett, Jus. Peace.

Recorded Apr. 30, 1718.
Essex Co. Deeds, Salem, Mass., 34 : 173.

## OTHER TRANSFERS

Abstract:

William Cross, Methuen, yeoman, partly in consideration of that parental love and affection which I have to my son Joseph Cross, Methuen, yeoman, and partly a payment of £17 10 s L. M., I transfer to him that tract of land where he now dwells, bounded as followeth, viz: Beginning at Stake and Stones by the Highway and thence running Easterly by land of John Cross and Moses Cross to a Stake and Stones thence running Northwardly about thirty nine Pole to a Stake 7 Stones, thence Westwardly by said John and Moses Cross' land to a great Rock thence Southwesterly to a Stake and Stones by the Highway and thence Southwardly by ye said Highway to ye bounds first mentioned containing thirty three acres.

Apr. 2, 1747.

Witnesses ;
Archie Swan
Robert Swan, Jun.
Acknowledged April 8, 1747. Recorded April 12, 1748.
Essex Deeds 90 : 176

Abstract

William Cross, Methuen, yeoman, partly in consideration of that parental affection which I have to my son William Cross Junr., and partly in consideration of £40.

Covey lands—where I now dwell—beginning at a Stake and Stones at bound of land I lately gave to my son Joseph, from thence running Northwardly by his land till it comes land holden by John Cross and Moses Cross, from thence running Easterly by said land and by land of Edward Webber and Thomas Cross and Moses Cross to a Stake and Stones, and so to another Stake and Stones by Merrimack River from thence running Southwardly by the Merrimack River to land holden of Moses Cross and so Westerly by said Moses Cross' land to the Bound first mentioned only reserving the Highway laid out through said land, the whole of said land containing forty acres more or less.

May 1, 1752.
Acknowledged July 9, 1756.
Recorded Oct. 28, 1765.
Essex Co. Deeds, Salem, 120:61.

John Cross, Methuen, £ 20. to William Cross, 37 acres, more or less. "Beginning at Merrimac River at a Stake and Stones, thence Westerly to a great Rock, thence Southwardly to a Pine by the country road, thence Easterly about 300 rods to a white Oak marked, thence Easterly to a heap of Stones by Merrimac River thence down the river to the first Bound mentioned.

## THE AUTHOR WILL NOW RESUME THESE MEMOIRS.

## THE CROSS BROTHERS JOHN AND WILLIAM.

They were married in Haverhill, N. H., in 1706 and 1708 respectively. They were in that part of Haverhill, N, H., which in 1725 became Methuen, Mass., and is today Lawrence, Mass.

They lived in a log cabin on the estate of what is claimed was first purchased from the Indians by their father in exchange for red broadcloth.

THE FAMILY BIVOUAC.

This ancient homestead, first a log cabin, had a very large and solid stone foundation, evidently intended as a sort of fort or protection against the Indians. On the author's visit to the homestead, 8 years ago he was struck with its massive base, and was sure that in some places a team of horses could be driven along the top.

In 1708, John and William removed the logs and built over the big cellar a long low building of three rooms, and there the boys lived with their brides.

For the past 200 years additions were made until the homestead now contains thirteen rooms.

1700 The Little Puritan, Mary Frayle, 1700.

WILLIAM CROSS SR. FOUNDER OF OUR LINE.
He stood at the end of the well known trail,
In front of the cabin of Mary Fraile.

## THIRD GENERATION.

William Cross, Sr., married Mary Fraile, the name in the earliest records is Frayle (tradition had it that William's wife was a Mary Favoli.) (This is not according to the records.) The marriage took place April 9th, 1706. She died at Methuen, Jany. 26th, 1769, in her 89th year.

George Frayle had a grant of ten acres in Lynn in 1630. He lived in Lynn and his name is occasionally met with in the records. His wife was Elizabeth. He died 1669. He had seven children.

(1.) George b. 1641. (2.) Elizabeth b. 1641. (3.) Hanna b. 1642. d. 1662. (4.) Eunice b. 1644. (5.) Samuel born March 7th, 1645. (6.) Deborrah b. 1648. (7.) Ruth b. 1653.

Samuel Fraile, son of George b. March 7th, 1645, lived in Salem. He was a soldier in King Phillip's war.

He was one of the grantees of Townsend, Mass., 1718. He did not go there.

In 1708 he married Jane Gould. Eunice married 1670, Abraham Patch, Ipswich. Ruth married 1723, Nathanell Torbox, Lynn.

George Fraile, Jr., died young and was unmarried. Samuel Fraile was the father of Mary Fraile. (Several new kinsmen were introduced to us by Hon. Ezra S. Sterns, just as these memoirs were going to press, among them the Hassells and the Perry's, and Gould's Senator Stearns also tells us of the real name of William Cross' wife, which was Fraile not Favoli. The Fraile history is now being looked up, but it is hardly likely that it will be in the printers. Miss Grace Cross however has ascertained that when the emigrant George Fraile had land allotted to him by the committee on farm distribution in Lynn, Mass., in 1638, the following names appeared as having been allotted land at the same time :

"Goodman" Cross; "Goodman" Watkin; George Fraile. So that there was a Cross in Lynn in 1638. George Frail died in 1663 and his son George in 1669 as formerly mentioned as the result of an accident, a piece of timber weighing 1500 tons rolled upon him.)

GOULD ARMS.

## WILLIAM CROSS, SR., AND MARY (FRAIL.)

Cross had Issue:—(1.) Joseph; (2.) William, Jr.

## FOURTH GENERATION

Deacon William Cross, son of the Founder, who afterwards became a Seperatist and went to jail for the cause.

## WILLIAM CROSS, JR.

William Cross, Jr., afterwards Deacon William m. Mary Corliss, Nov. 5, 1741. She died Feb. 17th, 1805. They had issue :

William III., b. Wed., Aug. 4, 1742; m. Abagail Ladd, Sep., 1767.
Jonathan, b. Sat. Oct. 1, 1743; m. Elizabeth Bailey—Our ancestor.
Simeon, b. Sun. Mar. 10, 1745.
David, b. Sun. Mar. 8, 1746; m. Polly Frye.
Stephen, b. Tue. July 25, 1749; d. April, 1758.
Molly, b. July 15, 1751; m. —Hastings.
Ruth, b. Fri. June 10, 1753; m. Jas. Atwood, Alexandria, N. H,
Lydia, b. Thurs. July 6, 1753; m. John Harvey, Dracut.
Abijah, b. Thurs. July 6, 1758; m. Elizabeth Parker, Dracut.
Deborrah, b. Sat. Aug. 2, 1760; m. —Hazleton.
Benjamin, b. Wed. Aug. 24, 1763; d. Mar. 15, 1766.

All these children were born (as their father and grandfather was before them) at the Old Cross Homestead.

## DEACON WILLIAM GOES TO JAIL.

William Cross, Jr., was a Deacon of the First Church Methuen, but became interested in the Baptists at that time called Seperatists, he neglected to pay his Minister's tax. He was under a mandate of the courts ordered to comply with the requirements of citizenship. He refused and was taken to jail. "Kissing his wife Molly good bye he bade her to be of good cheer and

mounting his horse followed the officers to Salem, choosing rather to submit to the penalties of disobeying the law than to act contrary to his religious convictions."

## FIFTH GENERATION

### Jonathan Cross

Jonathan Cross, son of William Cross Jr. and Mary (Corliss) Cross (William Jr., William Sr., John Sr., Robert) married Elizabeth Bailey and had Issue (1) Rebecca (2) Elizabeth (3) Persis (4) Olive (5) Fanny (6) Benjamin (7) Bailey (8) Nathan.

## JONATHAN THE REVOLUTIONARY

Jonathan lived at the old homestead at Meuthen until his brother Abijah was married when he moved to Salem N. H. where his wife (as Elizabeth Bailey) had lived before him. When his son Bailey married he moved to Caanan N. H. Jonathan's war record is as follows:—He served in Genl. Titicomb's regiment, joining at Providence R. I., and was allowed travelling expenses from Methuen. He was in active service for two months and eighteen days in 1777. He then joined Captain Davis company the regiment of Col. Cogswell, enlisting Sep. 25th 1778, and served one month and seventeen days, in attempting with his regiment to hold the posts against the British in and around Boston.

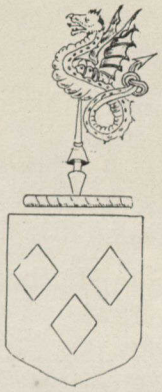
BAILY CROSS HOME.

Pioneer Home of my Great Grandfather, Bailey Cross at Caanan, N. H., where my Grandfather Calvin Bailey Cross was born 1808. and where he met his Grandfather Jonathan Cross, the Revolutionary.

## GENERATION VI

Bailey son of Jonathan Cross and (Elizabeth Bailey) Cross (William Jr. William Sr., John Sr., Robert Sr.) married Susanna Bagley, March 16th 1802. She was probably the daughter of Timothy Bagley of Worchester Mass. They had issue. (1) Leonard, b. Feb. 14th 1803; (2) Luther, Sept. 16 1804; (3) Lemira b. Aug. 31st 1806 ; (4) Calvin Bailey, b. Aug 16th 1808 ; (5) Amy b. June 12th 1811 (buried in the same grave as her father) (6) Susanna b. June 12th 1813 (four months after her father's death.

(Copied at Town clerk's office Caanan by C. B. Cross my Grandfather and given to me many years ago for these memoirs.



BAGLEY ARMS

John Bagley settled in New England 1750.
Arms—Or three lozenges azure.
Crest—On top of a spear issuing, a wyvern sans leg tail mowed.

After Bailey's death his widow Susan (Bagley) Cross married Stephen Worth. One of their children was Mrs. Beamer.

MRS. BEAMER.

Half sister of Calvin Bailey Cross (my grandfather.)

Extracts from letters of Mrs. Beamer, to the Author.

According to the records in my bible Jonathon Bailey Cross married Susanna Bagley, March 16th, 1802. He died of spotted fever February 28th, 1812. They had six children. After his death the widow married Stephen Worth, my father, so that I am Calvin Bailey Cross (your grandfather's half sister. There were four daughters by this marriage, and I was one of them.

Baily Cross was born in Methuen and died in Canada. They were descended from Sir Robert Cross. I am the only one of my line and generation living, and I do not expect to stay much longer, as I am seventy-nine years of age now.

Written from Columbus, Ohio, 1907:

I am well for my age, eighty-three. My children are:—1, Clara (Patterson), Columbus, Ohio; 2, Frank P. Beamer, Covington, Ohio; 3, William W. Beamer, Rock Hill, South Carolina; 4, Charles E. Beamer, Orion, Mich.; 5, Thomas W. Beamer, Spartenburg, South Carolina; 6, Alvin C. Beamer, Cleveland, Ohio; 7, Arthur S. Beamer, Oak Park, Ill.; 8, Mary Harriet.

I do not remember your great grandfather, Calvin Cross distinctly. I was born in Hartford, Vermont, Feb. 6, 1824. I recollect moving to Ohio when I was six years old. My father died a year later and left my mother with five girls. She took her children and went to your great uncle's house (Dr. Luther Cross), to keep house for him in your home town of St. Catherine's, staying until he was married.

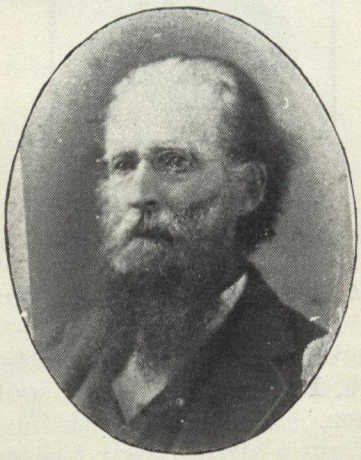
The year I was ten years old I spent with your grandfather in Windsor, and when mother came back from Ohio, I stayed with my step-sister, until I was sixteen. Then I became homesick and again went to Ohio. Shortly afterwards I was married. The reason that the second family was so scattered was that my father purchased government land, but the title was faulty and we lost it.

MY GRANDFATHER.—SEVENTH GENERATION.

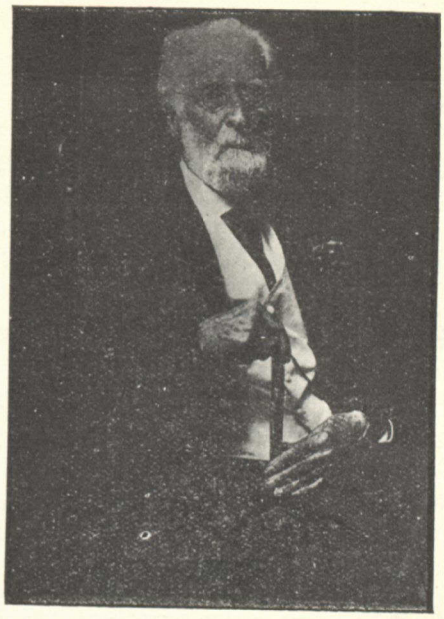
Calvin Bailey Cross, son of Bailey, (Jonathan; William; William John, Sr.; Robert Sr.) married Caroline Cummings. Children:

1. Caroline Elizabeth; 2. Edward Bailey.

From my mother's scrap book; "Edward B. Cross, only son of Calvin B. and Caroline R. Cross, aged four years and nine months, died at Troy, N. Y., Aug. 22, 1839.

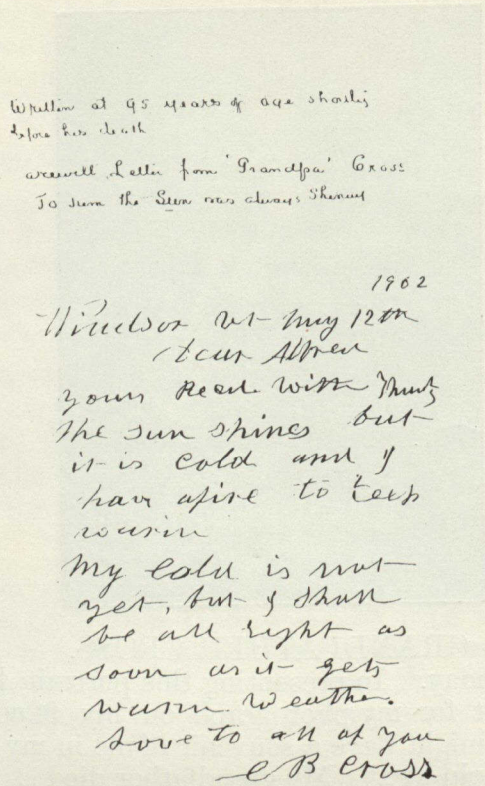


GRANDFATHER CROSS AT 60



GRANDFATHER CROSS.
Taken on his 92nd birthday. In presenting this portrait, he said, "My friends asked me to sit for my photograph on my 92nd birthday that they might have a souvenir of me in my green old age." My grandfather died in his 95th year.

GRANDMOTHER CROSS.
Caroline (Cummings) Cross died in 1887 aged 84. As a child I was alarmed at my Grandmother's appearance. Being a Cummings she was a great size and over six feet tall. Her gentle reasurring manner quickly dissipated these fears. In 1883 my grandmother presented my mother with the history of Westford, showing her descent from The Wrights and Cummings.


Written at 95 years of age shortly before his death.
Farewell Letter from 'Grandpa' Cross
To him the Sun was always Shining

1902

Windsor Vt May 12th

Dear Alfred

Yours Rec'd with thanks
The sun shines but
it is cold and I
have a fire to keep
warm
My cold is not
yet, but I shall
be all right as
soon as it gets
warm Weather.
Love to all of you
C B Cross

Written at 95 years of age shortly before his death. Farewell letter from "Grandpa" Cross. 'To him the Sun was always Shining.'

Windsor, Vt. May. 12th, 1902.

Dear Alfred,

Yours Rec'd. with thanks, the sun shines but it is cold and I have a fire to keep me warm. My cold is not yet, but I shall be all right as soon as it gets warm weather. Love to all of you.

C. B. Cross.

## FREEMASONS TRIBUTE A GOOD CITIZEN AN HONORED AND BELOVED "BROTHER" AND A REVERED GRANDFATHER.

Extract from a letter from M. O. Perkins, Secretary of Lodge Number 18 F. and A. M., Windsor, Vt., May 12, 1902, to A. E. Goodman.

It was a melancholy pleasure for the Lodge to perform the last duty of mason to mason on earth, for our venerable brother, your grandfather, C. B.

Cross. Several years ago he left a small sum to the Lodge to pay his funeral expenses.

Our venerable, and, I assure you, honored and beloved, brother, was made a mason in Vermont Lodge in 1868. He was initiated July 16th of that year; crafted August 25th, and raised Oct. 1, following until his last year he maintained his interest in matters of masonic but only occasionally, of late, had attended meetings of the lodge, owing to the difficulty he had of climbing the stairs to the lodge room. He frequently talked with me on the subject, and, as on other matters on which he conversed, was always interesting.

His body was placed beside his wife and son in the old south cemetery. The beautiful burial ceremony of the craft was recited in a very impressive manner, by Past Master Luther C. Parkhurst, one of the most accomplished ritualists in Vermont. The bearers were Bros. Stanley R. Bryant; our Postmaster, Arthur Z. Thompson, member of the board of Selectmen; A. D. Cotton, formerly superintendent of the Shoe Factory here, now retired; and M. L. Harris, a well known engineer on the Boston and Maine Road. All were personal friends of your grandfather, although much younger in years. In fact, one might well add, who was not a friend of this venerable brother ? and who did not deem it an honor to be so called? The musical service at the grave was beautifully rendered by the best of our select quartette; Daniel Payson, Figman F. Cabot, F. S. Hale, and Miss Minnie Barbour. Rev. Mr. Goddard of the Episcopal Church was the officiating clergyman. All these men were masons, good and true, Brother Payson standing high in the Grand Bodies.

## PAUL REVERE'S LODGE

The Lodge to which your grandfather belonged was directly descended from the oldest Lodge in Vermont, viz : Vermont Lodge No. 17, rightly of Old Massachusetts Grand Lodge, and chartered by the latter in 1781. The request for the charter was dated Cornish, N. H, At that time the towns on both sides of the river were claimed by both Vermont and New Hampshire, and towns of the latter were actually represented in the Vermont legislature, while the judge of the Vermont Supreme Court lived in New Hampshire. The charter located the Lodge in Springfield, Vermont, and bore the name of Paul Revere as Junior Grand Warden. It is now, and has been for years in my possession. Meetings of the Lodge were held in Charlestown, N. H., until 1789, when the question arose as to the legality of so doing. The Massachusetts Grand Lodge held the previous irregularity. and a division of the Lodge took place, the Vermont members meeting for a time in Springfield. When the Vermont Grand Lodge was changed it was Number 1 on the Vermont Register.

## MORGAN EXCITEMENT

The Anti-Masonic madness in 1830 throttled its existence, and it was only resuscitated in 1850, when it became No. 18. Ira Allan and Gov. Chipman of the early days were members. I have the records of the Lodge since 1789.

With the assurance that the Lodge now deeply regrets the passing hence of your grandfather, whom we thought was to have been crowned by Him with the century garland, we earnestly and profoundly sympathise with you in your affliction.

## NO BEARS AND WILD INDIANS FOR HIM

My grandfather in his life time talked little about his ancestors. He remembered his own grandfather, Jonathan Cross coming to Canaan, where his father Bailey Cross lived. He said he was a short, powerfully-built man, with a heavy black beard. He had come from Methuen to settle at Canaan, but soon went back, saying that the bears and wild Indians were too numerous to suit him.

## A LIKEABLE MAN

The Author remembers his grandfather well. He was gentle, kind and considerate of others, in fact a very likeable man. He smoked constantly and took his nip of brandy when he felt like it indulgences which did not apparently bring him to an early grave. In fact, he would probably have lived to be a hundred if he had not fallen down stairs and injured his kidneys, dying in-forty-eight hours, at the age of ninety-five.

## LAFYETTE'S SILVER BUCKLES

My grandfather said that he remembered General Lafyette coming to Windsor some years after the war of 1812, and that the citizens might see him better, standing on the top of a drygoods box. He remembered how he looked with his black silk short pants and long stockings, and the silver buckles on his shoes and his powdered wig.

## FAMILY RECORDS LOST.

My grandfather's house was destroyed by fire sometime before his death, and all the rare old furniture and family records were lost.

## MY GRANDFATHER'S CLOCK.

One hundred years without slumbering.

A grandfather's clock dated 1802 was in my grandfather's house when he was a baby. It is now in possession of my brother E. C. Goodman, Vancouver, B. C.

A story is told to the effect that when the British soldiers were approaching Vermont in 1812 that the little Crosses' being made aware of the fact hid inside and behind this old clock. My Grandfather then four years old could have accomplished the fete (of hiding inside the venerable time piece) accord ing to measurements made. Two generations of Crosses have passed away since then but Grandfather's clock is still running.

CROSS HOMESTEAD

IN THE WORDS OF LONGFELLOW:

There groups of merry children played,
There youths and maidens dreaming stayed;
Even as a miser counts his gold
Those hours the ancient time piece told
Forever Never
Never Forever.

From that chamber clothed in white
The bride came forth on her wedding night,
And in the hush which followed the prayer
Was heard the old clock on the stair
Forever Never
Never Forever.

All are scattered now and fled,
Some are married, some are dead,
As in the days long since gone by
The ancient time piece makes reply
Forever Never
Never Forever.

## A MOUNTAIN CLIMBER AT 84.

From old copy of the Vermont Journal, Windsor Vt., Mr. C. B. Cross has returned from abroad where he has been visiting friends. Our esteemed citizen is the oldest resident of Windsor and is still in excellent health for his advanced years.

At 84 Mr. Cross scaled Mt. Eschutney, a fete which many men of fifty would shrink from performing.

## CROSS CENTENARIANS.

William Cross, our Johnathan's brother, lived to be one hundred years and seven months' old, Abijah Cross, his brother, died in his hundredth year, Johnathan lived to a very great age. Eliza Cross was 97 when she died and my grandfather Calvin Cross passed away in his 95th year.

## HIGH COST OF LIVING?

From an old print in my mother's scrap book (Windsor Vermont Journal) C. B. Cross found among some papers a few days ago, two old rate bills and warrants for the collection of school taxes in Windsor Vt. from 1810 to 1811. Amos Cunnings was the collector. An endorsement on one of the papers, shows that $8 was paid for 'boarding the teacher the summer past.' Another endorsement read $14 and 92 cents for boarding the Master and his horse. Persons paying their taxes in wood will be allowed $3 a cord for the same.

## FROM MY MOTHER'S SCRAP BOOK

Dated 1845 when my mother was seven years old

Mr. Cross to R. Wardner Dr.,

To tuition of daughter Elizabeth 12 weeks at twelve and a half cents a week—$1.50

Received payment

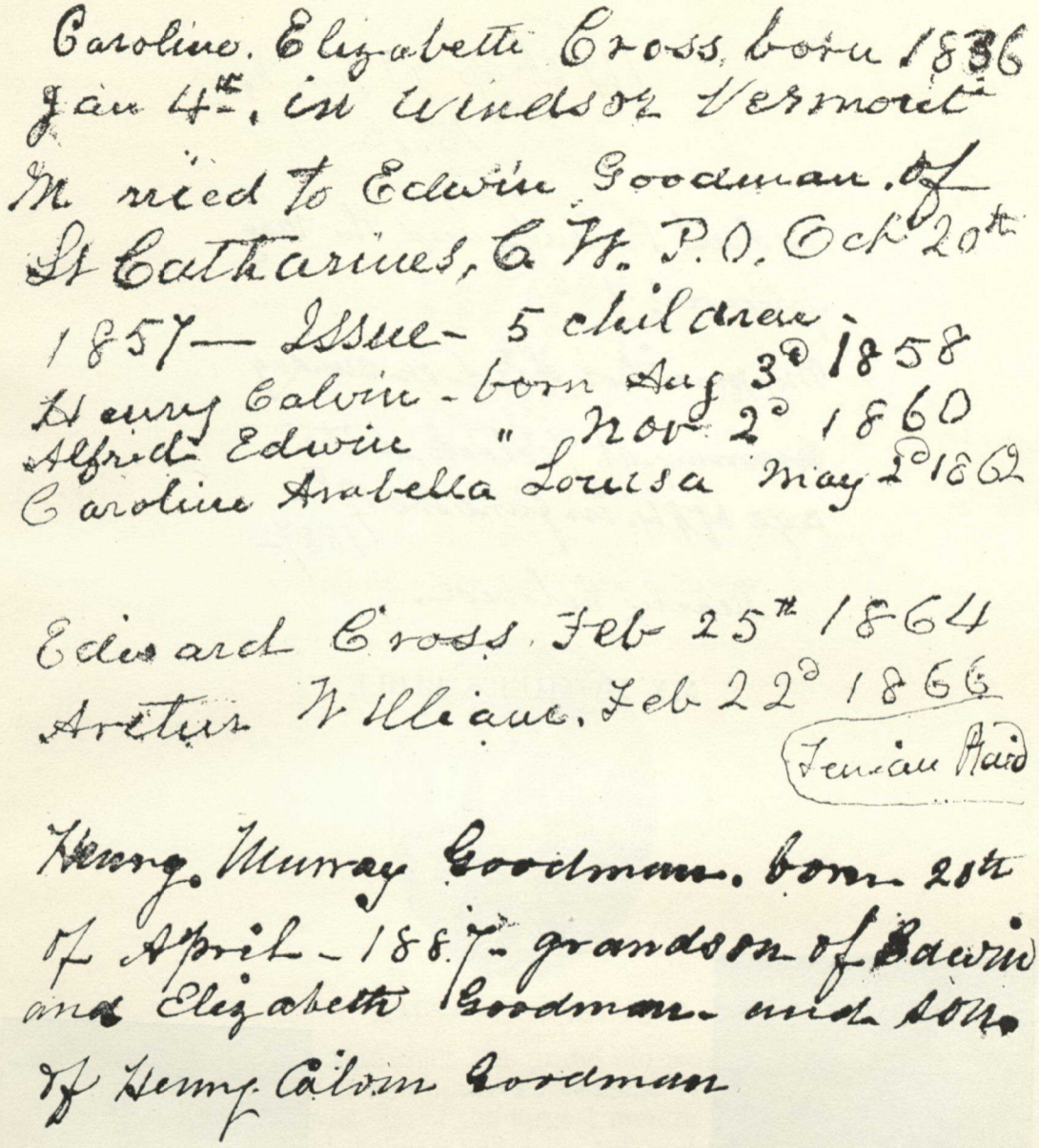
R. Wardner

## GRANDMOTHER'S GOLDEN WEDDING

From my Mother's Scrap Book:—The Golden Wedding Anniversary of Mr. and Mrs. C. B. Cross took place yesterday (on Sept. 23 1883.) The table was spread in the fashion of Ye Olden Tyme with cake wine and flowers. May many years of happiness still be reserved for them..

My Grand Mother Elizabeth
Cummings died on Friday
morning Aug 8th 1856
Sacred to her memory are these
words—
Oh who that saw her gasping here
Could wish her back again"

## MY MOTHER'S BIBLE


Caroline Elizabeth Cross born 1836
Jan 4th. in Windsor Vermont
Married to Edwin Goodman of
St Catharines, C W. P.O. Oct 20th
1857— Issue— 5 children.
Henry Calvin - born Aug 3d 1858
Alfred Edwin " Nov 2d 1860
Caroline Arabella Louisa May 2d 1862

Edward Cross. Feb 25th 1864
Arthur Williams. Feb 22d 1866
(Twin Boys)

Henry Murray Goodman. born 28th
of April - 1887 - grandson of Edwin
and Elizabeth Goodman and son
of Henry Calvin Goodman

MY MOTHER'S BIBLE

It contains in her handwriting the death of her grandmother, aunts and mother, and there she has recorded her own marriage and the births of her offspring. On the blank page of the bible is written Lizzie Cross, Windsor, Vt. 'This little book was given to me by Aunt Lucinda, 1855. May I long keep it in rememberance of her.' (My mother was then 17.) The next entry is 'My Grandmother Elizabeth Cummings died on Friday morning Aug. 8th, 1855.' Sacred to her memory are these words 'Oh who that saw her parting hours would wish her back again.' 'My Aunt Belinda died the May following.'

III. Chap 17 January
15. 16. 17

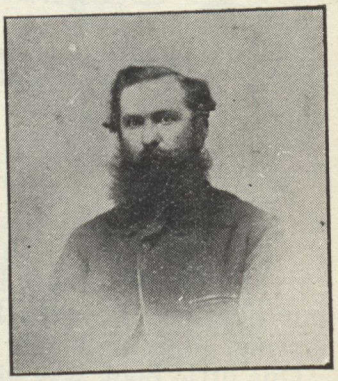
My Aunt Belinda died the way
following. 1855

My mother, died on sunday
morning. at 7 o'clock, at the
age of 84. in June the 19th.
1887—

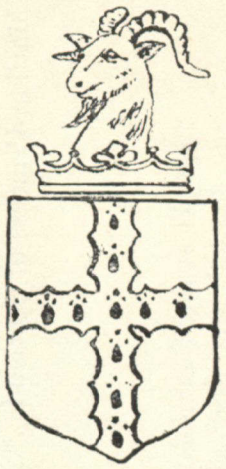
Dearly beloved.

MY MOTHER'S BIBLE

My Mother



My Father

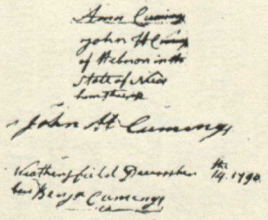


KINGSLEY ARMS

John Cumming Jr. married the daughter of Samuel and the
Grand-daughter of Richard Kingsley.

AMOS CUMMINGS

My Great Grandfather (Maternal) The grand old man of the Cummings line,
who died at my Grandmother's residence Windsor, Vt., aged
98. He was one of the largest men in New Eng
land, being 6 feet 4 in., tall and built
in proportion.



Signatures of AMOS CUMINGS and JOHN HARWOOD CUMMINGS
my Great Grandfather and Great Great Grandfather.

THE SAXON KINGS
THE ENGLISH KINGS

| | |
|---|---|
| Alfred | Elswitha |
| Edward | Edgiva |
| Edmund | Elgifa |
| Edgar | Ekfrida |
| Ethelred | Elgifa |
| Edmund II. | Algitha |
| Prince Edward | Agatha (Germany) |
| Malcolm III. (Scotland) | Margaret (England) |

Matilda Princess of Scotland..* MARRIED.. Henry I. King of England

| | |
|---|---|
| Charlemagne | Hildegrade Savoy |
| Louis I. | Judith Bavaria |
| Charles II. (France) | Richildis (2nd wife) |
| Princess Judith | Baldwin Flanders |
| Count Baldwin | Ethelwida |
| Count Arnoul | Elix Vermandois |
| Count Baldwin | Matilda Saxony |
| Count Arnoul | Susanna Italy |
| Count Baldwin | Agiva Luxemburg |
| Count Baldwin | Adela France |
| Matilda Flanders | William I. England |

| | |
|---|---|
| Jeoffrey Anjou | Maud Germany |
| Henry II England | Eleanor Aquitaine |
| John England | Isabella Agouleme |
| Henry III " | Eleanor Province |
| Edward I " | Eleanor Castile |
| Earl Humphrey | Elizabeth Plantagenet |
| Baron Ferrers Robert | Margaret Despencer |
| Baron Ferrers Edmund | Eleanor la Roche |
| Baron Ferrers William | Elizabeth Belknap |
| Ann Ferrers | Sir Walter Devereaux |
| Katharine Devereaux | Jas. Baskerville |
| Sybil Baskerville.. | *MARRIED.... |

| | |
|---|---|
| Robert Whitney | Elizabeth de Morgan |
| Thomas Whitney | Mary dau Jno Bray |
| John Whitney | Eleanor |
| John Whitney | Ruth dau R. Reynolds |
| Ruth Whitney | Enoch Laurence |

By First Wife
Charles II France

Carleman Bavaria

King Arnoul Germany
Hedwige Saxony
Emperor Henry Germany
Duke Hedwige France
Hugh Caput King France
Hugh de Vermandoes
Isabel m. Baron Bellemont
R. deBellmont m Amicia deWaer d. Earl Liescester
Robert de Bellemont m. Petronella d. Baron gren tesmaismil
Margaret de Bellemont m. Saher de Quincey
Lady Hawise de Quincey m. Hugh de Vere
Robert de Vere m. Agnes dau. Gilbert (de Saundford
Alphonsus de Vere m. Jane d. Sir Richard Foliot
John de Vere m. Maud d. Baron de (Balelsmere
Lady Margeret de Vere m. Sir J. Devereaux
Sir Walter Devereaux m. Agnes Crophull
Elizabeth Devereaux m. Sir John Milbourne
Simon Milbourne m Jane d. Robt. Baskerville
Blanch Millbourne m. James Whitney
Sir Robert Whitney m. Margeret Wye
Sir Robert Whitney

* NOTE—Matilda Princess of Scotland married Henry I. of England, their descendent Sybil Baskerville married Sir Robert Whitney. See following page.

## CONTINUATION OF THE WHITNEY LINE (LAWRENCE LINE.)

1. Sir Robert Lawrence
2. Sir Robert Lawrence m. dau. of James Trafford
3. James Lawrence m. dau Jno de Washington
4. John Lawrence m. Marg't dau W. Choford
5. John Lawrence m. Elizabeth Holt
6. Sir Robert Lawrence m. Margeret Holden
7. Sir Robert Lawrence m. Aphilis dau. Edward Langford
8. Nicholas Lawrence
9. John Lawrence
10. Thomas Lawrence
11. John Lawrence
12. Robert Lawrence
13. John Lawrence
14. John Lawrence
15. John Lawrence
16. Henry Lawrence
17. John Lawrence m. Susan Bachelor
18. Enoch Lawrence (m. Ruth Whitney) (see Whitney line)
19. Zacharia Lawrence (m. Abigail Parker)
20. Zacharia Lawrence (m. Sarah dau. Nathanial Lawrence)
21. Sarah Lawrence m. John Wright

John Wright
John Wright (m. Abigail Dau. Arthur Warren)
Jno. Wright-Mary Stevens
Jacob Wright
Elizabeth Wright married Amos Cummings

Isaac Cummings
John Cummings married Alice dau. Thomas Howlett
John Cummings married Elizabeth dau. Samuel and (grand dau. Stephen Kingsley and mother Hanna dau. Richard & Alice Brackett.
William Cummings mar. Sarah dau. William and grand (dau. Nathanial Harwood (her mother Esther daugh. (Obediah Perry grandmother Esther dau. Richard (Hassell.
Jno. Harwood Cummings married Sarah dau. Benjamin (and Sarah Simons, Worcester.

NOTE:—Sarah Lawrence married John Wright Elizabeth married Amos Cummings and Caroline Cummings married Calvin Cross [See Cross Line next page.

## CROSS—CORLISS—BAILEY LINE

Cross of Wigan 1230
Cross of Cross Hall Lancaster 1350
Cross of Charlynch 1450

Sir Ranulph Cotgrave—Elinor [Francis Gamvil.]
Ranulph Cotgrave—Elinor Tafford.

Sir William Cross ..married.. Elinor Cotgrave
William Cross ..married.. Isabel dau. Robert de Holme
John Cross ..married.. Constance dau. William Boteler
John Cross ..married.. Ursula dau. Thomas Wentworth
Sir William Cross ..married.. Anghard dau. Mathew Ellis

John Cross son of William, whose ship sailed between Ipswich, England, and Ipswith, Mass.

Robert Cross, Sr., John Cross' son, settled at Ipswich, Mass., married Hanna Jordan dau. Stephen Jordan.

John Cross, Sr., Robert Sr's. son, said to have married Ruth Swan, dau. of Robert Swan, Sr., and grandaughter of Richard Swan, her mother being Elizabeth dau. of William Acie.

William Cross of Haverhill married Mary dau. Samuel Fraile and Jane Gould grand-daughter of George Fraile.

George Corliss * Johan dau. T. Davis.
John Corlis dau. Juilford Wilfred
Jonathan Corliss Elizabeth Moore.
William Cross .....married.... Mary Corliss

---

Richard Bailey—Edna Holstead
Joseph Bailey—Abigal dau Jno. Trumbull and Mrs. Ann Hopkinson
Deacon John Bailey—Susanna daugh. Samuel Lenney
John Bailey—Eliz. d Jonathan Corliss
Jonathan Cross ....married.... Elizabeth Bailey
Bailey Cross—Susan Bagley
Calvin B. Cross ....married.... Caroline Cummings (see Cummings line
Caroline Elizabeth Cross married Edwin Goodman (See Goodman line.)

## CONTINUED CROSS—GOODMAN—RIGGS—HOLLOWAY LINE.

Edward Rygge of Southampton
Thomas Ridges
Rafe Riggs m. Mary [Wm. Blake, son of Wm. Blake son of Wm. Blake
Thomas Riggs m. Jane Richardson
Ralph Riggs m. Mary Johnson
Ogle Riggs m. Elizabeth Musgrave
Henry Riggs m. Sindenia Buddin
Martha Riggs .....married..... Thomas Goodman

Squire Goodman Berkshire who had Letitia Utrecia James and Thomas

Henry Riggs Goodman mar. Arabella Holloway

John Holloway m. Alice dau Miles Lee
John Holloway
Wm. Holloway m Elizabeth dau Hy. Whitehead
Charles Holloway m. Elizabeth dau. of Rev. John Costillion this line connected with ours by the brother of Robert, who was the father of Admiral Holloway.
Thomas Holloway m. Ann Broadstreet
John Holloway m. Louisa Baumstadt

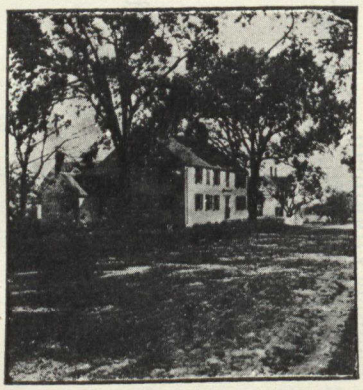
Edwin Goodman..married..Elizabeth Cross [See Cross Line.]

Alfred Edwin Goodman mar. Rose Ellis dau. Abraham and Ellen [Harrington] Ellis and grandaughter William Ellis.

Edwin Ellis Goodman

This chart is perhaps most interesting as a genealogical triumph. I do not make any claims for it beyond that fact that it is the product of years of patient research, I do not guarantee absolute accuracy, for it, any more than I do for any other statement in these memoirs. But I did not publish the chart until it was endorsed by the Genealogical Society of California, of which I have the honor to be a member, and before it had a further endorsation of several reputable professional genealogists in Massachusetts and California.. If it is any honor to be related to the crowned heads of Europe, that honor may be, I claim, by every son of Adam; we are all kin. But it is not a fact that gives us pause, that out of the teeming millions of humanity, we are of those few who have traced the purple line of royalty across our own, and, through its many ramifications, find it leading to the thrones of every nation in Christendom.

If as is affirmed we can pronounce the name of every founder of our line from Alfred the Great until to-day, should it not inspire us with the thought that we should strive to emulate the good deeds of our own royal ancestors and so live that we may not be forgotten in the passing of our race.



CROSS HOME

This is the end of my maternal line. The records disclose the remarkable fact that every one of our New England ancestors without exception was prominently identified with the affairs of his Town. They were public spirited and progressive, and not a drone in the ancient hive has been discovered,

With very few exceptions they served as selectmen on their Town councils, and there seemed to have been a regular race of Deacons. While all those who could shoulder a musket fought in the Indian, French or Revolutionary wars.

Is it not far better to know that all our ancestors ranked well above the average, mentally and physically, then that some of them had reached exalted positions in the affairs of life and that the balance were insignificant and not worth remembering.

The race appears to have been sound all through ; the men and women persuing such a well regulated and prudent course of living as most conducive to their corporeal and mental faculties in their fullest energy thereby enabling them to exercise those talents with which God had blessed them, as well to his glory as to the welfare of their country and their kind.

## KING PHILLIP'S WAR

## CORLISS - CUMMINGS - PERRY - HOWLETT - FRAILE CROSS (SWAN) and LAWRENCE

Names of our ancestors who took part in a war of extermination. These were our English ancestors fighting to protect their homes in the wilderness overseas. They had not lost sight of the allegiance they owed to their King and country ever remembering that God had emplanted in their breasts a sacred and indisoluble attachment towards that country from whence they derived their birth and infant nurture. So when England was in peril overseas they marched with their sons against her common enemy the French to Englands glory and to Americas permanent gain.

The founder race had passed away and the sons and grandsons born in the wilderness grew up with an intense patriotism for their native land, of New England, which their fathers had at such a terrible cost wrested from the savage red man, and with intense suffering and privation preserved for their posterity.

It was these sons and grandsons who said to stubborn King George, if you will not let us have a voice in our own Government, then without your leave we will govern ourselves.

Canadian descendents may still have some lingering notion that they should not enthuse too much over ancestors who turned against the old 'flag' (that we should all reverence and honor) even though they are convinced that it was George III stupidity that caused the trouble, and that the Colonials were in the right.

They must remember that we were all British then and the author has purposely entered exhaustively into the history of the rebellion as it concerned our own ancestors in old Westford showing that they too were most reluctant in taking up arms against their Mother country. It was a civil war, that first outbreak, and the author, although a loyal British subject, still feels a pride in the fact that these ancestors, when attacked by the British, rushed to the front prepared to sacrifice their lives not only for 'Freedom' (their battle cry) but for their homes and their families. I am proud of the fact that we had so many brave men in the ranks and in the same breath proud to relate that my Grandfather as a mere boy was a Canadian volunteer when Britian called all loyal sons to assist in regaining her American Colonies in the war of 1812. Let us honor our brave ancestors whatever side they were on. They fought accordingto their conscience with their whole heart, their whole mind and their whole strength, and remember once more 'we were all British then.

As far as our ancestors who fought in King Phillips War are concerned, there is no room for sectional feeling. They were Englishmen striving to exterminate a race of Indians which were a constant menace to their property and their lives.

I will take the liberty to quote Butterworth's American History. As this is taught in the schools of the U. S. it will doubtless be familiar to every American school child. The illustrations represent exactly those perilous times and while apologising to American readers, I will ask Canadian readers to remember that they are simply copies of illustrations from this well known school book printed to assist the imagination.

THE PILGRIMS RECEIVING MASSASOIT.

From American History

## EXTRACT FROM BUTTERWORTH'S HISTORY.

"Chief Massaseit had two sons who were christened by Governor Winslow of Massachussetts, Philip and Alexander. Alexander succeeds Massaseit but died suddenly on his way home from Plymouth. Philp was a noble Indian and governed his tribe with judgment.

At first friendly he grew to suspect that dangers threatened his people from the encroachment of the whites. His people were being crowded back into narrow places.

An Indian convert of Philipp's tribe was educated at Cambridge and returned to make trouble. He accused King Phillip of treachery to the whites. He was waylaid and killed by Phillip's tribesmen. The pioneers in turn waylaid the murderers and hung them. Phillip and his tribe could not bear this and broke out in open rebellion.

The Colonist being better equipped soon overcame the enemy and Phillip became a fugitive.

The cabins of the Indians, their winter stores were destroyed by fire, and even sad to say their old women and children perished in the flames.

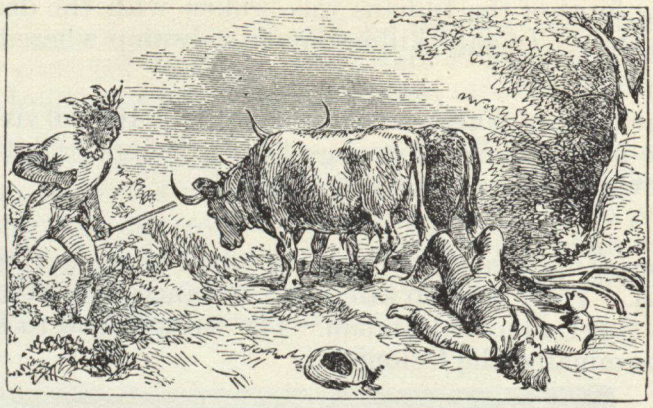
By 1675 the force of the Indians was broken with the death of the fugitive Phillip and traitor Indians killing him in a swamp where he lay concealed.

Of the great tribe of Narragansettes scarcely a 100 survived, and the last of that tribe the family of Wampanoags finally disappeared, the young son of King Phillip being sold into slavery in Bermuda.

The Author—This is not good reading but it must be remembered it was war to the death. There was no safety for our ancestors after that unfortunate affair of the "over-educated Indian." The savages had to be killed or they would have exterminated the Colonists.

There is but one expression to use it is well worn but most expressive whatever be the motive, self-preservation, loyalty, patriotism, or glory "War is hell."

THE PATH OF GLORY—*Life.*



DEATH IN THE FIELD.

FROM BUTTERWORTH'S HISTORY.

We read that Obediah Perry after serving in King Phillip's war (for his family's sake moved further afield. He was later persuaded to return and was murdered by the Indians. Butterworth here illustrates similar scenes of murder constantly taking place in these troublesome times. All honor to their ancestors who faced such perils in laying down the foundations of a new nation.

FROM BUTTERWORTH'S HISTORY OF AMERICA

It was the pioneer homes such as this, that was burned by the Indians and the inmates massacred. It was such a cabin as this that would represent the scene of the Pigwacket Massacre when the Cummings Kinsmen were slain.

Moans the night wind, dying, sighing
Sounding Like a mother's croon,
Fierce the red man murder minded
Wails his war cry to the tune.

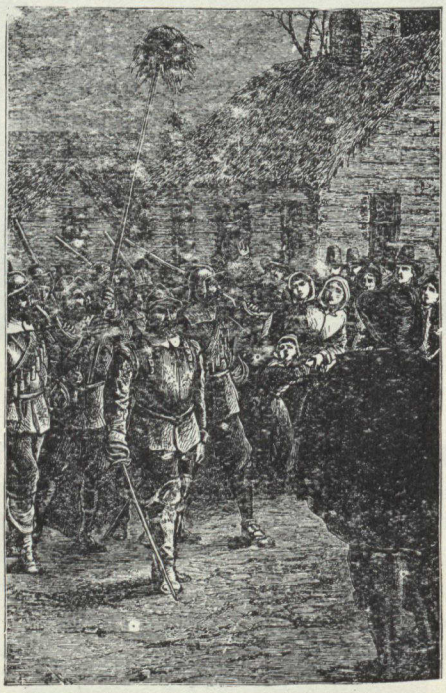
In the distant cabin, children,
Just before they go to rest
Praying as they nestle closer
To their tired mother's breast.

From Butterworth's History descriptive of the midnight attacks of the Pigwacket Indians referred to by the Author. In one of these attacks Ebenezer Cummings son of our John Cummings was killed as well as his mother, while Deacon William Cummings arm was broken. (Note the portrayal of these incidents) Here we see the ancient musket with the rest used afterwards by Deacon William in his Lovewell raids.

Moaned the night wind sighing, dying, nature in a mournful mood
Comes the red men murder minded suddenly from out the wood
Then the moment pregnant bursting with the thought that they must die
And the maddening murder clamor The Pigwacket battle cry.
Let us draw the veil of pity closly o'er the killing place
There was many a tragic chapter in the passing of our race.

DESTRUCTION OF THE NARRAGANSETTS.

VENGEANCE



THE END OF THE WAR OF EXTERMINATION.

King Phillip's Head on a Pole. A similar scene to this occurred fifty years later. In Lovewell's second expedition against the Pigwackets Deacon Cumings's mother and brothers had been killed by the Pigwackets and he joined the muskateers to avenge their deaths He and two kinsman John Harwood and Jonathan Cummings marched with the little band into Boston with ten Pigwacket scalps hoisted on poles and going to the Court House midst the joyous clamoring crowd received the bounty thereon.

## THE LION'S WHELP
## OUR ARMY LIST (BRITISH COLONIES) INDIAN AND FRENCH WARS.

CUMMINGS:

1. Deacon (Sargeant) Isaac (Isaac) Impressed for Naragansett King Phillip's War.
2. (John-Isaac) Ancestor King Phillip's war, wife and children killed.
3. Deacon William Ancestor (John-John-Isaac) Muskateer Pigwacket War.
4. Captain John (Nathanial-John-Isaac) Indian Wars.
5. Captain Joseph (Abraham-John-Isaac) Indian Wars.
6. Lieut. John (John-John-John-Isaac) French and Indian Wars.
7. Deacon William Cummings (John-John-John-Isaac) French war 1755.
8. Samuel (Samuel-John-John-Isaac) French war 1755.
9. Capt. David (Ephriam-Thomas-John-Isaac) Toconderoga, Saratoga
10. Lieut. Nathanial (Nathanial-Nathanial-John-Isaac) Louisburg 1754.
11. Lieut. Thomas (Joseph-Abraham-John-Isaac) French and Indian, Louis'g.
12. Eleazer (Eleazer-Abraham-John-Isaac) French and Indian.
13. Daniel Cummings (Joseph-John-Isaac-Isaac) Louisburg 1745.
14. John Cummings (John-John-John-Isaac) French and Indian 1755.
15. Captain Jotham (Jarahmael-Samuel-John-John-Isaac) French.

WRIGHTS:

16. Ebenezer (Ebenezer-John-John-John) Pigwacket.
17. Samuel Wright Oswego 1757.
18. John, Ancestor Great Great Great Grandfather Oswego 1757
19. Thomas (Thomas-John-John-John) French wars.
20. Oliver (Thomas-John-John-John) 1757 Louisburg.
21. John Corliss, King Phillip's War.
22. Robert Cross, Sr? Ancestor Pequot War
23. George Cross ? Ancestor King Phillip's war
24. John Cross, Sr? Ancestor King Phillip's war
25. Richard Swan? Ancestor King Phillip's war
26. Samuel Fraile Ancestor King Phillip's war
27. Perry Obediah Ancestor King Phillip's war killed 1680.
28. John Harwood Kinsman Pigwacket war Lovewell's muskateers killed by Indians 1725.
29. Sargeant Thos. Howlett Ancestor King Phillips war
30. Laurence Enoch Ancestor King Phillip's war wounded pensioned

### ARMY LIST CONTIUED

Our Revolutionary Kinsmen

CUMMINGS

1. Simeon (Jonthan-Thomas-John-Isaac)
2. Lieut Simeon (Nathanial-Nathanial-John-Isaac) Minute Man
3. Elisha (Isaac-Isaac-Isaac-Isaac) Served in three different companies
4. Joseph (John-John-Isaac-Isaac) Lexington and Bunker Hill, Minute Man
5. Jonthan (David-John-Isaac-Isaac)

6. Thaddeus (Samuel-Thomas-Isaac-Isaac) Rhode Island
7. Jonathan Cummings (Samuel-Thomas-Isaac-Isaac) Minute Man Lexington
8. Captain John (John-John-John-Isaac) Bunker Hill
9. Captain Eleazer (John-John-John-John-Isaac)Minute Man Bunker Hill
10. Ebenezer (William-John-John-John-Isaac)
11. William (William-John-John-John-Isaac)
12. Phillip (William-John-John-John-Isaac)
13. Thomas (Thomas-John-John-John-Isaac) Fifer with Zach Wright's Co.
14. Timothy (Thomas-John-John-John-Isaac) Minute Man from E. Westford
15. Ephriam (Ephriam-John-John-John-Isaac)
16. Samuel (Samuel-Samuel-John-John-Isaac) ROYALIST PROSCRIBED
17. Thomas (Samuel-Samuel-John-John-Isaac) ROYALIST PROSCRIBED
18. Lieut Benjamin (Samuel-Samuel-John-John-Isaac)Minute Man Lexington
19. Captain Jotham (Jarahmael-Samuel-John-Isaac)New Hampshire Rangers
20. Captain Enoch (Ebenezer-William-John-Isaac)
21. Oliver (Capt. Oliver-Nathanial-Nathanial-John-Isaac)
22. James (Capt. Oliver-Nathanial-Nathanial-John-Isaac)
23. Captain Josiah (Oliver-Nathanial-Nathanial-John-Isaac) Guard over Burgoyne's soldiers
24. David (Abraham-Abraham-John-Isaac) 1812.
25. Thomas (Thomas-Joseph-Abraham-John-Isaac).
26. Deacon Asa (Thomas-Joseph-Abraham-John-Isaac).
27. Isaac (Elisha-Isaac-Isaac-Isaac-Isaac).
28. Jonathan Cummings (Joseph-Isaac-Isaac-Isaac-Isaac).
29. Captain Free (Jacob-Joseph-John-Isaac-Isaac). Minute man.
30. Asa (Jacob-Joseph-John-Isaac-Isaac). Frontier.

WRIGHTS

31. Ezekiel Wright. 1778.
32. Joseph (Jacob-John-John-John).
33. Jonas (Thomas-John-John-John).
34. John Ancestor (Jacob-John-John-John)
35. Ebenezer (Thomas-John-John-John).
36. Ephraim (Jacob-John-John-John).
37. Peletiah (Jacob-John-John-John).
38. Col. Zaccheus (Ebenezer-John-John-John).
39. Amos (Ebenezer-John-John-John).
40. Henry (Henry-John-John-John).
41. Peter (Thomas-John-John-John).
42. Stephen.
43. James (Simeon-John-John-John).
44. Abraham Wright.
45. Oliver (Thomas-John-John-John).
46. Jonathan Cross-Ancestor-1777 and 1778.
47. George Cross, son of Simeon. 1812.
48. Abijah Cross, our ancestor, Jonathan's brother present at surrender Burgoyne
49. Mrs. David (Cummings) Cross, in charge of Amazons at James's Bridge.

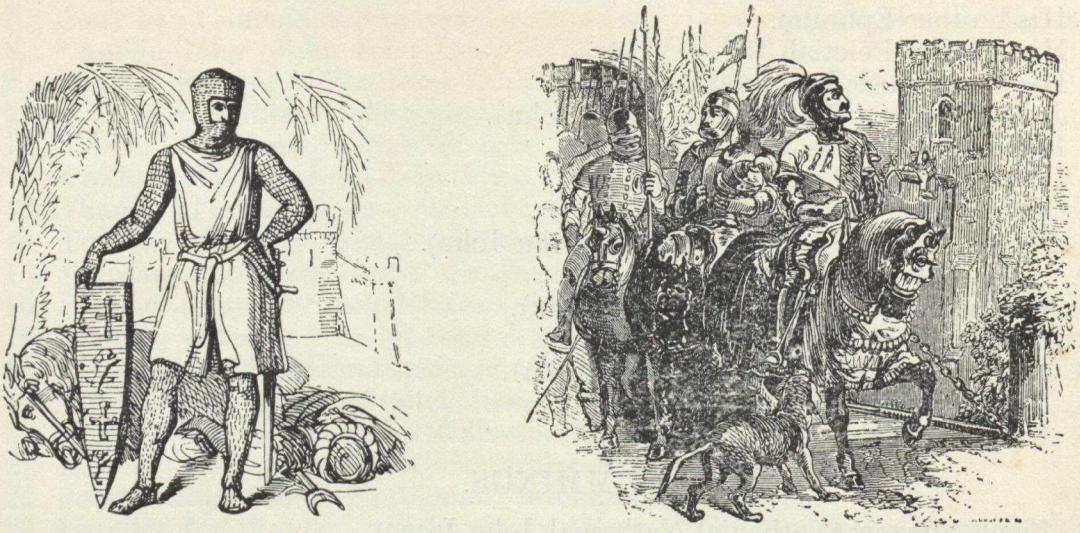
MINUTE MEN—REVOLUTION.

Wrights who answered first call to arms in 1775.

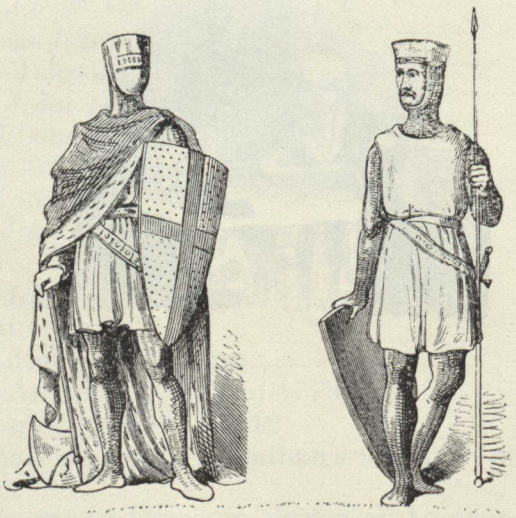
1. John Wright my great-great grandfather (Jacob-John-John-John).
2. His brother Ephraim.
3. His brother Peletiah.
4. His Uncle Joseph, son of Jacob.
5. Jonas Wright (Thomas-John-John-John).
6. Ebenezer (Thomas-John-John-John).
7. Peter (Thomas-John-John-John).
8. Oliver (Thomas-John-John-John).
9. Colonel Zaccheus (Ebenezer-John-John-John).
10. Amos (Ebenezer-John-John-John).
11. Henry (Henry-John-John-John-John).
12. Stephen Wright.
13. James (Simeon-John-John-John-John).
14. Abraham Wright.
15. Ezekiel Wright.

## CUMMINGS.

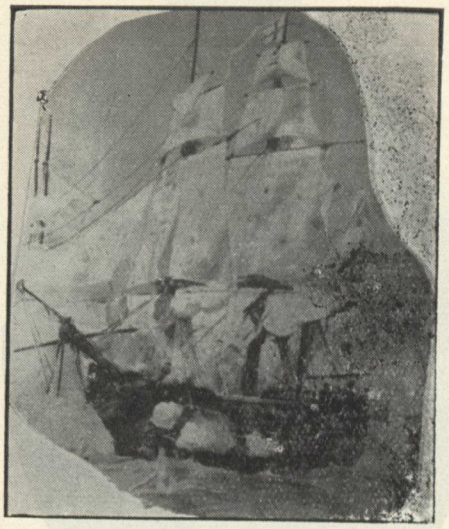
16. Lieut. Simeon (Nathanial-Nathanial-John-Isaac).
17. Joseph (John-John-Isaac-Isaac.)
18. Jonathan (Samuel-Thomas-Isaac-Isaac).
19. Timothy (Thomas-John-John-John-Isaac.)
20. Captain Free (Jacob-Joseph-John-Isaac-Isaac).



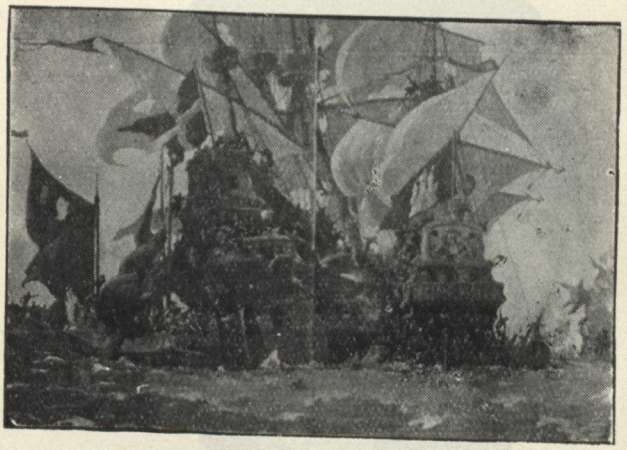
THEY WERE AT THE WALLS OF ACRE



ON THE FIELD AT AGINCOURT

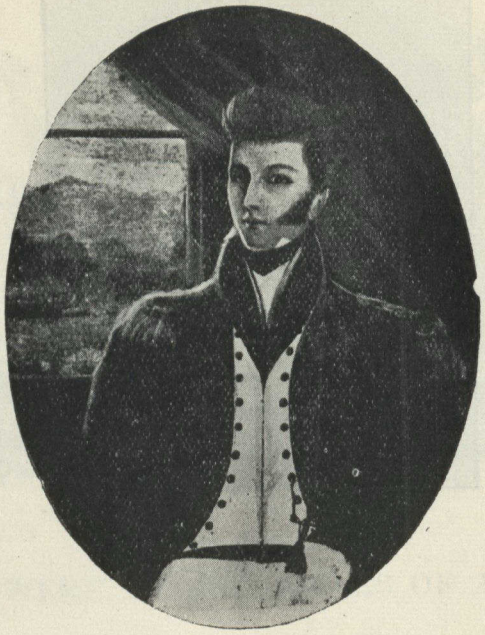


At Cadiz



And in the Channel

Sunk the Spanish hulks of war.



CAPTAIN THOMAS HOLLOWAY

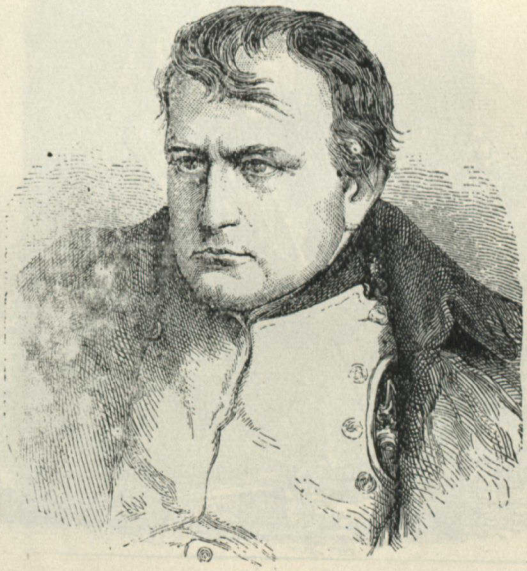
Nailed the Flag to Pompey's Pillar

ADMIRAL HOLLOWAY (HONEST JOHN)

And at Asalia Bay

WILLIAM RIGGS (FRIGATE AMELIA)

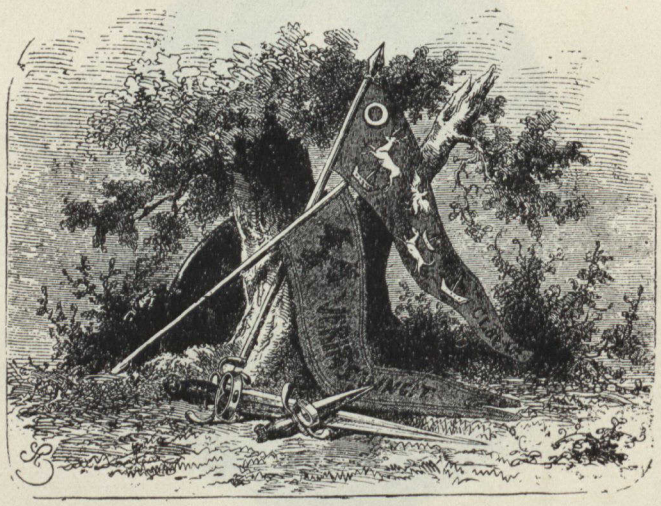
Alacant and Barcelona



NAPOLEON

Fought to check Napolean's sway.

So through centuries they battled



For old England and the crown.

CONCORD BRIDGE

Then we find them with the rebels
At the bridge in Concord town

SPIRIT OF 1775

And they battled still for freedom
When the time or where the place
Ever fought for truth and justice
In the passing of our race.

## A FAMOUS LIST

## OUR EMIGRANT ANCESTORS

## FROM OLD ENGLAND TO NEW ENGLAND

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1. | Acie William b. England 1590, came to | Rowley | 1643 | |
| 2. | Acie Margaret | | 1643 | |
| 3. | Acie Elizabeth (Swan) | | 1643 | |
| 4. | Brackett Richard | Ipswich | 1631 | Boston |
| 5. | Cross Robert b. England 1613 | Ipswich | 1634 | |
| 6. | Corliss George b. England 1617 | Ipswich | 1639 | Newburyport |
| 7. | Cummings Isaac b. England 1601 | Ipswich | 1631 | |
| 8. | Davis Thomas | Haverhill | 1640 | |
| 9. | Fraile George | Lynn | 1630 | |
| 10. | Fraile Elizabeth | " | 1630 | |
| 11. | Holstead Edna b. Yorkshire | Rowley | 1635 | |
| 12. | Hassell Richard b. England 1622 | Ipswich | 1640 | Cambridge |
| 13. | Hassell Joan | Ipswich | 1640 | |
| 14. | Howlett Thomas b. England | Ipswich | 1639 | |
| 15. | Harwood Nathanial b. England 1626 | Ipswich | 1640 | Boston |
| 16. | Harwood Elizabeth | Ipswich | 1640 | |
| 17. | Jordan Stephen | Ipswich | 1635 | |
| 18. | Jordan Susanna | Ipswich | 1635 | |
| 19. | Kingsley Samuel b. England 1636 | Braintree | 1637 | |
| 20. | Kingsley Stephen b. England | Braintree | 1637 | |
| 21. | Lawrence Henry b. Wissett Eng. 1585 | Charleston | 1635 | |
| 22. | Lawrence Mary | " | 1635 | |
| 23. | Lawrence John b. Wissett 1609 | | 1635 | |
| 24. | Lenney Samuel | Rawley about | 1640 | |
| 25. | Perry Obediah b. England | Ipswich | 1630 | Dunstable |
| 26. | Perry Esther (Hassell) | Ipswich | 1630 | |
| 27. | Reynolds Robert | Watertown | 1635 | |
| 28. | Swan Richard b. England 1628 | Rawley | 1638 | |
| 29. | Trumbull John | Rowley about | 1640 | |
| 30. | Trumbull Ann | Rowley about | 1640 | |
| 31. | Wright John b. England 1610 | Charlestown | 1640 | |
| 32. | Warren Arthur | Wyemouth | 1640 | |
| 33. | Worcester Benjamin | Braintree about | 1640 | |
| 34. | Worcester Sarah (Simons) | | | |
| 35. | Wilfred Juliford | Haverhill about | 1640 | |
| 36. | Whitney John b. England 1620 | Watertown | 1642 | |
| 37. | Howlett Alice (French) | Ipswich | 1629 | |
| 38. | Brackett Alice | Ipswich | 1629 | |
| 39. | Brackett Hannah (Kinsley) | Ipswich | 1637 | |
| 40. | Bailey Joseph as a baby | Rowley | 1635 | |
| 41. | Gould Jane | Lynn Mass. | | |
| 42. | Baumstead (Mrs. Louisa Holloway) | Grimsby Ont. | 1832 | |
| 43. | Holloway Arrabella (Mrs. H. R. Goodman) | Grimsby, Ont. | 1832 | |

44. Goodman Henry Riggs Grimsby, Ont. 1832
45. Riggs Martha (Mrs. Thos. Goodman) Quebec 1812
46. Goodman Arabella (Mrs. Jas. McCallum) Quebec 1812
47. Riggs William Nova Scotia 1812
48. Holloway Alfred Delaware about 1815
49. Bagster Eunice (Mrs. A. Holloway) Delaware about 1815
50. Baldwin Dr. W. D. St Johns Que. about 1815
51. Riggs Abigail (Mrs. Baldwin) St. Johns, Que. about 1815
52. Baldwin Maria (Mrs. Abbott) St. John, Que. about 1815
53. Musgrave Michael Virginia about 1675
54. Ball Elizabeth Virginia about 1675

This list of course is quite incomplete.

The following names were borne by the emigrant ancestors of the children of Edwin Goodman and Elizabeth Cross. Mark them well.

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| ACIE | BALL | BRACKETT | BAILEY | BAGLEY |
| CROSS | CUMMINGS | CORLISS | DAVIS | FRAILE |
| GOODMAN | GOULD | HOLSTEAD | HASSELL | HOLLETT |
| HARWOOD | HOLLOWAY | JORDAN | KINGSLEY | LAWRENCE |
| LENNEY | MUSGRAVE | PERRY | REYNOLDS | RIGGS |
| SWAN | TRUMBULL | WRIGHT | WARREN | WORCESTER |
| WILFRED | WHITNEY | | | |

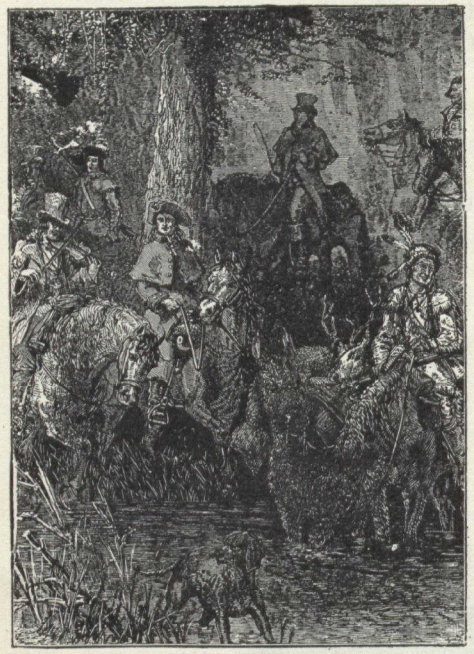
OUR PIOUS PIONEERS.

1630 Landing at Ipswich, New England 1630

Robert Cross—Hanna Jordan—Richard Brackett—Richard Hassell—Stephen Jordan—Joan Hassell—Thomas Howlett—George Corliss Nathanial Harwood—Elizabeth Harwood—Stephen Kingsley—Edna Holstead—Esther Hassell—Obediah Perry.

Several of our ancestors went to Court at Boston, among them the Swans and Thomas Howlett while among other kinsmen Zaccheus Wright represented Westford in that capacity for many years.

Butterworth's history describes the mode of their travelling hither.



GOING TO COURT THROUGH WESTERN WOODS.

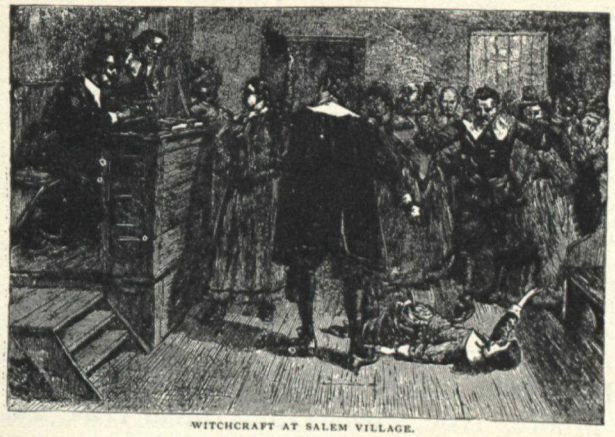
Butterworth's History

Ancestors

Richard Swan Deputy 1666-73 Rowley. Robert Swan Deputy 1668 Haverhill. Richard Brackett Deputy Ipswich; and many kinsmen among these Zaccheus Wright Westford.

PIONEER TRAVELLERS.

In these days of 'Railway Fliers' Ocean Grey Hounds' to say nothing of aeroplanes we cannot conceive the difficulty of travelling in our ancestors days in New England unless our imagination is assisted by the artist.



WITCHCRAFT AT SALEM VILLAGE.

Trial of Mary Estie

The insanity which took possession of our forefathers to punish women and children and put them to death for what they called witchcraft, has already been described in these pages when a kinsman was killed though guiltless misdemeanor or crime. Subsequently when the madness had passed off all England and the Colonies bowed their heads in shame for what they had done.

The picture reproduced will bring such scenes more vividly to our minds, and cause us to be thankful that we live in this more humane and enlightened age.

## FEMALE LINE

### CORLISS

Mary Corliss m. William Cross Jr. (William Sr.; John Sr.; Robert Sr.)

### AN INDIAN RAID

The ancestors of Mary Corliss from a volume entitled 'Hoyt's Old Families' of Salisbury and Amsbury, Mass., by Daniel Hoyt, p. 113:-George Corliss of Haverhill, farmer, b. about 1617, came to this country in 1639, may have been in Newbury first, settled in Haverhill as early as 1645, selectman in 1648. He married Oct. 26, 1645, Johanna Davis, daughter of Thomas Davis. He died Oct. 19, 1685, Will Oct. 18, Nov. 23, 1685. Issue:—Mary b. Sept. 8, 1646, m. Jan. 23, 1665, Wm. Neff. He moved from Newbury to Haverhill. She was captured by the Indians with Mrs. Hannah Dustin in 1697. She seems to have been restored to her friends, for she died in 1722. (2) John b. March 4, 1647, m. Dec. 17, 1684, Mary Willford. (3) Johanna, b. Apr. 28, 1650, m. Dec. 29, 1669, Jos. Hunkins. (4) Martha b. June 2, 1652, m. Dec. 1, 1674, Samuel Ladd, (5) Deborah, b. June 6, 1655, m. Thomas Eastman. (6) Ann, b. Nov. 8, 1657, m. Nov. 1, 1677, John Robbie. (7) Huldah, b. Nov. 18, 1661, m. Nov. 5, 1679, Samuel Kingsbury. (8) Sarah, b. Feb. 28, 1663, m. Nov. 4, 1686, Joseph Ayer.

Page 114, John, the second child of George, was a soldier. His wife was a daughter of Juliford Wilford. He served in King Phillip's war under Lieut. Berry Sweet, June 1676. He died Feb. 17, 1697-8. His children:- (1) John, b. Mar. 4, 1685, m. 1711, Ruth Hayness. (2) Mary b. Feb. 25, 1677-8. (3) Thomas b. Mar. 2, 1689-90, m. Dec. 4, 1717, Rebecca George. (4) Hannah. b. 1691-2, m. John Hines, Jr., of Brookfield. (5) Timothy, b. Dec. 13, 1693, d. 1783, m. Miss Hutchins, (6) Jonathan, b. July 16, 1695, d. Mar. 22, 1787 Eliza Moore. (7) Malictable, b. May 15, 1698.

Jonathan, the sixth child of John, died in Salem, N. H., 1787. Elizabeth Moore of Haverhill, his wife, died Aug. 2, 1786. Children: (1) Mary b. July 27, 1717, married William Cross.

The other children were, Elizabeth 1719; Priscilla 1722; Jonathan, 1724; Lydia, 1727; John Moore, 1730; Asa, 1732; David 1734; David who died in French War; Abel; Susanna. Mary Wilford married the second time Thomas Davis, selectman of Haverhill. They had two children, Johanna, who married George Corliss and Joseph.

Joseph. Mrs. L. F. Cross found this name on a deed of property. There may have been other children, but no trace has been found of them.

## FEMALE LINE BAILEY FAMILY

Elizabeth Bailey m. Jonathan Cross, (William Cross, Jr., William Sr., John Sr., Robert Sr.)

## RESEARCHES AND RECORDS OF MERRIMACK VALLEY

Vol. 1, p. 77.

1. Gen. (p. 77).

Richard Bailey, b. about 1619, who died sometime between 1647-1650, owned an estate in Rowley, Mass. There is a tradition in the family to the present day that he came from Yorkshire, England, sometime about 1630-35, and Joshua Coffee says, "Richard Bailey came with Richard Dummer in ship Barvis 150 tons." His wife's name was Ednah, by whom he had one child they called Joseph, b. about 1635 or later for when Richard Bailey made his will in 1647-8 his son Joseph was under 14 years of age. His wife's maiden name perhaps was Holstead, for their son Joseph acknowledged the receipt of £9 4s. in 1667, which was his portion of £46 given to the child or children of Ednah, his mother, by William Holstead, whom he called his uncle. After the death of Mr. Bailey his widow Ednah married 15th 9th month, 1649, Ezekiel Northend of Rowley.

2. Gen. (p. 77).

Joseph settled in the north part of Rowley in the Merrimack, not far from the western borders of Newbury, Mass., at the time when several of the Rowley families first began to settle there, which part was at first called the Merrimack Lands, but soon incorporated by the name of Bradford. He was one of the leading men of the town of Bradford.

He married Abigail, daughter of John Trumbull and Ann his wife. This Ann married 3 times—first Michael Hopkinson. second John Trumbull, third Richard Swan—which again carried us back to the Rowley-Swan-Crosses. Richard Swan being claimed as Father of Ruth Cross. Joseph Bailey was chosen to fill civil, military, ecclesiastical and other offices of trust. He was one of the selectmen of the town twenty-five years between 1675 and 1710, and one of the deacons from the formation of the church until his death, October 11, 1712. His wife Abigail, died Nov. 17, 1735. We have not been able to trace her father. Issue:

1. Abigail, m. Samuel Tenney, d. Nov. 28, 1689.
2. Elder Richard, b. Sept. 30, 1675, m. Feb. 21, 1706, Jouma Webster.
3. Anne, b. Sept. 24, 1678, m. Sept. 10. 1702, Jonas Platts.
4. Elizabeth, b. Apr. 19, 1681, m. Mar. 18, 1706, Robert Hastings.
5. Joseph, b. 1683, settled in W. Newbury.
6. Ednah, b. June, 1686, m. May 2, 1717, John Hastings.
7. Deacon John, b. Nov. 26, 1691, m. Susanna Tenney.
8. Sarah, b. July 6, 1694, m. James Davis.

3. Gen. (p. 158).

Deacon John Bailey, b. Nov, 26, 1691, married Susanna, daughter of elder Samuel Tenney, b. Feb. 5, 1694-5, lived in Bradford until after 1712, when he removed to west part of Haverhill (afterwards Methuen), where he died about 1750. He was a man of influence in his town as appears by the records of Salem, and was chosen one of the deacons of the second or north church of Methuen (now Salem N. H.), Mar. 3, 1739-40. It appears they had nine children, and probably most of them were married and had descendants, but have not been able to trace out more than a few of the branches so fully as is desirable. They had :

Samuel, b. at Bradford, August 28, 1713.
Sarah, (the first one recorded of them in the Haverhill records), b. Apr. 21, 1715
Hannah, b. Sept. 21, 1718.
John, b. Feb. 18, 1720-21
Joshua, b. Sept. 5, 1723, probably m. Sarah Davis of Amesbury.
Susanna, b. June 10, 1733; m. 1, Nathaniel Kimball, 2, Joseph Hardy.

4. Gen. (p. 158).

## A MAN OF BRAWN.

John Bailey, b. Feb. 18, 1720-21, married Elizabeth, daughter of Jonathan Corliss, of Salem, for his first wife, who died in 1787, aged 64, second wife widow Mary Hastings (see p. 156). He settled on a farm close to the borders of Methuen, now called the Patee place, where his children were born; and afterwards exchanged with Patee, and removed to North Salem, N. H., where he died. Tradition says that "he was a very strong man and when a certain barn was raised he could shoulder and carry either stick that comprised the frame, and he made a visit to the building the last time he ever rode out, to see what he had done in his younger days." They had besides other children, Elizabeth who married Jonathan Cross.

## COLLATERAL FAMILY

## DESCENDANTS OF WILLIAM CROSS JR.

William the third child of William Cross Jr., and Mary Corliss (William Sr., John Sr., Robert Sr.) b. in Haverhill N. H. Aug. 3rd 1742, m. Abigail Ladd. Sept. 4th, 1867. They had eight children among them (1) Deborah married; (2) Lydia married; (3) Abigail, married; (4) Jeremy Ladd Cross, b. Haverhill N. H. June 27th 1783, d. Jan. 26th 1860, aged 76, unmarried; (5) Eliza, (known in the family as Miss Eliza) b. Haverhill June 18th 1790, d. 1887, unmarried; she was a teacher in 1818 and an anti-slave worker with Garrison and Phillips and the author of 'Old Signs and Sayings.'

MISS ELIZA CROSS.

Daughter of William Cross III., and sister of famous freemason Jeremy Ladd Cross. Born 1790, died 1887, aged 97. Living so long ago and so recently she threw much light on the Cross history.

## ELIZA CROSS ON HER 96TH BIRTHDAY

By Mrs. Lorana (French) Cross

We sometimes find pansies amid the snows of winter, and sometimes amid the wintry snows of age, we find those who seem to have eluded the grasp of Father Time. Thus we thought as we gave our hand to Miss Eliza Cross on her 96th birthday.

This veteran lady was born in Haverhill, N. H., June 13, 1790. She was greatly interested in the Anti-slavery movement, and Wm. Lloyd Garrison, Wendall Phillips, and others gratefully acknowledged her work of tongue and pen. On Memorial day the soldiers, after decorating the graves, were invited to her home. After serenading her, she marshalled them into a hollow square sixty in number, and addressed them as 'citizens, soldiers and patriots.' She spoke of their sympathies, and said, 'her own had been from the dawning of

the controversy to the capstone of that liberty for which they fought and which was proclaimed for all.' Then with vociferous cheers, and a serenade to the aged veteran, they returned to their post.

Miss Eliza was sister to the late Jeremy Cross, the masonic author, lecturer and publisher, and is living in a home surrounded with comfort and luxury. As we entered she arose from her arm chair and received us with the ease and grace of one in middle age. We found upon her table the popular literature of the day. She can read and write to regular correspondents, and looks for her daily mail, and in the past year has compiled and published a little book entitled 'Old Signs and Sayings.' She took us into the hall and showed us the family portraits, the Cross coat-of-arms, and, as we passed the hat-tree, we noticed in honor of the occasion, the regalia of other days was hung thereon, and we placed beside it a bayonet from the old homestead at Methuen, where her ancestors were born. She led the way to the parlor, where, at our request, she seated herself at the piano, and her flexible fingers swept over the keys as she sang for our amusement. The next morning she arose at her usual hour, six o'clock, feeling that she had much that would interest her guests. With a little help she climbed the hall-way stairs where we saw the snowy linen, with its narrow hems, which she and her mother spun; then files of newspapers dating back more than half a century, everything tied up and labelled as for mail. With a little assistance she reached the attic, where we saw the old spinnets and the paraphernalia of spinning; bandboxes as large as Saratoga trunks were drawn from their hiding places, and their contents found to be as fresh as when worn into the village church seventy years before. Surely we felt grateful that the world moves, in these days of high rent, and felt that it was really better to wear what our grandmothers would call an apology for a bonnet, than to wear their extremes.

As the time for our departure drew near, her pet Billy, whose age she said compared with her own, was brought to the door, and we were conveyed to her farm of one hundred and twenty broad acres, where we visited her famous sugar orchard of five or six hundred trees, and the sugar house, where the flowing sweets had been converted into sugar for the northern market. On our return we stopped at the cemetery and saw the family lot, and noticed that her mother lived to be ninety-one years, and her father a revolutionary soldier, was one hundred years and seven months at the time of his death.

## "BROTHER" JEREMY LADD CROSS

Jeremy Ladd Cross fourth child of William the III and Abigail (Ladd) Cross (William Jr. William Sr. John Sr. Robert Sr.) was a noted freemason. (See Lecture Jeremy L. Cross and Times by the Author.)

## SIMEON CROSS

Simeon Cross, third child of William and Mary (Corliss) Cross (William Sr.) John Sr. and Robert Sr. went in 1778 to New Chester N. H. and made the first settlement at what is still called the Cross Farm, on the river road, in Bridgewater New Hampshire.

His children were (1) Mary m. Elisa Bean; (2) Chloe m. Saml. Harriman Rev. Soldier; (4) George Rev. Soldier 1812 (5) Abigal m. Jno. Gordon; (6) Simeon m. Elizabeth Harriman (7) Lydia (8) Abijah m. Sarah Ferrin (and had Sylvester, 1816; Lamira 1817; Susan 1818, who m. Otis Cross and had seven children, Simeon, Jonathan, Abigail and George (killed in the civil war) Stephen, Franklin and Alma Marona) (9) Judith b. 1791.

## DAVID CROSS

David fourth child of William Cross Jr. and Mary (Corliss) Cross (William Sr.; John Sr.; Robert Sr.) married first Mary Frye, second Susan Whittier, by first wife he had David b. 1823; George O. b. 1825. By second wife he had Mary b. 1831 and Susan Abiah 1834.

David's second child George O., b. 1825 m. Adaline Kent and secondly Abby Brown, by whom he had Anson K. Cross 1862 Professor of the Normal School, Boston; Anson Cross had Addie Louise b. 1864, Evaline b. 1870.

## ABIJAH CROSS' DESCENDENTS

Abijah Cross, ninth child of William Jr. and Mary (Corliss) Cross (William Sr.) (John Sr. Robert Sr.) m, first 1784 Elizabeth Parker, second Hannah Foster, third Deborrah Spoffard.

Abijah was a revolutionary and was present at the surrender of Burgoyne.

Their issue was

1. Susanna, b. May 22, 1785, m. Jos. Pecker, Dec. 22, 1808
2. Elizabeth b. July 11, 1786, m. Henry Austin of Dracut
3. Captain Samuel, b Oct. 23, 1789, m (1) Abagail Richardson Sept. 13, 1808; (2) Hannah Daniels Berry.
4. Sally b. Apr. 12, 1790, m. May 28 1816, Nathaniel Day, of Bradford
5. Hannah b. Feb. 21, 1792; unmarried
6. Rev. Abijah, b. Oct. 25, 1793, m. 1824, Permalia Swan
7. David b. Nov. 13, 1795, m. 1st Mary Fry, 2nd Susan Whittier
8. William b. June 25, 1797, m. June 4, 1820, Mary Hazleton of Hebron, N. H. d. Sept. 4, 1872. He died Oct. 15, 1882
9. Enoch, b. July 19, 1801, m. 1st Charlotte Pettingale, 2nd Margaret Campbell. (Dr. Enoch.) See obituary notice. Had by first wife David A. and George O. by second Mary F. and Susan A.

(It was the above Enoch who said that there were two Cross brothers who came to Haverhill. One settled in Newbury, the other, the founder of the Haverhill family, remained in Haverhill.)

10. Rhoda b. Feb. 13, 1804, m. Wm. Day, of Bradford, June 25, 1827

## FUNERAL OF DR. CROSS

The funeral of the late Dr. Enoch Cross was held this morning from the Prospect street church, of which he had long been a member and supporter. There was a large attendance of friends and relations, and the ceremony was very impressive. The casket was borne to the altar to the accompaning strains of Beethoven's "march funebre." Rev. P. S. Hulbert delivered the following eulogy.

Dr. Enoch Cross was born at Methuen, in this commonwealth, July 19, 1801. His parents were Abijah Cross of Methuen and Elizabeth Parker of Dracut. His grandparents on his father's side were William Cross of Methuen and Mary Corliss of Salem, N. H. In the line of his father, he was a German of the fifth generation. The old Cross home in Methuen was never owned by any white man till purchased by John Cross the ancestor of him whose life we honor and whose death we mourn to-day. This John Cross purchased the old home, where our brother was born, from the Indian paying cloth for so much land as he could walk around "between sun and sun.".

In the old house, still standing, are some of the timbers which composed its framework when it first took the place of the Indian wigwam some two hundred years ago. Enoch Cross was one of ten children, and the last one to pass from the earth.

In 1870 he attended a reunion of the family, at the home of his boyhood, on the occasion of the golden wedding of his brother William. In writing of the occasion he said: "In imagination I could hear the stirring voice of my father calling me at early dawn to the field of healthful toil—and again I could remember the hour, when in later years, I impressed on that venerated forehead the last kiss of affection, just before that father fell asleep, at the age of nearly ninety years. But still another form rose up to memory. I could see that loved mother who many years before had sunk down in death. That sweet voice, that mild approving or rebuking eye, that gentle hand which was never lifted to chastise, but oft in love was laid upon my head—all all were there in memory.

He took up his residence as practising physician in Bradford. While here, in 1828, June 2nd he married Miss Charlotte T. Pettingale, of Salisbury, N. H. Four daughters and two sons were born to them.

On his death bed Dr. Cross, on being told the difficulty of tracing the Cross Ancestors replied "If I were a young man I would find out." Since these words were spoken many genealogical problems have been solved and many mysteries cleared up, and the work is still in progress.

HOME OF SAMUEL CROSS, Sr. BORN 1789
(Son of Abijah Cross) Birthplace of William Berry Cross. Born 1826.

## ANCESTORS OF ARTHUR DUDLEY CROSS

### Samuel Cross Sr.

Samuel Cross, third child of Abijah and Elizabeth (Parker) Cross (William Jr. William Sr. John Sr. Robert Sr.)

Had children by his first wife Abigail Richardson (1) Elizabeth m. Sentor Farley (2) Samuel m. first Lydia Frye second Mary Moore, third Lydia Kemball (3) Nelson b. Aug. 16, 1814, m. Elizabeth Berry, second (2) Mary E. Thayer.

Samuel's second wife Hannah Berry (widow) (maiden name Daniels) had two daughters by her first husband Berry; Elizabeth who was Nelson Cross' first wife and Susan who married Jas. Merrill.

Children of Samuel Sr. by Hannah Berry

MRS. WM. BERRY CROSS

nee Mary Ann Hilton, taken at the time of her marriage, 1858

WILLIAM BERRY CROSS

Born 1826. Father of Arthur Dudley Cross (husband of Mrs. A. D. Cross nee Elsie C. Pheby

1. Jerome b. Sept. 7, 1824; m. Mary O. Sargent
2. William b. Feb. 17, 1826; m. Mary Ann Hilton
3. Abagail b. Aug. 14, 1829; m. David Robinson
4. Mary H. b. 1831; m. (1) Geo. Farley, (2) David Robinson, her brother-in law.

## WILLIAM SON OF SAMUEL

William the second son of Samuel Sr. and Hannah (Berry) Cross (Abijah, William Jr. William Sr., John Sr. Robert Sr.) married Mary Ann Hilton, of Parson's Field Maine, Feb 24, 1858.

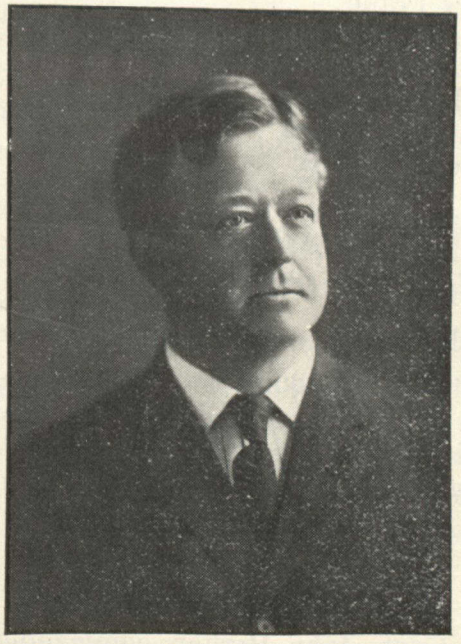
He came to California in the spring of 1850 and settled in Sacramento until 1870, when he moved to San Francisco, and died there May 7, 1901.

He was president for many years of the Pacific Navigation Company. His widow died Dec. 10, 1895. Their only child was Major Arthur Dudley Cross, born Dec. 14, 1864, who married May 15, 1893, Elsie (Chapline) Pheby, daughter of Thomas B. Pheby and his wife Josephine Chapline of Wheeling, West Virginia, daughter of General Moses W. Chapline, aide-de-camp of General Cass, war of 1812, his wife being Elizabeth Fox, daughter of Josiah Fox, 'Father of the American Navy.' See Record Journal American History, Vol. 2, No. 1.)

Children: 1, Elsie Hilton Cross, b. April 21, 1894. 2, Arthur Dudley Cross, b. April 24, 1898.

Mrs. Elsie Chapline (Pheby) Cross is an esteemed correspondent and has contributed extensively to these memoirs. The thanks of the Crosses are certainly due to her for her successful efforts in hunting down documents which years of sustained effort by others had failed to unearth.

To Mrs. Cross My sincere thanks.



Arthur Dudley Cross, Sr.

Arthur Dudley Cross, Jr.

Elsie Hilton Cross.

It will be seen that the Arthur Dudley Cross' line would be as follows:

William I. m. Mary Fraile
William II. m. Mary Corliss
Abijah m Elizabeth Parker
Samuel m. Hannah Berry
William B. m. Mary A. Hilton
Arthur D. m. Elsie C. Pheby

## THE PARKER LINE

## FROM THE EMIGRANT

(Abijah Cross married Elizabeth Parker)

1. Thomas Parker, b. about 1609, came to America in the 'Susan and Ellen' 1635; settled in Lynn, Mass.; married Amy —, made freeman May 17, 1637; removed to Reading in that part now Wakefield, Mass. about 1644; deacon; he died 12th Aug., 1683; wife died Jan 15, 1690.

Children: 1, Thomas, b. 1636. 2, Hannah, b. 1638.

## A FAMOUS SOLDIER

His great grandson, Capt. John Parker, commanded the minute men at Lexington April 19, 1775. The latter's grandson was the great Unitarian preacher and anti-slavery worker.

II. 3. John, b. 1640, d. Feb. 21, 1699
4. Joseph, b. 1642, d. 1644
5. Joseph, b 1645, d. 1646
6. Mary, b. Dec. 12, 1647
7. Martha, b. March 14, 1649
8. Nathaniel, b. May 16, 1651
9. Sarah, b. Sept. 30, 1653, d. Oct. 26, 1656
10. Jonathan, b. May 18, 1656, d. 1680, June 10
11. Sarah, b. May 23, 1658

II. John Parker married Nov. 13, 1667, Hannah, daughter of Deacon Thomas and Hannah Kendall, who was born 29th Jan. 1650. She died July 8, 1689, and he married second Jan. 28, 1690, Thankful ——. He was a sergt. and served in King Philip's war under Major Swayne.

Children:—Hannah,
1. John, b. 1668
2. Thomas, b. 1670, d. 1689
3. Hannah, b, 1672, d. 1689
4. Rebekah, b. 1674, d. 1689
5. Kendall, b. 1677
6. Abigail, b. 1679, d. 1679

III 7, Jonathan, b. July 18, 1681, d. April 5, 1746
8 David, b. 1686,
9 Abigail, b. 1688 d. 1689

Children:—Thankful,
1. Hannah, b. 1691
2 Rebekah, b. 1693
3. Thomas, b. 1695
4. Elizabeth, b. 1698

III. Johnathan (called Jr.), m. Ann, daughter of George and Elizabeth Flint, and granddaughter of Thomas, the emigrant (Ex-U. S. Senator Flint is a descendant of the same Thomas). She was born April 18, 1687, and died about 1744. Jonathan held the rank of Captain, and lived until his wife's death in what is now North Reading, later removing to Methuen, Mass., where his sons had settled, and where he died.

Children :—

1. Johnathan, b. 1709, m. Mary Hincher.
2. Timothy, b. 1711, m. Priscilla Carleton.
3. Anna, b. 1714, m. Wm. Sheldon.
4. John, b. 1716, m. Hannah Upton.
5. Mary, b. 1719, m. Kendall Bryant.
6. David, b. 1720 ? m. Lucy Upton.
7. Kendall, b. April 12, 1723, d. about 1800.

IV. Kendall settled in Dracut, near the Methuen line, m. (1) Mary, daughter of John and Judith Harris (2) Priscilla said to be gr. grand daughter of Miles Standish, daughter of Daniel and Priscilla (Stevens) Austin, of An-

dover, Mass. She was born July 26, 1723, (3) Jane (Fletcher) widow of Nathaniel Jones. He was a farmer, responded on Lexington alarm April 19, 1775, served 2 days, afterward held rank of corporal. His record is given in "Soldiers and Sailors of Mass. in the war of the Revolution."

Children:—(Mary)

1. Susannah, b. 1750, m. Sergt. Jona Jones.
2. Kendall, b. 1752, m. Mrs. Dolly (Jones) Richardson.
3. Samuel, b. 1754.
4. Peter, b. 1754, m. Bridget Coburn.

Children:—(Priscilla).

1. Mary, b. 1759, m. Joseph Harvey.
2. Elizabeth, b. 18th or 28th July, 1762, m. Abijah Cross.
3. Jonathan, m. Alice Gutterson, b. 1764.
4. Priscilla, b. 1766, m. Asa Palmer.
5. Rachel, b. 1770, m. Peter Harris
6. Daniel, b. 1773, m. Nabby Coburn
7. Nathan, b. 1776, m. Elsa Gilchrist

* Dr. Moses Greely Parker, President of the Parker Historical and Genealogical Association, of Lowell, Mass., is a great grandson of Kendall Parker. He is President General of the Sons of the American Revolution.

From Massachusett Soldiers and Sailors. p. 884.

Kendall Parker, Dracut, Private Captain Stephen Russell's Company, Col. Green's regiment, which marched on the alarm 19th April, 1775. Also Private Captain Jos. Narmun's Company, Col. Spalding's regiment, List of persons who paid money to hire men to serve in the Continental Army for eight months, agreeable to resolves passed April, 1778, said Parker, with others, hired Ebenezer Sawyer, and is reported to have paid ten pounds towards his hire.

The head lines of Elizabeth Parker's descent are as follows;

Thos. Parker, 1609.
Sargeant John Parker, 1640.
Jonathan Parker, 1681.
Kendall, 1724.
Elizabeth, 1762, married Abijah Cross.

## DOUBLE ROYAL DESCENT OF

Arthur Dudley Cross and Elsie (Pheby) Cross. Oakland, Cal.

It is so very unusual for a husband and wife to be able to trace their descent from royality that this remarkable genealogical fact is set down here in brief form.

HENRY III., King of England,
Prince Edmund, Earl of Leicester,
Henry, Earl of Leicester, Lancaster and Derby,
Eleanor, m. Richard Fitz Alan, K. G., 9th Earl of Arundel,

John Fitz Alan, Lord Maltravers,
John Fitz Alan de Arundel,
Sir Thomas Fitz Alan, Knt.,

Eleanor, m. Sir Thomas Browne,

Sir Anthony Browne,

Elizabeth m. Henry, Earl of Worcester,
Eleanor, m. Sir Roger Vaughan, Knt.,
Watkin Vaughan,

Sir William Voghan,
Catherine, m. David Evan,
Mary, m. Thomas Bassett,

Catherine m. Richard Evan,
Jane m. John Evan,
John Bevan, to Pensylvania, 1683.
Elizabeth m. Joseph Richardson,
Aubrey Richardson

Elizabeth m. Peter Miller,
Anna, m. Josiah Fox
Elizabeth, m. Gen. Moses W. Chapline,
Josephine Isabella, m. Thos. B. Pheby, of Oakland, California, he was born in Cornwall, England.

Eleanor, m. Henry, Lord Percy,
Henry, 2nd Lord Percy,
Maud, m. Sir John Nevill, K. G., Lord of Raby.
Sir Ralph Nevill, K. G., Earl of Westmoreland.
Ann, m. Sir Walter Blount, K. G. Lord Montjoy
Thomas Blount, m. Agnes Howley,
Anne, m. William Marbury,
William Marbury, of Grisby, m. Agnes Lenton, and had; Rev. Francis and
Catherine, m. Christopher Wentworth,
William Wentworth, m. Susanna Carter,
William Wentworth, of Exeter, N. H., m. Elizabeth Kenny,
Timothy Wentworth, m Sarah Cromwell
Samuel Wentworth, m. Joanna Roberts
Deborah, m Joseph Ricker, Jr.
Peletiah Ricker, m. Jane Leighton,
Abigail, m. George Hilton, of Parsonsfield, Me., son of Dudley Hilton, Jr. and Rhoda Bickford, grandson of Dudley Hilton, Sr. and Anne Taylor, of Newmarket, N.H.
Mary Ann, m. William Berry Cross, son of Samuel Cross and Hanna Berry, grandson of Abijah Cross and Elizabeth Parker, of Dracut, Mass., great-grandson of William Cross and Mary Corliss, of Methuen, Massachusetts.

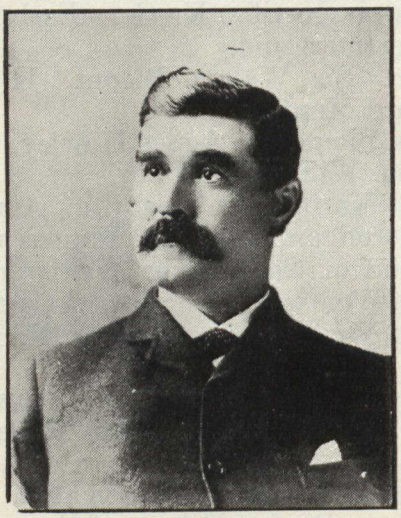
ELSIE CHAPLINE PHEBY Mar. ARTHUR DUDLEY CROSS, of Oakland, Cal. Member of the National Society of Americans of Royal Descent, California Society of the Colonial Dames of America, Daughters of the American Revolution.

United Daughters of the Confederacy, California Genealogical Society, etc.

Elsie Hilton Cross, born Apr. 21, 1894,
Arthur Dudley Cross, born Apr. 24, 1898.

Authorities :

"Americans of Royal Descent" (6th ed.), pp. 451, 482-3.
"Wentworth Genealogy," Vol. 1., p. 47.
"De Nova Villa," pp. 30-2, 137, 270-334 and chart (Table No. 1).
"A History of the House of Percy." etc. Vol. 1.
"Royal Genealogies," by James Anderson.
"Irish Pedigrees," by O'Hart.
"History of Parsonsfield, Maine."



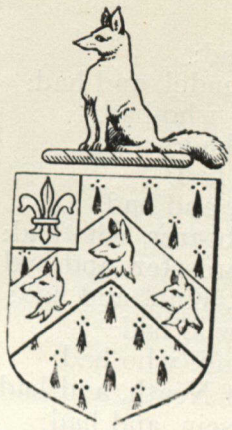
Thomas Bailey Pheby

Father of Mrs. (Pheby) Cross, taken 1886.b. Penzance Cornwall, England, 1836. died Jan. 27th, 1913.

Mrs. Arthur Dudley Cross

nee Elsie Chapline Pheby, a valued co-laborator, who so materially assisted in securing data for these Cross memoirs.

Cordially
Elsie Cross



Arms of Mrs. Elsie (nee Pheby) Cross

Cross, Mrs. Elsie Chapline, (nee Pheby) of Oakland, Cal., (Da. of Thomas Bailey Pheby, of Oakland, Cal., and Josephine Isabella, da. of General Moses W. Chapline, A.D.C. to General Cass, War of 1812, and Elizabeth Miller, da. of Josiah Fox, 1763-1846, of Philadelphia, Pa., 1793, Naval Architect, drafted the old ships Constitution, Constellation, Wasp, Hornet, and many others that won renown during the War of 1812, fifth in descent from Sir Francis Fox of St. Germans, Cornwall, Eng., d. 1670.)

Born at Silver City, Idaho; m. May 15, 1895, Arthur Dudley Cross, of San Francisco, Cal.

Arms—(Fox) Ermine on a chevron azure three foxes' heads erased or, on a canton of the second a fleur-de-lis or,

Crest—A fox sejant or Motto—Faire sats dire.

Societies--Colonial Dames of America, Daus. of the Amer. Revol., United Daus. of the Confederacy, Historic Geneological of California, Order of the Crown.

The Royal French Descendants of
MRS. ARTHUR DUDLEY CROSS.—Nee ELSIE PHEBY
of San Francisco, California.

THE EMPEROR CHARLEMAGNE had:
Louis I., Emperor of France, etc., who had:
Louis I., King of Bavaria, who had:
Carloman, King of Bavaria, who had:
Arnoul, King of Germany, who had:
Hedwige, m. Otto of Saxony, and had:
Henry, Emperor of Germany, who had:
Hedwige, m. Hugh, duke of France, and had:
Hugh Capet, king of France, who had:
Henry I., king of France, who had:
Philip I., king of France, who had:
Louis VI., king of France, who had:
Louis VII., king of France, who had:
Philip II., king of France, who had;
Louis VIII., king of France, who had:
Robert, Count of Artois, who had:
Blanche, m. Edmund, Earl of Leicester, and had:

Henry, Earl of Leicester, who had:
Eleanor, m. Richard, Earl of Arundel, and had:
John Fitzalan, Lord Maltravers, who had:
John Fitzalan de Arundel, who had:
Sir Thomas Fitzalan, Knt., who had:
Eleanor, m. Sir Thomas Browne, and had:
Sir Anthony Browne, standard bearer, who had:
Elizabeth, m. Henry, earl of Worcester, and had:
Eleanor, m. Sir Roger Vaughan, Knt., and had:
Watkin Vaughan, of Talgarth, who had:
Sir William Vaughan, of Portland, who had:
Catherine, m. David ap Evan, of Neath, and had:
Mary, m. Thomas Basset, of Miscin, and had:
Catherine, m. Richard Evan, of Collenna, and had:
Jane, m. John Evan, of Treverigg, and had:

HOWEL—DHA, PRINCE OF ALL WALES, had:
Ankaret, m. Tewdwr, earl of Hereford, and had:
Eikcon ap Tewdwr Trevor, heir, k. v. p., who had:
Teudor—Mawr, king of South Wales, who had:
Rhys Tudor, prince of South Wales, who had:
Elizabeth, m. Edmund, Baron of Vayrowe, and had:
Sir Edward, baron of Carew, who had:
John, baron of Carew, (p. 298) who had:
Anne, m. Thomas Awbrey, and had:
Thomas Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Thomas Awbrey-goch, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Richard Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Walter Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Morgan Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Jenkin Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Hopkin Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
William Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Richard Awbrey, of Aberkynfrig, who had:
Richard Awbrey, of Llanelyw, Brecknock, who had:
Thomas Awbrey, third son, who had:
William Awbrey, of Llanelyw manor, who had:
John Bevan, in 1683, who m. Barbara Awbrey, d. 1710, and had:
Elizabeth Bevan, who m. Joseph Richardson of Philadelphia, and had:
Awbrey Richardson, of Philadelphia, who m. Sarah Thomas, and had:
Anna Miller, who m. in Philadelphia, Oct. 9, 1794, Josiah Fox, (b. Falmouth, England, Oct. 9, 1763, d. 1847, descended from Francis Fox, of St. Germans, Cornwall, d. 1670). (See Foster's "descendants of Francis Fox").
Issue—Elizabeth Miller Fox, b. Philadelphia, Aug. 22, 1797, who m. Philadelphia, June 22, 1813, Gen. Moses W. Chapline, b. Md., Oct. 27, 1789, d. Wheeling, W. Va., Oct. 20, 1840, and had:
Josephine Isabella Chapline, b. Wheeling, March 1, 1832, d. Apr. 30, 1909, Oakland, California, who m. Sept. 11, 1866, Thomas B. Pheby (Phoebus),
Elsie Chapline Pheby, b. in Idaho, July 11, 1868.

## ISABELLA DE VERMANDOIS THE SUPERWOMAN

So many Crosses including our own line claim this verile woman as ancestress that it will be interesting to read what Starr - Jordon the eminent Californian Professor has to say about her.

From a San Francisco Newspaper

Dr. David Starr-Jordon has discovered that the following Californians are descended from Isabella de Vermadois who lived in the twelfth century, and whom he declares was the Superwoman; the fittest of the English race.

Then follows a long list among them the name of Mrs. Arthur Dudley Cross nee Elsie Pheby.

Our own Cross line must be included via Ruth Whitney - John Wright, Amos Cummings, C. B. Cross, Elizabeth Cross, Edwin Goodman.

Dr Jordon has traced 1,000 American families representing several million units back through their ancestry and has written a book setting out the results of his investigation. He says:- "Miss Kimball of San Francisco has been assisting me and has accumulated a great deal of accurate information."

According to Charles H. Browning, author of "Americans of Royal Descent," Isabel de Vermondois, the keystone of the ancestral arch of the "one hundred fittest," was a daughter of Hugh the Great, Count of Vermandois, who commanded the French pilgrims in the first crusade, and a grandaughter of Henry the first Earl of Leicester by William. Her first husband was the Count de Meulent, afterwards created the first Earl of Leicester, by William the Conqueror, with whom he invaded England at the time of the conquest. After his death she married William de Warren, second Earl of Surrey. She was the mother of seven children. She died in 1118.

We selected Isabella de Vermandois as a common ancestor to whom we would trace as many American descendants of English families as possible. Isabella is known to have been a woman of sound mental, moral and physical characteristics, and of a strain so virile that it has lasted in her progeny, down through the centuries. That, by the way, is nature's way of purifying the human current. The progeny of the feeble minded die out, like withered branches of a tree, and the sound limbs spread on and branch out.

## MATERNAL ANCESTOR ARTHUR DUDLEY CROSS

Arthur Dudley Cross has the following ancestors through his mother's family: John Atkinson, Newbury 1663; Aquila Chase, Hampdon, Mass. 1640; Governor Thomas Dudley of Massachusets; Mayor Chas. Frost Kittery Main; Peter Garland Charleston, Mass. 1639 Newbury, Mass.; Deputy Gov Ambrose Gibbons began settlement at Cape Anne 1621; Peter Hill Prior to 1648 at Biddleford; Edward Hilton Dover 1623; Rev. Jos. Hull, Weymouth, 1635; Captain William Leighton Kittery, Main, 1650; Captain Tobias Lang-

ton, Portsmouth, N. H.; Lieut. Col. William Pepperell, Kittery, Main; Joseph Ricker; Governor Thomas Robert, Dover, N. H.; Henry Sherburne, Portsmouth, 1631; Nathan Taylor, Stratham, N. H.; Elder William Wentworth, Exeter, N. H.; Major Richard Waldron, Dover, N. H.; Governor John Winthrop of Massachusetts; Rev. John Heard of Dover; Hon. Robert Eliot Portsmouth, N. H.; Capt. Wm. Gerrish, 1639, Newbury, Mass.

## DISTINGUISHED AMERICAN ANCESTRY OF ELSIE CHAPLINE (PHEBY) CROSS—CONTRIBUTED.

Gen. Moses Wm. Chapline was the son of Col. Moses Caton Chapline who was a prominent officer in the Revolutionary war, and publicly thanked by Washington for his bravery in one of the severest fights in the contest. He was a member of the Cincinnati Society. Moses Caton Chapline was sent out to Ohio County after Braddock's defeat to guard the frontiers against the French and Indians. He was accompanied by Col. Ebenezer Zane, Col. John Caldwell, *(*wife's brother*)*, Major John Good, Col. Cresup and Col. Lawrence Washington. He married Mary Caldwell, daughter of James Caldwell who came to America in 1769. Her father was commissioned in 1777 by Patrick Henry the Governor of Virginia, one of the (gentlemen justices) for Ohio County, Virginia, to be a member of the first Court which then had a very extensive territory, I believe this was the first court in the valley of Ohio, and the first organized Government west of the Alleghenies in Virginia. Her mother was Elizabeth Alexander and is said to have been a descendant of Robert Bruce of Scotland, and of the same family of Alexanders that settled Alexandria, Virginia.

Like his father, General Moses W. Chapline was a distinguished officer he was aide-de-camp to General Cass in the war of 1812. In 1834 he was Mayor of Wheeling and received other prominent appointments. At Wheeling in May 24, 1825, a banquet was given to Lafayette. There were thirty distinguished guests, Genl. Moses W. Chapline presided, Lafayette proposed the following toasts "Wheeling—the centre of communication between east and west may it be more and more beneficial." On May 24th, 1825, took place the most brilliant social event of the decade the Lafayette ball. That the great Lafayette was susceptable to the ills which more common flesh is heir to was apparent at this ball; For it has been inferred that the reason he did not actually join in the dancing was because of an attack of the gout. During the ball he was seated on a raised dias overlooking the dancers. When Lafayette visited Wheeling in the same carriage with him was Noah Zane who was the husband of Mary Chapline, the only sister of Moses W. Chapline.

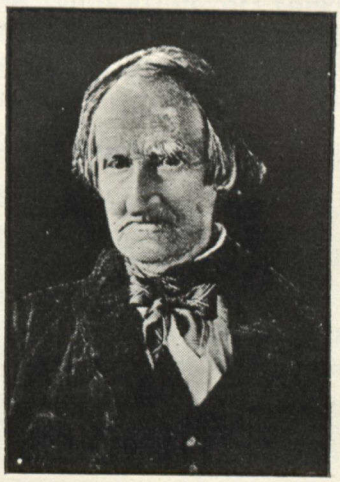
Noah Zane's mansion was the scene of another historic banquet given in honor of General Harrison at Wheeling in 1846. The table on this occasion was set elaborately. The centre piece was a log cabin built of mint sticks, and at the door of which was a miniture keg of hard cider. The food was on a scale as colossal as the hospitality, one cake being so immense that it was necessary to bake it in sections and afterwards join them together.

When General Moses Chapline's eldest son Alexander Hamilton and his wife Dorcas took their wedding journey to Washington they were guests for one week of President Harrison at the White House. It is said that the affection of "Old Tippecanoe" for the bride was then illustrated by the fact that he invariably introduced her as "my daughter."

## WANTED TO TAKE THE CH(E)APLINE

General Moses was the proud possessor of the first door plate used in Wheeling and for this reason the country men sometimes took it for a commercial or professional sign of some kind. On the door plate was the simple word CHAPLINE. One day when Mrs. Hamilton Chapline was sitting quietly in her room, she was surprised to see a tall farmer walk in unannounced. His honest demeanor however was assuring, "when does the stage start he said." Please enquire next door at the hotel replied the lady. "I know all about that stage line continued the countryman, but I want to go by the cheapest way and I see you have "ch(e)ap line" advertised on your door.

Many other laughable incidents are told of the simplicity of the country folk in those days. George Chapline's family of thirteen children were permitted to indulge in many brilliant social events in their parents home. These affairs were a constant source of astonishment to the farmers who happened to be in town. One evening when an acquaintance of the family was passing the mansion during a ball in the second storey drawing room, one of a group of farmers gazing at the scene, said to him, "Mister how much does it cost to get in that show?" Twenty five cents was the prompt reply. The farmers took him seriously, crossed the street and went in. The joker however seeing what he had done was in the house before them warning the ladies. So that the farmers were permitted to remain and enjoy the gay scene.



JOSIAH FOX

Ancestor of Mrs. A. D. Cross (nee Elsie Pheby). Taken 1846. He was known as "the Father of the American Navy"

## FATHER OF THE AMERICAN NAVY

### CHAPLINE - FOX CONTRIBUTED

General Chapline married in 1813 Elizabeth Fox daughter of Josiah Fox 'Father of the American Navy.' After Fox had served sixteen years with the American Government he settled in Belmont, Ohio. He was a devout quaker and meetings were held at his house.

His granddaughter says that on one of her visits to her grandfather, she was in the parlor reading unnoticed when two country neighbors called. The room was furnished in gold and white the furniture being brought from England.

The little quaker lady stood in the centre of the room for some time taking in the surroundings at last she turned to her husband and exclaimed 'Jeremiah doth not this remind thee of the Temple of Solomon'

When the bill to purchase six frigates was pending before congress in 1793 Josiah Fox then an English naval constructor was visiting his relative Andrew Ellicott of West Point.

Fox was a Master Builder in the English Navy, the finest in the world.

Ellicott introduced him to Secretary of war Knox and to Washington.

They offered him inducements to stay in the country and build ships for them. He did so.

The following war frigates were constructed by him: The illfated 'Cheasapeake' the 'Wasp' which defeated the British ship Frolic, 'Constitution' 'United States' 'Cresent' (built for the Dey of Algeirs) 'Constellation' 'John Adams' Portsmouth' 'Hornet' 'Ferritt.'

Thus his descendants designate him 'Father of the American Navy.' As a quaker he was turned out of that order for building 'Instruments of War.' He was afterwards reinstated.

He inherited an English title but declined to use it.

### CALDWELL-CHAPLINE-CONTRIBUTED

Mary Caldwell m. Colonel Moses Caton Chapline.

The Caldwell's were a very ancient and distinguished family. According to the family history several brothers born in France had earned the enmity of a ruling soverign, and found it necessary to flee the country. They came to Scotland and purchased an estate from a Bishop named Douglas. This estate was known as 'COLD WELL' from whence the brothers derived their family name.

Their descendants guaranteed to furnish armed men to James I of England.

Cromwell's grandmother was a Coldwell. Many of the Coldwells followed Cromwell to Ireland.

The grandson of one of these Irish Coldwells was created a Baron by William II.

His grandson James lived in Tyrone, Ireland. His son James settled in Virginia and married Elizabeth Alexander, became Justice of The Peace and held other high offices. His Son John built Fort William Henry. Mary Caldwell was a descendent.

Rev. James Caldwell became a Chaplain in the American army during the war. He was intensly patriotic and lost heavily in this worlds goods as a result his home and church being burned by the British. Mrs. Caldwell was killed in her house while praying with the children.

In the defense of Springfield New Jersey during the battle Parson Caldwell supplied the men with hymn books to use for wadding exclaiming "now put 'Watts' into them boys."

He himself was shot by a sentry as a result of some altercation. His murderer was hanged. His son John E. Caldwell was taken to France by Lafayette and educated. One of his daughters, Martha, married Patrick Calhoun the father of the noted Statesman of that name.

## MILLER-FOX CONTRIBUTED

Anna Miller was the wife of Josiah Fox and the daughter of Peter Miller who settled in Germantown, Pa. and who was the brother of General George Miller of of the Revolutionary Army. Peter Miller was a fellow apprentice, with the celebrated Benjamin Franklin in the printing business subsequently setting up for himselt, publishing a weekly paper in Philadelphia.

On discontinuing the publication of this paper he became a Notary Public, a sworn interpreter of the German language and was appointed by 'His Majesty' Justice of the Peace. This office he held for 39 years. He was considered the most learned man in Colonial America.

He translated the Declaration of Independence into seven languages for Thomas Jefferson.

After the death of her parents, Josephine Isabella, the eleventh child of General Moses Chapline, while still a child was taken into the care of her sister Mrs. Robert Stanton (wife of a wealthy planter) and was raised by her.

At the time of the outbreak of the civil war she was visiting a brother in Wisconsin.

Mrs. Robert Stanton was forced to flee to Canada for having attended a ball given at Wheeling to U. S. General Fremont, gowned in a Confederate flag.

Her home was taken by General Fremont and upon their departure was confiscated. Being unable to return to the South Josephine and her sister moved to California, by way of New York and the Isthmus of Panama. On their way they went to Idaho to visit their sister Mrs. Jonathan Lawrence.

While visiting her sister in Idaho Josephine Chapline married Thomas Bailey Pheby of England, who came to America with his parents at the age of ten and settled in Richmond, Va.

His father taking no side in the civil war, and realizing war was inevitable he moved with his family to California in 1860.

His expressed reason being "that he had not raised four sons to be targets for ammunition."

Thomas Bailey Pheby was a man of great energy and ambition, and of most decided convictions. He identified himself with the mining world of the Pacific Coast. He was interested with New Yorkers in several mining ventures as well. His associates being the wall street firm of Mason and Smith and Morton and Bliss. Morton was afterwards a Vice President of the United States. He was also a business associate and close friend of U. S. Senator Jno. P. Jones. Much of his time was spent in New York. His Clubs being the 'Lotus' 'Manhattan' and 'Union League'. His wife Josephine Chapline who died but a few years before him, was a devoted mother and a woman who represented the highest type of culture and character which the south produced.

## THE POOR MAN MINE—BAD INDIANS

Mr. and Mrs. Pheby stayed for four years after their marriage in Idaho, he being superintendent of the Poor Man Mine when it was producing at its best.

While their extreme high prices prevailed. They paid $4 a gallon for milk and a wage of $75 to the man who went for and brought back the milk. Their laundry price was $4 a dozen for clothes merely washed what might be called rough dried.

They left for California in 1870 with their three children and Mr. Pheby's brother William.

The roads were infested with bad Indians so that they took their stage journeys mostly at nights with lights out.

There were three coaches running. The one they travelled in came through safely. Of the other two one was occupied by the armed men accustomed to Indian warfare. In spite of these precautions but one passenger of the other two coaches reached Portland alive.

Arriving in San Francisco Mr. and Mrs. Pheby lost their eldest son three years old as the result of the hardships of the trip. They made their home in Oakland where the family have since resided.

Their only daughter Elsie Chapline Pheby married Arthur Dudley Cross in 1893 (and their children are descendents of the Cross line as well as this distinguished line, maternal, now briefly outlined by their mother—Author.)

## LINE OF MRS. L. F. CROSS nee LORANA FRENCH

Edward French came to Ipswich in 1635, and the next year he removed to Salisbury, and was among its earliest pioneers. He died Dec. 28, 1674. His wife, Ann, died the 9th of March, 1683. His brother William (1) French came from England to Cambridge 1635 and became one of the first settlers in Bellerica. He was a representative from Bellerica in 1663, a Lieutenant and

an active and useful citizen. His wife was Elizabeth. They were married in England. She died March 31st 1668. He married secondly May 6th, 1669, Mary (Lathrop) Stearns widow of Lieut. John (2) Stearns. He died Nov. 20th 1681. This widow married (3) June 20th 1687 Isaac (2) Mixer of Watertown. Jacob (2) French, son of William and Elizabeth French was b. Jan. 16th 1639-40. His house was one of the Garrisons during King Phillips war. He married Sep 7th 1665 Mary Champney daughter of Elder Richard Champney of Cambridge. She died April 1st 1681. He married secondly June 30th 1685, Mary Converse of Woburn, who died April 18th 1685. The third wife was Mary, who was drowned June 9th, 1709. His fourth wife Ruth died Nov. 6th 1730. He died May 20th 1713.

William (2) French son of Jacob (2) and Mary (Champney) French was born at Bellerica July 18th 1668. He married May 22nd 1695 Sarah Danforth daughter of Captain Jonathan Danforth of Bellerica. He also lived in Bellerica where he died. See 30th 1723. His widow married secondly June 10th, 1729, Ebenezer Davis of Concord, where she died Oct. 15th 1751.

Ebenezer (4) French, son of William (3) born in Bellerica Aug. 5th, 1707, married Aug. 27th, 1729, Elizabeth Hill, daughter of Samuel and Sarah (Page) Hill. They lived in Bellerica. He died in Dec. 31st, 1791. She died March 26th, 1786.

Jesse (5) French son of Ebenezer (4) b. April 6th 1739, married April 14th 1761 Abigail Jaquith, born at Bellerica May 28th, 1742, daughter of Abraham and Hannah (Farley) Jaquith. In 1763 he removed from Bellerica to Fitchburg where he lived about twenty years when he returned to Bellerica. The eldest child Jesse was born in Bellerica and seven were born in Fitchburg.

1. Jesse b, Oct. 11, 1761; removed to Ohio.

2. Samuel b. Mar. 14, 1763, married Oct. 14, 1784, Eunice White daughter of Nathanial and Lydia (Phelps) White. He lived in Fitchburg. Their children were Samuel, Abel, Lucinda, Christopher, Sut, Levi.

3. Thomas, b. May 18th, 1765, married Sept. 21st 1788 Ruth Marshall.

4. Luther b. Sept. 25th, 1767, married August 28, 1796, Sally Bowers, daughter of Josiah and Maria (Trowbridge) Bowers of Bellerica. They lived in Bellerica and had eleven children; one of these Josiah Bowers was Mayor of Lowell, a benefactor of several charities and a most worthy man. (5) Abraham, b. Jan. 22nd, 1770, merchant of Boston. (6) Ebenezer, b. June 19th, 1772. (7) Abigail, b. Sept. 11, 1774, died Sept. 28th 1776. (8) Abigail, June 6, 1777.

Thomas (6) French, son of Jesse (5) b. in Fitchburg May 8th, 1765, m. Sep. 21st, 1788, Ruth Marshall, lived in Fitchburg where he died Feb. 28, 1843. Their children were: (1) Ruth b. Feb. 27th, 1789; (2) Marshall, b. July 1st, 1791; (3) Abigail, June 23, 1793; (4) Abel b. June 2, 1795 and d. April 11, 1824. He was killed with a knife in the hands of his cousin Abel French. (Note how strange that they have borne the biblical name of the first man of the human race to be slain by his fellow man. He married April 28th 1818, Mary Kilburn (5) Thomas B. b. March 13th 1797. (6) Loring b. March 13th 1800; (Lorin on records) (7) Joseph b. Oct. 20, 1802, married 1827 Eunice Dole; (8) Susanna b. Oct. 8th 1804; (9) Sumner b. Jan. 1, 1806; (10) Mary b. June 25, 1808.

Loring French, son of Thomas French, b. in Fitchburg, Mass., March 13, 1800, d. in Dracutt, Mass., Dec. 27, 1880; m. Rebeckah Sawyer, daughter of Jonathan and Abigail (Cummings) Sawyer, b. in Weston, Vt., Jan. 5, 1805, d. in Saco Maine, Jan. 21, 1844. Loring French afterwards married Hannah Averill on Sept. 6, 1846. She died March 8, 1866. The children of Loring and Rebeckah were: Amanda, Electia, Loring, Adaline and Lorana; Amanda, b. at Lowell, Mass., Jan. 28, 1829, d. at Methuen, June 24, 1897: Electia, b. Lowell, Mass,, Dec. 28, 1830; Loring, Jr., b. Saco Maine, April 13, 1833, d. Los Angeles, April 4, 1888; Lorana, b. Saco Maine, May 30, 1836; Adaline, b. Saco Maine Aug. 16, 1839. Lorana French married Wm. Parker Cross at Dracutt, Mass., Nov. 24, 1853.

MRS. WM. PARKER CROSS

Nee Lorana (French) Cross a valued correspondent and a loyal friend without whose efforts these memoirs would have been a far more difficult task for in my investigations Mrs. Cross' tireless energy and enthusiasm and abiding faith, spurred me on to sustained effort and my present measure of success. She has been searching Cross records for half a century and made it possible to present a comprehensive Cross History. She was born in 1836 and is therefore 78 years of age and is still an earnest genealogical worker.

Shall be glad to do all I can

Mrs Cross.

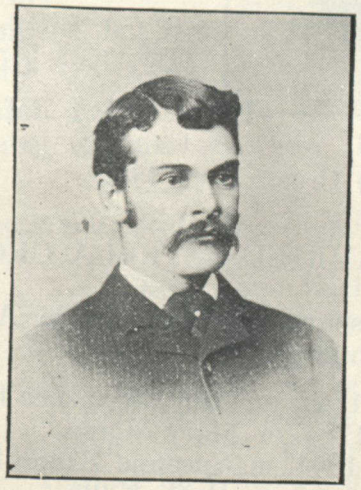
## CROSS—HAZLETON

The fourth William Cross being the eighth child of Abijah Cross and Elizabeth (Parker) Cross (William, William, John Robert) b. 1798 d. 1882, m. June 4th 1820 Mary Hazleton. They lived in the Cross Home. They had issue *(1)* Benjamin Hazleton b. May 24, 1821, d. May 1st 1845; *(2)* William Parker, b. Nov. 18, 1826, d. Jan. 28, 1882; (3) James Bradley, b. Jan. 4th, 1828, d. Sep. 28, 1885, m. Aug. 15, 1871 Matilda C. Tucker, b: April 26, 1840

(1) Mary Frances, b. Oct. 13, 1862, m. Oct. 13, 1886, Henry W. Eastham and had Susie W., b. Sept. 4 1889, Grace b. 1897. (2) Susie Fuller, b. Dec. 13, 1864; m. 1885, Merrill Barton, and had Charles W., b. July 26, 1886 and Walter C. b. April 1, 1890, d. 1891. (3) Charles E., b. Aug. 8, 1871, d. Aug. 30, 1872. (4) Alice Bradley. b. May 9, 1875. She m. Dec. 21, 1894, Herbert W. Hatch.

## CROSS—FRENCH

William Parker Cross the second child of William and Mary (Hazleton) Cross, m. Nov. 24th 1853 Lorana French of Dracut. They lived in the old homestead. They had issue: (1) George Loring, b. Oct. 22, 1855, m. May 29, 1891, Rose Gertrude Messer. They lived on the old homestead in a new house. No children. *(2)* Frank Parker, b. Oct. 30, 1858, d. Oct. 25, 1875. *(3)* Ada Estelle, b. May 2, 1862, d. Jan. 1, 1909, m. June 10, 1896, Homer F. Chase, Aug. 9, 1869, and had Gladys and Robert, who constitute the eighth generation on the old homestead. *(4)* Grace Hazleton, b. Dec. 17, 1870.



GEORGE LORING CROSS

Eldest child of William Parker Cross and Lorana (French) Cross.

Grace Cross Born 1870

The Late Ada (Chase) Cross, born 1862

Robert Cross, age 11.

Grandchild of Mrs. William Parker (French) Cross. Son of Homer Chase and the late Ada Estelle (Cross) Chase. Last representative of (French) Cross line.

## HOMER CHASE MARRIED ESTELLA CROSS—CHASE LINE

1. Aquilla Chase, Chesham, England 1618, m. Ann Wheeler d. Newbury, Mass. 1670. Had eleven children.

2. Moses, b. 1663, d. 1743, m. Ann Folausbee first, Sarah Jacob second.
3. Joseph b. 1703, d. 1784, m. Mary Morse.
4. Joseph, b. 1782, d. 1804, m. Susanna Bancroft.
5. Parker, b. 1752, d. 1815, m. Ruth Kelly.
6. Jacob, b. 1782, m. Lillie Hodge, 1805.
7. Rufus Parker, b. 1804, d. 1876, m. first Mercy Wing, second Ann Blanchard.

8. Homer Forrest, b. Worcester Mass 1869 m. Ada Estelle Cross.

## OUR LINES CROSS

It will be noticed that the French-Cummings line crosses the Cross-Cummings line by the Sawyer connection—while John Cummings married the widow of Col. Thos. French in 1650.

The descent of Rebecca Sawyer who married Loring French was as follows: Isaac Cummings emigrant, b. 1601, Salem 1620. John Cummings b. 1630 m. Alice (French) Howlett. John Cummings, b. 1657, m, Hannah (Brackett) Kinsley.

Here the lines diverge—the issue of this marriage was two sons, John and William.

The Cross ancestor was Deacon William. The French Ancestor was Deacon John.

## ADAMS—CUMMINGS

Deacon John m. 1862 Elizabeth daughter of Peletiah and Ruth Adams, the family which, in the male line, gave two presidents to the United States.

He was the first Deacon of the Chelmsford church. Moderator of the first town meeting, and town clerk in 1736.

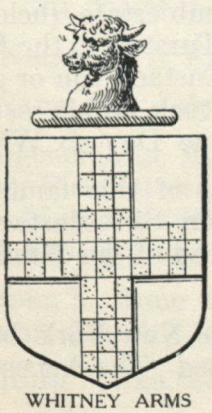
Their son John m. Mary Towne in 1738. He was b. April 19, 1717. He was a soldier in the French and Indian wars..

His son Captain John Cummings was b. at Groton, Mass. March 16th, 1737 and m. Rebecca, daughter of Peter Reed of Littleton, Mass. He was under Capt. Dow in Prescott's regiment at Bunker Hill. He was subsequently promoted to the rank of Captain.

He was a zealous citizen, but differed in his religious conviction from most of his townsmen. He died 1805.

His daughter Abigail, b. Feb 11th 1774 m. March 18th 1800, Jonathan son of Jonathan and Isabel (Grimes) Sawyer. He died 1775, Peru, N. Y, She died in Weston Vt.

Their daughter Rebecca married Loring French.



WHITNEY ARMS

Taken from Mathews American Army and Blue Book; Descent of John Whitney 1583-1673; settled in Watertown; Mass., 1635; son of Thomas gent. died 1637, son of Robert, son of Sir Robert d. 1567 sixth in descent from Sir Robert of Castle Clifford d. 1441, who was seventh in descent from Eustace de Whitney of Whitney of the Wye 1200 Great Grandson of Thurston the Fleming who came with William the Conqueror 1066. Arms—Azure a cross chequy or and gules. Crest—A bull's head couped sable armed or, the points gules. Motto—Magnanimiter crucem sustine.

Ruth Whitney married Enoch Lawrence, grandfather of Sarah (Lawrence) Wright (Cummings-Cross.) Eustace De Whitney was of Flemish descent, of his mother Agnes it is recorded in the Doomsday book, Agnes relicta Turstini Flandreusis et Eustacinis miles filius ejus Domines de Whitney, diderunt ecclesiae sansti petri Glocest; unam hidam terrae in pencomb etc. (Agnes widow of Turstan the Fleming and Sir Eustace her son Lord of Whitney gave to the church of St. Peter at Gloucester one hide (120 acres) of land in Pencomb etc.)

Some of the early Lords of Whitney were of Welsh descent, one of them Sir Peidge Axrog was a Knight of the round table and 'To King Arthur's time lived at his castle at Cardmore.

## John Whitney the Puritant Emigrant

### By Hy Melville Esq.

He was the first in America and the son of Thomas Whitney, gentleman, of Westminster and his wife Mary Bray and was born July 20 1592. He was a direct descendant of the Whitneys of Whitney, where on the banks of the Wye, the crumbling ruins of their ancestral castle, can still be seen, surviving centuries of border warfare.

His uncle, Sir James was knighted by Queen Elizabeth at Windsor in 1570. He was Lord of Whitney, Clifford, Pencomb Ocle Pichard, Kings, Copel, Bougrid, Tremyre scomb, Clifton and Cornwich, and Sheriff of Herefordshire.

John Whitney's grandfather, Sir Robert was knighted by Queen Mary in 1553 and represented Herefordshire in Parliament; from thence stretch back a long line of Whitneys and De Whitney's to the Norman Conquest.

Whitney was waste land at the time of the Conquest, but Sir Thurston, one of the Conquerors knights, commonly known as Turston the Fleming, married Agnes daughter of Alrued De Merleberge one of the great barons of the realm, who settled on her, with other land, the Pencomb estate, (held for a century in the family) Agnes had two sons, Eustas and Turstin, to the former of whom the property passed. Between 1100 and 1200 Eustace son or grandson engaged in the border wars, built a stronghold and took up his residence at Whitney on the banks of the Wye and took the Surname De (of) Whitney.

The first mention made in any record now extant, of this family is of Robert De Wytteneye 1242 A. D. From Robert's son Sir Eustace De Wytteneye an authenic account can be given of each head of the family in a long line.

After four years of research Henry Melville of the New York bar has completed and published a richly illustrated book entitled "The Ancestry of

John Whitney.'

FROM THE EMIGRANT

1. Thomas Whitney (Royal Descent), (England).

2. Robert Whitney, (England).

3. (1 Gen.) John Whitney (the emigrant), b. in England, 1589; settled in Watertown, Mass., June 1635; m. in England Eleanor ———— b. 1599, d. in Waterton, Mass., May 11, 1659; m. 2nd in Watertown Sept. 29, 1659, Judith Clement, who died before her husband; he died June 1, 1673 in Watertown, Mass.

Children

1. Mary bap. Eng. May 23, 1619, dying.

2. John b. Eng. 1620, m. Ruth Reynolds

3. Richard b. 1626, m. Martha Coldam, Eng.

4. Nathaniel, b. 1627, m., Eng.

5. Thomas b. 1629, m. Mary Kendall or Kettle, Eng.

6. Jonathan b. England, 1624, m. Lydia Jones.

7. Joshua b, Watertown July 5, m. 1635 1st Lydia, 2nd Mary, and 3rd Abigail Tarballks.

8. Caleb b. W. July 12, 1840,

9. Benjamin b. W. June 6, 1643, m. 1st Jane, 2nd Mary Poor.

2nd generation, John b. in England 1620; resided in Watertown. In 1642 he m. Ruth, daughter of Robert Reynolds of Watertown, Weathersfield and Boston.

Children:

1. John b. Sept. 17, 1643, m. Eliz. Harris

2. Ruth b. Apr. 15, 1645, m. 1st June 20, 1664, John Shattuck, 2nd Mar. 6, 1676, Enoch Laurence.

3. Nathaniel b. Feb. 1, 1646, m. Sarah Hagar

4. Samuel, b. July 26, 1648, m. Mary Bemis

3rd generation, Ruth Whitney, m. 1st John Shattuck. He was drowned in passing Charlestown Ferry, Sept. 14, 1675. She married 2nd Enoch Laurence, b. March 5, 1649, d. Sept 28, 1744.
Issue by first husband:

1 John b. June 4, 1666, m. Mary Blood; killed by the Indians with his son Groton, March 8, 1709.

2. Ruth b. Jan. 24, 1668

3. William b. Sept 11, 1670, m. 1st Hannah Under, 2nd Deliverence Pease

4. Samuel m. Eliz. Blood

Children by 2nd husband, Enoch Laurence:

1. Nathaniel b. Feb. 21, 1677; m. Hannah————————? One of his sons was captain of the Groton Co.

2. Daniel b. March 7, 1681, m. Sarah————————? In 1707 he moved from Groton to Plainfield, Conn., in that part which became Killingly; had two wives and twenty-two children.

3. Zechariah b. July 16, 1683, m. 1st, Abigail Parker; 2nd Lucy Takin

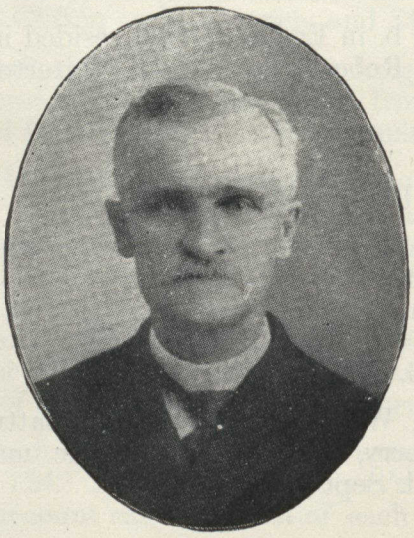
4. Jeremiah b. May 1, 1686

Note:—Enoch Laurence was wounded in a fight with the Indians, July 27, 1694, which almost wholly prevented him from being able to do manual labor. John Shattuck was in Capt. Beer's Co. in the Squakeag fight, Sept 4, 1675.

Reference:—Whitney Genealogy by Frederick Clifton Pierce, 1895, page 22

Society Colonial Wars, 1897 and 1898, page 499.

Enoch Laurence, 1648, Watertown, Mass., soldier in King Phillips war in Groton, Gaversin 1691, 1692, wounded 1694, King Williams war in 1702. The provincial authorities granted him immunity from taxation, and a pension of £3 yearly on account of physical disability contracted as above.



REV. R. T. CROSS

To whom my thanks are due for assistance in compiling these memoirs

## DESCENDANTS OF JOHN CROSS, JR.

Rev. R. T. Cross has published a work entitled 'My Children's Ancestors' Cross' It is valuable as a reference to all Cross kinsmen and sets out in detail his children's ascent to John Cross of Haverhill 1700.

For this reason this collateral line will only be presented here in briefest form.

The Rev. R. T. Cross in his volume shows his royal line through the de Umfravills; Lamberts; Lymans and Bridgemans.

## JOHN CROSS JR.'S WILL

In Mr. Cross's book John Cross Jrs. long will is printed in full.

After the usual preamble he sets forth that he bequeaths to John, Thomas, Moses and Aaron his sons certain tracts of land; and he mentions Thomas Hartshorn, husband of his daughter Sarah as a beneficiary under certain conditions in the will. To his wife he leaves certain cattle and one half his dwelling house and the improvements one half of a large tract of land and one half the barn. He also gave sums of money to his daughter Sarah Hartshorn and her daughters Hannah and Sarah.

John Cross and Sarah Peacock were married April 15, 1708. Rev. Mr. Cross ascertained that the ancestors of Sarah Peacock were as follows : William Peacock of Roxbury, 1652, came probably in Hopewell 1635 at age of twelve, hence born 1623; married Mary Willis April 12, 1653. Had children: William, born Aug. 24, 1655, died soon; William, born July 6, 1657 and Samuel, born Aug. 24, 1659, died probably June, 1661.

William Peacock, Jr. b. 1657, married Sarah Edsall, Aug. 3, 1681.
Children:

Mary b. Feb. 3. 1682, d. early.
Sarah b. Nov. 26, 1683, m. Jno. Cross April 15, 1708.
Elizabeth b. Aug. 16, 1686.
William b. 1688.
Samuel b. April 8, 1691.

Taken from Savage

Children of John Cross and Sarah Peacock:

Sarah b. March 16, 1709, m. June 26, 1729, Jonathan Hartshorn, both of Methuen.

John b. Sept. 22, 1711
Thomas, March 22, 1713-4
Moses, April 3, 1716
Aaron, Oct. 29, 1718
Asa, March 4, 1722-3
Elizabeth, Oct. 18, 1725

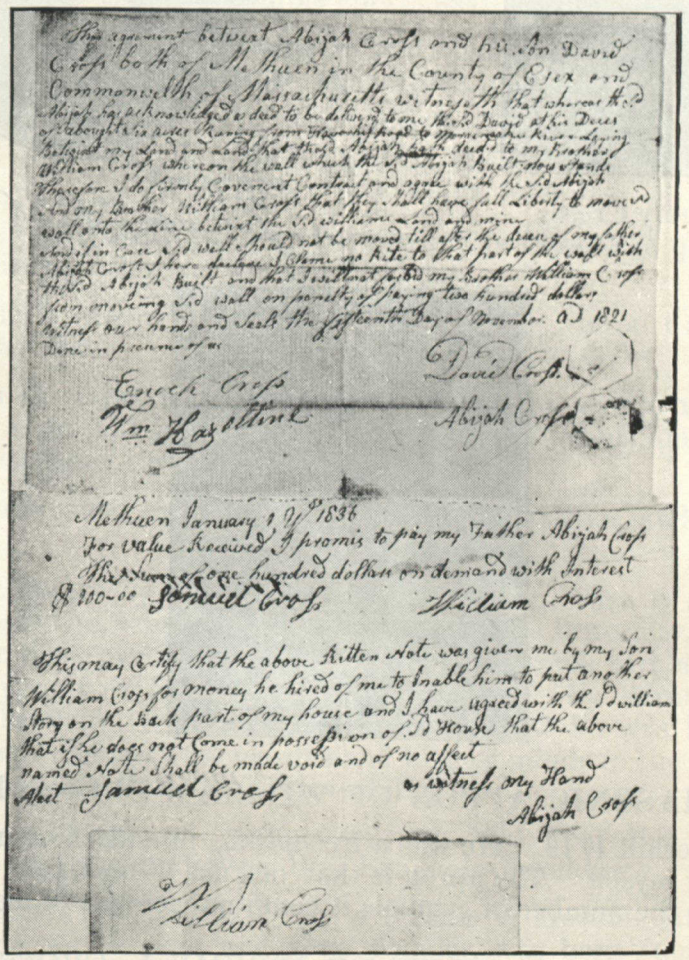
Stephen Cross and Hannah Guild were married at Haverhill, July 3, 1746, and Samuel Cross of Meuthen and Hannah Eaton of Haverhill were married April 14, 1774. The children of Stephen Cross and Hannah Guild, according to Haverhill records, were Hannah b. 1747; 2, Stephen b. 1748; 3, Sarah, 1751 and Ann, 1751; 5, Jessie. b. 1754; 6, Thomas, 1757; 7, Elizabeth, 1759.

John Cross, the eldest son of John and Sarah, married July 29, 1762, Martha Hibbord, widow of Samuel Cross. He died June 29, 1769. Theodore Cross, their son, was born Aug. 25, 1765; died April 28, 1832. married 1790, Susanna Jackman, b. March 27, 1769, d. Sept. 29, 1848. Rev. Gorman Cross, their son, was born Oct 4, 1808, d. May 10, 1895, m. Sept. 13, 1831, Sophia Murdock, b. Nov. 5, 1809, d. May 1, 1873. Their son, Rev. Roselle Theodore Cross, b. Aug. 21, 1844, m. Aug. 12, 1869, Emma A. Bridgeman, who died Sept. 11, 1910. They had Theodore Bridgeman, b. Jan 5, 1873, d. Feb. 3, 1876. Leora Minnie, b. Feb. 3, 1875. Charles Finney, b. June 1, 1876, d. Sept. 14, 1876. Rev. Judson Lewis Cross, born Nov. 10, 1878, m. Sept. 13, 1904, Florence Emily Isham; Cleveland Roselle, b. May 19, 1882, m. in Nov. 11, 1908, Ruth Ada Savage.

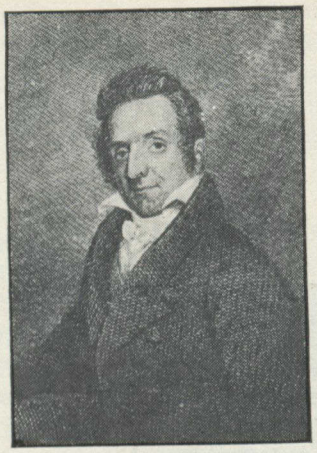
The son of Rev. Gorman Cross and Sophia Murdock, Rev. R. T. Cross, has done much in the way of successful work in tracing the male and female lines of his own family, and also in helping to straighten out some of the difficult Cross problems.

## REV. R. T. CROSS

Rev. R. T. Cross' Murdock line, he traces in a clean cut fashion to the emigrant Robert Murdock born in Scotland 1665, d. 1754; while the Chute line has been traced still further back to Alexander Chute of Tauton Somerset England A. D. 1268. The nineteenth in descent being Hannah Chute who married Captain Timothy Jackman (20) Benjamin Jackman (21) Timothy Jackman (22) Susanna Jackman m. 1790 Theadore Cross (23) Rev. Gorman Cross (24) Rev. R. T. Cross.

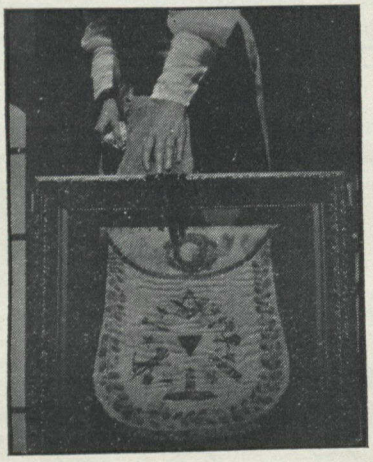


RARE OLD SIGNATURES



Jeremy Cross

*Jeremy L. Cross*



MASONIC APRON OF WILLIAM CROSS III

Born Haverhill 1742. He was a freemason, like his famous son Jeremy. From photo by myself. The apron is that of Past Worshipful Master. It is remarkable for the number of symbols it contains each one of masonic significance.

## LIFE AND TIMES OF JEREMY L. CROSS

## LECTURE TO FREEMASONS OF VANCOUVER

WORSHIPFUL SIR AND BRETHREN: When Worshipful Bro. King requested me to address you on some masonic subject I felt honored and gratified. For it was in Cascade Lodge that I first saw the Masonic light, and where that love of freemasonry was engendered, which has grown with the advancing years. I did not anticipate so large a gathering of representative brethren so well and so favorably known nor such a display of very illustrious Masons and Masonic students in the "East". I urge them to be tolerant in their criticism of my remarks. In choosing the subject of my dis-

course, I did not feel justified, at this time, to address you on the technicalities of masonry, nor did I feel worthy enough, to admonish you as to your duties to God and the Craft.

But I am able to present to you, the picture of a free mason who lived a hundred years ago, who was ever striving to perform those duties, with all his mind and with all his heart. And, if when that presentation, has been made you believe as I do that his example is worthy of emulation by all good masons, and you are inclined to reflect on the necessity of abjuring old errors and forming new resolutions—then my humble efforts shall not have been in vain.

I have been alloted fifteen minutes and that I may have this fact impressed upon my mind I shall entitle my lecture.

## A QUARTER OF AN HOUR WITH CROSS.
## A MASONIC AUTHOR AND LECTURER WHO FLOURISHED BETWEEN 1815 AND 1850

It has been my good fortune to have in my possession, a quantity of data regarding the life and times of Jeremy L. Cross.

So that whilst others have spoken of Cross the Mason I am able to tell you of Cross the Man.

As a member of the craft his work lives after him, a monument to his zeal and erudition; as an individual and a citizen of the world his ideals are instructive, his acts worthy of the highest praise.

He was an idealist, his mind was essentially creative, and he gave all to masonry.

He is best known by his 'Masonic Chart', which, when it appeared some seventy five years ago, created a sensation among the fraternity, as it contained for the first time, printed representations of Masonic symbols, which had been previously, only explained by word of mouth. His daring was remarkable; but my brethern, it must be remembered that he was backed in his enterprise by many of the best masons and biggest minds in the United States, although he personally bore the responsibility.

You will be introduced posthumously, to Mos. Wor. Bro. Cross by Mos. Wor. Bro. Albert Pyke, and Wor. Bro. Benjamin Franklin.

Bro. Pyke says: Jeremy L. Cross, a teacher of Masonic ritual, who, during his life time, was known and very popular, was born June 27th 1783 at Haverhill N. H. and died 1861.

Cross was admitted into masonry in 1808 and soon after became a pupil of Thomas Webb, whose modifaction of the Preston lectures, and the lectures in the higher degrees were at that time generally accepted in the United States. Cross having acquired a competent knowledge of Webb's system began to travel and lecture through the country. In 1819 he published "the true Masonic Chart" or Hieroglyphic Monitor.

The engraving of the emblems constituted a new and entirely original feature in the Hieroglyphic chart, and became at once very popular, so much so indeed that it superceded that of Webb.

In 1820 Cross published the Templar's chart which is a Monitor to the Degrees of Chivalry. This was followed by the Thirty Ineffable degrees of Scottish Rite Masonry. All these works passed through several editions.

The monument adopted in the American system, and for which we are it is said indebted to Cross, consists of a weeping Virgin, holding in one hand a sprig of Acacia, and in the other hand an urn. Before her is a broken column, on which rests a copy of the book of Constitution, whilst Time behind her, is attempting to disentangle the ringlets of her hair. Although the monument is simple, the symbolic expression of the idea that Veneration should ever be paid to departed merit is well carried out.

As a matter of fact my brethren, Cross confessed to his friends, and it does not detract from his genius, that he copied the idea from a monument in an ancient church yard. This monument was by an unknown sculptor, perhaps copied by him in turn, from some other idealist of the remote past, but Cross gave it to masonry, and masonry accepted it, and for all time it becomes a masonic symbol.

## The Verdict of Another Great Man and Mason

Benjamin Franklin says: Jeremy L. Cross was a distinguished mason. Before he published "his chart", it might be said without impropriety, that the emblems in the first three degrees, were the property of masons, but as emblems only, and without any regard to their relation to other things.

Indeed until 1819 many of these emblems were never designated on the Master's carpet, were never seen or known until published and designated by Cross. And his authorship is still more extensive in the so called higher degrees.

Let it be understood that Cross attempted to give the proper meaning to the symbols, he found handed down as a heritage to masons from the dark ages, and he brought to this task years of careful study, and has done his work well.

It might be added my brethren, that so well has he done his work that his explanation of the symbols of masonary have not been challenged for a hundred years.

Franklin continues: Because of the lack of uniformity in the order throughout the country, several brethren distinguished for their zeal and knowledge of the work, were commissioned by the highest authority of the Order in the United States, as lecturers and visitors to Lodges, in all the States in the union, giving instructions. Brother Cross was commissioned by several Grand Lodges and Chapters as General Lecturer, having been recommended by his Excellency De Wit Clinton, Governor of New York, Genrl-Thos. S. Cushing the U. S. Congress, and backed by other distinguished masons, and officers of the Grand Chapter of the United States, and several State Grand Chapters.

Under such supreme sanction, he devoted several years exclusively to the

masonic fraternity. He visited many states and introduced and perfected in many lodges the established work, as it is practised brethren to-day in Mt. Herman and Acacia Lodges. Whilst engaged in these duties, Brother Cross was impressed with the importance of a standard work upon the plan of "a chart",

After consulting with many prominent masons, he undertook the task and the result was the "Mason's chart."

It was received with great favor and these persons who have in effect copied Cross book and put it forth as their own within the last few years may satisfy their own conscience, but they will never convince the great body of freemasons that they are not committing a piratical wrong.

The writer of this article has no connection with Cross whatever, nor any interest in his book, but having had knowledge from the beginning of these matters, as an act of justice, he has written this article. These my Brethren are the words of Benjamin Franklin. COPIED FROM THE NEW YORK EXPRESS, MAY 5TH, 1852: Some time ago I listened with interest to lecture in the third degree in Acacia Lodge delivered by Wor. Bro. Scott Conklin. I was then impressed with the fact that the many illustrations thrown upon the screen had been originally arranged, and first exhibited by Cross, and that Brother Conklin's explanation of them, but slightly varied, from that given by Brother Cross on his lecturing tour through the United States. They were Cross' own inspired words.

He wrote home to masons that he found in his travels great deviation in the ritual, owing to so much being handed down by words of mouth, and he feared that in time a new masonry would spring up. This my brethren was before the days of the printed ritual. He feared that the old forms would be lost, thus his efforts to collect in concise shape and preserve for all time, the ancient land marks of the order, and, as far as was in his power, explain the symbols, which although the property of masons, were meaningless to the great mass of the fraternity.

Cross had many honors conferred upon him during his career. He rose to eminence in every branch of masonry. In the Scottish Rite he became Supreme Grand Commander for the United States of America, succeeding the famous Frenchman, General Lafayette, in this exalted office. He also filled all the higher positions in Craft, and Royal Arch Masonry.

Thus you have been introduced by distinguished brethern to Cross the Mason. It is my humble duty to make you acquainted with Cross the man.

No doubt many of you believe in eugenics. Be that as it may, the Cross family have loomed large in the public notice. I hope I may be pardoned for digressing momentarily to speak of some of them. His sister Eliza Cross was a famous anti-slavery advocate, working side by side with Wendall Phillips and William Lloyd Garrison. She became with Harriert Beecher Stowe anti-slavery authoress and was so known throughout the Northern States.

She died in her 97th year. Her photograph here produced was taken when she was 95. Her features in spite of her advanced age still display strong personality.

Here is —— Cross as a young man in 1819 when he produced his 'Masonic Chart'. I am also able to show you Cross the old man near the time when his eventful life was coming to a close.

In 1906 I visited the home of Cross and his ancestors, where eight generations of his family had lived; and I am able to show you a picture of this quaint old place. Once a wigwam, afterwards a log cabin, now a house of thirteen rooms. It was built in 1709.

On my arrival I was greeted by Mrs. Lorana Cross, whom I had not previously met but learned to know through an extended correspondance regarding her distinguished kinsman.

Mrs. Cross informed me that Jeremy was ot a long line of ancient ancestors. I shall not dwell on this interesting fact in Cross history any longer than will enable me to introduce exhibits.

CAMDEN the old Garter-King-of-Arms wrote in 1589 that Sir William Cross of Charlynch Somerset, England, was descended from the ancient family of Cross of Cross Hall Lancaster, who had for their motto 'Sub Cruce Salis', Safety Under the Cross. Sir William was slain at the battle of Agincourt 1415. One of his sons was Jeremy Cross' ancestor.

Another member of the family was Sir Robert Cross, whose coat of arms, which I have here was brought from England by the Rebel General Ralph Cross in 1773.

I have also a letter written by this same Sir Robert Cross to the then Earl of Salsbury, a copy of which is here for your inspection. I should recommend its perusal. It is a curiosity owing to its original spelling and quaint idiom, but above all, it is a bit of atmosphere of those old days when Knighthood was in flower and when religious intolerance, was driving the best of Englands sons over the sea to America. Sir Robert was knighted by Queen Elizabeth for 'laudable practices on sea and land.' His little fighting cruiser and two others capturing by assault the Crown of Portugal, the largest of the big war hulks of the illfated Spanish Armada.

The first American Cross was Robert the Puritan. His grandson William built the Cross homestead at Meuthen Mass. Family 'Ictas' were valuable in the eighteenth century and were carefully preserved and handed down from father to son. They were also built to last.

Thus I am able to show yon a stone ink well which is historical on account of its associations. For it is said as the property of Jeremy Cross it was used by him when he was writing his famous lectures, being delivered by our masonic orators in America to day. It was formerly the property of Jeremy Cross' father, William Cross, and is marked with the letter 'W' by William himself.

Tradition has it that it was in personal use when, William dipped his pen into the ink well, and wrote a defiant answer to the authorities, who had demanded of him church tythes, he would not pay. In those days every citizen was compelled to support morally and financially the recognized church, or to take the consequences. William who had been a deacon of the said church, but became interested in the seperatists or Baptists, and as he refused assistance, he was in that land of freedom and lodged in Salem jail; so the Puritans appear to have come out of the 'frying pan' into the 'fire.' On the morning of my arrival at the old homestead, I was taken to the attic, where everything had remained practically untouched for generations. To me it was an enchanted chamber. There, hung about on pegs was the regalia of other days. Frock coats of ancient pattern, odd shaped top hats, spinning wheels where for generations young maidens had sat and sang hymns as they spun the wheel in time with the tune. This flax, left on the floor, as if dropped there yesterday, was once handled by nimble young fingers, now still forever.

This top hat of ancient style, at one time adorned a far nobler brow than mine, for underneath it throbbed the brain of that great mason, Jeremy Cross; and his eyes which beamed so kindly on his brethren looked out from those old spectacles in the latter years of his life.

Nothing had been touched but dust and cobwebs for fifty years. Great brass warming pans, long out of use, hung in a row along the rafters. On one of these beams was a bayonet belt. It was an accoutrement my guide informed me, that had been worn by Abijah Cross, Jeremy's uncle, on the occasion of the surrender of General Burgoyne and his forces. It was treasured also because Jeremy had worn it alternating with his uncle in active service during the war of 1812.

These interesting characters of long ago were not so well nourished as many of us. Indeed it would not go half way around some waist lines that I know of.

I am able to show you a photograph taken by myself of a pastmaster's apron, worn by William Cross Jr., the father of Jeremy, in 1765 before the war of secession when they were all British subjects. However William when he carried this little leather pocket book was a revolutionary. It was afterwards the property of Jeremy and was used as a card receptional, and it is claimed that one of his cards had been in its folds for over 50 years, as when I received it card and all, it had not been touched for that length of time.

This my brethren is a most interesting relic, the identical graphite pencil which Cross used on his lecturing tours, and with which he delineated draughts or plans of masonic symbols which were to be used forever afterwards on the Master's carpet. From a device on the handle he could figure out the day of week and the month of the year.

This dagger I was informed by my guide, was used by Cross as a protection against the Indians. But we, as masons, know it was put to a more nobler purpose. For a hundred years ago my Brethren "_____ _____" whose bodies have long returned to the dust and whose souls have returned to God who gave them.

Behind "_____" they heard the voice of Jeremy Cross saying to them "_____"

In this travelling bag Cross carried his personal effects on his lecturing tour. So now it contains his possessions which will always be kept therein sacred to his memory.

I left the old attic with its interesting associations, and visited the farm part of a greater estate which 200 years before Jeremy's great grandfather John Cross, had purchased from the Indians, Receiving as much land as he could walk around from sunrise to sunset, blazing the trees enroute, in exchange for nine bolts of red broadcloth.

I next visited Springfield Mass., the home of Cross in his palmiest days. It is now occupied by Mrs. Niles, Jeremy's niece, who married his private secretary.

It was veritably a museum of masonic treasures. There was not a piece of furniture nor an article on the wall that did not speak of Brother Cross the mason and the man. Mr. Niles, then 86 years of age, was still living, and as he had been the closest of any man to Jeremy in his lifetime, his conversation was most interesting. Mr. and Mrs. Niles and two daughters and myself, sat midst these relics of the past, and talked on and on, that afternoon, always of Jeremy Cross, how he looked, what he wore, and what he said; of his mind being always obsessed with masonry until the twilight gathered and the shadows came and we sat silently thinking, when I fancied that I heard a firm slow step on the verandah, a fumbling at the latch, as if by a man buried in thought. Then there appeared a square set figure, framed in the door, of medium height, erect, military bearing, wearing a tall top hat and black frock coat buttoned very tightly about the waist and white duck trousers scrupulously neat. His clean shaven face glowing with good nature and love of mankind. Slowly he removed his hat and taking off his spectacles, polished them with a big red handkerchief. And as I looked the thought came to me that I was a stranger and intruder and not one of this family circle. Immediately the figure was gone..

In the Niles home my reputation as a relic hunter had evidently gone before me for the daughters of Mr. and Mrs. Niles resolutely insisted thatI should take no momento's of my visit away with me, otherwise I was welcome. One of the daughters informed me somewhat bitterly, that many masons came to their home to admire but stayed to steal. 'A hard thing to say of masons' she added, but somehow after these masonics visits, something was missing.

And brethren, I reluctantly confess that my masonic zeal also got somewhat the better of me, and I erred like the rest, but perhaps not so deliberately.

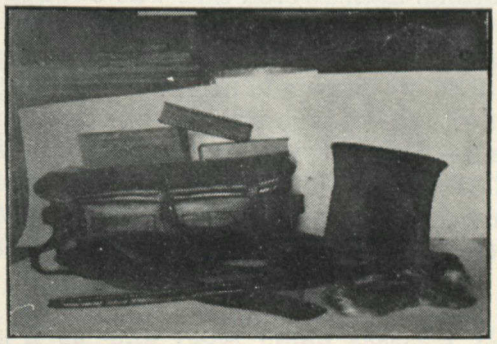
I was shown many boxes of masonic jewels and Mrs. Niles pleaded with her daughters to let me have just one of the smaller emblems as I had come 3000 miles to visit them.

The younger members of the family refused point blank and to escape their rising wrath I retired to the big verandah, to peruse the personal diary of Brother Cross.

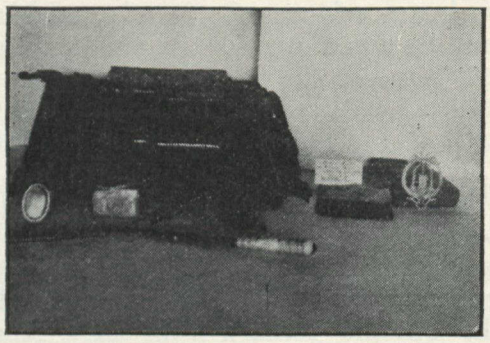
That evening the daughters left the house to attend some social function. Now was my chance on the jewel box. I asked Mrs. Niles to allow me to see the jewels once more. My request was granted and I admired a Royal Arch emblem that had been worn by Jeremy Cross. A sigh expressive of disappointed hopes, brought out the remark from Mrs. Niles that she was going into the next room for a few moments, and if when she came back she found the royal arch jewel missing, well—as I was a guest in the house, she would have to let the matter drop. But she added "for goodness sake don't breath it to my daughters."

Here is the jewel brethren. I have a suspicion that the kindness of heart of Mrs. Niles, has been responsible for many similar mysterious disappearances of masonic emblems from Jeremy Cross' home. The jewel is dated 1818 and its latin inscription means 'To God, our country and our fraternity, honor, fidelity and benevolence, and on the reverse. To him who is not a mason these symbols are meaningless and in English the words 'we have earned wages,'

I will conclude by quoting some passages from the private diary of this great mason. The secret thoughts of men who have done great deeds are always interesting. They are never intended to be canvassed by the cynical or thoughtless, and are sacred to the memory of the dead. In Jeremy Cross' diary we get beneath the crust; we find the man; we hear his heart throbs, we know him as he was, and while these express human emotions which once came from the very heart of Cross, are being quoted. Perhaps we may hold the mirror up to our own lives and will realize our own difficulties in living as masons should, and brethren, all we can do is as Cross professed to be always trying to do, to continually strive for a higher standard of morals.



Grip which held Jeremy Cross Masonic regalia in his travels as lecturer for the Grand Lodges. On top the three Wright Bibles, the bayonet belt worn by Abijah Cross at the surrender of Burgoyne; material from which cloth was spun picked up near a spinning wheel in the Cross Homestead, Lawrence, Mass.; Jeremy Cross' high hat.



The dark object in the back ground Abijah Cross' gift to his bride, a looking glass; oval object to left, hair broach given by the Stevens family to my grandmother Cross, containing the hair of all the members of the Stevens family with their initials in gold scroll work. The ink well in which William is said to have dipped his pen when he sent his letter to the authorities refusing to pay church tithes, and which Jeremy used in writing his famous Masonic lectures. Jeremy Cross' pencil by which he drew drafts or plans of his famous Masonic symbols. Jeremy Cross' spectacles and dagger used in Masonic ritual. Pocket book of Abijah's, worn when a revolutionary, afterwards Jeremy's. Royal Arch Jewel worn by Jeremy Cross the famous Freemason.

## JEREMY CROSS' DIARY

He says: Soon after I was 21 I joined the society of Masons, and finding the institution was founded on Christian morals and not interfering with any sect or denomination, as far as morality or good living was concerned I became very attached to the society and strove hard to become proficient in the mysteries, and in so doing I found I had frequently to consult the bible. I found many of my questions unanswered and was obliged to abandon them.

About four years ago I commenced the occupation of Masonic lecturer, and as it became my duty to persuade others to lead strictly moral lives, I conceived it all-important that I should be so myself or else my theory and practice would not agree. I thereupon set about correcting my own morals, and first broke myself of profane language which I was occasionally in the habit of using; and many other foolish practices, which abase the man, and the stricter I lived up to the moral standard, the more pleasure and comfort I found.

This experience of Crosses holds good now as it did then. I am not speaking at you my brethren, but with you when I say that none of us has any right to call himself a self respecting mason if has not broken himself of the habit of profanity.

Cross continuing said: It seems to be plain to me that preachers dwell too much on this change of heart in Christianity. I thought this doctrine rather ideal, and bordering upon superstition and necessary only to influence weak minds; and that the same Christian conversion may be produced by 'change of mind' such as I myself experienced when I became a member of the masonic fraternity. In further perusing his diary, however, we find that Cross was not wholly satisfied in regard to his change of mind, and he seems to tactily acknowledge that the preachers were right.

Perhaps it would not be imprudent for me to say that I believe Cross rightly placed Christian conversion with the church. For masonry is but the handmaiden of Christianity; and does not profess to do missionary work in the cause of any church but to teach the members of the fraternity in their widest sense 'brotherly love, relief and truth.'

These comments of Cross were on the opening pages of his large diary spread over several years, and almost every leaf thereafter contained his written thoughts. Often he speaks of the 'change of heart' that does not come, and as the time went by, he was ever advancing queries and asking himself again and again if such a change was necessary to happiness and repose and the soul's contentment. A few extracts from Cross' diary will serve to illustrate what I have said.

Nov. 4th 1817—At Salem to-day I lectured to the Brethren, I impressed upon their minds the necessity of living moral lives, if they wished to be deserving masons. I again ask what is a 'change of heart'? Is it a sudden rending of the heart succeeded by a disgust of all sin? My heart is still deceitful and I am still disappointed in myself.

It may be my brethren some of us share these thoughts with Cross, the world does not change, and doubt is not always devil born.

Sunday, Dec. 7th, 1817, Richmond Va. Met officers of Grand Lodge. I was not pleased in listening to debates on matters of no importance. Oh, how I long to see them exercise a different spirit, and love each other like brethren.

I have never heard a contentious discussion of trifling matters in lodge since then without thinking of this passage in Cross diary.

Saturday 20th, Dec. 1817. I once thought myself wise on scriptural matters I am mistaken, I know nothing.

January 18th, 1818. Spent the day drafting emblems for the Masonic chart which I am about to publish. Doubtless as Cross wrote these lines his busy brain was teeming with symbolic visions. But he would hardly dare to dream that these symbols, would be accepted and used by countless thousands of masons for all time.

Cross was at one time sufficiently well known and sufficiently popular to have been a prominent figure in political life. He was a personal friend of the man who wielded the destinies of the United States during his lifetime. He was at one time nominated for Mayor of New York but refused to stand. Masonry, not politics was his mission in life. During the Morgan excitement

when masonry in America was at its lowest ebb, Cross did more than any other one man to dispel the dark clouds and place masonry in the proper light before the world.

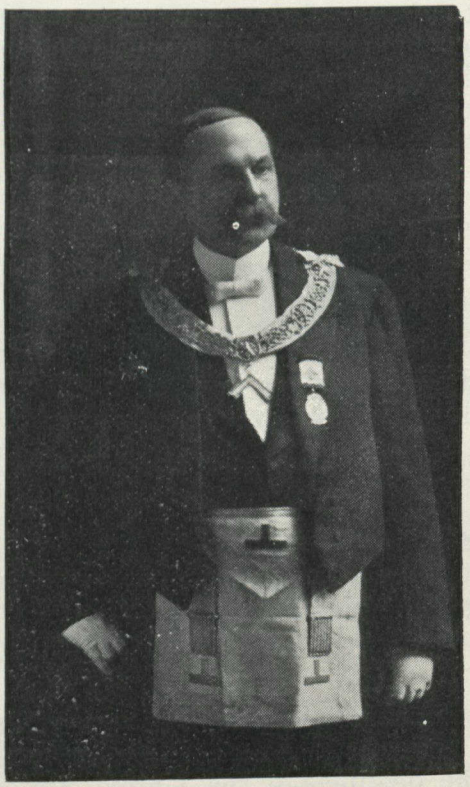
Worshipful Sir and Brethren, I have shown you the picture of a man who dedicated himself to masonry. Who through much mental suffering was brought to the conviction that GOODNESS was not as we thought but as we felt.

Who ever strove to impregnate his heart with a disgust for sin, so that as a True Apostle of Masonry he might be the better enabled to do good and live as a mason should.

His was a noble character. His was a sublime mission and if we emulate his example we shall not err.

Lives of great men all remind us
We can make our lives sublime
And departing leave behind us
Foot prints on the sands of Time

*—Lecture on Jeremy L. Cross Delivered by the Author, 1914*



A. E. GOODMAN

## ADDENDA AND ERRATA.

### CROSS.

Page 11. Caption to cut: Wright Arms.
Page 14. Second paragraph, sixth line: This was in 1659, only 3 years.
Page 14. Fifth paragraph, first line: The West Precinct.
Page 23. Second paragraph, third line: Jacob, my Great, great, great Grandfather.
Page 20. Second paragraph, last line: Censored—not censured.
Page 24. First line: Dunstable, not Westford.
Page 24. First paragraph, seventh line: Blot out the A before Wright.
Page 30. Eighth paragraph, last line: Commonage for cattle.
Page 33. Last paragraph, last line. Thomas Nealand.
Page 35. Third verse, 3rd and 4th lines: Come—instead of comes.
Page 41. Caption: Moses Cumming, grandmother—not mother—burned as a witch.
Page 58. Caption to cut: Erase Washington Elm.
Page 68. Third paragraph, second line: Jordan—not Gordon.
Page 73. Second paragraph, third line: Wife of above-mentioned.
Page 80. Sixth paragraph, first line: Discovered a hitherto.
Page 106. First paragraph, ninth line: That honor may be claimed.
Page 106. First paragraph, ninth line: But is it not a fact.
Page 107. First paragraph, second line: As was most conducive.
Page 113. Eighteenth line: Great great Grandfather.
Page 129. Second paragraph, fifteenth line: Climbed.
Page 129. Second paragraph, last line: Extremes.
Page 133. Second paragraph, second line: May 7th, 1861.
Page 133. Third paragraph, first line: Resident Engineer at Sacramento for the California Steam Navigation Co.
Page 143. Third paragraph, second line: General—not George—Chaplain.
Page 145. Last paragraph, second line: Josephine and sister Rowena.
Page 150. Grace Cross, b. 1870.
Page 162. Second paragraph, first line: Jeremy Cross.

## KINSMEN

## IN THE NAME OF GOODMAN—RIGGS—HOLLOWAY—McCALLUM AND THEIR DESCENDANTS

## GREETING.

These Memoirs of Goodman Paternal line I dedicate to my son Edwin Ellis Goodman.

With the full assurance that when he shall have arrived at the years of maturity he will appreciate the laborious nature of the undertaking, and its great value as a family record, and that he will keep alive the work of his father, and help to make it perpetual, that it may go on from generation to generation; that memories may be kept green, and inter-family ties never broken, and that we of the same kin, here on earth, may live in peace with one another, and that we shall not drift apart, and forget that we are of the same common stock and of the same breed, and that we have our family traditions to keep up which I set down here without fear of contradiction, is honesty, integrity, self respect, resourcefullness and self confidence, strong mentality in the men, and in the women intense mother affection, kindliness, purity of thought and action, charitable, sympathetic, and intellectual.

It you my kinsmen have a general desire to know the names of the progenitors of your race, and a sincere wish to make yourself more extensively acquainted with the lives and habits of those distant ancestors incidently responsible for your being, you may find what you wish in these pages

No work of this nature can be compiled without mistakes. Errors of omission and commission will be found. Your leniency is expected.

The author has labored long and sought in vain for a complete genealogical record. Indeed some statements made as facts may be found established in the wrong premises. Infallability is not claimed. Labor must however now be suspended. After twenty nine years of more or less sustained effort the auther submits what must, in the nature of things, be an uncomplete task and asks your generous consideration.

It is impossible to satisfy everyone concerned. Some may take offence at what has been said or left unsaid. The author urges that the kinsman forbear from thinking that any offence was meant, and to put all mistakes down to a possible lack of judgment, if such occasion should arise and not attribute it to carelessness or illwill.

In the words of the epitaph on the Grave Stone of the poor but honest laborer, you are asked to believe of the Author that:

"HE DONE HIS BEST."

MEMOIRS OF MARIA ABBOTT, THE GREAT GRAND DAUGHTER OF MARTHA (RIGGS) GOODMAN, WRITTEN FOR HER RELATIVES WHEN NEARLY NINETY YEARS OF AGE.

Maria (Spooner) Abbott, nee Baldwin, author of "A Short Family Sketch."

Maria Abbott's Home, sketched by herself, with the following inscription :

"I have made this sketch of our cottage, which, however, does not do it justice. Besides, I find my hand is out of the way of drawing, and that my straight lines are crooked. The foliage around the piaza is composed of English honeysuckle and climbing roses. The trees around us are beautiful in their bright autumn leaves. I have added to the beauty of the fountain by adorning it with a boquet."



*NOTE.—First paragraph should read: Maria Abbott, niece of Martha (Riggs) Goodman.*

Carbondale Pa. March 3rd, 1891:

My Grandfather Ogle Riggs was an English Squire of means, and occupied some high official position. He married a Miss Musgrave, who in her childhood had a very remarkable experience. Her parents had emigrated to Virginia, and possessed a large plantation somewhere on the James River in that State. This child, and the only one, was born there.

When six years of age she was left an orphan. It was supposed that both her parents died of some prevailing fever, and at their request she was taken to England to be placed in the care of her uncle, a clergyman of the church of England a wealthy old bachelor.

She was a beautiful woman and was married young to Ogle Riggs, and inherited property from this kind uncle.

## MUSGRAVE CREST

The late Governor of Jamaica, Sir Anthony Musgrave, is of the said Musgrave family, with whom we are thus distantly connected. His Arms bear an annulet of which I have a picture somewhere. Some silver which was sent to Aunt Goodman had on it this same Coat of Arms, which I have seen.

Little Elizabeth during the great plague in London was carried through the streets with her face covered with a cloth dipped in vinegar.

## CAPTAIN RIGGS CUTS A WIDE SWATH

She became the Mother of a large family but there were only two sons, the elder was a Captain in the Navy, lead a very fast life, never married and died young. His great extravagence lead to much loss and trouble in his father's family.

### Note by Author

There were three sons not two. Captain Riggs did marry. Elizabeth was four when orphaned. Thos. Musgrave was a young bachelor, not an old one.

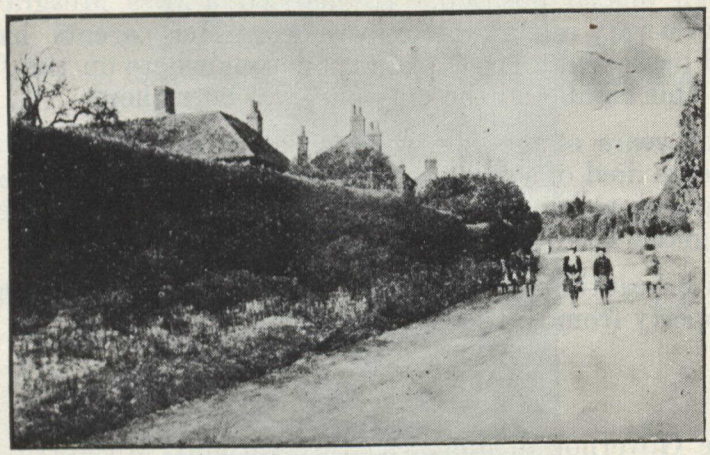
---

### Maria Abbott's Sketch Continued

## SQUIRE HENRY HARD HIT
## WITH SIXTEEN MOUTHS TO FEED

On the death of Ogle Riggs my grandfather inherited the property; it was so involved that the most of it was sold to effect a settlement. Henry, my grandfather, retaining "Hollist House" as his residence. A great deal of land was attached to this place which contained artificial fish ponds, etc. Aunt Goodman had a picture of the house and grounds (on parchment) which I have seen, but on enquiring for this when I was in Toronto, no one seemed to know anything of it, and the Musgrave Silver has disappeared."

## THE SIMPLE LIFE— OCCUPATION, GARDENING, AMUSEMENT PLAYING THE VIOLIN—HENRY LEAVES HOLLIST HOUSE

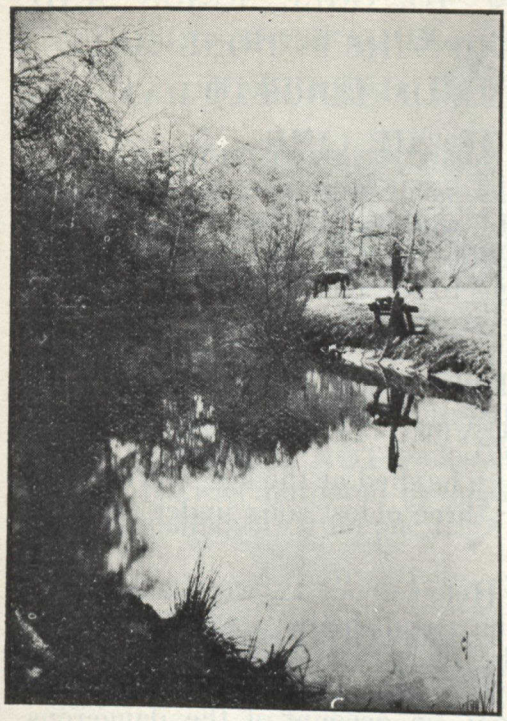


The Riggs Home Easburne—See Marie Abbot's sketch—
"My grandfather then built a nice brick cottage at a small village called Easburne in Sussex where he died".

"My grandfather being of no occupation was simply a Country Squire as the Riggs Coat of Arms (with the Helmet on one side) shows. He was very fond of gardening, which, with playing on his violin became his chief amusement and employment. He had a large family—sixteen children—ten daughters and six sons, to whom he gave good educations. After residing at Hollist House for several years, he found that he could not afford to keep up so large an establishment, and sold the place to Lord Robert Spencer, who, I think now owns it. My grandfather then built a nice brick cottage at a small village in the neighborhood called Easbourne in Sussex where he died at the great age of 85; his wife surviving him for seven years and then dying at the same age.

## LORD RIVERS SUICIDES
## IN 1796 THOMAS GOODMAN MARRIED MARTHA RIGGS
## YOUNG COUPLE ELOPE FROM HOLLIST

Of their many daughters Martha seemed to be his favorite. She was a beautiful girl and of a lovely disposition and very talented. She left school early and soon afterwards Lord Egremont, who had a country seat at Petworth (not far off) engaged an artist from London to paint views from different parts of the estate. This was Mr. Thomes Goodman. He was a very handsome man (it was he who painted the picture of my grandfather and grandmother) He fell in love with Martha, but her parents were greatly averse to the match, chiefly because they were religious people. This caused the young couple to elope.



Glimpse of Hollist House, where the grandsire of the Goodmans met Martha Riggs. Here also the author's grandfather was born and bathed in this pond.

Elopement of Thomas Goodman and Martha Riggs

1795—See Maria Abbott's Sketch—"Thomas Goodman fell in love with Martha Riggs and she with him, but the parents were averse to the match so they eloped—1795.

*All the gamut of emotions*
*That our human lives embrace,*
*Love and passion, joy and sorrow,*
*In the passing of our race.*

Note—As a child the author was informed that Lord Rivers committed suicide as a result of this elopement. He having formed a deep attachment for Martha.

## THREE YEARS LATER
## MARTHA DESERTED—ALONE IN LONDON—HER PITIFUL PLIGHT. SQUIRE RIGGS RELENTS

Her poor father was so affected by this it made him ill and he never allowed her name to be mentioned in his hearing for many years. But there came a time when the poor daughter was in great trouble in London where she was left alone with her little Arabella, and expecting another child. This sad story melted the heart of her father and he at once set out for London and brought her home.

## THIRTY THREE CHILDREN BORN TO OGLE RIGGS AND HENRY RIGGS HIS SON—IN SPITE OF THIS BUT ONE MALE DESCENDANT BEARS THE NAME OF RIGGS TO-DAY

### THE SNUFFING OUT OF THE LINE

Out of six but three of my Grandfather's sons lived to maturity, the eldest of whom was a very talented young man; He was an M.D. and became so in London at the early age of 21 and being thought then too young to commence life as a medical man, he went on two voyages to the East Indies on a slave ship from Africa, faring terribly for the poor creatures.

### A DOUBLE FATALITY

### WILLIAM ALONE PERPETUATED THE NAME

The last trip landed him in Jamaca where he died at the age of 21 to the great grief of his parents, who had lost their three oldest sons under very sad circumstances.

Thomas about 14 with his next brother Henry about 12, were at a board-school several miles off. There was a river near and the boys were permitted to go with their teacher to bathe in it, and the older was drowned there while learning to swim. This affected the Mother so much that she could not consent to the other son remaining at the school, on account of the dangerous river and he was removed to another school in a different place. But he had not been there long when he died from eating the berries of the deadly night-shade.

RUINS OF HOLLIST HOUSE

It was a goodly pile by the size of the foundation. The farm building in the background is now called Hollist House and strangely enough is occupied by Mr. Odo Cross.

## RUINS OF HOLLIST

## LORD MONTAGUE ONCE OWNED THE OLD HOMESTEAD

## REVEREND BARTON'S SON WAS MURDERED

One of my aunts married a Presbyterian minister named Barton. One of his sons came to Canada, and I think once visited my dear Cousin McCallum. I don't know what became of him. Hollist House, near Eastbourne, is an interesting old ruin which is described in 'Picturesque Europe' Lord Montague was the owner and he was at the falls of Shaftsbury in Switzerland at the time the place was being newly repaired and fitted up for his approaching marriage with the sister of Sir Francis Burdett, a relation of the good Baroness of that name. The old Lady Montague was very fond of my mother and made her many valuable presents on her leaving England.

AUTHOR'S NOTE—See Mercy Cobbald's letter regarding young Barton. He was murdered by highwaymen whilst transferring a sum of money for his employers from one town to another.

## CUPID'S ARROW AIMED AWRY

My Grandfather Ogle Riggs was very anxious that his son Henry should marry a rich heiress of the neighborhood. But Henry had already formed an attachment to a young lady of whom his father did not approve because she was not possessed of the same golden attractions. But the son married her. She was a Miss Budden and bore the singular name of Sindenia.

Maria Abbott's Sketch continued

## THE AUTHOR'S GRANDFATHER ARRIVES IN THIS VALE OF TEARS

At 12 he migrates with his mother to Quebec at 20 years of age he goes to Gotham to Study Medicine

When Henry Goodman (the doctor) was born my grandfather at this time had a son William in the navy and it was through him that Mrs. Goodman came to Quebec and established a young ladies' boarding school in which she was very successful. She sent her son to London 'to walk the hospitals' and there to finish his medical studies; and in that city he lived many years until in 1832 he returned to Canada. The daughter was a beautiful girl and married early. She had many admirers who would have been glad to have married her. When a bride she was at a grand ball given by the Governor the Duke of Richmond, and he said she was the handsomest women he had seen since he left England. It was in 1813 that my father came to Canada. He was curate at Easbourne, and my mother was the ninth daughter, Mrs. Good man being one of the older ones (a strong attachment subsisted between those sisters.) When an opportunity occured he was appointed Rector of Cornwall. They were eleven weeks on the voyage to Quebec, and my father was very ill the whole time; so that on landing he determined "never again to go to sea."

This was a sad trial to my mother who expected (as my father at first did) to return to England at the expiration of ten years and she never got over her homesickness. I was then in my fourth year and distinctly remember many little things in England. After the sale of Hollist House to Lord Robert Spencer, whenever he came there he always sent presents of game to my grandfather. When my uncle William left the navy he spent several years in Nova Scotia and visited Canada and the States. This resulted finally in his buying a farm in Vermont where he died many years ago. One of his sons was in the Southern war (for which he has a pension) and I sometimes have letters from his wife. (Note— the late Mrs. Harriett Riggs, Holyoke Mass.)

## LORD SAY AND SELE

Thomas Budden, one of Sindenia (Budden) Rigg's brothers, was a merchant at Bristol, but was laterly unfortunate, and left his only daughter a girl of twenty quite unprovided for. She was a lovely and accomplished child, and preferring to be independent became governess in the family of Lord Hay, where she was much beloved and was treated (contrary to custom) as one of the family.

(Author's Note—See Mercy Cobbald's letter. Thomas Budden was a warm friend of the Riggs family.)

She remained with them for ten years when she married Lord Sageotale. (S-a-g-e-o-t-a-l-e) See author's note on this impossible name, evidently meant for 'Say and Sele'.)

This gentleman afterwards became an English clergyman. Not long ago I had an opportunity of making some enquiries about the family, and I am sorry to hear that his son who was to bear the title, was not the good man his father was.

## THE LITTLE VIRGINIAN CHEATED BY AN AGENT

I should add that after the arrival in England of the little girl from Virginia, her Uncle, the clergyman who adopted her, sent ont a person properly authorized to settle the estate which belonged to the child in Virginia, expecting him to return with the proceeds of the sale of the large property. But he did not do so and nothing more was ever heard of him or the property.

This sketch of our family is correct as I distinctly remember hearing my Aunt Goodman and my Mother speak of what I have written. Who will look up the property now and get it back for its rightful owners?

Maria Abbott

IN "OLD VIRGINEE"

"Elizabeth, This is my brother Thomas"

1680—The marriage of Michael Musgrave and Elizabeth Ball. The Rev. Thomas Musgrave had arrived overseas from England to be present at his brother's nuptials and the artist has depicted the moment when the introduction takes place and with such trueness that we can be pretty sure that Michael is saying "Elizabeth, this is my brother Thomas". The artist has also faithfully represented the dress of the period worn by those in the station of life of our kinsmen,—1680

## WHO WILL LOOK UP THE PROPERTY NOW AND GET IT BACK FOR IT'S RIGHTFUL OWNERS?

The appeal in the concluding lines of this communication initiated the authors research.

He based his investigation on the statements made in these memoirs. He revised and elaborated upon them, and now presents the result of his labors, a second enlarged edition of Maria Abbott's.

## SKETCH OF OUR FAMILY HISTORY

Michael Musgrave Married Elizabeth Ball; of their Children, the First Elizabeth Died, Our Elizabeth Lived. Records of Christs Church Parish Virginia Attested Stanard—Clerk.

Michael Musgrave and Elizabeth Ball, married April 30th 1680; Elizabeth daughter of Michael Musgrave baptized 23rd May 1688. Thomas ye son of Michael and Elizabeth Musgrave baptized 23rd May 1686. Elizabeth daughter of Michael and Elizabeth Musgrave born Augnst 18th 1693.

## MICHAEL'S MILITIARY QUALIFICATIONS.

In the military census of 1687 the name of Michael Musgrave appears among those able to find themselves in arms and serve in the militia as foot soldiers.

## THE PROPERTY IS LOOKED UP

(See Maria Abbott's Letter)

## ORIGINAL LAND GRANT TO MICHAEL MUSGRAVE

"MUSGRAVE"

I, Francis Nicholson, Esquire, Lt. Governor give and grant unto Michael Musgrave five hundred acres of land being in Middlesex county according to the most ancient and lawful bounds thereof, which said land was formerly granted unto Mr. Thomas Borne, viz: of two patents, of one bearing date ye 20th December 1649, for 250 acres, the other bearing date ye 16th September, 1651 for the remainder, and was lately found escheated to ye county 17 May 1690, and it is since granted to ye said Michael Musgrave who hath made composition according to law and is so recorded and dated 28 April 1691. Book 8 page 162.

## MICHAEL MUSGRAVE'S WILL—1697

Michael had been 17 years in Virginia from his Marriage 1680 to his death 1697

Of the Musgrave Family Elizabeth Alone Remained—The Little Orphans Sad Plight

In the name of God Amen, I, Michael Musgrave, of the Parish of Pietank (?) on the River Rappahannock, in the county of Middlesex, Virginia, being in very good health, perfect memory and understanding, praised be Almighty God for the same, considering with myself the frailty of human life, and that all flesh must yield to death, but the time thereof being very uncertain, do thereof whilst I do continue in my perfect memory and understanding and to avoid controversy that may otherwise after my decease arise, constitute ordain and appoint these presents to be my true last will and testament viz: Imprimus I recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God my Saviour and Redeemer, to be raised at the general day of resurrection and to be received into his Heavenly Mansion where there is fullness of joy and bliss for ever, Amen.

As to my worldy estate I dispose of it as follows viz.: I do order and appoint that my just debts be first paid and satisfied and if there be any overplus do give and bequeath the same unto my daughter Elizabeth Musgrave who troubles me to think what poor condition she is here in England leaving her in the City of London in the house of John Holmes, Plum Street Court, near Holbourne Ridge in the Parish of St. Andrew, there to be nursed taught and brought up and shall while I am in this present world use my utmost diligence in maintaining my oversaid child whilst I have life and in case I die whilst going over the sea to Virginia or do any otherwise than well I desire, my over-

said daughter Elizabeth may be possessed with all my worldy estate both real and personal, both in Virginia and elsewhere after all my lawful debts are fully satisfied, being able to do little more for her in this present world leaving her to the care and protection of that God with whom I shall shortly be. And lastly I do make, ordain, appoint and constitute my dear and loving brother Mr. Thomas Musgrave, Minister of Woolbeding in the county of Sussex, near the Town of Midhurst; and my well beloved friend Mr. Will Newton, grocer, situated in the parish of St. Giles Cripple Gate, full and sole executors of this my last will and testament, not doubting in the least, but that, as they have been extraordinary kind to me and mine whilst I am here living that they will prove otherwise to my dear child after my decease.

And further I do annul, frustrate and make void all former wills made by me, these presents only being my last will and testament.

In witness thereof I hereto set my hand and seal this one and twenty day of December, one thousand six hundred and ninety seven.

Michael Musgrave for and as his last will and testament. In the presence of Edmond Tilly, Michael Pitman and Sam Tibby. Proved 26th January 1698 by Thomas Musgrave, Executive power to make a like grant to Will Newton.
(Copied at Somerset House through the kindness of Hy Rigg Feb. 15, 1905)

(See Maria Abbott's Letter—They appointed an agent and expected him to return with the proceeds of the sale but they never heard of him or the property again")

Elizabeth's uncle appoints James Jennings of Hampton Virginia, Agent, to look after her Virginia Estate, situate at Stove Point Divident on the Rhappahannock River (not James River) as stated.

## POWER OF ATTORNEY TO JENNINGS, DATED JANUARY 3RD 1698, ONE YEAR AFTER MICHAEL'S DECEASE - FULL TEXT

Know all men of these presents, that I, Thomas Musgrave, Clerk Minister of Woolbeding in the County of Sussex, the brother, and the executor of the last will and testament of Michael Musgrave, late of the Parish of Piantatank on the Rhappahannock River in the County of Middlesex, Virginia; but dying in the Parish of St. Sepulcher, London, has made, ordained, constituted and appointed and for divers good causes and considerations him thereunto especially moving do make, constitute and appoint and in my stead depute Mr. Charles Jennings, Gent. of Hampton Town in James River, in Virginia, my true and lawful attorney irrevocable for the execution of the last will and testament of my said brother Michael Musgrave deceased, and in my name to ask demand and require sue for render and receive all such debts, sum. and sums of money, rents, yearly payments, merchandise, goods chattels, money due, and to be due, on any bill or otherwise, and other demands whatsoever which now are, or hereafter will be due and payable to me as executor under the will of my said brother deceased, from any persons whatsoever and wheresoever in Virginia

and for default of any payment of any rent which now is or hereafter may become due unto me as an executor of my said brother's will to enter into all or any of the said messuages lands tenements, hereditaments lying in Virginia, aforesaid and late belonging to my brother Michael Musgrave deceased and to contract for, let, set, bargain and to sell any or all of the said messuage lands, tenements and hereditaments, goods or chattels whatsoever, late belonging to my said brother deceased for a term of years or otherwise as he shall well fitt, and to sue or plead or make answer, prosecute, or defend, in any court of law or equity, or before any Judge or Judges or other person or persons in any suit, matter or cause, for me or against me as executor of the will of the said deceased brother as the case shall require, giving and by these presents granting to my said attorney my full power and lawful authority in the execution and performance of all and singular, the premises or to make any composition or agreement for or concerning the premises and to make, seal or deliver any discharge or acquittance for me in my name as executor of the said Michael Musgrave my brother deceased as shall be requisite and to do, determine and execute all, any, every, such further and other lawful and reasonable act and acts, device and devices, whatsoever, which in and about the premises shall to my said attorney seem fit to be done, as fully and amply as I myself might, or could do, if personally present, ratifying, confirming and allowing whatsoever my said attorney shall do or cause to be done in my name.

By virtue hereof, in witness whereof, I the said Thomas Musgrave, have hereunto set my hand and seal this 23rd day of January in the year of our Lord 1697 and 98.

Signed sealed and delivered in the presence of John Page and William Wilson

Thomas Musgrave Seal

At a Court held for Elizabeth County ye 18th of July 1698, Major William Wilson then made oath that he saw the above named Thomas Musgrave sign, seal and deliver the above letter of attorney as his act and deed.

Chas. Jennings, Clerk

In 1702 more land was granted Elizabeth Musgrave. The land act allows 50 acres per head of each family; servants counting as heads. Thus Michael's estate was awarded 148 more acres on account of his bringing over with him these three servants.

"MUSGRAVE"

Know all ye men, that I, Francis Nicholson, Governor etc., do with the advice and consent of ye council of state, accordingly give and grant unto Elizabeth Musgrove, daughter of Michael Musgrove, (note incorrect spelling) deceased, 368 acres of land situate and lying in Middlesex county, being granted formerly to Michael Musgrove by patent, dated 28th of April 1691, and 148 acres the residue being overplus land within ye ancient bounds of ye said patent and due by and for the transportation of three persons into this colony

viz.; John Head, Mary Grant and Roger Jones (evidently servants of Michael's) Given this,25th of April 1702.

Elizabeth Musgrove her patent for 368 acres of land in Middlesex county, signed E. Jennings, book-page 485. Abstracted from the original books of the land grants of the Colony of Virginia, Richmond, Dec. 27th 1907.

Two years after this second land grant Richard Stevens bought the property. The deed is dated January 20th 1704. The sale being subject to the signature of Elizabeth Musgrave at her majority. She was then 11. Elizabeth got for her broad acres seventy pounds sterling. The estate then comprised 516 acres, almost a square mile, showing there had been ten persons, including white servants in the family at the time the land was granted.

## AND THE AGENT WAS NEVER HEARD OF AGAIN

(See Maria Abbott's Letter)

This man Jennings seems to have connived to cheat the little Virginian. Undoubtedly the agent laid waste the estate, which would appear to have been a flourishing tobacco plantation run by black slaves. Be that as it may, convincing evidence was produced to move Reverend Thomas Musgrave to cancel the Power of Attorney to Jennings and appoint one Richard Stevens then in London, in his stead, pending the sale of the property to the said Stevens.

### Full Text of Power of Attorney

Know all ye men by these presents, that I, Thomas Musgrave, clerk of Woolbeding in the county of Sussex executor of the last will of Michael Musgrave, late of Virginia, deceased, and guardian of his daughter Elizabeth having made, ordained, constituted and appointed and by these present do make ordain, constitute and appoint Richard Stevens of Virginia Planter, at present in London, my true and lawful attorney for me and in my name and for me sue, to ask demand and receive of, and from all, and every person or persons concerned, in Virginia aforesaid, and particularly of and from Chas. Jennings and John Laudiford or either of them, their or either of their heirs executors, administrators or assigns or any other all such monies, rents, rights, dues and demands, whatsoever which were due to my said late brother at ye time of his decease which are since become, part, parcel and member of his estate and upon non payment thereof of the said person or persons his or their executors or adms. for me and in my name to sue arrest imprison, implead, and present for the same and upon such suit to proceed to judgment and execution thereupon the said person or persons his or their executors or adms. in prison, to hold or to keep until payment thereof be made with all costs and damages sustained and to be sustained by occasion of detaining the same and upon payment thereof, the said person or persons, his or their executors or adms. forth of prison to discharge and acquittance of the same or any part thereof, for me and in my name to make seal and deliver, and also to and do perform and execute all and every other lawful and reasonable act and thing, both for claiming and discharg-

ing of the same as shall be needful to be done; giving and by these presents granting with my said attorney my full aud absolute power in the premises, satisfying and holding firm all and whatsoever my said attorney shall lawfully do or cause to be done in or about ye premises by virtue of these presents. In witness thereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal, the twenty ninth day of January of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lady Anne, by the Grace of God of England and Scotland, France and Ireland, Queen Defender of the Faith, etc.

Anno Domini 1704.

THOMAS MUSGRAVE

Signed sealed and delivered Seal

in the presence of John Hooker W. Smyth, Notary Pub.

At a court held for Middlesex County the third date of Sept. 1705 upon the motion of Richards Stevens the within written letter of attorney was admitted to record.

Teste

Will Stanard, Clerk

A copy Teste F. M. Eastman, Clerk.

## AGREEMENT OF SALE APPARENTLY EXECUTED AT THE SAME TIME

### FULL TEXT

Articles of agreement indented, had, made and concluded and fully agreed upon the nine and twentieth day of January, anno dom. 1704; and in the third year of the reign of our Soverign Lady Ann, by the Grace of God, Queen of England, Scotland, Ireland and France, and Defender of the Faith, Etc.. Between Thomas Musgrave of Woolbeding, in the County of Susssex, Clerk, surviving executor of ye last will and testament of Michael Musgrave, late of the Parish of Christ Church, Middlesex County, Virginia, Gentleman, deceased for and on behalf of Elizabeth Musgrave, a minor, sole daughter and heiress of the said Michael Musgrave, of the one part, and Richard Stevens of the said parish of Christ Church in Middlesex County, aforesaid in Virginia, aforesaid Gent. of the other part, in manner and form following (that is to say) whereas, the said Michael Musgrave died siezed in fee simple in his own right and to his own use of and in all these tracts or dividents of land situate lying and being in Christ Church Parish in Middlesex County in Virginia being bounded between Peanteatank and Barbeeque Creek on Rapphannock River both of them in the said County of Middlesex in Virginia aforesaid and commonly called or known by the name Stove Point Divident.

And whereas by the death of the said Michael Musgrave the premises are descended and come unto the said Elizabeth Musgrave his only daughter and heiress of which said Elizabeth the said Thomas Musgrave by the constitution of the said will is executory guardian.

Now know all men by these presents that for and in consideration of the sum of Seventy Pounds of lawful money of England to ye said Thomas Musgrave in hand and before the sealing and delivering of these presents by ye said Richard Stevens well and truly paid to the use and behoof of the said Elizabeth Mnsgrave, being the full consideration money agreed upon between ye said Thomas Musgrave and Richard Stevens for the purchase of the premises hereinbefore and hereinafter mentioned the receipt whereof the said Thomas Musgrave doth hereby acknowledge he the said Thomas Musgrave has covenanted and agreed and by these presents doth, for and on behalf of the said Elizabeth Musgrave, her heirs executors or adms. and for himself his heirs administors and executors covenent and agree to and with the said Richard Stevens, his heirs, executors adms. and assigns by these presents and manner and form following:

That is to say that the said Elizabeth Musgrave when and as soon as she shall attain the full age of twenty one years or in case of her death before said age of one and twenty years, her heirs and assigns shall and will at the cost and charges of the said Richard Stevens his heirs and assigns sign seal and duly execute unto or to the use of the said Richard Stevens his heirs and assigns at the South Port or entrance of the Royal Exchange London, a good and sufficient conveyance of all these, the said tracts or dividents of lands, situate, lyiug or being, in Christ Church Parish, in Middlesex, Virginia, in parts beyond the seas being bounded between Peanteatank River and Barbeeque Creek on Rapphannock River, both of them in the said county of Middlesex, in Virginia, aforesaid, and commonly called or known as Stove Point Divident, whatsoever said tract of lands now are or are computed to be or in whose possession or occupation the same or any part thereof now or howsoever the same premises or any part thereof are mentioned set forth or described in any grant or patent thereof or any evidences or writings relating thereunto together with all and every the same grants evidences and writings so far as the same can be had without suit in law and all erections, buildings and improvements now erected, builded, standing and being or which shall be in or upon the premises with their every of their appurtenances, to have and to hold to said Richard Stevens, his heirs and assigns to his and their use and behoof as by the said Richard Stevens, his heirs and assigns or his or their counsel learned in the laws shall be reasonably devised or advised and required.

Item:—The said Thomas Musgrave doth further covenent and agree that at the time of said intended conveyance, the premises so intended to be conveyed, shall be free and clear of all former sales, charges and incumbrances, done or to be done, committed or suffered by ye said Elizabeth Musgrave, her heirs assigns or any person or persons claiming or to claim by, from or under her or them in any manner or wise and morever, that until such conveyance shall be made and perfected as aforesaid it shall, and may be lawful, to and for the said Richard Stevens, his heirs and assigns, peaceably and quietly, to enter into, have, hold and occupy, possess, and enjoy the premises with the appurtenances so intended to be conveyed as aforesaid, and every part, and

parcel thereof, and to receive, have, and to take the rents issue profits and improvements, to his and their own use, and uses with the Lawful Lett Suit Trouble eviction or interruption, of or by the said Elizabeth Musgrave her heirs and assigns, or of, or by any other person or persons, lawfully claiming, or to claim, by, from or under, her or them in any manner or wise.

And to the true performance of these presents, the said Thomas Musgrave, doth hereby bind himself, his heirs, executors and adms. and assigns, in the sum or penalty of five hundred pounds sterling.

In witness whereof, the parties, first above named, hereto the present article or agreement, indented and interchangable, set their hands and seals, dated the day and year first above written, sealed and delivered being first duly stamped in the presence of Robert Moulins, Jr. in Southbury London.
Charles Adams

Thomas Musgrave

W. Smythe, Notary Locus

Egendi

John Hooker, servant at the Royal Exchange

Received the day and year within written of and from the within named Richard Stevens the sum of Seventy Pounds, 70 pounds of lawful money of England being so much within mentioned to be paid in hand as the consideration of the within mentioned purchase. I say recd.

Thomas Musgrave

W. (Attestor) Smyth Seal

The foregoing copy agrees verbatim with the original to which I was a witness this after due examination thereof with the same original, I attest under notarial turin and seal accustomed in London this 25th day of April, 1705.

John Hooker W. Smyth, Not. Pub.

Here follows the record of the writing mentioned in order of Court, 5th June, 1744; which is a transfer of the above copied agreement by Richard Stevens, son of the above named grantee to John Grymes for the consideration of sixty pounds sterling, the above mentioned tract of land known as Stove Point Divident.

I have carefully read said transfer; it contains nothing which throws any additional light upon the transaction.

Copy of agreement Teste

F. M. Eastman, clerk, 1904

## THE LATE F. M. EASTMAN EXPLAINS

### The Pioneer Clerk in Virginia Volunteers His Views

In referring to these documents, the late F. M. Eastman, then clerk of Middlesex County, Va., who attested the copies, wrote: I draw the following conclusions: Michael Musgrave, had returned to England sometime prior to 1697 and died there.

Thomas Musgrave, executor and guardian of Elizabeth, did not wish to come to America to look after his brothers property, so he gave power of attorney to Charles Jennings, the clerk of Elizabeth County, and he in turn not wishing to come to Middlesex County substituted John Laudiford in his place.

Jennings and Laudiford made way with the personal property, and declined or neglected, to give an accounting to Thomas Musgrave. Richard Stevens was in London about this time and Thomas Musgrave related his troubles to him, and gave Stevens a power of attorney to save what he could from Jennings and Laudiford at the same time, he, Stevens entered into an agreement to purchase the said land, the power of attorney being more simple was given to prevent delays. The manner of the sale viewed in the light of legal transfers of to-day was a singular proceeding.

The records do not show that Elizabeth gave a deed on arriving at the age of twenty-one. No doubt she did not give such a deed.

At least her guardian seems to have received the money for the estate 70 pounds, whether this was a fair price then it is difficult to determine.

(Author—No doubt it was, as 40 years afterwards it was sold for less money.)

This is the story of the stolen property. Evidently arising from the fact that the first agent disappeared after laying waste to it. It was not lost but sold for what seems to-day a paltry sum.

The nomenclature of land tracts is changed in Virginia. No one in Virginia to-day has ever heard of Stove Point Divident.

The value of land on the Rapphannock now is $100 an acre. Values have risen slowly in the tobacco state.

The present valuation of Elizabeth's estate would be about $50,000 in the open market if kept intact.

The plantation was near where Washington visited his Mother on the Rapphannock a hundred years after Michael's time.

Arms of John Ball the Puritan 1640, who was ancestor of Elizabeth Ball

## BALL

## MICHAEL MUSGRAVE MARRIED ELIZABETH BALL

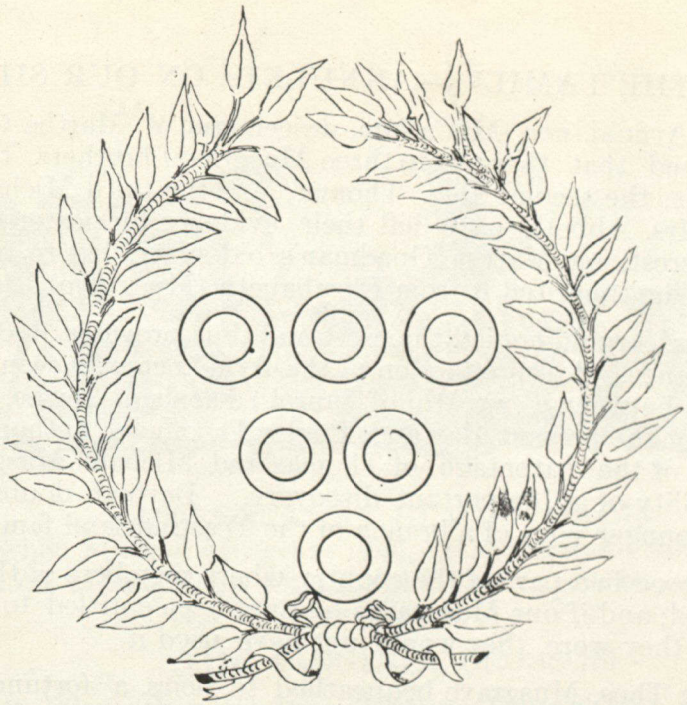
### Elizabeth Ball's Ancestor — Ball the Puritan

George H. Ball, a so-called Washington-Ball, descendant, wrote to the author. The descendants of John Ball an Oxford Puritan of distinction, came to America, both sons and grandsons in 1640, settling in New England, Rhode Island, New Jersey, Pennsylvania and Virginia. Travellers when abroad by the name of Ball actually recognized each other without acquaintance, so strong was the resemblance, and thus becoming acquainted they corresponded and visited each other. Besides the physical similarity they were also mentally alike, and had the same religious convictions.

Miss Hall a Ball Genealogist also wrote:

Elizabeth Ball was a daughter no doubt of one of the four brothers who came from England. One of the brothers being the ancestor of Mother Brackenridge, heroine of the Civil War. Another brother, the ancestor of George Washington's Mother, Mary Ball; and another brother the ancestor of Elizabeth Ball the wife of Michael Riggs. A great many remarkably interesting letters were received from the descendants of Col. William Ball, Washington's ancestor; and a thorough search was made in an endeavor to prove our Elizabeth in their line. This was in vain. All acknowledged her however as kin.

Of the scores of letters received, correspondents pointed to one fact, that there had been a large migration of Balls, all of the same part of England and all related. Some years before Elizabeth Ball was married to Michael Riggs and undoubtedly she was a descendant of one of these immigrants who were all kin.



OUR MUSGRAVE CREST

Annulets in a wreath of laurel copied from a sketch made by Mrs. Arnold grand-daughter of Martha Goodman from the original on the crest of the Musgrave silver once in possession of Elizabeth Musgrave Riggs and willed to Martha Goodman.

## IN THE NAME OF MUSGRAVE

Percy Musgrave, descendant of the ancient Westmorland family of that name writes : The earliest ancestor known came over with William the Conqueror, the name being spelt "Musegros" on the Roll of Battle Abbey. There is a legend as to how an ancestor of his obtained the crest by tilting at a ring (annulet, and thus the annulet on our crest) at the court of the Emperor of Austria. I think that there is no doubt that the family originally settled in Westmorland whence the different branches have spread.

## FAMOUS AUTHORITIES

Camden, Briton's great historian and Garter King-of-Arms, wrote in 1607, 'The Musgrave family were called after the town of that name.' In 1693 Thomas Mackle in revising Camden's Westmoreland records has this to say after speaking of the Ancient Castle on Eden River (rebuilt and called Eden Hall) by the Musgraves and immortalized by Tennyson's Luck of Eden Hall. "I differ from our author (Camden), The towns took their name from the Musgraves and not visa versa. The name rather arises from British Offices under the Crown civil or military honors. The German Markgraff is now turned to Marquis. So Musgrave or Mosgrave meant Lord Warden of the Marshes.

It is no compliment to this honorable family to foist the name into one or two copies of the Battle Abbey roll, they having enough of the true Old English honor and do not need to borrow any lustre from the Normans."

## A TITLE IN THE FAMILY — ANNULETS ON OUR SILVER

The late Mrs Arnold, nee McCallum, descendant of Martha Goodman, steadfastly maintained that there were three Musgrave brothers, the eldest being Lord Musgrave, the second Rev. Thomas, and the third Michael. Mrs. Arnold as well as Mrs. Abbott, have left their evidence for posterity. They saw our Musgrave crest, on Martha Goodman's old silver, left to her by her father and mother, who inherited it from Elizababeth (Musgrave) Riggs.

Fortunately Mrs. Arnold copied the crest and thus provides documentary evidence of its existance. A reproduction of the Arnold copy is seen in these memoirs (Annulets between a wreath of laurel.) Farnham Burke, the most famous genealogist of the present day and England's official authority, twice urged investigation of the parentage of Thomas and Michael Musgrave and hinted at the possibility of an important discovery. Beyond doubt Michael and Thomas were younger sons of a branch of the Westmorland family.

Our crest was used in a part of the country where members of the ancient Musgraves flourished; and if our Musgraves had not been entitled to it, proud and pious people as they were, they would not have used it.

The money that Thos. Musgrave bequeathed to heirs, a fortune of great size in those days, was inherited, not made.

The Rev. Thomas had but his stipend as clergyman, and as Prebendary of Chichester his income could not have been large. Michael Musgrave who is said to have travelled to Virginia with Lord Percy, (one of the most ancient of English aristocratic families) and who is styled Gentleman in the deed of land, certainly made nothing out of his tobacco plantation and his danghter is styled heiress. They could not have been of an obscure family and Thomas at least must have been originally well provided for by his parents. The family history handed down relates that Michael left Elizabeth 10,000 pounds. I am unable to prove this as the will simply states that he bequeaths all he possesses to her.

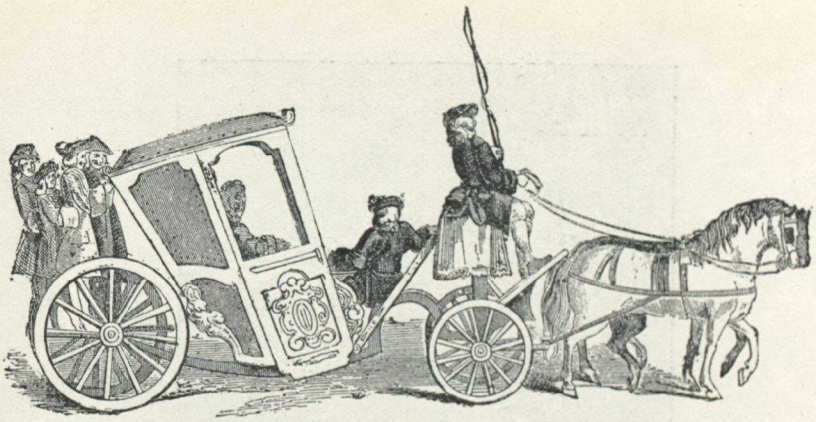
## THE REVERAND THOMAS MUSGRAVE — OXFORD GRADUATE

In Foster's Oxford matriculates, occur these words: Thomas Musgrave was B. A. from Clare Hall Cambridge 1661-1662 and M. A. 1665, incorporated at Oxford 1669, perhaps the Rector of Woolbeding Sussex 1685.

Note—Thomas Musgrave, brother of Michael was certainly Rector from 1670 to 1685.

Copy of a letter received by the author:

"Clare Hall Cambridge, Dear Sir:—In answer to your letter of August 8th, 1904, I am sorry to say we have no means whatever of discovering who were the parents of Thomas Musgrave, whom you mention. The notice of admission in our register of admission states: Anno 1657, July 30th, Thomas Musgrave, Sizar, pupil to Mr. Newns. Yours faithfully, E. Atkins, Master Clare Hall.

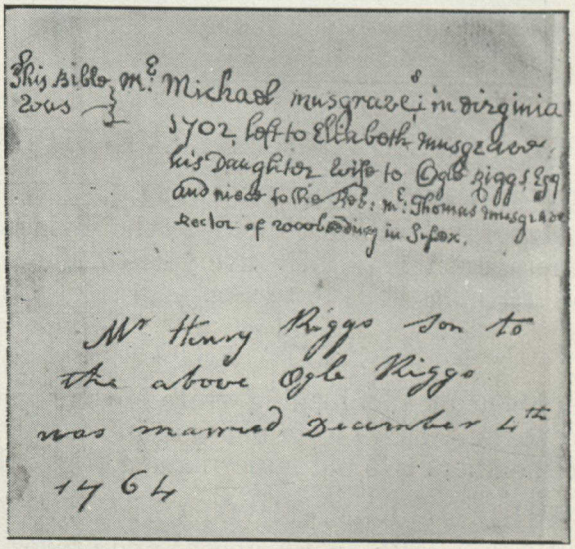


QUEEN ANNE STAGE COACH

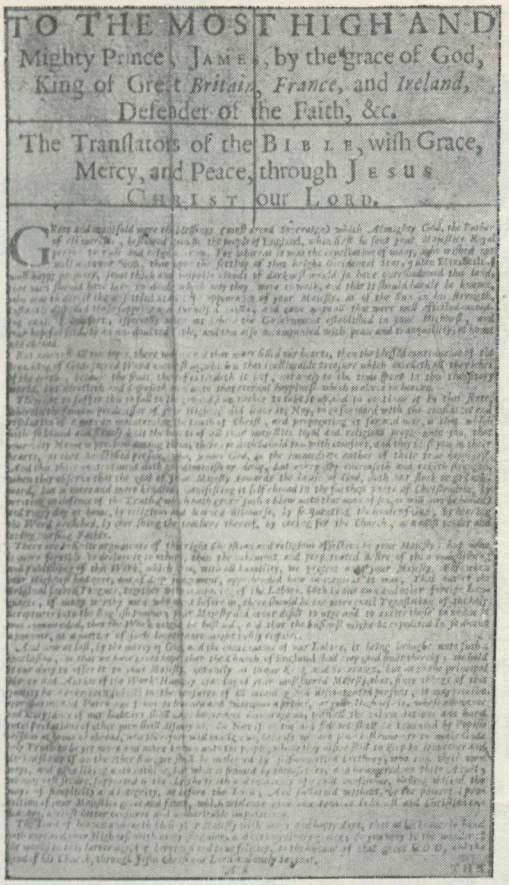
1702—So when Michael Musgrave died, little Elizabeth the orphan was carried off to Chichester from London by her rich bachelor Uncle Rev. Thomas Musgrave.—1702

## THE VIRGINIA BLOSSOM

We left Elizabeth with John Holmes, Plum Street London, where her uncle arrived and carried her off ninety miles by stage coach to Woolbeding. Here she received a gentle bringing up by her Bachelor Uncle, was educated and prepared for her destiny. She grew to womanhood and married and seventeen children called her mother, so the little Virginia Blossom became a fruitful Vine.




Among the possessions of Elizabeth was an ancient King James Bible published in the seventeenth century, photographs of the initial leaves are here produced. Here is the writing of Elizabeth herself in ye old English style which records that the bible was left to her in 1702,



TO THE MOST HIGH AND
Mighty Prince, JAMES, by the grace of God,
King of Great *Britain*, *France*, and *Ireland*,
Defender of the Faith, &c.

The Translators of the BIBLE, wish Grace,
Mercy, and Peace,
through JESUS
CHRIST our LORD.

TITLE PAGE OF "MUSGRAVE BIBLE"

## LETTER FROM ARCHDEACON ELWES

Rev. Thomas Musgrave was instituted to the living of Woolbeding in 1670 and preached here until 1725, fifty five years. There is some evidence of his having presented treble bells to the cathedral of Chichester where he was prebendary.

## SIC VITA EST

In 1903 the incumbent of Woolbeding wrote No one by the name of Riggs lives here or in these parts. There is an old man in Easburn who says that many years ago he remembers two old ladies named Riggs there.

## THE WILL OF REV. THOMAS MUSGRAVE

It bestows bountifully wealth on Elizabeth, and proves that Thomas Musgrave donated the Bells

1725—Will of Thomas Musgrave of Woolbeding Co. Sussex, clerk, dated 14th June 1725. To be buried at the discretion of Executrix. To niece Elizabeth Riggs, wife of Ogle Riggs, the younger of the parish of Easeborne, said county of Sussex, Gent. for the term of her natural life and from and after

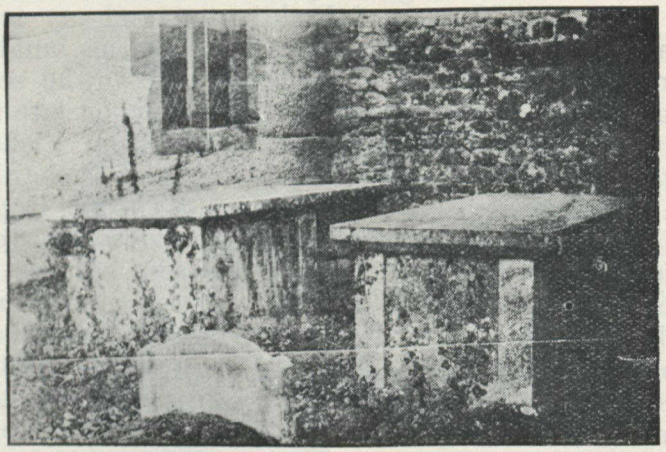
her decease to her son Thomas Riggs, my godson, and his heirs forever, all that my Mannor or reputed Mannor of Buddington and my messuage, tenement or farm commonly called Buddington with the barns, buildings, gardens, orchards, lands, meadows, pastures floodings &c., &c., in the several parishes of Easeborne, Bigenor and Farnhurst, co., Sussex, now or late in the occupation of one George Chalcroft, lately purchased from Richard Coldham, gent, and all other Manors &c. purchased from said Richard Coldham, to have and to hold to said niece Elizabeth Riggs, and Thomas Riggs her son (as above). To said niece Elizabeth Riggs and her assigns for ever, farm called Barnham Farm in the parish of Barnham, Co. Sussex, subject to payment of several legacies hereafter mentioned. To the Corporation of Clergyman's sons, £100 pounds to be paid six months after my decease. Towards the augmentation of the poor Vicarage of Barnham £100 provided £100 more be procured for the same purpose within four years &c. To the Cathedral Church of Chichester £100 out of which two Bells are to be bought and added to those already in Raymond's Tower. To my nephew, Robert Allwyn and Mary his wife £10 apiece to buy mourning. To William Allwyn, Mary Allwyn, Elizabeth Allwyn and Robert Allwyn, sons and daughters of said nephew, Robert Allwyn, £50 apiece at their ages of 21 provided they be educated and brought up in the Church of England, but not otherwise. To said godson, Thomas Riggs and to my cousins Elizabeth Riggs, Mary Riggs Martha Riggs and Anne Riggs, children of said niece, Elizabeth Riggs, £100 apiece at age of twenty-one or marriage, all to be paid by said niece Elizabeth Riggs out of the Farm at Barnham, said niece to pay off all money owing from that (Farm) Buddington Mannor and farm to be freed from liability &c. To cousin John Harper of Hungerford Market, a debt of £25 which he borrowed. To Elizabeth, wife of Charles Adams of Midhurst £40 for various goods &c. To their son Chas. Adams £10 at age of 21. To Mrs. Honourdean five guineas for goods &c. To Dr. Nash my Calash or Shaies lately given me by Richard Cowper. Executrix to pay £20 to poor housekeepers one year after my decease. Rest and residue of goods, chattels, money and personal estate to said niece Elizabeth Riggs, whom I make sole Executrix. Appoints loving friends Rev. Mr. Joseph Jackson, Rector of Branshott, Co. Southampton, and John Tanner of Haslemere, Co. Surrey, Gent., to be Overseers; and gives them each £5 two years after my decease. Signed 14th June, 11 Geo. (1725) Tho. Musgrave. Witnesses John Stout, Holt, Jo Wickford, junr. Proved 3rd December 1725 by Elizabeth Riggs, wife of Ogle Riggs, junior, the Executrix.

(The above Abstract Will was procured at Somerest House by me on the 15th February 1905. H. Riggs.)

## THE LITTLE VIRGINIAN'S GRAVE

In Woolbeding Churchyard, near the East Chancel beneath a great grey granite slab, Elizabeth lies. Her day is done but her descendants live on to cherish her memory.

How strange it is that for two hundred years she has been remembered as a child. Her romatic career having idealized her. Thus to those who come after her she will ever be 'The Little Virginian. Besides Elizabeth's grave is another slab of granite and a smaller stone near by. The inscriptions are almost obliterated by the erasions of time.



## INSCRIPTIONS ON TWO TOMBSTONES IN WOOLBEDING CHURCHYARD NEAR THE SOUTH WALL OF CHANCEL

---

### FIRST TOMB

Here lyeth the body of Thomas Musgrave Rector of this Parish and Prebendory of Chichester, who died September 15th, 1725.

### SECOND TOMB

Here lyeth the body of Elizabeth, wife of Ogle Riggs of Hollist in the parish of Easbourne in the County of Sussex, Eng. She was daughter of Michael Musgrave of the parish of Christ Church in Virginia; who was brother of the Rev. Mr. Thomas Musgrave, Rector of this place She departed this life the 23rd. day of January 1762 aged 62.

### SECOND TOMB

Here also lyeth the body of Ogle Riggs. late of Hollist in the parish of Easburne, in the County of Sussex, Esqr. who departed this life the 5th day of December, 1776, aged 79.

### UPRIGHT STONES

Also Mercy, daughter of the above Ogle and Elizabeth Riggs who departed this life the 18th day of October, 1772, age 45. Also Ogle son of Ogle and Elizabeth Riggs who departed this life the 5th day of Feb. 1773, age 37.

Sir Anthony Musgrave whom Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin claimed as a relation; the same claim was made by Maria Abbott and Janet Scott. He was Governor of Jamaica 1869-71 — Governor of the then crown colony of British Columbia.

## GOVERNOR MUSGRAVE OF JAMAICA KIN

Letter from Janet Scott, Grandaughter of Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin

'This is what my Grandfather Mr. Baldwin told me about the Musgrave family. Lord Musgrave was Governor of Jamaica the year of the London plague. His wife died there. They had one little daughter, Lady Isobel Musgrave Lord Musgrave was just about leaving for England with his wife's remains when he was taken ill with fever and died. The private secretary took the bodies to England, also the Little Lady Isobel and her black nurse. Owing to the plague in London she was driven through the city with a cloth wet with vinegar then the only disenfectant known) tied over her face. She afterwards married her cousin, also a Lord Musgrave; and when my sister, Mrs. Holwell went to Jamaica a bride in 1875, my aunt Mrs. Abbott, Mother's oldest sister knew that the Governor of Jamaica of that day was a Lord Musgrave, a descendant of the Lady Isobel. Mrs. Abbott wrote to him saying that a young bride, a distant relation of his and a descendant of his family had left Montreal to live in Jamaca, and telling him the family she had married into, the fourth son of Major General Howell whose regiment had been stationed in Jamaica for 25 years. My sister Isobel was named after this Lady Isobel Musgrave.'

## ANTHONY MUSGRAVE

A letter from Anthony Musgrave, who was a descendant of the Governor Musgrave spoken of by Miss Scott, lives in Queensland. He wrote the author that Thomas and Michael may have been of his line, he has not the family record complete. He states that there was a Lady Isobel and she did marry her cousin, and christain names in Mrs. Scott's letter are correct. His crest as well as the crest of Percy Musgrave, another branch of the Westmoreland family is similar to ours.

The fact that the young medical man Michael Musgrave made two trips to Jamaca (See Maria Abbott's sketck) may bear upon this subject.

## WHO WAS OGLE RIGGS? WHO MARRIED ELIZABETH MUSGRAVE?

To-day in Woolbeding, Sussex, grave stones mark the passing of three generations of Riggs.

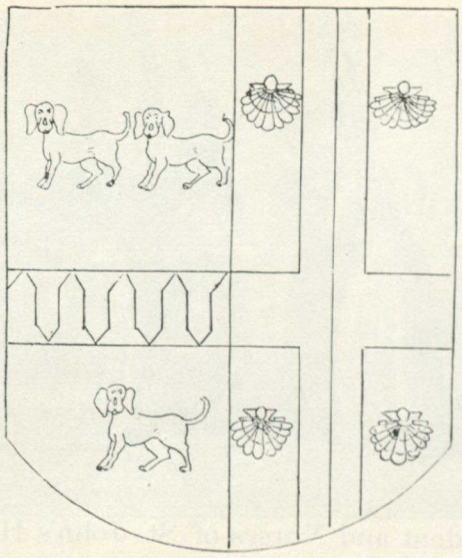
Still further back on the musty tombs in Hampshire were found the names of this illustrious race and it was in the ancient city of Winton (Winchester the White City) in the shadowed nave of the old Cathedral, the author located the memorial slab and coat of arms of the Famous Cromwellian Commoner Ralph Riggs.

And there on the marble was recorded the names of his children and these children were our kinsmen. All was plain then and among these names was Ogle Riggs the father of that Ogle who married Elizabeth Musgrave.

And so the Riggs were traced still further back through the intricate winding of this their mortal career, and link by link was forged a perfect chain from Edward Rigge of God's House Southampton England in 1475 to George Riggs of Port Orchard, California, United States of America, 1914. The only male Riggs left alive.

RIGGS ARMS ON A TOMBSTONE IN WINCHESTER CATHEDRAL

Before this place lyes buried with many of his ancestors Ralph Riggs, Esq. born in this parish. Three times Mayor of Winton who died the 8th of May 1647. In memory of whom Thomas, Edmund, Ogle and Elizabeth, his children have erected this monument. The Riggs Coat of Arms is carved on the tomb. A fesse vair between three talbots Cress Talbot holding bird dart. These are quartered with the Arms of his wife Mary (Johnson) Riggs. Copied for these memoirs by Alderman Jacobs of Winchester from a pencil rubbing from the tomb.



This print was traced on glass by the author from the actual pencil rubbing of the plate on the tomb (size 4 x 5 inches) done by Alderman Jacob for these memoirs (thus the defects in the drawing).

## IN THE NAME OF RIGGS

No doubt the name was originally spelt R-I-D-G-E and referred to a ridge of land from which the first of the race took his name. Elizabeth Riggs in 1612 called herself Elizabeth de Rigg, or (Ridge), (Eliza of the Ridge) the name being spelled so in her will. Miss Egerton great grand-daughter of Martha (Riggs) Goodman states that the name was originally Dallen-Riggs and it was always so understood in the family. No trace of the double name can however be found.

The frequent occurrence of the christian name Ogle has puzzled genealogists. It was used in five families evidently for some good reason. Its significance to us is problematical.

## THE RIGGS—THE OGLES AND THE TALBOTS

Three Talbots were shown on the ancient Riggs Arms, and one Talbot on the crest. This fact read together with the statement that Joan Ogle, Baronette married Edward Talbot, son of the Earl of Shrewsbury, both very old families, suggests the possibility that a descendant of that union married into the Riggs family and thus the name and the dogs.

## EDWARD RIGGE, WARDEN OF GOD'S HOUSE, SOUTH HAMPTON, HAMPSHIRE. FIRST GENERATION.

The first of the name mentioned by Davies in his 'Southampton' was Edward Rigge who was born about 1475. He was Provost and Warden of God's House (St. John's Hospital) Southampton in the 23rd. year of Henry VI. that is in 1508. Davies says Edward Rigge was of the same family as the Southampton Riggs of the fifteenth and sixteenth century. He was undoubtedly the first Southampton settler of that name, the founder of that line and the father of Thomas Riggs—who spelt his name in four different ways.



*NOTE.—See middle of first paragraph, sentence should read; Miss Egerton grandchild of Mrs. Baldwin, sister of Martha (Riggs) Goodman.*

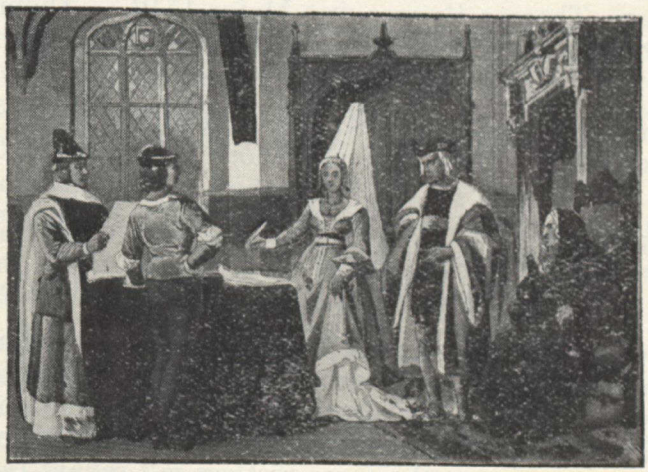
1500—Lady Superintendent and Nurses of St. John's Hospital (God's House) Southampton, during the time Edward Rigge was Provost 1500.

HERE THEY COME

Marriage of Edward Riggs, Sheriff aud Provost of God's House, Southampton.

JUST MARRIED

1515—The wedding of Thomas Ridges Maior and Jane Richardson—1515
Left Edward Rigg, Thomas Riggs's father the bride's brother Edward
Richardson, the bride, the groom, the bride's mother,
the groom's mother, the bride's father.



1551—Witnessing the Will: Chief Justice of Hampshire; Thomas Ridges, Jr.
The Witness: Our ancestor Thomas Ridges; our ancestor Mary
(Richardson) Ridges—1551

## A PERFECT PEDIGREE

From Thomas Rygges to the first Ogle Riggs the line is accurately defined by the famous English Genealogist Farnham Burke. I have this pedigree in my possession, absolutely proved by wills and other administration papers and documents.

There was some difficulty to connect the children of the first Ogle with our own line; it was, or appeared to be, an impossible task for the professional genealogist. However the valuable data contained in Maria Abbott's 'Family Sketch' being taken as a guide it was possible for friendly correspondents in England to look up later wills and other documents and thus with great surety correctly complete the pedigree to the present day.

## SECOND GENERATION
## THOMAS RIDGES SHERIFF OF HAMPSHIRE
## THE MAN OF MANY NAMES
### Riggs Orthography

Thomas R-i-g-g-e-s so spelt by him in 1539 when signing himself Sherriff of Hampshire, was apparently the only Southampton Riggs of this generation. He took an active part in public affairs in the ancient city. In a document dated 1542 he is styled Thomas Rygges Maiar of Hampton. In signing himself "Maior" however he spelt his own name R-y-d-g e-s suggesting that this was the original style of the name. In the signature to his will made in 1551 we find however still another form. The orthography in this case being R-y-g-g-e without no final 's' . Thus in two generations there were five different spellings of the name, which was still evidently in the formative period. Indeed there was no settled style until 200 years after this date. Davies' 'Southampton' says; Thomas Rygges was Maior 1542. Thomas Ridges was Maior 1549; Thomas Rigges was Sherriff, 1539. This was the same man in all three cases.

The wife of Thomas Rigges—Rygges—Rydges—Rygge was Jane Richardson ; m. about 1515. They had (1) Thomas, who settled in Sussex ; (2) John, who went to Scotland; (3) William, who lived in Lincolnshire ; (4) Miles, who migrated to Suffolk ; (5) Clement, who made his home in Middlesex ; (6) and Edward, mentioned as his executor.

## THE RIGGS WERE RESTLESS.

From the first Southampton family the Riggs have been a migratory race. Possibly, the families were so numerous, and so large, that the descendants were forced to seek their fortunes elsewhere. They were found in every Shire of England, in every State of America and in every Province of Canada, as path-finders and pioneers, ever the same restless self-reliant race which will be more apparent as the story proceeds.

## THIRD GENERATION.

## THOMAS RYGGES, Jr.

THOMAS RYGGES, Jr., (Edward; Thomas, Sr.,) held the manor of

Fareham near Southamptom. He married and had one son, Rafe or Ralph. Among list of Freeman 1649—Thos. Riggs Intrusted Freeman, (Cromwellian).

LEAVING THE CHURCH
1637—Marriage of Rafe Riggs and Mary Blake—1637

## FOURTH GENERATION.

### RAFE RIGGS.

RAFE RIGGS, (Edward) Thomas Sr., Thomas, Jr.,) possessed of the manor at Fareham, married daughter of William Blake of Eastertown, near Dover, and (her grandfather and great grandfather were of the same name and place).

They had issue (1) Thomas, b. Fareham 1638; (2) Robert; (3) Ralph, a distinguished commoner and ancestor; (4) Francis; (5) William, b. 1593; (6) John, a Southampton merchant; (7) Mary, b. 1585, thrice married; (8) Elizabeth, b. 1591; (9) Ann, b. 1596, m first Richard Hall, second Thomas Dowse.

### COLLATERAL FAMILIES.

Robert, second child of the above, married Margaret Chambers and had Robert; Elizabeth; Margery (who m. Jno. Earlsman); Mary (who m. Sir John Storway), and Margaret (who m. Thomas Baker).

Francis, their fourth child, m. Catharine Knight and had Francis; Joseph (see American line); Benjamin and three daughters. John, their sixth child, m. daughter of Sheriff Hopgood 1632, and had John (who had John, Francis, Ann, and Thomas,) and this Thomas had (Francis, Maria, Elizabeth and Ann).

### THE AMERICAN LINE.

From a pamphlet issued by E. Francis Riggs, of Washington, D.C., it is pointed out that the descendants of the above John, son of John and Mary (Hopgood) Riggs and Francis, son of Francis, who had Kathaline (Knight) Riggs, settled in Virginia, and that the Ann Arundal, Frederick, and Mont-

gomery County Riggs were numerous. A very long record of American Riggs descended from these immigrants then follows showing the exodus from Winchester and Southampton to America.

The name existed early in Maryland. One Francis Riggs, of Calvert County, had 800 acres issued to him by warrant July 10, 1663, and, during the year following, acquired 2,300 acres in the province. He died in 1664 at the house of Richard Lench, on "Chickacome" river, Virginia, leaving his estate to John Edmondston and Richard Collett, equally, but proceedings in the High Provincial Court of Maryland were instituted by Joseph Riggs, of Virginia, claiming as cousin of the deceased Francis. In these proceedings it is set forth that the claimant (Joseph) was the son of Francis Riggs and Catharine (Knight) Riggs, of Fareham, Hampshire, England, and that his deceased cousin (Francis) was the son of John Riggs, Grandson of John and Mary (Hopgood) Riggs, of Southampton, England. Joseph Riggs established his claim, settled in Calvert County, dying there in 1671, leaving his wife Jane sole executrix and heiress of both realty and personalty, including "Lower Bennett."

## THE WINCHESTER LINE

## FIFTH GENERATION

## RALPH RIGGES THE GREAT COMMONER

In 1617 he was taxed as an artificer of Winchester Hampshire. In 1618 he was chosen free of the guild and the same year was styled Merchant. In 1619 he was elected Alderman. In 1626 he was made a Burgess of the City. In 1629 he was elected Mayor and again held that office in 1635. Between these years he was serving as alderman or held civic office. In 1625 he was chosen Chamberlain. In 1643 he was "Commissioner under Cromwell to levy exactions on papists and delinquents—Anglice Royalists". In 1647 he was chosen Offerer and Senior Bailiff—Civic Records. He was sometimes styled Radus Riggs, why, it is difficult to say.

## RALPH AS A SPORT

## CITY FATHERS UNDER THE SEAL OF WINTON PERMIT

## RALPH TO RACE HIS HORSES

July 3rd. 1646—Records Winchester Municipal Hall—It is agreed by this assembly that Ralph Rigges, Esquire, Maior of Winchester, shall have security under the City's Seal to save him harmless for being engaged for the cup race, and he shall be so advised by the Council of the said Mr. Maior This rather interesting resolution of Mr. Maior's Council gives us much food for reflection; many suggestions may be offered, but there is one thing certain the whole world loves a good sport and it is pleasant to know that our great common ancestor patronised the turf, the playground of Kings, even if he did have to get permission of the Maior's Counell to do so.

1626—The Maior and Maioress of Winchester leaving the Cathedral
(Ralph and Mary Riggs 1626.)

Ralph Riggs, Winchester married Mary Johnson, d. Sept. 2nd. 1631. and had issue (1) Francis, (2) Ralph, d. Nov. 16, 1634 (3) Thomas who married Constance, daughter of Richard Hook of Southampton (and had Ralph, Constance and Thomas); (4) Edmund another distinguished citizen of Winchester He was Mayor of that city 1645 and 1649. He had a lease of Kelowdan Church—'the mother of Parish Churches' for four score and nineteen years, paying for the same three pounds, ten shillings a year. The Church was then in ruins (Civic MSS.). It may be conjectured that as a philanthropist he wished to save the old ruins from destruction and took this means to preserve them for at least a hundred years longer. The children of Edmund and Margaret daughter of Jno. Savage of Kingsclere, Southampton were Edmund, Margaret and Mary (Mercy Riggs a hundred years later married John Savage) (6) Mary m. Anthony Yelder, Winchester. (7) Elizabeth m. John Hayter (8) Ogle, our ancestor. Ralph, in his will desired to be buried iu the Cathedral. he died May 8, 1647.

## SIXTH GENERATION.

### OGLE RIGGS(RALPH-RAFE-THOMAS-THOMAS-EDWARD)
### HE ACQUIRES HOLLIST HOUSE BY MARRIAGE

Ogle Riggs married first Mary, daughter of and co-heir of Jno. Lock of Hollist House and at her death came in possession of Hollist House and estate. He married secondly Elizabeth Capron (See Mercy Cobbald's

frequent reference to Capron's)

In the chancel of the parish church, Fareham, are the monuments of several of the above family with armorial bearings. The arms as given by Berry (Hampshire Pedigrees) are; Gules, a fesse vair, between three water spaniel argent each holding in the mouth a bird bolt or, plumed. Crest: A talbot passant, gules, eared or, holding in the mouth a bird bolt of the second (or), plumed argent.

The arms on these tombs, however, are Gules, a fesse vair between three talbots argent, each holding in its mouth a bird bolt or plumed argent.

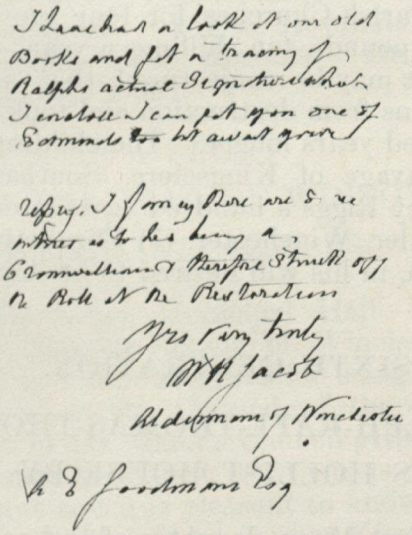
Alderman Jacobs, of Winchester, copied Ralph Riggs arms from the tombstone direct for these memoirs, and for the purpose of accuracy (as before stated) took a pencil rubbing of the dogs which I have in my possession.

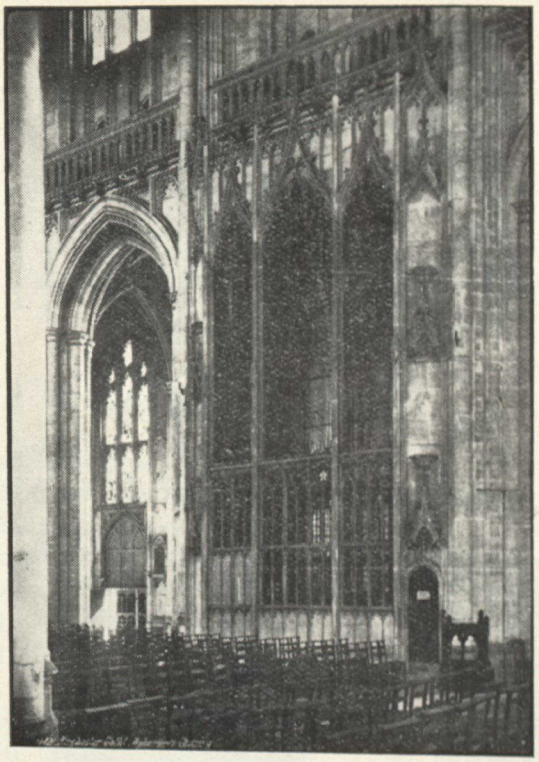
They are certainly talbots and not spaniels.

It is likely some copyist inaccurately drew spaniels for talbots and thus the mistake.

The children of Ogle Riggs and Elizabeth (Capron) Riggs: (1) Thomas, d. aged 11 in 1662; (2) Ogle, of Hollist House; (3) Robert; (4) Ralph; (5) Elizabeth; (6) Mercy; (7) Mary; (8) Ann, who disinherited her nephew Hy. Riggs—See Wm. Riggs autobiography.

## ALDERMAN JACOB'S WRITING





WYCKHAM'S CHANTRY

Showing the interior of Winchester Cathedral near where the memorial stone is placed to the memory of Ralph Riggs, — Where he was christened— Where he worshiped—Where he was married and where he was at last laid to rest. It is also the chantry named after our illustrious kinsman William of Wyckam

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

## SQUIRE OGLE RIGGS,

## Husband of THE LITTLE VIRGINIAN.

Ogle Riggs, Jr., (Edward—Thomas, Sr.—Thomas, Jr.—Rafe—Ralph—Ogle, Sr.) possessed of Hollist House, b. 1636. In 1705 he was high sheriff of Woolbeding, Buddington, and Hollist, and possessed of great means which was partly dissipated by his son Thomas.—See Maria Abbott's memoirs. He married in 1713 Elizabeth, daughter of Michael Musgrave and Elizabeth Ball (who were married in Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County, Virginia, in 1680.)

Ogle Rigs died 1776. She died 23rd Jan., 1762, aged 69. She was born 1693.

1713—Marriage of Squire Ogle Riggs and the "Little Virginian"—1713

*A corner in Woolbedding Church yard near the east chancel showing the tombs of Ogle Riggs; Elizabeth (Musgrave) Riggs; Rev. Thomas Musgrave; also upright stone bearing the following inscriptions; Ogle, son of Elizabeth and Ogle Riggs and Mercy daughter of Elizabeth and Ogle Riggs.*

## NO RACE SUICIDE HERE

Squire Ogle Riggs nnd Elizabeth his wife had seventeen children (1) Elizabeth b. 1714, (2) Thomas b. 1715, m. Ann (daughter of P, Battersworth, Captain in the Navy, d. South Carolina 1754. Named in Rev. Thomas's will

as 'My Godson'. (3) Ogle b. 1716, d. 1743 named in Ogle's will as my eldest son. (4) Martha b, 1716. (5) Mary b. 1717. (6) Anna b. 1720. (7) Mercy b. 1727 (8) Jane (9) Henry b. 1735, d. 1823, aged 88. (10) Frances b. 1734, d. 1771, (11) Margaret, found in father's will. (12) Sarah Fouud in Ogle's will. (13) Charlotte found in Ogle's will m. Jno. Baker 1771.

Four of Ogle's children have escaped the genealogist.

## THE CODICIL OF THE WILL OF ELIZABETH'S WAYWARD BOY THOMAS

South Carolina— In the name of God—Amen.

I Thomas Riggs,Commander of His Majesty's Sloop 'Jamaica' now at anchor in the harbour of Charles Town, South Carolina, being weak in body but of perfect and sound memory and understanding do hereby ratify establish and confirm my last Will and Testament by me duly made and executed in England and concerning all such estate or effects which I may die possessed of or instituted unto within the said Province of South Carolina. It is my will and desire that the same be exposed to sale and sold at publick outcry to the highest bidder by Thomas Shubrick of Charles Town, Merchant, and that the arising from such sale after deduction of all reasonable charges and expenses be by him, with convenient speed, remitted, and paid into the hands of the persons whose names and places of abode I have wrote with my own hand writing on the margin of the paper and for this end and purpose only and not other I do hereby constitute and appoint the said Thos. Shubrick my Excr. In witness thereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 22nd. day of November Anno Domini, 1753.

Thomas Riggs, (L. S.)

Signed, sealed, published and declared by the Testator as a Codicil or part of his last Will and Testament in view and hearing of us who at his desire and in his presence have hereunto set our names as witnesses.

JOHN RATTRAY; CHARLES ROE, Purser of the Jamaica.

NOTE.—The names of my Executors appointed in my last Will made 19th July, 1753, in England are the Rev. Mr. Sandham, of Chichester, and Mr Thomas Harrison, merchant in Crutched Friars, to whom all papers sealed up at my death are to be sent unopened.

THOMAS RIGGS (L.S.)

Recorded the 7th day of May 1754.

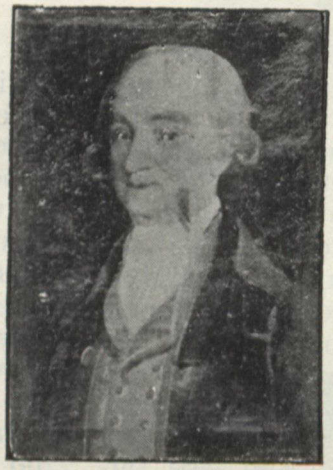
## EIGHTH GENERATION

## SQUIRE HENRY RIGGS

(The only one of seventeen children to perpetuate the race)

Henry Riggs (Ogle-Ogle-Ralph-Rafe-Thomas-Thomas-Edward)

The ninth child of Elizabeth (Musgrave) and Ogle Riggs was married in December 5th, 1764 to Sindenia Budden (See Wm. Riggs sketch of his life) and so displeased his father who had other plans for him. For a time they were estranged but on the death of his brother Ogle, he inherited Hollist House and the estate. This couple maintaining the anti-race suicide theories of the parents had sixteen children.



Squire Henry Riggs

Sindenia (Budden) Riggs

## ABIGAIL'S WAY

Long ago, someone wrote as follows "This list of the children of Henry Riggs and Sindenia his wife I copied from a piece of canvas on which were worked the names by Abigail Riggs, (afterwards Baldwin). The original is in the possession of Mary Barton.

The list printed here however is copied from the private diary of William the son of Henry. The names of those whom the children married should be borne in mind, as they appear frequently in the old letters of these memoirs.

## EXTRACT FROM WILLIAM RIGG'S DIARY IN THE AUTHOR'S POSSESSION DATED WHITECHURCH HANTS, 1796

Henry Riggs was born Feb. 18th 1737—old style—Sindenia Riggs was b. June 11th, 1746—old style. They were married at St. Peter's Chichester on the 5th of Sept. 1764 by the Rev. Mr. Stuart, The offspring of Henry and Sindenia Riggs is as follows.

(1) Thomas b. August 25th, 1765, drowned while at school, 1776.

(2) Henry b. January 20th, 1768 poisoned while at school by eating deadly night shade berries.

(3) Elizabeth b. August 29th 1769, d. Jan. 1776.

(4) John b. Feb. 9th 1772. died without issue.

(5) William b. April 16th, 1773, d. 1853.

(6) Sindenia b. Nov. 14th. 1774, m. Wm. Barton, d. 1837

(7) Michael b. Oct. 10th, 1776, d. in Jamaica, April 1799 after taking degree, M. D.

(8) Ann b. Nov. 1777, m. Jno. Huburn, d. Nov. 11, 1832.

(9) Martha, b. Dec. 16th 1778, m. Thomas Goodman.

(10) Mary, b. April 11th 1780, d. 1859 without issue.

(11) Mercy, b. August 28th 1781, m. Savage Cobbald, M.P. (d. Dec. 12th, 1853).

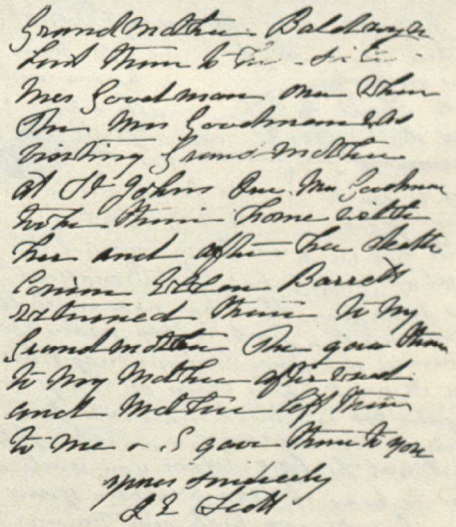
(12) Frances, b. Nov. 17th 1782, died without issue.

(13) Robert Musgrave, b. June 29th 1784, d. Oct. 26th, 1784.

(14) Rhoda, b. Nov. 10th 1785, d. in infancy Jan. 13th, 1786.

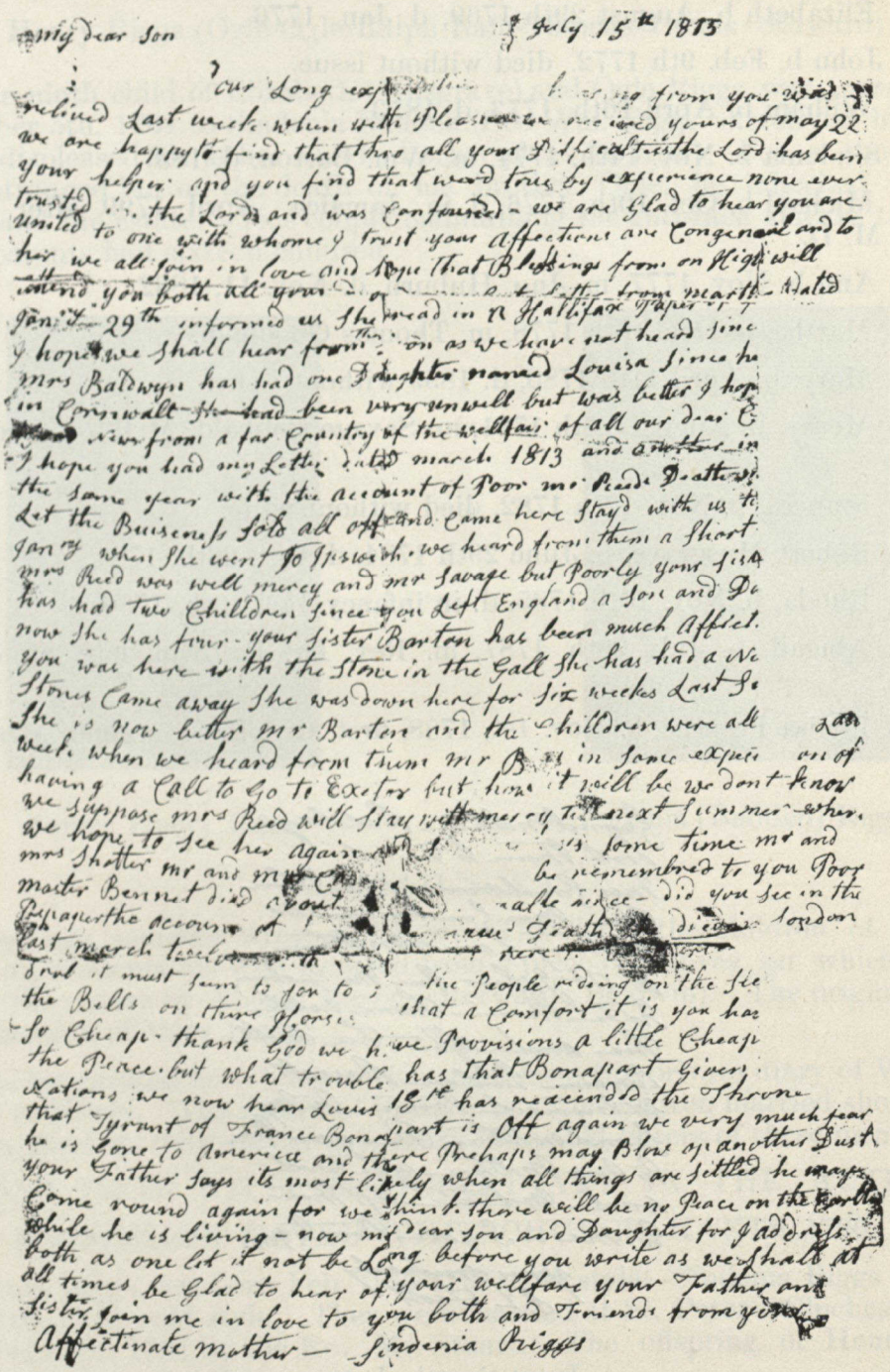
(15) Abigail, b. July 28th 1787, m. Rev. Dr. Baldwin, late St. John's, Quebec.

(16) Louisa Frances, b. Nov. 1st, 1788, first Mrs. Reed, second, Mrs. Trill.



Janet Scott's Letter

# SINDENIA RIGG'S LETTER



my dear Son July 15th 1813

Our Long expected [illegible] hearing from you did
relieve Last week when with Pleasure we received yours of may 22
we are happy to find that thro all your Difficulties the Lord has been
your helper and you find that word true by experience none ever
trusted in the Lord and was Confounded - we are Glad to hear you are
United to one with whome I trust your affections are Congenial and to
her we all join in love and hope that Blessings from on High will
attend you both all yours dated
Jan'y 29th informed us the Dread in N Halifax Papers of
I hope we shall hear from
Mrs Baldwyn has had one Daughter named Louisa Since he
in Cornwall she had been very unwell but was better I hop
heard from a far Country of the welfair of all our dear C
I hope you had my Letter dated march 1813 and another in
the same year with the account of Poor mr Reads Death
Let the Buisness Sold all off and Came here Stayd with us t
Jan'y when She went to Ipswich we heard from them a Short
mrs Reed was well mercy and mr Savage but Poorly yours Sist
has had two Childdren Since you Left England a Son and Da
now She has four - your Sister Barton has been much Affict
You was here with the Stone in the Gall She has had a Ve
Stones Came away She was down here for Six weekes Last Su
She is now better mr Barton and the Childdren were all
week when we heard from them mr B is in Some expecta on of
having a Call to Go to Exeter but how it will be we dont know
we Suppose mrs Reed will Stay with mercy the next Summer when
we hope to see her again
mrs Shatter mr and m
master Bennet died about
Paper the accounts of
last march to
Dread it must Seem to you to
the Bells on there Horses
So Cheap thank God we have Provisions a little Cheap
the Peace but what trouble has that Bonapart Given
Nations we now hear Louis 18th has reascended the Throne
that Tyrant of France Bonapart is Off again we very much fear
he is Gone to America and there Prehaps may Blow up another Dust
your Father Says its most likely when all things are Settled he may
Come round again for we think there will be no Peace on the Earth
while he is living - now my dear Son and Daughter for I address
both as one let it not be Long before you write as we Shall at
all times be Glad to hear of your welfare your Father and
Sister Join me in love to you both and Friends from your
Affectionate Mother — Sindenia Riggs

## COLLATERAL FAMILIES.

Ann Riggs married Wm. Huburn, buried at Camberwell 1852, issue:

(1) Martha; (2) Samuel; (3) Ann.

When the mother died Samuel took the money left by her, which was in her own right, and educated himself for the ministry at Croxton.

He married a girl of sixteen, his wife dying when she was 21 in child-birth; the child, a daughter, survived.

Martha, married a Mr. Lewis, an attorney, issue:

Thomas, b. 1843 and Martha b. 1851.

Sindenia Riggs married Jno. Barton. She is buried at Castle St. Chapel, London. They had issue:

(1) Henry, d. infant; (2) John, d. young; (3) Robert, married, died soon after; (4) William, who migrated to Canada and was murdered; (5) Thomas, who migrated to Canada and disappeared, last heard of in Toronto; (6) Ebenezer, died in infancy; (7) Eliza, unmarried; (8) Sindenia, unmarried; (9) Mary, unmarried.

"Finis" must be written for the above lines.

## COMMENT.

I am unable to say whether the vital statistics of the world do or do not show that large families have a greater chance than small ones to perpetuate the human race.

This however is quite certain that in all our life lines, the smaller families were the surer pepetuators.

These memoirs provide an interesting study along these lines.

Such families must be a trendous responsibility. The dining room in Hollist House must have been a large one to accomodate them and the beds must have looked like the wards in a hospital.

Necessarily with numerous births, numerous deaths must follow, indeed of these sixteen children, eight did not live beyond the age of 21—but six married and but five had issue. Abigail, Mercy, Martha, Louisa, Mary and William lived to old age and William alone had male issue who carried the name down to the present generation and now that vein of life will cease with those who bear the name today.

## COPY OF INSCRIPTIONS ON TOMB STONES IN NORTH WEST CORNER OF EASBOURNE CHURCH YARD.

(Copied November 1890)

1. Large flat monumental stone.

To the memory of Henry Riggs, youngest son of Ogle Riggs, Esq. and Elizabeth his wife, late of Hollist, who departed this life on 28th of January 1823, in the 68th year of his age.

also

Sindenia Riggs wife of the above Henry Riggs who departed this life, November 16th, 1828 in the 83rd year of her age.

*Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord.*

2. An upright stone.

(Name illegible).

(Frances) daughter of Ogle and Elizabeth Riggs of Hollist, who died 23rd June, 177— (last figure illegible) (Remainder illegible).

3. An upright stone.

In memory of Elizabeth, daughter of Henry and Sindenia Riggs who died June 2nd 1776, in the 7th year of her age.

also

Of Thomas (part of name illegible). (Thomas was drowned), son of above Henry and Sindenia Riggs, who departed (illegible) — — 1776.

## WILL OF OGLE RIGGS

### ESTATE MUCH DIMINISHED SINCE REV. MUSGRAVE'S DEATH.

Will of Ogle Riggs of Hollist, parish of Easbourne, Co. Sussex, Esq., dated 1st April 1760. Renounces former wills. To be buried at discretion of Executor. To loving wife, Elizabeth Riggs, for her life, all lands and estate called Hollist in the parish of Easbourne, Co. Sussex, and after her decease to my eldest son Ogle Riggs and his heirs for ever, subject to payment of my debts and legacies. To said son Ogle Riggs lands and estate called Chappell in the parish of Easbourne, Co. Sussex aforesaid and his heirs for ever, subject also to payment of debts. etc., (as above.) To all my children which were not portioned by their uncle Musgrave (viz.) Margaret, Mercy, Jane, Sarah, Charlott, Frances, and Henry Riggs £100 apiece to be paid out of all my goods and chattels and personal estate and out of above said estates. After debts are paid, etc. If any of said children happen to die before they are married their legacy shall cease and not be paid. Lastly I appoint said Elizabeth Riggs, my wife, and said Ogle Riggs, my son, sole Executors. Signed and sealed—O. Riggs. Witnesses—John Shotter, John Hammon, Jno. Edwards.

Proved 24th March 1767 by Ogle Riggs, son of deceased and one of the Executors (Elizabeth Riggs, widow and relict and the other Executor being first dead.)

(Chichester Probate Registry, Vol. 41, fol. 264.)

Copied by Henry Rigg. 3/3/05.

N.B.—Elizabeth Riggs died on the 23rd January, 1762, nearly two years after this will was made.

HENRY RIGG.

## LORD SAY AND SELE.

Since my reference to Lord Say and Sele has appeared in print an ancient document has reached me from Miss Jessy Thompson of Toronto, explaining what had been heretofore a great puzzle in our family, namely, the exact relation this scion of a famous old family bore to the Riggs.

One version was that a niece of Sindenia (Budden) Riggs, one Emily Budden had married Lord Sagiotale (evidently intended for Say and Sele). Another version was that Henry Riggs Goodman's Aunt Letitia married Lord Say and Sele and this story was believed for many generations in the Goodman family.

Brett's Peerage, however, contained no such marriage, and on enquiry of the present Lord Say and Sele in Berkshire through a common friend His

Lordship said that he knew of no such marriage.

The document in question now before me was originally record, or a bit of family history by Louisa and Abigail Riggs before their marriage. It contains many interesting references to the Riggs family already published and refers also to the marriage of Lord Say and Sele which is undoubtedly the correct version of the affair. This document also discloses the important information, no doubt a fact, that Michael Musgrave was of the famous old Musgrave family of Eden Hall and his elder brother held the title in the family. That portion of the document of interest here is as follows. It is headed "Genealogy of our family":

Broughton castle famous for it's size and historical importance is delightfully situated about two miles from Banbury.

The approach to the mansion part is a stone bridge across the moat. Some parts of this were built in the reign of Elizabeth and some much later. The entrance hall is 55 feet in length and 26 feet wide. The library is 43 feet by 25 feet with much decoration. The gallery is 90 feet in length and contains on each side oreil windows with a considerable quantity of stained glass of heraldic character tending to elucidate the history of the proprietors of the castle. The family name is Fiennes (Fennes or Fenns).

The barony is held by Frederick Twistleton Wykeham Fiennes—thirteenth Baron Lord of Say and Sele, born in 1733 who married Emily Budden (sister of Sindenia—Budden—Riggs wife of Henry Riggs).

## MUSGRAVE

Lord Musgrave, Thomas and Michael Musgave.

(Then follows a complete list of births and marriages of the Musgraves and Riggs so far as our branch of the family is concerned).

Another important paragraph reads:

"The above list was copied from a list embroidered on tapestry by Abigail and Louisa; Mrs. Huburn copied it."

## BLIND ALLEYS OF GENEALOGY.

There are what might be termed the blind alleys of genealogical research. They have occurred all through this investigation in every branch of the family.

There are the assertions of worthy men and women and relations in whose veracity we have unbounded faith. The stories are not untrue but time-twisted.

## THE PLAGUE TRADITION.

Miss Scott says that her Grandmother Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin told her that Lady Isobel Musgrave was carried through the streets of London with a cloth dipped in vinegar over her face and this was when the great plague was raging.

Maria Abbott says it was Elizabeth Musgrave that was so treated. Both stories it was claimed originally came from Riggs Baldwin. In the case of Elizabeth Riggs the plague was before her birth. If either story is correct it must be Miss Scott's. If the truth could be told no doubt the explanation would be simple and the mistakes easily explained.

WILLIAM RIGGS, reproduced from the original painting in possession of his granddaughter, Elizabeth Riggs, of Holyoke, Mass.

The portrait was taken when he was 33, and the frame contains a glossy brown ringlet of hair—Emblem of mortality.

## AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF WILLIAM RIGGS

So ends the English line—they are evidently all dead. The autobiography of William Riggs presents a review of what has been learned in more detail than elsewhere, and with much more amplification and a greater number of facts. William heads his story as follows.

### A BRIEF SKETCH OF THE FAMILY PARENTAGE AND LIFE OF WILLIAM RIGGS WRITTEN BY MYSELF AT LIVERPOOL, NOVA SCOTIA, 1819

I have dwelt in the bosom of Liverpool Township (now) upwards of five years and have just cause to applaud the hospitality and friendship of its inhabitants generally.

To some persons it might appear as wanting to show forth my family origin, but as I came first to Liverpool an entire stranger, oppressed by unauspicious circumstances it is hoped such an illustration will not be deemed entirely unnecessary.

Having lived among the people so long, they ought to be judges of my general deportment and of the veracity of my story. A pompous display or an exaggeration of facts is herein carefully avoided; plain and simple truth is most congenial to a discerning mind.

Reader—Excuse the error of the author in this humble attempt and be assured that for the verity of the relation he can with safety lay his hand upon his bosom and appeal to that righteous Judge who searchest the hearts and minds and truths of the children of men.

[Signed] WILLIAM RIGGS.

## OGLE A LIBERAL LIVER.

## AN ENGLISH GENTLEMAN OF THE OLD SCHOOL.

## THE COMPANION OF THE GREAT.

Liverpool, N. S.

18th June, 1819.

Ogle Riggs, Esq., of Hollist House, near Midhurst in the county of Sussex, in his youth took possession of a handsome patronage which enabled him with his natural affability and genteel deportment to associate with the nobility and gentry of the country in which he lived. In process of time he was married to Elizabeth Musgrave, the only daughter of an opulent planter of Jamestown, Virginia, from whom he received a fortune of ten thousand pounds sterling.

This influx of wealth added to his own property instead of being advantageous ultimately proved baneful. It raised him to such a pitch of greatness as to attract the visits of the first class of men in the English nation for whom he made brilliant entertainments, added to which the expenditure of his family establishment far exceeded his income. He was however appointed one of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace for the County, which in England is an office only held by men of large independent fortune.

This office he faithfully filled for a number of years when at last death bereaved him (by a fit of the gout) of this and all he held dear on this side of the grave.

By his wife he had seventeen children; his eldest son Ogle succeeded to the remnant of his property, who in a few years died of the same complaint, without marriage or issue.

## HENRY BECOMES A FOLLOWER OF WESLEY, MARRIES A DISSENTER, DISINHERITED BY HIS FATHER IN A FIT OF RAGE, HE BOLDLY BOASTS OF HIS CONVERSION AND LOSES A FORTUNE, AUNT ANN'S ANGER.

Henry, the oldest son living, was next in succession to the hereditary property. It was his happy lot to marry a wise and discreet woman, by whose counsels he was able to arrange his father's and brother's embarrassments and bring them at last to such a train of settlement as to realize to himself a neat income of three hundred pounds sterling per annum.

Henry commenced an admirer of Messrs. Geo. Whitfield and John Wesley and had married a poor but virtuous young woman during his life time, for which "crimes" his father in a fit of persecution and rage expelled him from the family, although when his father and brother were dead he was left in peaceable possession of the remnant of family property, the great enemy and destroyer of the human race was not in want of engines of persecution, because he loved virtue and pure religion.

Ann Riggs, his Aunt, possessed about seven thousand pounds sterling in landed property, houses and cash.

Henry was her nearest relation but as she was a rigid churchwoman and as Henry had joined and promoted the interests of the dissenters, there was not wanting instruments of intrigue to fan the spark of party prejudice into a violent flame insinuating that he would spend his all among the methodists, etc. Thus poor Henry suffered a second expulsion from the only surviving branch of the family of whom he could justly expect an addition to his worldly store.

On the death of this Aunt he was called on to hear her will and it turned out that she had left him three hundred pounds, and twenty pounds each to his four children (being the number at that time) with this clause:—"If the said Henry Riggs shall make any dispute, or cause any dispute to be made, the said sum of three hundred pounds shall be forfeited, also the said legacies of twenty pounds each to his four children."

Though Henry was nearest of kin he deemed it fruitless to attempt to gain the property by a course of law, therefore tried to content himself with legacies received. Mark the result. The all-seeing eye is on the evil and good—ever witnessing the actions of men—the small portion Henry and his children received did him more good than all the larger part received by

distant relatives, being attended with a blessing; but a curse indeed followed the receivers of the larger part so unjustly bequeathed.

One person in particular, a flaming persecutor of the poor dissenter, having received the largest estate, by intemperance and revelling in a few years it was dissipated, as a morning mist before a scorching sun.

This man had a daughter eminent for piety and virtue who was awakened to a sense of the value of her immortal soul, whilst like Dives, he was wallowing in sensual delights—and whom he bitterly persecuted, until death stopped his career. Dreadful indeed was this messenger to him. Instead of banishing this daughter from him as an object of hatred, as heretofore, he sent for her in his dying moments, urging all possible haste. As she approached his bedside he vehemently exclaimed "Oh where am I going? I am going to hell."

## THE MIDHURST MINISTER ROTTEN EGGED HENRY THE METHODIST.

"Where am I going? Oh My Dear Betsy do pray for me!" The feelings of a pious daughter witnessing a parent departing thus into a world of spirits can be better conceived than described. Betsy attempted to pray, she uttered words, but to her, alas, it was a dark and painful hour, soon after which her unhappy father breathed his last without the appearance of one glimmering hope.

It is to be feared that he is numbered with those of whom it will be said in the grand day of final retribution "These mine enemies who would not that I should reign over them bring them hither and slay them before me."

The minister of the Church of England at Midhurst was unwearied in his visits to Henry's Aunt for several years in order to keep alive and inflame her prejudice. He was naturally a churl of a cruel and relentless disposition, a confirmed bigot and always foremost in persecuting his unoffending and harmless neighbors who dared to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences. HE WOULD GIVE HALF A CROWN A DOZEN FOR ROTTEN EGGS AND HIRE A RABBLE TO PELT THE DISSENTING MINISTERS AND PEOPLE WITH THEM.

When these were expended recourse was had to every other kind of filth and even to bricks and stones, thus minister and people often went to their places of worship at the hazard of their lives. However it proved at last that the vengeance of the Almighty "slumbereth not"—in the process of time an unseen hand stripped him of his idols and illgotten wealth.

This voluptuous persecutor, "whose eyes stood out with fatness" was reduced by chagrin and disappointment to a covered skeleton; and at last died

miserably at a place in London, distant from any family connections and where there was no comforter.

Henry was endowed with patience among all these bitter persecutions and was enabled to commit his cause to God who judgeth righteously.

Were the author to enumerate the conduct and character of other scoffers and persecutors and their miserable end this intended sketch would swell into a volume. One more, however, he cannot refrain from mentioning.

This was a person of considerable property in the town, who plumed himself on his dexterity in telling (what is vulgarly called) a white lie. He was a slave to his appetite—a cordial friend to the church parson, full of levity and fond of exercising his wit and raillery on the dissenters, then scoffingly called "methodists", whatever denomination of dissenters they may have been. During his whole life he buried himself in sensuality and was never a whit behind any of his companions in fomenting persecutions against the lovers of piety. It is supposed that this man was the author of several anonymous letters written to Henry, full of ribaldry and base misrepresentation of the Dissenters—urging him in the most ludicrous language to abandon their cause. He was cut off in the prime of his life and the scripture was then made manifest "The wicked shall not live out half their days."

On his death bed he trembled at the thought of dying. He was sensible that his spirit was departing into the presence of an angry God and in the bitterness of soul would often cry out "I am going to hell—devils are in waiting around my bed to carry me away." He was allowed to linger out a few more days in the most indescribable anguish and despair, and finally departed this life without the least shadow of hope. These awful instances of retribution on this side of eternity altered not the conduct of minor persecutors, they remained with their hearts still hardened although their cause was greatly weakened in thus loosing their champions of persecution.

Henry with his pious companion, and the little congregation of Dissenters were lost in wonder, adoration and praise in seeing that he who "holds the winds in His fist, and the waters in the hollow of His hand," to scatter their enemies as dust before the wind.

It is aserted by many that men who become intemperate and unchaste become their own executors. This cannot be charged upon Henry—he living in the fear of God adopted a contrary line of conduct. He was alive and well in the fall of 1818 (year before this was written, author); advanced to the age of 81, "blessed both in basket and in store."

His excellent wife, then also alive, bore him 16 children—she was always an excellent economist, brought up his little ones in the fear of God and taught them constantly to sing His praises; restrained them from the society of wicked children in the neighborhood; drawing them by the most tender

persuasions to follow the example of the "Holy Child Jesus" to abhor profane swearing, cursing, lying and all other immoralties—showing them the direful consequences attendant upon such practices—at the same time pointing them to the glorious reward awaiting such children as shunned the paths of sin and followed those of true wisdom. Such instruction and admonition did not fail in its effect. Her daughters were nearly all married to sentimental and tender husbands.

## HENRY'S PIOUS SPOUSE.

William, the only son alive, was born the 16th of April 1773; received a good day school education, without any intermission, until past the age of fourteen, he was then sent to London where he had the happiness to dwell with well regulated families for the space of sixteen years. He was often urged to commence business on his own account, but he did not deem it prudent until "a general peace."

## HENRY WAITS FOR WAR TO CEASE BEFORE BECOMING A MERCHANT. WHEN NAPOLEAN DECLARES FOR PEACE HE MAKES A FORTUNE, ONLY TO LOSE IT WHEN THE TYRANT SAYS "WAR." HE GETS SOME REVENGE BY JOINING THE FRIGATE AMELIA AND FIGHTING THE ENEMY; ESCAPES AT THE END OF FOUR YEARS SOUND IN MIND AND BODY.

At length peace was concluded with the great disturber of Europe (and under promising appearances William commenced business in the city of Bristol, which he conducted with such exactness as to draw unto himself a desirable and extensive patronage which caused his returns to amount to between five and six thousand pounds sterling per annum; added to which his economy as a bachelor ought not to be passed by without comment.

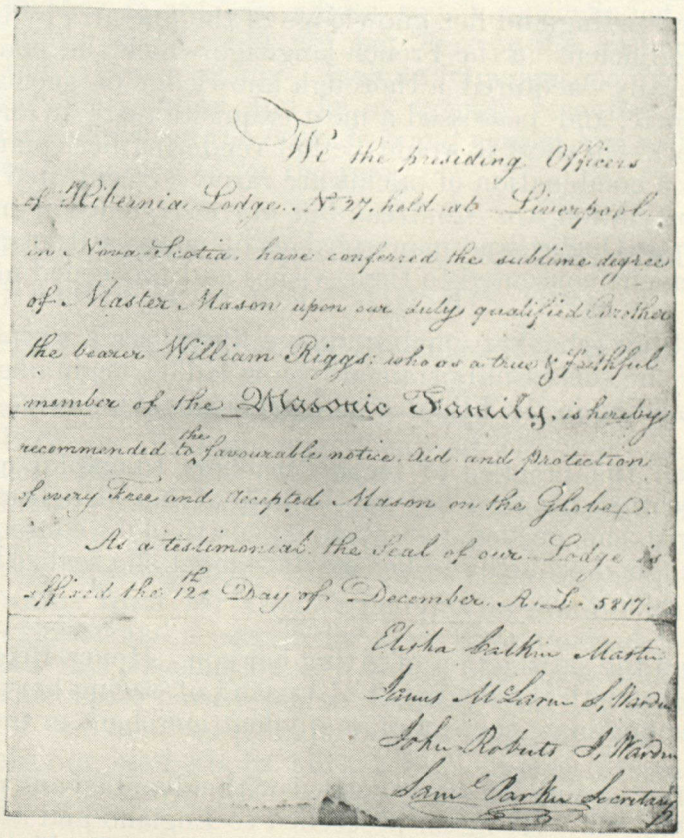
However, as the capital advanced by his father was too small to meet the reverses which unexpectedly befell him he was thrown into embarrassments and in spite of the most rigid frugality, sobriety and industry after a struggle of four years he was most reluctantly obliged to abandon a business so auspiciously begun.

War broke out again which spread universal gloom over the entire country; commerce languished, many died and failed in his debt to a heavy amount; which circumstances, so unexpected, hurried him and a multitude of other honest and industrious men into the vortex of financial ruin.

William then, in 1807, entered as clerk on board a frigate fitting for sea in the river Thames. In this ship he performed his duties to the satisfaction of his Captain—adhering to a consistency of manners and conduct which gained him the esteem and friendship of the Captain and other superior officers, and consequently was often received into their society as an equal and never kept at a distance as a petty officer—as he really was—to the no small

mortification and envy of many others on a level with him in rank on board the ship. He was also held in high estimation by the seamen before the mast, having in many cases without fee acted as their attorney and counsellor and caused many sums of money to be recovered for them which they were about giving up as lost. No petty officer could be in a fairer way of promotion than he was in, to the grade of purser. He formed a correspondence with the Board of Admiralty in London, and as his applications were seconded by distinguished members of Parliament, his name was inserted in the admiralty list, yet on cooly reflecting that although a purser's situation would be of great pecuniary advantage it was at best a life of dissipation, and might tend to debase his moral character, he solicited his discharge from the service, which the Captain reluctantly granted; at the same time making a handsome pecuniary present accompanied with a certificate of high approbation and recommendation.

During the four years he served in the ship, notwithstanding the dangerous nature of the employ; through a kind Providence his life was preserved, his health was good and not a bone of him was broken, or the slightest contusion received in combatting the agents of the common enemy to the repose of afflicted Europe.



We the presiding Officers of Hibernia Lodge No 37. held at Liverpool in Nova Scotia, have conferred the sublime degrees of Master Mason upon our duly qualified Brother the bearer William Riggs: who as a true & faithful member of the Masonic Family, is hereby recommended to the favourable notice, aid and protection of every Free and Accepted Mason on the Globe.

As a testimonial the Seal of our Lodge is affixed this 12th Day of December A. L. 5817.

Elisha Saltus Master
James McLaren S. Warden
John Roberts J. Warden
Sam[l] Barker Secretary

WILLIAM'S RECOMMENDATION

WILLIAM CONDUCTS MARTHA GOODMAN AND HER TWO CHILDREN TO QUEBEC (CHILDREN * AUTHOR'S GRANDFATHER HY. RIGGS GOODMAN AND GREAT AUNT MRS. JAS. McCALLUM.)

MARTHA'S ACCOMPLISHMENTS—SHE STARTS A LADIES' SCHOOL, EDUCATES THE GREAT GRANDMOTHERS OF QUEBEC AND PROSPERS.

1811—William then with what he had saved in the service of his country took up his winter quarters among his friends in London and in the spring conducted a widowed sister and her two children (Martha, Aunt McCallum and Grandfather—author) to Quebec, where with a little pecuniary aid from her father she was established in a seminary for young ladies.

From a child she always outstripped her sisters in acuteness and aptitude to learn, and as she grew in years was indefatigable in her exertions to improve her understanding and her knowledge of the fine arts by incessant labor she became a proficient in the French language which she could speak and write grammatically—acquired a thorough knowledge of geography, drawing and the pianoforte, and possessed a most exquisite taste in ornamental and fancy needle work—in short it would be but rendering her common justice to assert that such a combination of talents are rarely concentrated in one person. Her original destination was Montreal, but in consequence of meeting so cordial a reception at Quebec and many pledges of support from the first people of lower Canada, she consented to their wishes and proceeded no further.

She opened her school at Quebec upon a liberal scale without ostentation and profusion; she successfully trained young ladies, beginning with the first rudiments and ending in the brightest accomplishments.

It had been the practice of female teachers to employ music, dancing, drawing and writing masters, but by the help of her daughter, who was an accomplished girl, she needed not such expensive aid; consequently by this saving added to good economy in her establishment she realized in a very few years a genteel competency.

She also had the satisfaction of giving her son—Henry Riggs Goodman—a good education, with the degree of M.D., and of seeing her daughter married to a good young man, the son of an opulent merchant in the city.

William, after seeing his sister settled with advantageous prospects, then looked out for himself. He again proceeded to England and after transacting his business in London took passage in a sloop of war for Halifax by way of St. John's. He found that the little merchandise he had shipped from Lon-

don had arrived but three days before him all in excellent order; and after disposing of it, engaged as teacher of the Lancastrian Academy commonly called the "Royal Acadian school" set on foot by Walter Bromley. This was an establishment on an extensive scale, a vast number of children whose parents were poor received through the wisdom of its committee a liberal education, who otherwise must have remained in gross ignorance. Very grateful was it to William's feeling on discovering that his conduct gave general satisfaction to the parents of these poor children, but more especially so at the close of the year 1813, on being complimented with the unanimous approbation of the general committee, and voted teacher for the ensuing year with an increase of his salary.

Three of its members were deputed to act as a sub-committee whose business it was to visit the school and regulate matters pertaining thereto of minor importance.

One of those visitors whose manners were more of a coxcombe than a man of good breeding was most officious in his interference respecting the discipline of the school, and instead of prudently requesting a private interview of the teacher in order to advise, rudely reprimanded him before the faces of his pupils, which could not but destroy the authority he had with much pains and urbanity set up. Such an impudent manner of interference roused William's indignation and he as quickly resented it, for which the pompous upstart influenced the other two and caused him to be superceded in six weeks after being elected for the year.

## WILLIAM BECOMES A TEACHER IN ACADIA AND GETS MARRIED; STARTS A SCHOOL OF HIS OWN AT LIVERPOOL, N.S.; JOINS THE MASONS; BURIES HIS WIFE.

It was allowed that the committee vested too much power in the sub-committee. However William was dismissed with a present of six months pay in advance. March 1814 he moved to Liverpool with a Mr. Gould, who united with him in establishing a school on the same plan in that town. It began with promising appearances, having numbered one hundred and sixty of both sexes on the opening day. Unfortunately the school was ruined in three months afterwards from Mr. Gould's inability to conduct his part of it, and besides his dogmatic and eccentric behavior gave umbrage to the inhabitants universally. In this speculation Mr. Gould had not a shilling of his own to adventure. The whole burden fell on William, who lost thereby from first to last upwards of one hundred pounds, besides enduring from his partner much oppressive behavior, and above all a serious breach of trust in pecuniary matters.

This continuation of unfortunate circumstances did not deter William from recommencing a school alone; and in November following he married a

woman of excellent endowments, with whom he lived so happily that wedlock bonds appeared like true freedom, but this earthly bliss was of short duration and she died in childbed being buried on her wedding day a year afterwards.

Of all losses this to William was the heaviest and most afflicting he ever suffered, being thus unexpectedly and suddenly deprived of a companion who on all occasions coincided with him in sentiment, and whose disposition of mind was so truly congenial. At all times reason was her guide in the path of duty; this, added to a calm and pacific disposition, could not fail to rivet more firmly the bonds of natural affection. To be severed from such a companion was too much for the stoutest heart to endure unaided by Divine strength. It served to teach William that nothing short of "inheritance that is undefiled, uncorruptable and that fadeth not away can satisfy the soul of man;" her memory richly deserved the small sum of £30 for her burial and neat monument over her grave bearing the following inscription:

Elizabeth

Wife of William Riggs and Rev. J. Payrant's only daughter,
Died in childbed with her infant son
11th November, 1815, aged XL.

Ye sons of earth example here is given
That in good health you seek the way to Heaven
The thought of dying was her heart's delight;
To have her faith transformed into sight
And dwell with Christ, whose character is this.
"Her better husband" in the realm of bliss.

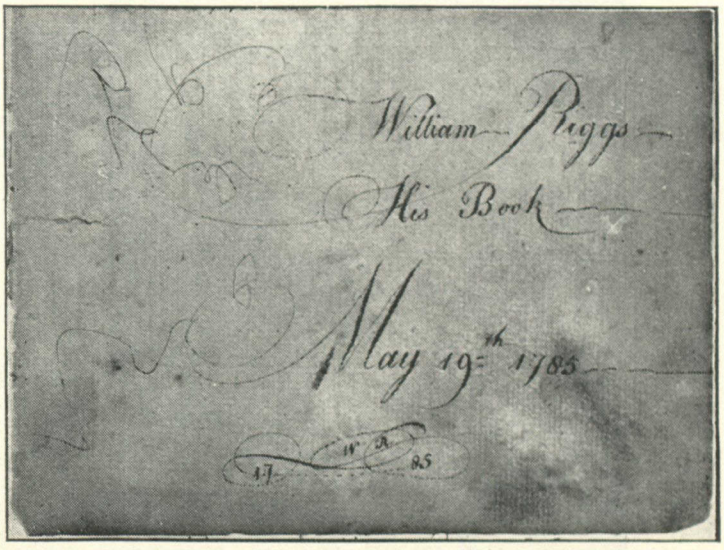
## EXTRACT FROM LETTER FROM CHAS. WARMAN, LIVERPOOL, N.S., MARCH 21ST, 1905.

"Respecting the Riggs you enquire about in Saturday's Halifax Herald, I can say that the tombstone to Elizabeth Riggs is yet standing and the inscription is fairly legible. At the top of the inscription quoted by you is the figure of a woman partly clothed standing amid clouds and gazing at the sun's rays.

No one now living has ever heard of Wm. Riggs who taught school here a hundred years ago'.

## WILLIAM'S WONDERFUL ARITHMETIC

William was an unusually brilliant student and in an age when learning was not esteemed as it is now. A valued gift of the late Mrs; Harriett Riggs




A page from William's Arithmetic

is an arithmetic covered with heavy sheep's hide, containing 250 pages and written entirely by hand with a quill pen by William in 1785. (when he was a child of thirteen).

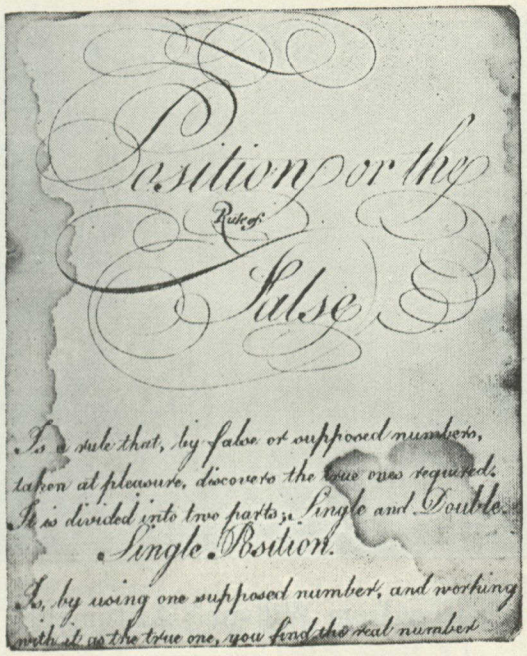
The writing is exquisitly done and the free hand ornamentation is the work of an artist. This fact taken in conjunction with the presumption that the difficult mathematical questions there set down and worked out in detail was the labor of this child. We can but marvel at his precocious talents. This book was used by William when a student in London (when he also undoubtedly used a child's history of England compiled by his talented mother Sindenia (Budden) Riggs). The subjects in the arithmetic range from numerals to Exchange.

## STRANGE NAMES FOR MATHEMATICAL DIVISIONS.

Some of the subjects were as follows:

"Inverse Proportion"—"Ascending and descending Reduction"—Position of the RULE FALSE—By a false number taken at pleasure you discover the true.

Example: A man drawing near a maid driving a flock of geese said to her: "How do you do Sweetheart? Where are you going with those thirty geese? No Sir, said she, I have not 30; but if I had as many more as I have and half as many more and five geese besides I should have 30. Question, how many had she? Answer—Ten geese.




Page from William's Arithmetic

## WILLIAM'S PRIVATE DIARY.

### 1796 to 1825.

In 1796, eleven years after this remarkable arithmetic was written, and when William was 24, we find by referring to his private diary (another valued gift from the late Mrs. Harriet Riggs) that he was in the London Civil Service, substituting Mr. Jno. Marshall as "INQUESTMAN" (coroner).

(See Mercy Cobbald's letter.)

## EVIDENTLY INQUESTMEN HAD TO TREAT THE JURY PRETTY OFTEN.

Under this heading the following items appear:

"Paid for the use of a gown three times six shillings, and for a staff one and six pence.

"For beer at the Watch House one and two pence.
"For a tankard while attending at Guildhall, 2 shillings and 8 pence.
"For a tankard while attending at Old Bailey, 2 shillings and 8 pence.
"For a tankard while attending at Newgate, 2 shillings and 8 pence.

## WILLIAM FALLS IN LOVE.

As a result he writes capital poetry.

HE HAS A VERY PROPER SENTIMENT OF THE TENDER PASSION. HE FIRST QUOTES ONE NAMED "COPE" AND THEN REPLIES TO HIM.

### COPE ON PASSION.

"Love free as air at sight of human ties
"Spreads it's light wings and in a moment flies.
"Let wealth, let honor wait the wedded Dame,
"August the deed, or sacred be the name;
"Before true passion all these joys remove.
"Fame, wealth or honor what are you to LOVE,
"Not Cæsar's Empress would I deign to prove,
"No—make me Mistress to the man I love."

### WILLIAM REPLIES.

"Tho' to the truest PASSION I'm a slave,
"Yet not a MISTRESS but a WIFE I'd have.
"Oh, hyman give me SOPHY to my arms,
"Let me by sacred right possess her charms,
"Let her to me be sister, friend and wife,
"The joy and comfort of my future life;
"And then let Libertines do as they may
"I'll never from the paths of VIRTUE stray."

Written at Whitechurch 16th June 1798.

## WHEN YOU USED TO WORK FOR MR. MARSHALL.
(SEE MERCY'S LETTER.)

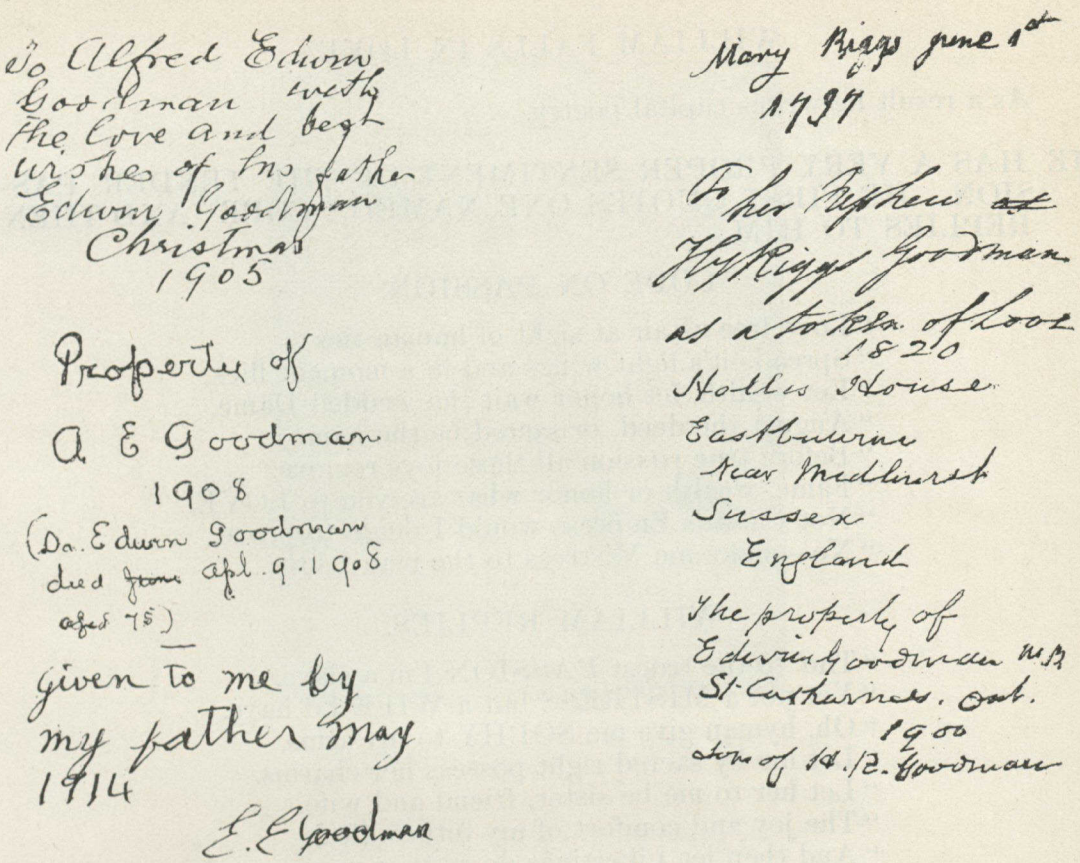
William had become a traveller for John Marshall. He says: "I find Mr. Marshall's stock of gloves is 20,073 pairs. Subsequently he embarked in business for himself in what to-day would be called the wholesale dry goods trade. He seemed to have done an enormous business. Reverses followed as before mentioned as the result of war with Napolean and he subsequently sought his fortune in a new land.

## HIS FIRST CHILD.

Another entry:

"Henry Riggs, son of William, born Monday evening, half past eleven o'clock, 11th day of January, 1819."

The mother died and the child lived only long enough to be named Henry, after William s father.




The Mary Riggs book handed down from generation to generation.

In 1817 or 5817 according to Mason's computation of time, William Riggs became a Freemason and the author is fortunately able to produce what appears to be his travelling certificate or demit.

LETTER WRITTEN BY WILLIAM AT THE TIME OF HIS TROUBLE WITH THE SCHOOL TRUSTEES.

School Room,

Isle-aux-Noix, April 1822.

HON. SIR:—

The gratitude I feel for the favour you conferred on me, as a stranger at the time of my first arrival on the Island, stimulates me to pen a few lines in my own behalf, at this moment. From the time of commencing a School here it was my fixed resolution to be very reserved and secluded, in order to keep clear of party disputations (having previously received a gentle hint from yourself that parties existed here) but in spite of my caution, I was (shortly after your departure) unwarily drawn into controversy with a female on points of doctrine, ——. Without any regard for my years and experience she commenced an acute and abrupt attack, as if dealing with an incorrigible and

wicked School-boy. Am persuaded that Mr. Kent and the other officers fully assure themselves of my pacific disposition, and are convinced that I would have gladly made any sacrifices had it been possible by any means, to elude it; but finding myself hemmed in, and no possibility of escape, was constrained to defend the doctrines contained in the Thirty-nine articles, which was done with as much coolness and good humour on my part as ability was at the moment given. It was afterwards hoped that this little piece of private controversy would have died, but no; I was not to be so fortunate, for daring to defend myself against a violation of common good manners, revenge was her determination. She stirred up her husband to raise a bitter persecution, under which I must have fallen a sacrifice, had not an appeal to Mr. Kent induced him to exact his authority, and to confer on me the favour of summonsing a board of officers on the occasion. Respecting my general deportment since residing on the Island, I leave to the report of Mr. Kent, and other Gentlemen of the Garrison, who have individually and unitedly done me ample justice, besides showing many acts of kindness for which I am thankful, and remain Hon. Sir, Your obliged humble servant,

HON. CAPTAIN BYNG.

## BESET BY A BATCH OF BIGOTS IN A GARRISON TOWN WILLIAM REFUSES TO BE STARVED OUT AND SEEKS FOR SYMPATHY WHERE HE CAN FIND FOOD.

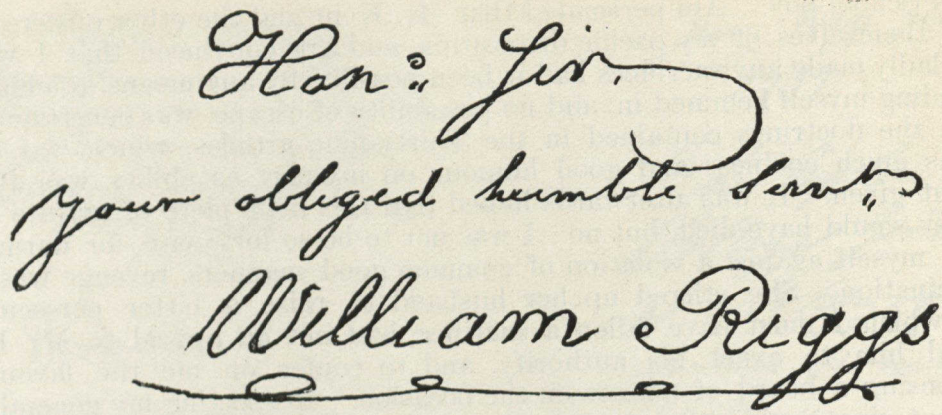
1852.

"The women have spurred on their husbands to these illegal and unprovoked attacks, born of narrow prejudices against the teacher. The children fond of novelty and uncontrollable, were in turn influenced by their mothers and whatever there is done now, there never can be any comfort for the master, unblemished though his character or abilities may be."

Be it remarked here that the opposing party finding it impossible to drive their teacher off the ground (before his term had expired) by persecuting him in one direction started to attack him in another and have been guilty of inventing calumny and misrepresentation respecting his school discipline, prating, backbiting, and whispering instead of acting the manly part by calling a school meeting to receive a satisfactory explanation on the cause of the supposed discontent.

On Friday the 20th July, in the evening, the deponent met Wills at his house by the committee's appointment to consult him as to the teacher's accommodation. After much discussion he said that the trustees would agree to consult the people, confer among themselves, and communicate the result.

No satisfactory communication being had up to Sept. 14 but equivocation and coolness told Mr. Wills in presence of H. Hogle, Jno. Hogle and Wm. Haggerty that I was about abandoning my school for want of support and must seek sympathy where I could get food to eat.




WILLIAM RIGG'S SIGNATURE

## MALE LINE.

## NINTH GENERATION.

## WILLIAM PERPETUATES THE NAME.

William Riggs (Henry Ogle, Jr.—Ogle, Sr., Rafe—Ralph—Thomas, Jr., Thomas, Sr., Edward) married secondly Eleanor, widow of a marine captain who was murdered at sea. Her maiden name was Typhenia Nickerson. She had two sons and a daughter by her first husband.

A wedding gift of William Riggs to his wife Typhenia was a pretty gilt mirror (which Mrs. Harret Riggs very kindly presented to the author.)

By his second wife William had (1) Henry Riggs, b. Jan. 11 1819, d. young; (2) Michael, b. 13th Sept. 1823, born in Canada, and Alfred, b. April 16, 1828. Their mother died October 1880.

William for his third wife married Mrs. Ballard, a widow with one son. They had no issue.

Michael, not caring to live with his stepmother, left home and remained away for years.

Alfred married Harriet Jane Rood, absent and much lamented on account of her excellent qualities of head and heart. She was an esteemed correspondent and a sympathetic friend. Besides enabling the author to reproduce many old Riggs photographs made it possible for us to follow the fortunes of many members of our family for generations through the bright gossipy letters of Mercy (Riggs) Cobbald and the autobiography of her brother William.

Harriet Rood Riggs was descended on her father's side from Briggs Rood a Reverend Soldier, born 1697, who married Elizabeth Belcher, granddaughter of Governor Belcher of Massachusetts and in whose honor Belcherton, Mass., was named.

## MALE LINE

## TENTH GENERATION

(Alfred, William, Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Edward.)

## FIRST LETTER FROM HARRIETT RIGGS, THE WIDOW OF ALFRED RIGGS, SON OF WILLIAM

HOLYOKE, MASS., Feb. 28th, 1905

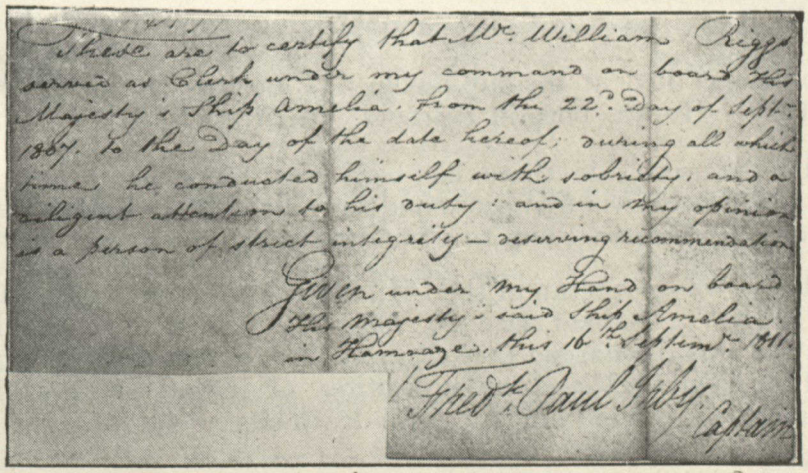
My Dear Sir :—

Your letter gave me a surprise. Only a short time ago I was thinking of Dr. Hy. Goodman and wished I could know what became of him, and if living, where?

My husband Alfred Riggs, was the youngest son of Wm. Riggs, who was born April 16th 1773. Alfred April 16th 1828.

So you will see that our children are Wm. Riggs Grandchildren. Our boys are both in heaven, and our only daughter has never married. She is a successful business woman. So the line is broken off in this family.

Alfred had a brother Michael born Sep. 13th 1823, he left a son George Riggs who is living or rather was in Feb. 1903 in Port Richmond, California. Michael died Feb. 20th 1903. There was also a Henry born Jan. 11th 1819. He died in Canada when five years old. I should be glad to aid you in your labor of love any way I can.



These are to certify that Mr. William Riggs served as Clerk under my command on board His Majesty's Ship Amelia, from the 22d. day of Sept. 1807. to the day of the date hereof; during all which time he conducted himself with sobriety, and a diligent attention to his duty: and in my opinion is a person of strict integrity — deserving recommendation.

Given under my Hand on board His Majesty's said Ship Amelia in Hamoaze, this 16th. September 1811.

Fredk. Paul Irby, Captain

WILLIAM RIGG'S RECOMMENDATION.

JAMES McCALLUM, HUSBAND OF ARABELLA GOODMAN.

My daughter's name is Elizabeth Augusta. I have a copy of the obituary printed at the time of my husband's death which I enclose. Alfred's father left a sketch of family history from Ogle Riggs and Elizabeth Musgrave to the death of his William's first wife, she with her first born and son died on the first anniversary of her marriage. He had two wives after that. Alfred's Mother dying in 1830, my daughter does not know a living relative of her father's. I once knew Charles and Augusta Baldwin and their mother Aunt Abigail and cousin Maria Abbott.

There was an oil painting of Henry and Sindinia Riggs but I have no idea where it is. We have an oil portrait of Wm. Riggs at the age of 33. He fought in the Civil war.

OBITUARY

Alfred Riggs died at his late home, 337 Locust Street, Holyoke, Mass, July 5th 1903. He was born in Fairfield, Vt., April 16th 1828.

On the paternal side there has been great longevity, several of his near ancestors living to be over four score and ten; and his physicians said his great vitality would have carried him to a hundred years had he not been deceased.

Mr. Riggs was a veteran of the Civil War, having enlisted as a recruit in Co. H.B. Regt. Vt. Vol. Inf. Dec. 26. /63. He was sent to the hospital in Oct. 1864 and was discharged therefrom at close of war, bringing home a mere shadow of his former self and a complication of diseases with which he has suffered much, but battled bravely, until death closed the struggle.

In April 1891 he was utterly prostrated, being perfectly helpless and seemingly at death's door for many days. But the professional care of Dr. E.

R. Brush of Cambridge, Vt. a good constitution and skillful nursing prevailed and after many weeks he rallied. All through his illness he was greatly troubled for breath and could only sleep upon his right side bolstered high with pillows for over a year after.

Funeral services were held at his late home in Holyoke on the evening of July 7th. His remains were sent to his old home in Vermont, Hem. on Sept. 16th 1853. His funeral in Vermont was largely attended. Delegates from J. B. Richardson Post Fairfax being present. Comrades from Post Ten served as bearers and he was laid to rest in the Cemetery, a beautiful flag being placed on his grave, which was presented by Kilpatrick Post, and was wound around his casket and buried with him. A wife and daughter and one brother living in Oregon survive him. Two sons sleep beside him.

He was a man of tender heart and conscience, modest and unassuming, one, whom children instinctly loved and trusted, and a most devoted husband and father.

## MALE LINE

## ELEVENTH GENERATION

Michael Musgrave Riggs, (William, Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Edward) married first a widow with two children, her maiden name was Elizabeth Ball (Author—A remarkable coincidence, for in 1680 Michael Musgrave married Elizabeth Ball and 200 years afterwards his namesake and descent Michael Musgrave (Riggs) married also Elizabeth Ball). She was born in New York 1833 and died in Telimanca, California, at that time being divorced from Michael, on the grounds that he was constantly away from home to her very serious disadvantage. Michael married secondly the widow of a neighbor who died of consumption in less than a year He married thirdly Mary, daughter of Dr. E. S. Austin, who was living in 1907 when the author last heard from her. They had one daughter Nancy who married a man de Witt and had several children.

## MALE LINE

## THE TWELFTH GENERATION AND THE LAST

George Riggs (Michael, William, Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Edward.)

LETTER FROM GEORGE RIGGS, the sole surviving male of the line at whose death the Sussex family ceases in the name of Riggs.

Mrs. Harriet Riggs of Holyoke, Mass, is my Aunt Alfred Riggs her husband being my Father's brother. They used to live in Vermont State. I enclose my Father's obituary notice:

Michael Musgrave who died in Medford Oregon on Saturday Feb. 20th 1903, was born in Milton, Vermont, 1827, making his age at death a few months over 76. He came to Oregon in 1853 having crossed the plains with an ox team. Soon after reaching the Rogue Valley he located a Government donation land claim near Phoenix, Jackson County, and upon this he resided until 1894, when with his family he moved to Medora. Mr. Riggs was a member of and class leader in the M.E. Church for many years. He was married three times, his last wife Mary (Austin) Riggs surviving him. Two children are living George of Point Richmond, California, and Mrs. Nancy De Witt of Little Shasta, Calif. There are several grandchildren and one great grandchild. The funeral was conducted Feb. 21st to Phoenix Cemetery.

### George Riggs Continues

I cannot recollect much my Father told me, and I have not known much about my family beyond my Father's name and the name of his brother Alfred. I remember as a boy receiving a letter from Alfred's boy asking me to come and visit him, as they had a large sugar orchard and I would have a nice time. I never heard again.

I married Annie Laura Griswell. We had two children, Henry Lee born March 29th 1883 died 1884, and Grace May born Sep. 2nd 1886. As my son is dead it is as you say I am the last of the male line to bear the name which fact when I thought about it gave me a lonesone feeling and made me very sad. It all seems like a dream until you sent me the Riggs pedigree dating back to the sixteenth century (with its great array of Riggs kinsmen, and a drawing of the Riggs arms rightfully my own) I was only sure of the name of my Grandfather William of Vermont. I will soon go back to my old Oregon home and place a monument over my Father's grave.

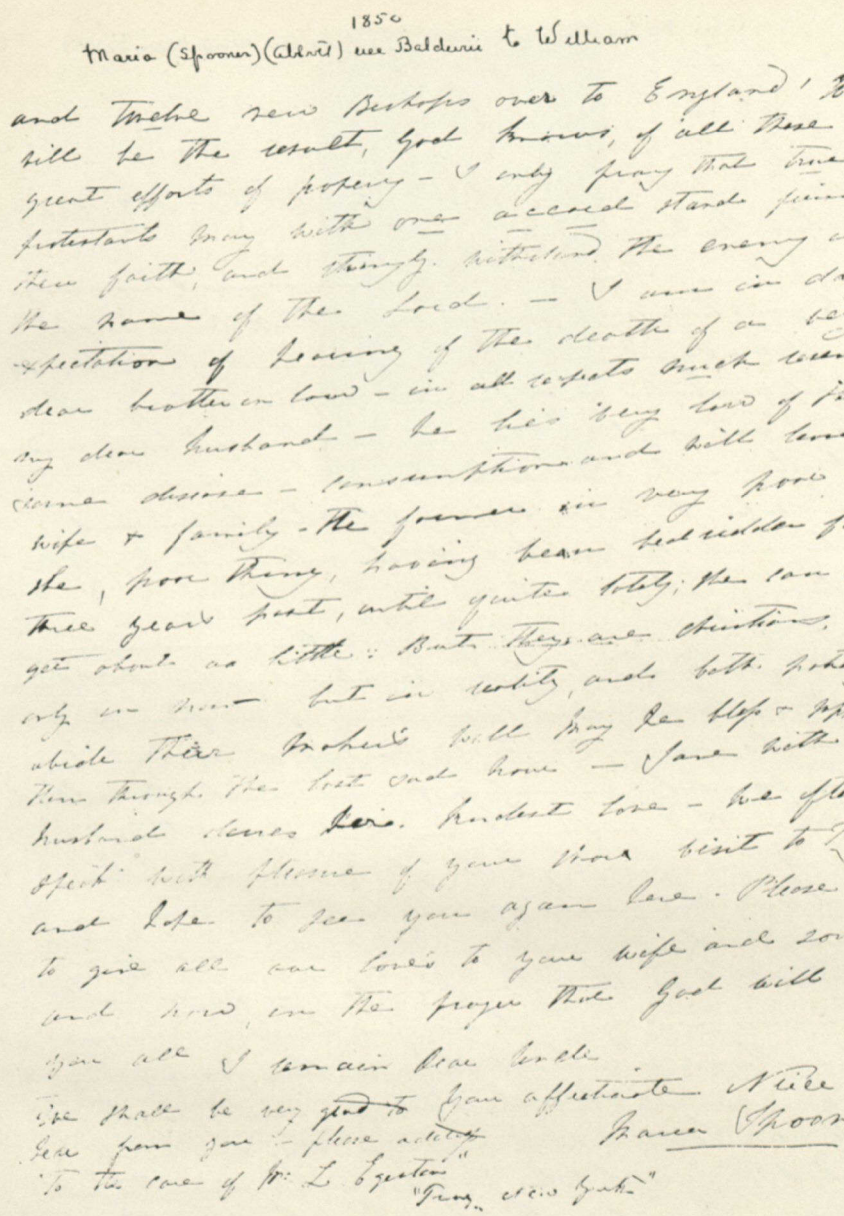
## FEMALE LINE—NINTH GENERATION

## BALDWIN—RIGGS.

### Children of William D. Baldwin and Abigail Riggs

(Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Edward)

Maria born 1809, married 1st J. R. Spooner, 2nd Francis Abbott, widower; William born 1810; Jane born 1812; Louisa born 1814; Emma born 1816; Harriet born 1819, married Robt. Scott; Augusta born 1822; Edward and Emily born 1825; Charles born 1827; Edgar born 1830.


1850
Maria (Spooner) (Abbott) nee Balderie to William

and twelve new Bishops over to England! What will be the result, God knows, of all these great efforts of popery - I only pray that true protestants may with one accord stand firm in their faith, and through victory the enemy in the name of the Lord. - I am in daily expectation of hearing of the death of our very dear brother in law - in all respects much resembling my dear husband - he has very low of this same disease - consumption and will leave a wife & family - the former is very poorly the latter, poor thing, having been bedridden for three years past, while quite lately, has contrived to get about as little: But they are christians, not only in name - but in reality, and both patiently abide their Master's will may he help & support them through the last and hour - Jane with her husband leaves here. Kindest love - he often speaks with pleasure of your visit to Troy, and hope to see you again here. Please also to give all our loves to your wife and sons; and now, in the prayer that God will bless you all I remain dear Uncle
Yrs shall be very glad to hear from you - please address
Your affectionate Niece
Maria Spooner
"To the care of Wm L. Egerton"
"Troy, New York"

## MARIA ABBOTT'S LETTER.

### FEMALE LINE—TENTH GENERATION.

Children of Lebbons Egerton and Jane Baldwin

(Abigail, Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Edward).

Catharine Elizabeth, died 1892; Lebbons, married Sallie Bronson, died 1898; Maria Augusta, married Charles H. Wilson, M.D., 1891, died 1901; Jane Baldwin, died 1867; Charles Devereaux, died 1856.

Chas Baldwin Son of Abigail & William (See Story Many Pages)

St. Johns C.E. Sept. 26th 1840

My dear Uncle,

It is truly a long time since I have written to you & have only to accuse myself of not doing so ere this. It was August as intended this summer to go out to visit you, but unexpected illness prevented her from so doing. She has been very poorly for some time and just able now to leave her bed, to which she was some time confined. She sends her kindest love to you and thinks perhaps that next winter she will be able to fulfill her intention of visiting Hartford.

We have had a most sickly season this summer in St. Johns, the Cholera being very prevalent here for about two months & which carried away many of our friends & acquaintances, in Montreal (& in fact all over Canada) it has prevailed, & has only just now ceased. How thankful we are that our family has escaped it & though we have all been unwell yet thank God we have been spared from that quick & fearful death that so many have been victims of. It was indeed melancholy my dear Uncle to see three of our friends young & in health taken away in so short a time, for three days running did I follow as a mourner to the grave three of my young companions one of them had been for some time ill, but the other two were sudden deaths. Never did I attended the funeral of three companions above mentioned.

Your dear Nephew Charles Baldwin Jr.

H. C Goodman

CHARLES BALDWIN'S LETTER.

ALSO SIGNATURE OF HENRY CALVIN GOODMAN, BROTHER OF THE AUTHOR.

MERCY EGERTON.

Miss Mercy Cobbold Egerton has been a very kind correspondent. Through her sympathy in the work of compiling these memoirs the author is able to reproduce the silhouettes of Mercy Cobbald and her husband Savage Cobbald, M.P.; shadowgraphs before the time of photos. Also old pictures of Louis (Riggs) Trill and Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin taken late in life.

On her father's side Miss Egerton was of the distinguished birth—the most honored in America—as her ancestor was a Plymouth pioneer and the first among them all.

(1) William Bradford; (2) Wm. Bradford married Alice Hanson 1584, he died 1591; (3) Wm. Bradford, Governor of Plymouth, Passenger on Mayflower, married Mrs. Alice Carpenter Southworth; (4) Major and Deputy Governor of Plymouth married Alice Richards; (5) Joshua Riply married Hannah Bradford; (6) Samuel Egerton married Alice Ripley; (7) William Egerton married Lydia Barstow; (8) Asa Egerton married Eunice Storrs; (9) Lebbons Egerton married Catharine Doty; (10) Lebbons Egerton married Jane Baldwin, daughter of Rev. W. T. Baldwin and Abigail Riggs Baldwin; (11) Lebbons Egerton the third married Sallie Bronson, died without issue.

## FEMALE LINE—ELEVENTH GENERATION.

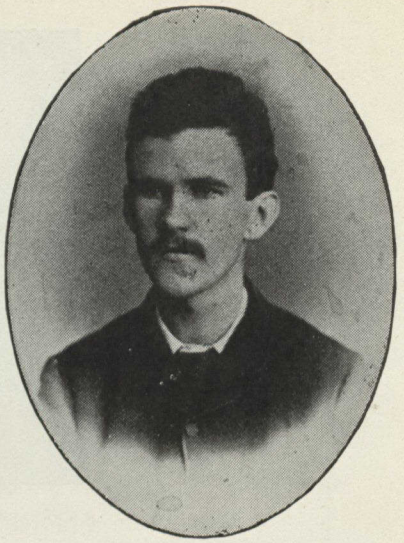
Children of Charles H. Wilson and Maria Egerton (Jane, Abigail, Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Thomas, Edward).

(1) Jane Egerton died 1871; (2) William Arnott married Cecelia Donohoe; (3) Kate Egerton; (4) Louisa Eno; (5) Francis Knight; (6) Florence Baldwin; (7) Sallie Egerton.

## FEMALE LINE—TWELFTH GENERATION.

Children of Robert Scott and Harriet Baldwin (Abigail, Henry, Ogle, Ogle, Ralph, Rafe, Thomas, Thomas, Edward).

MARIA SCOTT



HARRY SCOTT

Children of Harriet Baldwin and Robert Scott: (1) Janet E; (2) Harriet B.; (3) Maria, d. ——; (4) Robert; (5) Alice, m. Richard Holwell, Kingston, Jamaica—they had two daughters and one son who was drowned in Muskoka; (6) William D. m. —— and has two sons; (7) Francis L.; (8) Marion G.; (9) Annie, m. and has one daughter; (10) Henry, m. Carrie Platton and has two children, Stewart and Jessie.

Charles Baldwin m. Florence Bourne and had one daughter.

It was through Janet Scott that the valuable oil paintings of Squire Henry and his wife Sindenia were added to my ancestral portrait gallery. Copies of these original pictures are reproduced.

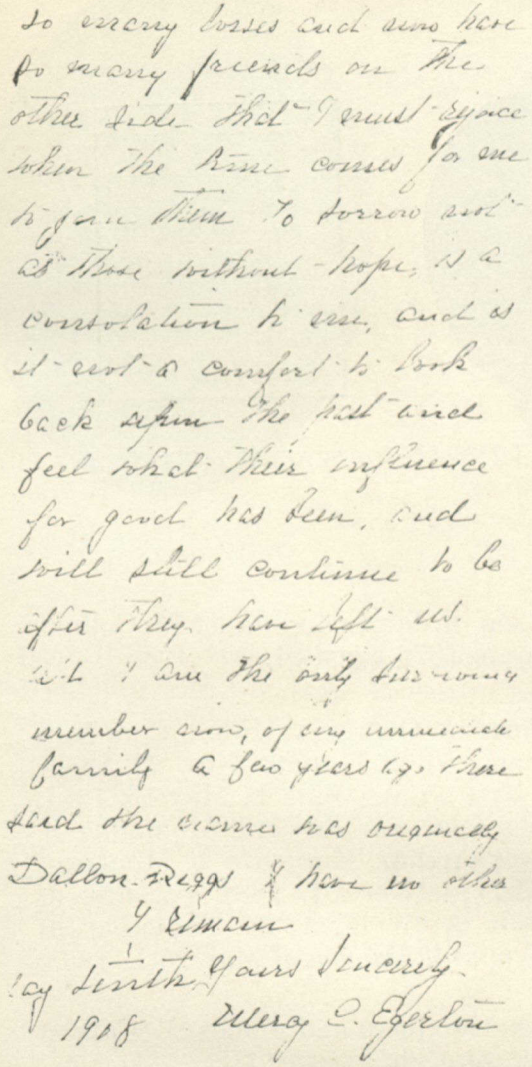
## McCALLUM LINE.

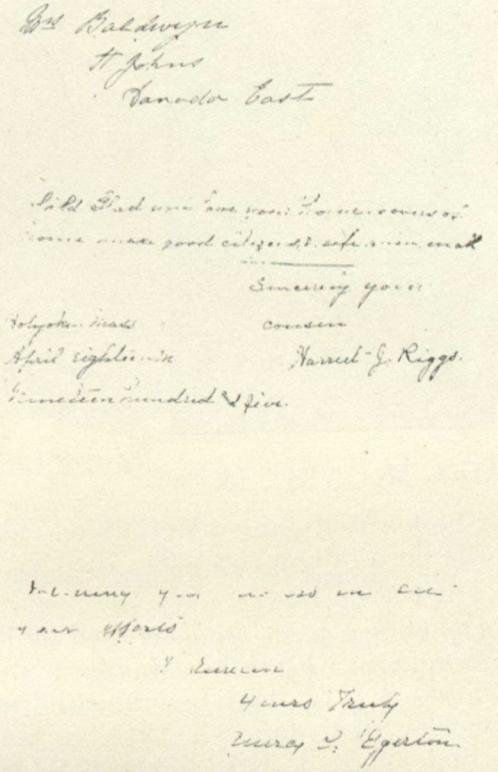
### ARABELLA GOODMAN MARRIED JAMES McCALLUM.

The McCallum's were a wealthy family migrating from Scotland to Quebec. They owned much property in lower Canada. They lived sumptuously and the author remembers as a child hearing that they had the finest turn-out in Quebec, the harness being "gold mounted."

The sister of my grandfather, Arabella Goodman, (at that time attending her mother Martha Goodman's ladies school) a beautiful society belle, made what was then considered the best match in the historic old city of Quebec, where she married James McCallum the son of the wealthy brewer of that name.

Soon after their marriage the young couple moved to "York" (now Toronto); Martha Goodman at the same time transferring her ladies school to that city.





Signatures of
MERCY EGERTON
MRS. BALDWIN and
MRS. HARRIET RIGGS

MISS EGERTON'S LETTER.

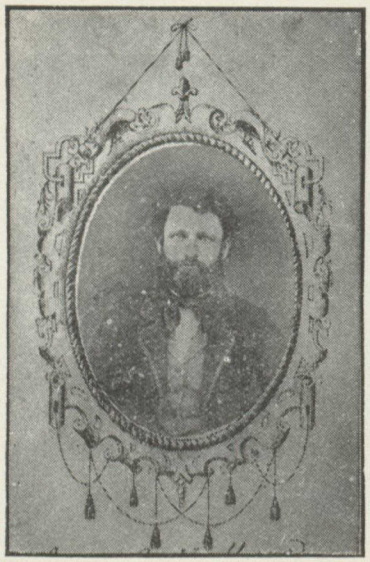
James McCallum and Arabella his wife had 9 children, 35 grandchildren, 55 great grandchildren, 13 great-great grandchildren, and many not recorded.

The following McCallum pedigree was compiled by the kindness of Miss Jessy Thompson of Toronto.

## ARABELLA GOODMAN.

### FEMALE LINE.

Arabella Goodman was born in England Feb. 13th, 1798; died in Toronto in 1881, aged 83.



JAMES McCALLUM, Sr.

MRS. BALDWIN

ARABELLA GOODMAN

She married James McCallum, eldest son of James and Janet McCallum. He was born in Quebec 1794; died in Toronto 1875, aged 81.

Their issue was:

(1) Henry b. in Quebec, died in Toronto, m. Georgina Miller, d. in New Hamburg, Ont.; (2) Eilen Martha b. in Quebec, d. in Toronto Nov. 29, 1886; (3) James d. ——, had several children; (4) Caroline Jane b. May 15, 1824, in Quebec, died Jan. 17, 1911 at Hensall, Ont.; (5) Edward Montague b. Montreal, Que., d. 1912 Uxbridge, Ont.; (6) Arthur Musgrave b. Montreal, d. 1906 Toronto; (7) Frederic Cobbold, M.D., b. Dec. 31, 1834 Toronto, d. 1909 Hersey, Mich.; (8) Jessy Georgina b. April 13, 1838, Toronto; (9) Cuthbert b. Toronto Sept. 26th, 1841, m. Annie M. Bowman May 20th, 1865, no children.

Henry, the first child of Arabella Riggs Goodman and James McCallum m. Georgina Miller who d. in New Hamburg, Ont., had issue:

(1) Isabella Miller l. New Hamburg; (2) Jessie Georgina m. as second wife my father Edwin Goodman, M.B., St. Catharines, Ont., d. Oct. 1912, no issue; (3) Frederick Henry lived Hamburg; (4) Catharine m. Herbert Hamilton.

## HAMILTON.

By Eloise (Hamilton) Butler.

Herbert Hamilton was the descendant of a distinguished family. The founder in Canada was the Honorable Robert Hamilton, youngest son of John Hamilton, of Bolton, England, and tenth in descent from Alexander Hamilton of Silverton Hill, whose brother James Lord Hamilton was the ancestor of the present Dukes of Abercorn. These two brothers traced their ancestry directly to Sir Gilbert de Hamilton 1314.

DR. BALDWIN

CUTHBERT McCALLUM

The Hon. Robert Hamilton came to Canada about 1780 and was originally in partnership with the Hon. Richard Cartwright. In 1791 Mr. Hamilton was made a member of the First Assembly for Upper Canada, which office he retained until his death in 1809. He was also the first Judge of the District of Nassau and a member of the land board awarding grants of land to U. E. Loyalists. He married Mrs. Catharine Robertson, nee Askin. One of their sons was Alexander Hamilton who married Hannah Owen Jarvis, and their youngest son Augustus Owen Herbert married Kate Caroline McCallum, their issue being: (1) Owen Alexander Frost; (2) Eloise who m. Alban W. L. Butler; (3) Kathleen who m. Ralph C. Murton; (4) Gerald Musgrave Terrance.

ST. CATHARINE'S HOME TOWN OF FOUR GENERATIONS OF GOODMANS WAS NAMED AFTER CATHARINE HAMILTON.

THE CITY OF HAMILTON ALSO NAMED AFTER THE FAMILY THE HAMILTONS OF QUEENSTON.

1314 Sir Gilbert de Hamilton m. Douglas.
1339 Sir Walter de Hamilton m. Marjoris Gordon.
1378 Sir David de Hamilton m. Isobel Ross.
1392 Sir David de Hamilton m. Janet Keith.
1398 Sir John N. (Lord of Codyon) m. Janet Douglas.
1460 Sir James (Lord of Codyon) m. Janet Livingston.

from Abigail Baldwin day of His Reign

Abbotsford Springs August 25
1845

My Dear Brother,

Augusta wrote to you a few days since to say that you might expect Emma with myself to pay you the long promised visit, she then told you that I had met with an accident which has made me very lame, I now write to say how very sorry I am and disappointed that at present I am obliged to give up the idea of coming to see you as both my legs are so inflamed and I feel so ill otherwise, I am just able to sit up to write you this, knowing that if you have received her letter you will be looking out for me dear Willie do let us hear from you – if it please God I may get well again, I shall live in hopes of seeing once more, I have various things to say – My dear Charles is gone with Harriet and her Children down below Quebec to the salt Water, I trust they will be benefitted by it, Charles is by no means a strong boy often has been obliged to quit his Studies, on account of his ill health thank God the rest of us are well, Jane is much better we received letter from Maria & Jane last week – Edgar is still at School in Montreal, he is grown a big Boy and is taller than myself, he is now 15 years of age, and Charles 12, how time flies – as we are boarding Jane Augusta has been very busily engaged in getting our things put together, she is very tired and begs that you will accept together with the rest of your family her kindest love, – Dear Willie excuse this concise letter and believe me ever to remain your affectionate Sister

Abigail Baldwyn

SIGNATURE OF ABIGAIL BALDWYN.

Among the children was James Hamilton and Alexander Hamilton. As we have chiefly to do with Alexander Hamilton and his descendants we will first consider his line.

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1419 Alexander Hamilton | of Silverton Hill | —— | | |
| 1512 James Hamilton | " | " | " | m. Douglas. |
| 1525 John Hamilton | " | " | " | m. Somerville. |

Can it be a Fact that I am the Last of the
male Decendents
Posiable. and Here I. Have lived all these years and
never knew Scarcely anything about my Fathers
Peoples. Oh it Seems almost a Dream

Returning to the Riggs Im Sorry to Say
that I Have no Son living our First Was a Boy
I also intend to Go to my Old Home in Oregon
next spring The Place of my Berth and Place a

Stone Monument at his Grave
Im Ever your
Wm. O. Rigg

1538 Andrew Hamilton " " " m. ——.
1547 Alexander Hamilton " " " m. Catharine Hamilton.
1592 Sir Alexander Hamilton " " " m. ——.
1642 Sir Robert Hamilton " " " m. Elizabeth Baillie.
1649 Sir Edward Hamilton " " " m. Marion ——.

Among the children of Sir Edward and Marion was Sir Robert Hamilton. Whence the present Baronetcy of Silverhill. They had also:

——Hamilton of Provan m. third wife.

W. Hamilton, minister of Bolton, m. Marguerite Caithness.

1714 Jno. Hamilton of Bolton m. Jane Wright and had issue:

(1) George Hamilton who m. Eliza Dickson.

(2) John Hamilton who married Grace Dickson.

(3) Jane Hamilton who marrried —— Henderson.

(4) Our own ancestor Hon. Robert Hamilton, of Queenston, Ontario, Canada's first judge (of the district of Nassau). His first wife was Mrs. Catharine Robertson, after whom St. Catharines was named. His second wife was Mrs. McLean. Their children were:

1854

Give my kind regards to
your Father, Mother, and
Elizabeth. May we all
soon meet, and the friendship
that has sprung up as a bud
upon me to the flower—
bearing the sunshine of
confidence, affection, and
happiness. May we live—
to be Christian family on
earth, and no root of bitterness
springing up to trouble us; but
seeking each others interest—
and love happiness, may
we dwell on earth in peace,
fearing God until we are
called to an happy home in heaven,
Give kind love to my dear Uncle
your love affectionate Cousin
Augusta Baldwyn

LETTER OF AUGUSTA BALDWYN.

(1) Robert Hamilton who married Mary Bigger; (2) James who married Catharine Warren; (3) Samuel; (4) George Hamilton who married Levenia Jarvis who gave the City of Hamilton a portion of land—the site of the present city—called the Gore, and the citizens in turn called the place Hamilton; (5) Alexander Hamilton married Hanna Jarvis and had H. Owen Hamilton who married Catharine McCallum and had:

(1) Eloise Hamilton who married Alban Butler; (2) A. O. F. Hamilton; (3) G. M. T. Hamilton; (4) Kathleen Hamilton who married Ralph C. Murton and had Aline, Kathleen and Eleanor.

## A FAMOUS ROYAL LINE.

Alexander Hamilton, the famous friend of Washington, is a member of this family.

We will now refer to a collateral family going back to 1460.

We before stated that Sir James Hamilton had two sons Alexander and James, and that Alexander was our Hamilton ancestor.

James Hamilton married Mary, sister James III. They had two children. James became Earl of Arian whence sprang the Dukes of Abercorn: while Elizabeth, the other child, married Mathew Earl of Lennox, that had John of Lennox who married Ann Stewart.

They had Mathew Earl of Lennox who married Mary Douglas, neice of Henry VIII. They had Henry Lord Darnley who married Mary Queen of Scotts. They had James VI. of Scotland and First James of England.

## BARRETT-McCALLUM.

Ellen Martha, second child of James McCallum and Arabella Goodman McCallum married Michael Barrett, M.D., born 1815; died 1887 and had issue: Louisa Frances born 1841; (2) Clarence; (3) Walter Henry married Florance Spink, lives at New Jersey; (4) Michael George who married Anna Blauvelt, Brooklyn; (5) Florance Devlin who married Arthur Knudson 1890, lives at New Jersey; (6) Edgar Musgrave Riggs, married, no children.

## FEMALE LINE.

James, the third child of James McCallum and Arabella Goodman was married and had several children.

## ARNOLD-McCALLUM.

The fourth child of James McCallum and his wife Arabella was Caroline Jane McCallum. She married George Duggan Arnold May 17 1860, lives in London.

They had issue: (1) Ada Ellen born 1861, married James McArthur; (2) Frederick George born March 7th 1862, married Ada V. Pattison Sept.

8th 1885, live in Buffalo, N. Y.; (3) Abner James born Dec. 19 1863, married Lilly Swabby 1896; (4) Harry born August 17 1865, married Anna Jennett Robson 1888, lives at Hansell, Ontario, no children.

## McCALLUM-TAMLIN.

The fifth child of James McCallum and Arabella his wife—Edward Montague—married Harriet Tamlin and had issue: (1) Walter, who was married; (2) Jessie, of Uxbridge; (3) Alfred, who married; (4) Katharine, who married Mr. Sproule and had one son; (5) Henry, lives at Lake Michigan, U.S.A.; (6) Florance, who married Mr. Cameron; (7) Frederic. (The sixth, seventh and ninth children of James McCallum and Arabella his wife died without issue).

## ELLEN (McCALLUM) BARRETT DIED FEBRUARY 29TH, 1886.

### Funeral of Mrs. Barrett.

The funeral of Mrs. Barrett, wife of Dr. Barrett, took place yesterday afternoon from her late residence, No. 204 Simcoe street, and was largely attended. The pall-bearers were Messrs. George R. R. Cockburn, William Wedd, James Brown, George M. Evans, Dr. Richardson and M. Berthon. The students of the Toronto School of Medicine, to the number of 200, and those of the Ontario Veterinary College, to the number of 300, attended and marched from the house to St. James' cemetery. The burial service of the Church of England was read by the Rev. H. G. Baldwin. There were numerous floral tributes including pieces from the colleges mentioned and from the Woman's Medical School. At a meeting of the students of the Ontario Veterinary College the following preamble and resolutions were adopted: "Whereas, it has pleased an all-wise and abiding Providence to remove from our midst the loving wife and dear companion of our esteemed and honoured professor, Dr. Barrett, thereby adding to his weight of years the burden of grief and sadness, therefore be it resolved, that we the students of the Ontario Veterinary College do hereby express our love and heartfelt sympathy for the kind and fatherly professor in his great affliction; that we present to him with these regulations a floral tribute as an additional token of that love and sympathy; and that we attend the funeral in a body."

## THOMPSON-McCALLUM.

The eighth child of Arabella (Goodman) McCallum and James McCallum was Jessy Georgina, who married Christopher Joseph Thompson August 25th 1885. He was born in England March 17th 1817 and died in Toronto August 1st 1884. They had issue:

(1) Clara Jessy born April 28th 1856, lives at Toronto; (2) Christopher William born June 26th 1858, lives at Toronto, married Jean Craig; (3) Georgina Frances born October 27th 1860, married Henry C. Hamilton, lives at Toronto; (4) Joseph Parkins born November 1st 1862, married first Mary Walmsley who died 1890, married second Eleanor Weldon, lives at Toronto;

(5) Maurice Goodman born 1865, married Gertrude E. Pyke, lives at Toronto; (6) Blanch Arabella Ellen born 1867, died 1868; (7) Frank Cuthbert born 1869, married Margaret L. Towers, lives at Toronto; (8) Ida Arabella born 1872, died 1874; (9) Mabel Bessie born 1875, married Harold Burton Hutchinson, lives at Toronto; (10) Edwin Barrett born June 19 1877, lives at Toronto, married Florance M. McKay and had Frances Maud Evelyn born 1909; (11) Reginald born March 2nd 1880.

## HAMILTON-McCALLUM.

Catharine McCallum, daughter of Henry McCallum, married Herbert Hamilton and had: (1) Owen born 1875, lives at Ottawa; (2) Eloise born 1883, married Alban Butler 1912, lives St. Catharines; (3) Kathaleen born 1884, married Ralph C. Murton, lives at Toronto; (4) Gerald born 1888.

## BARRETT-CAMPBELL.

Louisa Frances, daughter of Michael Barrett and Ellen (McCallum) Barrett, married Herbert Campbell 1862 and had: (1) Herbert Duncan born 1864, married Annie McCrae; (2) Helen Louisa born 1874, married Henry Ferguson; (3) Walter Scott; (4) Edith Boswell born 1887, died 1894.

## BARRETT-KNUDSON.

Florence Devlin, daughter of Michael Barrett, Sr., and Ellen (McCallum) Barrett married Arthur Knudson and had: (1) Helen; (2) Edith; (3) Pauline; (4) Theodore; (5) Irene.

## BARRETT-BLAUVELT.

Michael George, fourth son of Michael Barrett, Sr., and Ellen (McCallum) Barrett, married Anna Blauvelt and had: (1) Eloise, who married Andrew F. Wood 1909; (2) Bertie.

## BARRETT-SPINK.

Walter Henry, third child of Michael Barrett and Ellen his wife, married Florence Spink and had one daughter Florence who married William Hicks 1903. They had five daughters and one son.

## BARRETT-ROBBINS-BRIDGE.

Clarence, second child of Michael Barrett and Ellen Martha (McCallum) Barrett, married first Georgina Brooklin Pacific Robbins who was born 16th June 1846 and had issue: (1) Ellen Louisa born 14th January 1871; (2) John Robbins born 1873, died June 10th 1874; (3) Isabella born 21st April 1874; (4) Daisy born 21st April 1877, died 28th February 1880.

He married secondly Nettie Harding Bridge; no issue. He lived in Salt Lake City, Utah.

## THOMPSON-WARMSLEY-WELDON.

Joseph Parkins, fourth child of Joseph Thompson and Jessie (McCallum) Thompson, daughter of Arabella (Goodman) McCallum, married first Mary Warmsley and had: Marion B. Warmsley born 1890. Married secondly Eleanor Weldon and had: Eleanor Audrey born 1909.

## THOMPSON-PYKE.

Maurice Goodman, fifth child of Joseph Thompson and Jessie (McCallum) Thompson, married Gertrude E. Pyke and had: (1) Muriel Gertrude; (2) Gordon Maurice born 1900; (3) Kathaleen Mager born 1902; (4) Margery Emily born 1906.

## THOMPSON-TOWERS.

Frank Cuthbert, seventh child of Joseph Thompson and Jessie (McCallum) Thompson, married Margaret L. Towers and had: (1) Margaret Jessie Helen born 1902; (2) Madeline Marion born 1904.

## THOMPSON-McKAY.

Edwin Barrett, son of Joseph Thompson and Jessie (McCallum) Thompson, married Florance McKay and had: (1) Frances Maud Evelyn born 1909.

## THOMPSON-CRAIG.

Christopher William, son of Joseph Thompson and Jessie (McCallum) Thompson, married Jean Craig and had: (1) Georgina Jessie born July 3rd 1888; (2) Christopher Craig born May 7th 1894; (3) George Craig born September 22 1896; (4) Jean Craig born October 5th 1897.

ADA ELLEN.

## THOMPSON-HAMILTON.

Georgina Thompson, third child of Joseph Thompson and Jessie his wife, married Henry C. Hamilton and had: (1) George Coulthard born 1885, married Kathaleen Ruser; (2) Harry Sidney born 1887; (3) Robert Hector born 1898.

## ARNOLD-McARTHUR.

Ada Ellen, first child of G. D. Arnold and Caroline (McCallum) Arnold, married James McArthur and had: (1) John Arnold born 1885; (2) Carrie born 1887; (3) Annie born 1889; (4) James McPherson born 1891; (5) Harry Hamilton born 1893; (6) Helen Rutherford born 1896; (7) Kenneth born 1899.

## ARNOLD-PATTERSON.

Frederick George, second child of D. G. Arnold and Caroline (McCallum) Arnold, married Ada V. Patterson and had: (1) Alene Fern, married F. Brennan; (2) Abner Harold born 1889; (3) George Winton born 1901.

## ARNOLD-SWABY.

Abner James, third child of D. G. Arnold and Caroline (McCallum) Arnold, married Lilly Swaby and had: (1) Ailsa Swaby; (2) Charles Ridout; (3) Doreen Coles born 1900; (4) Edward Douglas born 1902; (5) Robert Black.

## THOMPSON-HUTCHINSON.

Mabel Bessie, ninth child of Joseph and Jessie (McCallum) Thompson, married Harold Burton Hutchinson and had: (1) Bessie Doris born 1894; (2) Frances Jean born 1896; (3) Ralph Burton born 1898; (4) Doreen; (5) Frank Hemming born 1904; (6) Harold Bruce born 1908; (7) Kenneth born 1913.

## HAMILTON-MURTON.

Kathaleen, third child of Herbert Hamilton and Catharine (McCallum) Hamilton, and granddaughter of Henry McCallum, married Ralph C. Murton and had: (1) Aline born 1908; (2) Kathaleen Eleanor, born 1912.

## ARNOLD-GRAHAM.

Abner Harold, second child of Frederick George Arnold and Ada (Patterson) Arnold, and grandson of D. G. Arnold and Catharine (McCallum) Arnold, married Ada Graham and had one child, Authea Victoria.

## CAMPBELL-McCRAE.

Herbert Duncan, first child of Louisa Frances Barrett and Herbert Campbell (Louisa Campbell—Ellen Barrett—Arabella McCallum), married Annie McCrae 1897 and had: (1) Margaret Louisa born 1899; (2) Roy Herbert born 1891; (3) John Barrett; (4) Alexander Barrett; (5) McCrae.

## CAMPBELL-FERGUSON.

Helen Louisa, second child of Louisa Barrett and Herbert Campbell (Louisa Campbell—Ellen Barrett—Arabella McCallum), married Henry Ferguson and had: (1) Cuthbert McCallum born 1904; (2) Helen Mary born 1906, died 1906; (3) Henry Murray Stuart born 1909.

## McARTHUR-OSBURN.

John Arnold, first child of Ada Ellen Arnold and Jas. McArthur (Ada Ellen McArthur—Caroline Arnold—Arabella McCallum), married Victoria Osburn and had Helen Victoria.

Dr. Michael Barrett as the Author remembers him was a man of distinguished presence and greatly admired and respected by his contemporaries. He loomed large in the public eye as an educationalist, and his many benefactions in Toronto will last for all time as a monument to his public spiritedness.

He was founder of the Woman's Medical College of Toronto and lectured in Toronto Medical Schools and Veterinary College, and also first English master in Upper Canada College for over 30 years.

Christopher J. Thompson, Sr., was 2nd English Master for 35 years in Upper Canada College, Toronto, receiving his appointment from Lord Elgin. He was widely and favorably known as having identified himself with the scholastic growth of Upper Canada in what are now to us "The Earlier Days."

HENRY McCALLUM.

## OLD LETTERS.

The contents of these letters throw a sharp side light on the lives of members of the family circle who have gone. A garish light—penetrating

## ERRATUM AND ADDENDUM

Unfortunately the firm which was formerly printing this volume very carelessly completed the printing of several pages dealing with the McCallum descendants, without having the proofs read by myself. This necessitates several corrections, as follows:

Wherever the name Arabealla Goodman occurs, it should read Arabella Riggs Goodman.

Page 230, paragraph 2, the last words "He fought in the civil war," should be eliminated.

Page 234, signature of H. C. Goodman is out of its proper place in the book.

Page 236, words under cut should read, instead of Maria Scott: Marion G. (Dolly) Scott.

Page 238, under cut, instead of James McCallum (Senior), the title should read, James McCallum (Junior), son of James McCallum Sr. This photo is placed in the wrong position in the book.

Page 243, last paragraph: James McArthur should read John McArthur.

Page 244, fourth paragraph: Marriage date of Jessy Georgina McCallum and Christopher Joseph Thompson should read, August 2nd, 1855.

Last paragraph on same page, fourth line, should read, May Walmsley, not Mary Walmsley.

Page 245, first paragraph, fourth line, word Hutchinson should be spelt Hutchison.

Second paragraph, third line, the name Kathaleen should be spelt Kathleen.

Page 246, in the first, second, third, fourth and fifth paragraphs the name Joseph Thompson Sr., should read Christopher Joseph Thompson.

Addendum: First paragraph (add the name of a child born to Joseph Perkins Thompson and Eleanor Weldon) Dorothy Hope, b. 1914.

Addendum. In the last paragraph, second line, add Georgina Jessie married Ernest Banting, 26th May, 1915. Also add to paragraph, Christopher Craig is a second Lieutenant in the 104th Battalion; and under the cut, to the words Ada Ellen, add the word Arnold.

Page 247, first paragraph, first line should read Georgina Frances (Thompson), third child of Christopher Joseph Thompson, and the Christian name Jessie (Thompson) should be spelt Jessy.

On the third line, instead of Kathaleen Ruser, the name should be Kathleen Reesor.

Addendum, to first paragraph: Harry and Robert have enlisted, Harry in the second battalion, and Robert in Battery 48, as trumpeter.

In the second paragraph, second line, James McArthur should read John McArthur; and in the third line Annie should read Anna.

Addendum. To this paragraph add: James McPherson is a Lieutenant in the 70th Battalion.

Third paragraph: The heading Arnold Patterson, the word Patterson should be spelt Pattison; the same change in the second line of the paragraph.

In the fifth paragraph the name Hutchinson, in the heading and the second line, should be spelt Hutchison. In the fourth line the word Hemming should read Flemming, and after the name Kenneth should be added the name Goodman.

Sixth paragraph, spell Kathleen, instead of Kathaleen, first and third lines.

Seventh paragraph, second line, spell Patterson, Pattison, and change Catharine (McCallum) to Caroline McCallum.

Eighth paragraph, third line, instead of Margaret Louisa, make it read Marguerite Louise, and add the words, Jessie Newport Baldwin, March 11th, 1916. In the last line make the name read, instead of Alexander Barrett, Alexander Bruce.

Addendum. Add to the paragraph: Alexander Bruce and McCrae are both at the front.

Page 248, second paragraph, make James McArthur read John McArthur.

Page 233. The name Lebbons Egerton occurs twice.

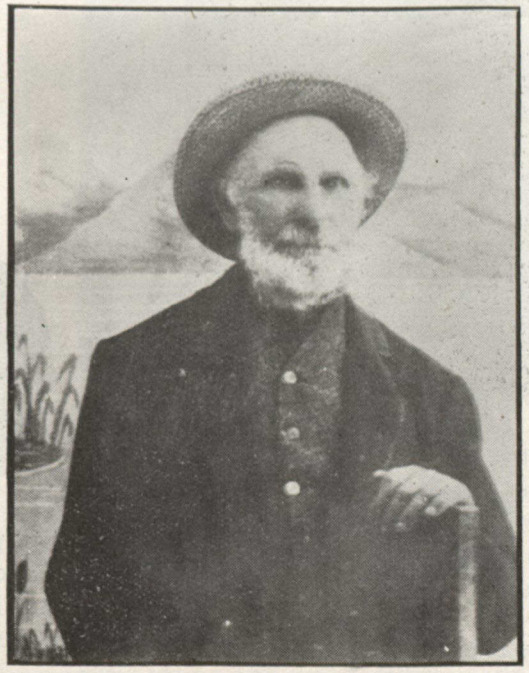
Page 235, third paragraph. The name. Lebbons occurs three times The name should be spelt Lebbens.—See St. Matthew, 10:3.

Addendum. Fifth paragraph, William Arnot Wilson died 5th of March, 1915.

Harriet (Rude) Riggs, wife of Alfred Riggs

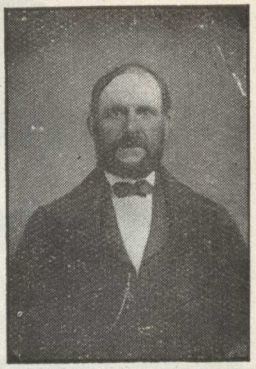
Elizabeth Riggs, Holyoke, Mass.,
Daughter of the late Alfred Riggs and
Harriet (Rude) Riggs.

Third wife and widow of
Michael Riggs, Jr.



Michael Riggs shortly before his death.
The Oregon Pioneer

This is the house where Michael Riggs, after all his wanderings and all his marriages, went to his eternal rest.
Left to right: Michael with his third wife, their daughter Nancy DeWitt and child.



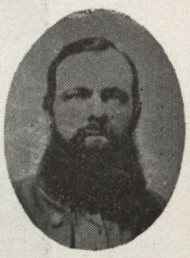
Michael Riggs, Jr. in middle life.

George Oscar Riggs, last of the male line, and his wife, Laura Riggs, and daughter, Grace Mae Riggs.

This photograph is known as "The Three Sisters." They are the second, eighth and fourth children of Arabella (Goodman) McCallum.

From left:

Ellen (McCallum) Barrett
Jessie (McCallum) Thompson.
Caroline (McCallum) Arnold.



Alfred Riggs, from a minature presented by his daughter Elizabeth Riggs, for these memoirs.

Arabella (Goodman) McCallum
In the prime of life.

Fred H. McCallum, son of Henry McCallum and Georgina Miller.

Hamilton Arms.

Georgina Miller, wife of Henry McCallum, and mother of Fred McCallum, New Hamburg.

Eleoise Hamilton, daughter of Augustus Owen Herbert Hamilton and Kate Caroline (McCallum) Hamilton.

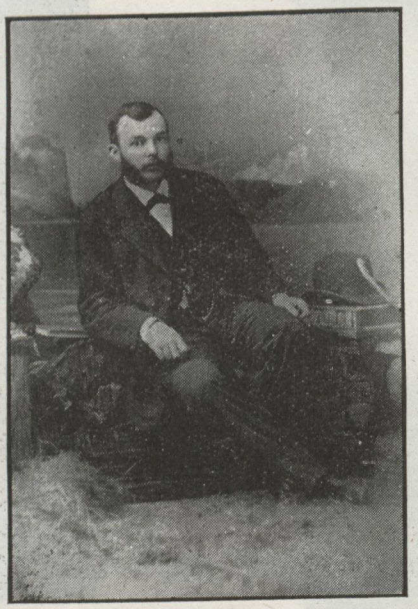
Louisa (Barrett) McCallum, daughter of Dr. Michael Barrett and Ellen (McCallum) Barrett.

Jessy Georgina (McCallum) Thompson and her boys. Left—Standing: Edwin Barrett, Christopher William, Frank Cuthbert, Maurice Goodman. Sitting: Joseph Perkins, Mother, Reginald.

Walter Henry Barrett, son of Ellen Martha and Dr. Barrett.

Florence Devlin Barrett.

Daughter of Dr. Michael Barrett and his wife Ellen (McCallum) Barrett, who married William O. Knudson, and is livin New York.

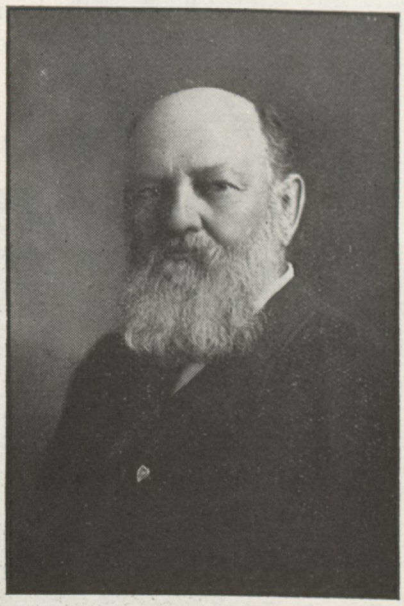


Michael George, son of Ellen Martha and Dr. Michael Barrett.

Mabel Bessie, daughter of Jessy Georgina and Christopher Thompson, and wife of Harold B. Hutchison.

Georgina Frances, daughter of Jessy Georgina and Christopher Thompson, and wife of Harry C. Hamilton.

Clara Jessy, daughter of Jessy Georgina and Christopher Thompson



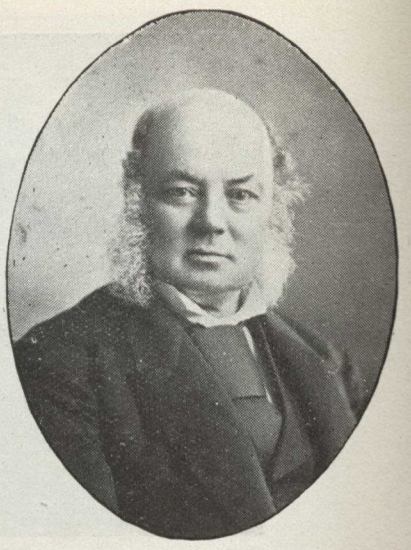
Dr. Clarence Barrett, son of Dr. Barrett and Ellen Martha McCallum, nee Barrett.

Christopher J. Thompson. Who married Jessy Georgina McCallum, daughter Arabella McCallum, nee Goodman.

Ellen Barrett, daughter of Arabella (Goodman) McCallum, who married Dr. Michael Barrett, of Toronto.

Mercy (Riggs) Cobbald. This silhouette, as well as that of Mr. Cobbald, were cut from black paper with scissors. They are from the original in the author's possession. This was before the days of photography.

They were presented for the Memoirs, by Mercy Egerton.

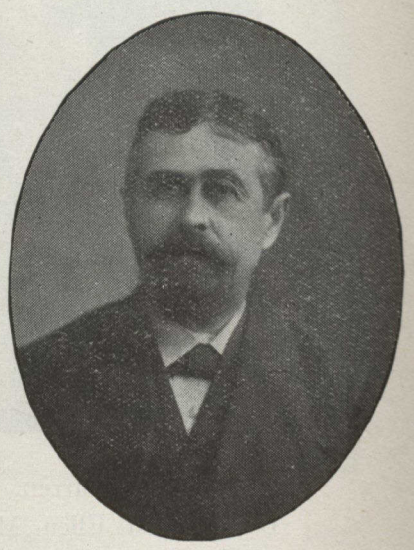


The late Dr. Michael Barrett.

Prominent citizen of Toronto, and noted educationalist. He assisted in bringing Upper Canada College and other scholastic institutions to a high state of perfection. Among several public benefits due to his energy, he instituted the Medical College for Women, and at his death had earned a place on Toronto's honor roll of great men.

Caroline McCallum, who married G. D. Arnold, and who was a daughter of Arabella (Goodman) McCallum.

Savage Cobbald, M.P.



G. D. Arnold, who married Caroline Jane McCallum.

James McCallum, Sr.
Husband of Arabella Goodman

Arabella Goodman (late in life).
Wife of James McCallum

Daniel McCallum, the Quebec brewer; brother of James McCallum, Sr.

Rosena McCallum.
Wife of William Gerrard Ross and daughter of Daniel McCallum and mother of H. G. Ross.

H. G. Ross.
Son of Rosena (McCallum) Ross.

The Late Stewart Ross, son of H. G. Ross.

Children of Mrs. Underhill—
daughter of H. G. Ross.

## EARLY McCALLUM HISTORY.

James McCallum came from Scotland to Quebec as a poor boy about 1785, and worked his way up from nothing. His marvellous Scotch thrift and energy enabled him, as the years went by, to amass a considerable fortune. A race is always proud of her self-made men, and James McCallum was one of them. Starting as a humble peddler of tinware, he steadily invested his profits in goods, and as his profits grew he became a wholesaler, importing goods for the retail trade, until at length he owned his own boats and wharves. He marriedJanet McCallum, who came out from Scotland shortly after he did, but was no relation.

In middle life he started in the brewery business. He had a large family. Among them James, Daniel, Colin, Duncan, John, David, Catharine and Rosa.

James McCallum, of our race, was the eldest, and is called Senior in these Memoirs. He was taken into the office of the brewery to assist his father, while the younger ones had the opportunity of getting a more advanced education. When James Sr. married Arabella Riggs Goodman, they received as a wedding gift from the employees a complete set of cut glass, including every possible assortment and size, and all engraved with date and the occasion of the presentation.

James and his wife lived in a sumptuous way, kept seven servants and many horses.

On his leaving the firm he came to Upper Canada with his family. The agreement with his father was that he should receive a regular allowance enabling him to live comfortably. This came for a time, and then ceased.

The present generation has little interest, perhaps, in the financial troubles of their forebears, but the question is so often asked in families: If we were rich once, where did all the money go to?

There is no disputing the fact that at one time the McCallum interests in Quebec were of such magnitude as to attract the attention of the monied men throughout the Continent.

The McCallum brewery was the only one in Quebec. Their brew was celebrated and sent in their own ships, and loaded from their own wharves to every part of the American continent, and even to Europe.

The property held by them became of tremendous value, and one descendant of a collateral line makes the statement that the McCallum holdings in that day represented millions, while the profits from the concern so long as James McCallum the pioneer held control, were so enormous that the family lived in the most sumptuous style, and the legend that their horses wore gold mounted harness is founded on fact.

But James, the hard-headed Scot, could not live forever, and when his son James left the brewery he was an old man. Daniel Sr. took charge and the business continued to flourish. When Daniel Sr. retired and others assumed control, business reverses followed in rapid succession, and it is said that in an incredibly short time the estate dwindled to nothing, the McCallums practically leaving off where the pioneer started, poor and penniless.

My grandfather at one time visited the brewery in the interests of his sister, Mrs. James McCallum, but to no avail. And this is why the remittance of James McCallum stopped, and why Daniel McCallum Sr. was obliged to start a boarding house in Ontario to provide for himself and wife. This is why the McCallums sank from affluence to poverty. To avoid present day heart burnings, family traditions regarding this matter have been left out. Suffice to say that a man named Boswell appeared on the scene in Quebec, and, satisfying himself that the McCallum brewery business was finished, started up a brewery of his own, and secured the McCallum patronage and, now the Boswells are numerous and flourishing in the land.

When Daniel Sr. took charge the estate is estimated as having been worth millions, and if it could have been kept intact would have at a conservative estimate been increased in value to $50,000,000 today.

Daniel McCallum at one time visited his brother James, in Toronto, and is said to have been a most affable gentleman.

## COLLATERAL FAMILY

Daniel McCallum, son of the pioneer, and brother of James McCallum Sr., married, first, Caroline; second,—

Daniel McCallum went to Hamilton and lived there with his second wife on Duke Street. He bought a house, but was so reduced, that they had to keep boarders. His incredible change in fortune was due, as it was in the case of James McCallum, in leaving the business in Quebec to others.

By his first wife, Daniel had (1) William, (2) Daniel, (3) Jane, (4) Annie, (5) Lizzie, (6) Rosina, (7) Carrie (Duffatt).

William McCallum married Annie Brown and had (1) Clifford, (2) Marion, (3) Cuthbert (England), (4) Nellie, (5) Frank (New York), (6) Lilly.

Daniel McCallum married—

Jane McCallum married Daniel McClimmont, and had (1) Jennie, (2) Louisa, (3) Minnie, (4) Wingate, living in New York.

Annie McCallum married (as his second wife) the late Canon Innes, London, Ontario. No issue.

Lizzie McCallum, St Catharines, Ontario, married John L. Gibb, in 1858, at Quebec, and had (1) J. Sidney (Vancouver, B. C.), (2) Gordon, living, (3) Allan, deceased.

Rosina McCallum, married, at Quebec, in 1858, William Gerrard Ross, and had (1) Herbert Gerrard (Vancouver, B. C.), (2) Walter T. (Vancouver, B. C.) (3) William C., deceased, (4) Harry, (5) Alice Rosina.

Herbert Gerrard Ross married Leonora Clapham, in Quebec, 1883, and had (1) Gerrard Stuart, killed in an accident at Ashcroft, B. C., aged 20, (2) Helena (who married Rev. Harold J. Underhill of Vancouver, B. C., and had Margaretta, Fabian and Stuart), (3) Leonora Clapham, (4) Rosina Irene M., (5) Catharine Jean, (6) Marion Alice.

Alice Rosina Ross, married, in 1912, J. Norwood Duffus, of Halifax, N. S.

Thoughts are sentient and survive
To shape the destiny of lives.
For years.
When we are gone—to those who care
They bring protection—or despair,
And tears.

These old letters, are they not thoughts which have travelled down to us through the years, and are living still. Softened by time, they have fulfilled their mission for good or ill, and come to us as blessed memories of the past.

In pondering over the lives of our ancestors we shall feel an inclination to avoid, so far as possible, their mistakes, and, guided by their virtues, aim for still higher ideals in our sphere of influence, no matter how great or small that may be, so that the cherished thoughts of our ancestors transcribed a hundred years ago may influence the lives of their children's children.

I think we have been particularly fortunate in having a Pepys in the family, in the person of Mercy Cobbald, nee Riggs, who slashed out right and left when she wrote of contemporaneous lives, sparing no one, and praising few, unless they professed the same religious views as herself. We should be thankful that she has been so frank in her criticisms, for allowing for religious prejudices, we can form a just estimate of those who earned her displeasure or good will.

Aunt Mercy's commentaries are so full of the religious cant of her day that they emphasize the fact that whilst our own generation may have deep religious convictions that are not inclined to give expression to their thoughts in the florid language of Mercy's time.

For this reason, and from the fact that much had been written in these letters which might cause unnecessary pain to living descendants, only parts of each letter have been published.

Aunt Mercy has been dead for nearly 75 years at this writing, and as the dear old lady often wrote herself, (after making some particularly caustic remark about a departed relative.):

"Let the dead past bury it's dead. If she had her faults, let us forget them in remembering her many virtues."

It is true she was a trifle fond of gossiping, nevertheless she was a very lovable character, taking her all in all, a friend of the friendless, and charitable to a degree.

Her tendency to comment on the weakness of relatives has thrown a garish side light into our family history, and we can trace with some accuracy how far eugenics has been responsible for the virtues and peculiarities of our race.

So if the verdict was to be summed up from Mercy's letters alone, we should say that our Riggs ancestors were honest, industrious, patriotic and pious; that they suffered much and through all their adversity their name has not been stained by any crime or misdemeanor, and that on the whole they honored God and loved their fellow man. I will not venture to claim that I can distinguish traits of character handed down from generation to generation, but I have strong private views on the matter, the reader may judge for himself.

I sincerely hope that the publication of these letters will not cause the slightest feeling of displeasure, or a wish that it had not been done. It is true that they were never intended for publication, but they possess great value in a work of this kind. We should know how our ancestors suffered and were strong. We should know how they were afflicted and were brave. We should know how they sorrowed as one by one their dear ones passed away, and how, with a firm faith in their religion, and a confidence that if they did their duty and lived this life as cheerfully and bravely and faithfully as they were able, that it was the best way that they could prepare themselves for immortality.

Where a particularly personal reference has been made, the author has placed himself in the position of the nearest of kin, and if he decided that in similar circumstances he would not have been offended, he has sent the matter to the printer. He craves his kinsmen's pardon if he has been mistaken.

Mercy Cobbald was plain spoken. but it was her mannerism: What others thought, she said; but she was saying it to her brother, under the family seal, in a private correspondence. The author realizes a certain responsibility of publishing these letters, and may have treated them apparently with too much flippancy. This has not been meant in a disparaging sense, but for the purpose of bringing out and punctuating by terse headlines the actual news in the letter, and thus materially aiding the reader.

With this explanation the author submits these old letters for your perusal, study and reflections, asking you to consider them with a broad, sympathetic and charitable understanding. This also applies to any other published letters or comments.

## FROM SINDENIA (BUDDEN) RIGGS TO HER SON WILLIAM, OVER 100 YEARS AGO.

### HE MARRIES HIS FIRST WIFE

My Dear Son: July 15th, 1815.

Our long expectation of hearing from you was relieved last week, when, with pleasure, we received yours of May 22nd. We are happy to find that thro' all your difficulties the Lord has been your helper. None ever trusted in the Lord and was confounded. We are glad to hear that you are united to one with whom I trust your affections are congenial, and to her we all join in love, and hope that blessings from on High will attend you both all your days. Our last letter from Martha, dated Jan. 29th, informed us she read in a Halifax paper of your marriage. I hope we shall hear from them soon, as we have not heard since . . . . . Mrs. Baldwyn has had one daughter named Louisa since . . . . . in Cornwall she had been very unwell, but was better. I hope to hear good news from a far country of the wellfare of all our dear . . . . . I hope you had my letter, dated March, 1813, and another in . . . . . the same year, with the account of poor Mr. Read's death. Louisa got the business sold all off and came here and stayed with us till January, when she went to Ipswich. We heard from them a short time ago. Mrs. Read was well, Mercy and Mr. Savage but poorly. Your sister Abigail has had two children since you left England, a son and daughter, now she has four. Your sister Barton has been much afflicted since you were here, with stone in the gall. She was down here for six weeks, last June, she is now better. Mr. Barton and the children were all well last when we heard from them. Mr. B. is in some expectation of having a call to go to Exeter. We don't know, we suppose Mrs. Reed will stay with Mercy till next summer, when we hope to see her again. How strange it must seem to you to see the people riding on the snow, the bells on their horses. What a comfort it is you have living so cheap. Thank God we have provisions a little cheaper since the peace. But what trouble has that Bonapart given all nations. We now hear Louis 18th has ascended the throne. That tyrant of France, Bonapart, is off again. We very much fear he has gone to America, and there perhaps, may blow another dust. Your father says its most likely when all things are settled he may come round again, for we think there will be no peace on the earth while he is living.

Now my dear son and daughter, for I address both as one, let it not be long before you write, as we shall at all times be glad to hear of your wellfare.

Your father and sister join me in love to you both, and friends,

From your affectionate mother,

SINDENIA RIGGS.

## UNSIGNED LETTER

## TO WILLIAM RIGGS

July 15, 1815

My Dear Brother:

It was with the greatest pleasure we received your kind letter, dated May 22nd. Various were the conjectures respecting you as so long time had passed without seeing or hearing from you. I fear my Mother and myself—letter written to you many months ago—reach you, as you did not mention hearing from us in your last. Permit me to congratulate you on your marriage. It would afford me much pleasure could I be introduced to my new sister-in-law, because I think she is a Christian; for without a belief in the Dear Redeemer, you and I well know, my dear brother, all is dismal, all is confusion, but when Christ takes possession of the poor sinner's heart they are low in their own esteem, they will live in peace with all as much as they possibly can. I pray you will give my love to my sister. I shall be happy to hear from her. I hope you are both well. Many of your friends enquire after you, especially Mr. and Mrs. Capron. They would with us rejoice to see you if you should come to your native place again. I must again congratulate you, my dear brother, that you have the gospel preached where you are, and that by a father-in-law. The Lord has indeed brought you out of the horrible pit of clay, and set your feet, etc.

## PRIVATE DIARY OF THE GRANDFATHER OF THE AUTHOR

## HENRY RIGGS GOODMAN

Commenced 1821, when, 21 years old,
having received the degree of Medical Doctor in London. He visits
Grandparents at Easburn, Sussex.

### WILLIAM IV. HIS UNPOPULAR QUEEN

Old-fashioned Blood Letting to Be Discontinued. He prays some money
May Blow His Way

May 1st, 1821—The regular mode of life I admire so much under my Grandma's direction, seems to invigorate me, joined with ye country air and ye pleasing though innocent enjoyment of ye country. I walked with my aunts to-day.

May 5th—Walked to Midhurst with Aunt Mary and paid some visits to old ladies.

May 6th—Went to ye village church and saw ye rustic dames among them Miss Money. In the afternoon walked to Midhurst with Aunt Louisa. Visited Mrs. Charlie . . . . Saw all, even pretty Charlotte.

May 8th—(His first patient) Dressed Mrs. Slaughter's head for the last time, after having her for a few days under my care. The bone is depressed, upon manifold experience it is thought that barring undue symptoms, an operation should not be ventured.

June and July has passed without any particular occurance except a letter from my Mother, and then arrival of Mrs. Cobbald.

In July I formed a determination to go, if possible, to the East Indies or South Africa, and may Heaven be my guide: "Lord on Thee alone will I trust, or grant me grace that I shall be free from the power of Satan."

Grandma remarks that the wind is fair for vessels coming from Canada. May God in His mercy send me speedily a supply of money from that place (from his Mother in Quebec).

Sixteenth of August—At breakfast there was the usual good humor of my grandparents and the recent coldness of my Aunt Cobbald, who rebuked me for my extravagance, doubtless just in Thy sight, O Lord. In a recent letter from Eliza Drummond she informs me that J. Goodman (evidently his uncle, the only mention ever made of him) called at their house and was not aware of his sister U.'s (Utrecia's) marriage.

21st Aug.—This day marks my 21st year. We had fowls for dinner, and I drank the health of my mother, sister, and Mrs. B.'s family.

22nd—The last day to be spent in Easburn.

Left Easburn with the best affections of my aunts and grandparents, I proceed to London with one pound in my pocket, for which I am indebted to Grandma. After paying expenses arrived at my old lodgings with four shillings. All glad to see me. I walked the hospitals with Mr. Andrews. He told me bleeding was too generally had recourse to; that in chronic cases many had died from bleeding, where there was an appearance of inflammation. I met numerous friends, and we toured London. We went to the House of Lords, but were refused admission. We saw the queen returning. The crowd was so small and the noise so little that we walked without much trouble behind the carriage to St. James Square, where carts were standing, an admission being charged to view the queen. There we had a good look at her. She showed herself at ye window continually bowing. She looked anxious, forced a smile, and retired. The crowd scarcely raised a shout or word of praise, their number so few, and they were collected more for curiosity than love to her or her cause.

## A LAPSE OF NINE YEARS—SQUIRE HENRY AND SINDENIA HAVE PASSED AWAY

Mercy Cobbald Buys the Gold Letter Seals With the Riggs Arms on Them From William. All the Old Letters Contain the Wax Impression of the Arms.

Mercy Rejoices That She Is One of the Lord's Afflicted.

## WINDING UP OF SQUIRE RIGGS' ESTATE

### Mercy's Cross

From Mercy (Riggs) Cobbald to her brother William Riggs, April 16, 1829

It is not through lack of affection that I have not written to you all these years. You say that for many years you have drunk deep of the cup of adversity, then I congratulate you, for the Scripture says that "It is through much tribulation we must enter the Kingdom of Heaven." Congratulate me, also, inasmuch that from the cradle to this very moment I have had a severe cross to take up every day, and poor Mr. Cobbald is one of us sufferers. It is nearly 25 years since I came to Ipswich, and every day and every hour has been a constant scene of sorrow and suffering. Some are tried with sorrow; some with pain, losses and crosses; thus are the Lord's people served.

I hope you will value the gold watch our dear Mother requested be sent to you, as long as you live, but as you intimate that the allotment of plate willed to you be sold, and the proceeds sent, this will be done. Would you have any objection to part with the two seals? I should very much like to have them. I will give you four pounds for them. Do you remember in 1790 you brought from London a book for each of your little sisters, entitled "Christ Is All"? This is your birthday, you are 56. How often have I thought of you when passing Nalder's, in Cheapside, and Marshall's (See William's diary), on Friday Street. As for poor old Easburn it would seem dismal to you, the poor old inhabitants gone into another world, and scarcely a house that has not a new tenant. What nice young men our late poor Sindina's sons are, steady, active, and attentive to business. John and Robert are both married and comfortable.

---

## SQUIRE HENRY RIGGS' BEQUESTS

### Moore House, April 2nd, 1830

From Mary Riggs to Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin

On the 15 Feb. Mr. Shotter and myself went to London on that business which I am so anxious to close. I hope before now you have with my

sister and my brother William all received your legacies, which were paid in to the hands of Ellice & Co. to your order. I am occupying Mr. Poyntz house. He has repaired it for me. Beautiful view, I can see the steeple of Petworth church, also Egog and Magog, near Byworth.

Mr. Capron (Author—Elizabeth Capron married Ogle Riggs), at Lodworth, very kindly enquired after you. He is almost blind, and has to be led by a boy.

Your little boy must be amusing company. Kiss him for us.

Your Aff. Sister,

M. RIGGS.

---

## MARY A LITTLE ENGLANDER TO MARIA BALDWIN, DAUGHTER ABIGAIL (RIGGS) BALDWIN FROM MARY RIGGS—1830

I thank you for your kind invitation to visit you. I would like to see your beautiful Lakes, but you should see our Parks. No thank you. I do not wish to change my abode for any place on the Globe.

---

## FROM LOUISA READ (NEE RIGGS) TO WILLIAM RIGGS

Thank you for your kind letter which came with seals for Mercy. We trust you have received your share of the legacy, and five pounds for your share of the articles divided between us, according to your wishes. Mercy also sent four pounds for the two gold seals, and three pounds to pay your expenses for the journey to sign the deeds. These amounts were paid into Ellice & Co., Leadenhall, London, for you. It is seventeen years since you left London, 1812. I doubt if we shall meet again.

---

## BILL RECEIPTED BY WILLIAM RIGGS

William Riggs dr. to The Estate of the Late Henry Riggs, Esq., Easburn.

| 1829 | £ | s. |
|---|---|---|
| February, To stage from Missisquoi Bay to Montreal and back | 2 | 10 |
| Board and Lodging at the time | | |
| Cash borrowed to pay expenses when I walked home from same place | | 10 |
| August. Expenses repaid by Mrs. Cobbold's generosity not included | | |
| Timothy Smith, conveying letter to me | | 15 |
| Feb. 1830. Expenses to and at Montreal | 1 | 10 |
| April. From Montreal home | 1 | 15 |
| | £7 | 0 |

## "AUNT" LOUISA HOPED THAT BELL'S CHILDREN WOULD BE A BLESSING TO HER—THEY WERE

One of them, Jessy (McCallum) Thompson, a very dear old lady, still lives in Toronto

And in turn her children and her grandchildren have "Risen up to call her Blessed"

1830—From Louisa (Riggs) Read to Maria, daughter of Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin—1830.

My Dear Maria:

When you write your Aunt Goodman (My Great Grandmother, Martha Riggs—Author) give our kind love to her and Bell (My Grandfather's sister Arabella Goodman, Mrs. James McCallum—Author). Poor Bell has a large family; I trust all her children will be a blessing to her.

I fear she is not happy, but is very patient . . . . .

---

## ORANGES, ORANGES O!

## THE VOICE OF A CHILD 85 YEARS AGO

My Uncle Henry Goodman's Childish Prattle

## DRESSES WORN FULL IN 1830

## REFERENCE MADE TO THE FAMOUS RIGGS PORTRAITS

1830—To Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin, from Louisa (Riggs) Read—afterwards Trill—1830

We are attending the Parish Church of our late honored parents, Henry (My Grandfather, H. R. Goodman—Author) visited us at Easburn and staid until I had a case made for our dear Father and Mother's pictures. Henry took them to London with him and will send them to you by Mr. Lindsay, but he says he thinks the parcel will be rather too large for him, as he has to travel some distance by land.

(NOTE—These portraits were painted by Thomas Goodman, my Great Grandfather—the London artist. They were willed to Abigail Riggs (Mrs. Baldwin), and at her death they were sent to Ellen (McCallum) Barrett in Toronto. Subsequently they were sent by Mrs. Barrett to Miss Scott, New York (grandchild of Mrs. Baldwin), since married and widowed. They are now in the author's possession.)

We saw poor Anna when in London, she is very ill. It is probable she will not live long. We were glad to find Henry so comfortably settled, but the loss of his wife was a very great trial (My grandfather's first wife). His dear little boy is a sweet engaging child (My uncle Henry), Mr. Barton says he and his family are well.

Over here the young people do not die from lack of clothing, for according to the prevailing fashions the dresses are worn very full, so that it takes 12 or 14 yards to make a dress. I hope your Mamma (Mrs. Baldwin) will receive the pictures safe. Your dear little Charles must be nearly three years old; Henry's little boy is four next summer. When I was in London I bought him a toy donkey with two hampers. When I gave it to him he put an orange in one of the hampers and called out "Oranges, oranges, oranges oh!" Sweet little fellow.

---

## MARTHA THE GOOD

### THE ONLY LETTER THAT CAN BE TRACED

William Riggs Loses His Second Wife—Martha Goodman's Sympathy

1831—From Martha Goodman to William Riggs—1831

You may be very sure I sympathise with you on the loss you have sustained, and which I fear you will feel during life. I trust the Lord will enable you to do the double duties of father and mother to your dear little boys. I have expected to hear from you in vain, Mr. Baldwin also feels vexed and disappointed at your long silence. I hope you will find comfort in the society of your daughter-in-law. Poor Arabella has lost her beautiful Baby, she died of Hooping cough. Bell has since been staying at St. John. Ellen has gone to Townsend school, Missisquoi Bay.

I have nothing more to say about J——. It is folly ever to expect to gather grapes from thorns or figs from thistles. I can only pray that the Almighty will enable us to bear whatever it may be His will to permit to fall to our lot.

My Henry writes in better spirits. Nothing new has occurred in England. I am thankful for having enjoyed better health than usual during the winter, but there has been much sickness prevailing. Many have died, amongst them our neighbors Mr. McKenzie and Mr. Hogg, both of whom, I fear, hastened their end by too great indulgence in liquor. Have you made any sugar this season? Did you have any fruit this year? Your kind neighbor said he would call to take this letter.

It is now two months since I wrote the above, your friend did not call. I will send this to St. Johns.

When my Grandfather was Soliloquising

"GO TO AMERICA, OR NOT GO TO AMERICA?"

He Was the Arbiter in the Destiny of a Race

Mercy Scolds Her Nephew

MONTREAL RIOTS—SOLDIERS FIRE UPON CIVILIANS

STREETS RAN BLOOD

Letter to Dr. Hy. Riggs Goodman, at Islington, England, from his Aunt Mercy Cobbald.

Ipswich, August 15th, 1832.

My Very Dear tho' Naughty Henry:—

I can not let Mr. Briston's kind offer of taking a packet for me to Islington to-morrow, pass without giving you a little scold for not writing me two or three lines when Mr. Stibbing and Mr. Hartshorn returned—by whom I sent a long letter.

I was sadly disappointed. What can be the reason of my not hearing from you when we are to meet at Whitham, but alas this is such a queer, strange and changeable sort of world.

On the first of this month I had a nice letter from your Sussex Aunts. They had received a comfortable letter from your dear Aunt Baldwin. But there has been sad doings at Montreal about an election. Maria was there on a visit at a friend's. The Militia were obliged to fire among the rioters, and the streets of Montreal ran down with the vital stream of our fellow creatures. Will you be so kind as to give the enclosed to your cousin William (present of money). He wrote me a very kind letter and this is a reply. I am glad he appears so happy and comfortable with a good wife and a sweet little girl who arrived in this vale of tears and sorrows one day last June.

Go to America or not go to America, I pray you write and put me out of suspense. Say if you saw William Barton, and if you ever see or hear of the Howells, or how my poor sister Ann is. I should have written to Ann and Robert if I had had time. Farewell, my dear Henry, your Uncle joins me in kindest remembrances to yourself and your sweet boy, and I remain your ever affectionate AUNT MERCY.

## ANGEL OF DEATH BUSY

## MY GRANDFATHER MARRIES MY GRANDMOTHER IN ISLINGTON

William receives his first money from Mercy in 1832. In 1842 it starts to flow in a steady stream

"Gout the cause of the dismissal" of Mercy's Husband, Savage Cobbald, M.P. He leaves her rich

1842—"Mercy to William"—1842

You have never acknowledged the small present I sent you by Henry Goodman, 1832, or written to me since then. I am astonished our Canadian friends have not informed you of the solemn and important changes which have taken place in our family since the removal of our parents to a better world.

Our Dear Sister Anne was taken home to glory on 11th Nov. 1832, and our sister Martha (Martha [Riggs] Goodman). Wonderful that you should not hear that she is no longer in this world. She was taken out of it on 24th Jany., 1837, at Toronto, where she had a house of her own when it was "Yorke."

Arabella (Grandfather's sister) writes that her eldest daughter is married and has two children.

Did you know that Henry (my grandfather—Author) married a second time just before he left Islington. His son by his first wife is clerk in a counting house in Toronto.

If I had known where to direct a letter I would have written before that poor dear, dear Savage, after a whole year confinement to the house by continued and increased affliction, sweetly fell asleep in Jesus, about 3 o'clock, 70 years of age. Abundant entrance into the Kingdom was administered to him. His chamber was like Heaven itself, such glorious views had he of the state of eternal blessedness.

I believe the old complaint, gout, was the immediate cause of his dismissal, it having seized the stomach. The dear creature has left an ample proof of his very great kindness to me and mine, having bequeathed the whole of his property of every description to me, not only for life, but to do as I like with.

I will live where I have lived since 1814. My house had a large and beautiful garden surrounded by a wall, with all kinds of fruit trees. I

have the house and a very handsome income, as the dear creature did not bequeath anything considerable even to his own sister, only 200 pounds as a token of affection, because she is herself abounding in riches.

(Mercy describes a trip around England for her health.)

Is it possible you do not know that poor Barton died, Nov. 17th, 1837, twenty years after his wife, our sister Sindenia, was taken.

He married again about half a year after she died.

Our nieces, Sindenia's children, live with their step-mother at Exeter. Brs. B. and our Niece Eliza attend house and our Nieces Sindenia and Mary keep a school.

John Barton, who married Sister Sindenia, kept a boarding school at Exeter. He had no children by his second wife. Our sister Sindenia had six sons: Henry, died an infant; John; Robert, m. and settled at Hammersmith; Wililam, was a Tottenham Court linen draper (but through the extravagance and folly of a wicked wife, failed, and went to America. We think him dead; and so we think of Thomas, the fifth son, who went to Toronto; Sixth son, Ebenezer, who had the privilege of being taken to glory in infancy.

Mr. Huburn is still our sister Anne's widower. He is in the leather trade, Judd street West End of London. Dr. Spooner, of Montreal, who married Maria Baldwyn (dau. of Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin) died in Barbadoes, of consumption, April 1838, and their only child died at the same time (Author—Dr. Spooner was the first dentist to receive a license to practise dentistry in the Dominion of Canada, or in America. Mercy Egerton has his portrait in oil.)

---

## "UNCLE" WILLIAM IS LOST

Aunt Abigail to the Postmaster at Milton, Vermont, 1842.

Sir:—I take the liberty of writing to ask will you be kind enough to tell Mr. Wm. Riggs that his sister in St. John's requests him to write to her and send his address, as she has something to communicate to him, to his advantage.

If he is not at Milton, will you be so kind as to send a line in answer saying if you know anything of such a person, his address, and so forth. Please address Mrs. Baldwyn, St. John's, Canada, East.

## MY FATHER AND HIS BROTHERS

### The Eternal Family Differences, How Sad They Should Ever Arise

*Mercy Acts the Good Samaritan*

### COW KEEPING ON THE OLD KENT ROAD

### LOUISA'S UNFORTUNATE MATRIMONIAL ADVENTURES

1842—Mercy to William—1842

I have heard from Arabella. Her eldest daughter has three children. As you have heard, Henry married a second time before he left Islington for Grimsby. He had one son by his first wife, and four boys by his second wife, all living. His second wife's mother, Mrs. Holloway, left England for Grimsby with them in 1832.

It was silly for Louisa and Mary to go to law. Sandham had no legal right to act in their case, and he understood no more of business than "Silly Tom Pratt." However, poor Sandham is dead. Let him rest where he is buried at Woolbeding.

Robert said to me sarcastically, "I have received such a letter from Easburn as I think I will have framed as a curiosity (Note—Evidently the sisters or some of them quarrelled over the interpretation of their father's will, for Mercy proceeds as follows:)

However, since I received my share of the parent's estate I put it in the bank. If I had given it to them they would have squandered it. They have not now ten pounds between them. I have given all mine to them, and far more, with interest. I have returned good for evil. Let us seek to bury their wrong doings, for it is now seventeen years ago since it happened. I did not read that part of your letter. Poor creatures, I give them a quarterly allowance.

Louisa rented a house from Mr. Poyntz after her unsuccessful attempt to disturb matters; this was at Easburn, Mary went with her. Louisa got acquainted with a young man named Trill, an overseer on Mr. Poyntz farm, and she was silly enough to marry the man, who was without a shilling. He took all her money out of the bank and put it in the business of cow keeping on the Old Kent Road. Trill soon died, and thus she was left a widow the second time, fond, trusting and penniless, having lost everything, even the money poor Mary lent her—and Read, her first husband left her something "pretty." The good Lord put it into my power to sustain her. I sent for her and Mary to Ipswich and established them on a home here with a comfortable allowance.

Our late sister Sindenia's second daughter Sindenia, is ill and cannot recover.

## NAUGHTY QUEEN VICTORIA

## WILLIAM'S PURSE OF FORTUNATIS

### He Sails With My Great Grandmother for the New World

## MERCY'S MUNIFICENCE

### She Said the Established Church Was Drifting Towards Rome, That was 70 Years Ago and It Has Not Drifted yet—She Was not a Good Prophet.

1843—Mercy to William—1843

I feel desirous that as you are advancing in years that you should not wait until I depart from this life before you share in a portion of which the Lord has bountifully bestowed upon me.

You might be called before me and I would be sorry I had not sent you a better present than the last by Mr. Scott. What bank would be best for me to order a hundred pounds through for you.

We are not young any more. Little Louisa is 55, I am 62, and Mary is 63. When we get together we talk over poor dear Father and Aunt Baker (?). Abigail's second daughter Jane who married a Mr. Egerton, is living in Randolph, Vermont, and Abigail is going to move there. Arabella writes from Toronto that there is much preaching on the second coming of Christ. In England it is thought by many that what is called the established church is fast drifting towards Rome. No wonder; the Holy Writ says it must be so, before the second coming.

Yes, you are right, our young Queen is the daughter of the Duke of Kent, fourth son of old George III. It was remarkable his royal Highness should die exactly the time his father did, January, 1820. I dare say some people would consider the Queen a pious character, because her conduct is good morally and she is charitable. For my part I cannot reconcile a pious mind with one set upon the enjoyment (falsely so called) of plays, balls, and horse races. When I saw you at Bolton, on ton for the last time, in 1812, you were just starting to sail for Quebec with Martha and her children. You had your dog Tyge with you. My dear father said afterwards "What a posse there was at Bolton-on-ton." There was indeed no less than nine of us, and out of that nine six gone to eternity: Father, Mother, Savage (her husband), his brother Tom and Mr. Alldrydge and poor Barton. You, Louisa and I the only ones remaining of the party. My house is the last on the right as you go to Ipswich on the London road. Thomas Buddin, of Chichester (Father of niece referred to in Maria Abbott's letter as marrying Lord Say and Sele—Author), says that when you were a boy he and our man servant rowed you in a boat in the river at Hollist, and you were highly delighted to go to Midhurst or Woolbeding.

## CONSOLATION OF RELIGION

### The Lord Gave and the Lord Taketh Away

### COMPANIONS IN MISFORTUNE

1843—Louisa to William—1843

You have gone through much the same trials as myself regarding the loss of wives, children and property. I have lost husbands (Read and Trill), children and property. The Lord gave and the Lord taketh away; blessed be the name of the Lord.

How good is the Lord to provide for sister Mercy so that she can make us comfortable. Mercy has given half-a-crown each to 16 of the poor of Easburn.

---

## THAMES TUNNEL—PENNY POST

### More Pounds Sterling Presented to William

1843—Mercy to William—1843

I shall be very glad, my Dear Brother, if this letter reaches you before the one I sent off last Sunday. . . . .

I find on application to Bearing Brothers that it will be necessary to send you a Letter of Credit. There is a great alteration in the Postoffice Department in England. We can now send letters to any part of Great Britain for one penny.

Have you heard that the passage under the Thames, called the Thames Tunnel, is finished, and thousands of people are walking from our side to the opposite shore. It was a wonderful undertaking, and a wonderful expenses —a million of money is very far within the mark.

In October, 1839, Mary, Louisa and I (sisters) went into the tunnel and proceeded about 940 feet to the spot where the men were at work. The whole affair is much too marvellous for me to describe. Lit brilliantly with gas, and so beautifully arched with pillars that the effect to me was like the two side aisles of a magnificent cathedral.

What will not John Bull do if he sets his mind upon it.

## MICHAEL'S NAMESAKE.

Mercy Cobbald to Michael Riggs, Jr.

My Dear Michael:

I am so glad you are attentive to agricultural duties as well as Alfred. You cannot think how strange it seems to me that you should call my brother William "My aged Father," and rightly so, since he has had the honor of attaining the age of man according to biblical wrote: Three score years and ten. I remember him when he was a beautiful youth of 18, and also an exceedingly handsome man when I last parted with him in London, which was in the month of March, 1812.

Your signature brought to my remembrance your Dear Uncle Michael, who died in the West Indies, in 1799, at the age of 22. He was a fine young man, and the idol of us all. Your dear Father will recollect how we all felt at Yarmouth when my eldest sister and myself, then a girl of 17, communicated him the sad tidings.

Your Affectionaate Aunt,

M. COBBALD.

---

## MERCY DOES NOT BELIE HER NAME.

1843—From Mary Riggs to William Riggs—1843

I dare say you remember Robert Luff, who lived at Westminster when we left Sussex, 1833. Louisa and I went to enquire after him. They are both he and his wife in the Alms House.

We called. They told us they had saved by hard labor 700 pounds which they advanced to their son to go into business, and he lost it all. They were very thankful for one room and a weekly allowance from Mercy. They are now gone to their Heavenly home. Died in 1838.

---

## EARLY RECOLLECTIONS.

1843—Louisa (Riggs) Trill to William Riggs—1843

I would like to get on a steamer, with Mercy's consent, and go and see you, then back to Dear Old England, "With all thy faults I love thee still, my Country." Ah! I well remember when a child our late Dear Father (Squire

Henry—Author) playing the fiddle and my dancing and humming the tunes, but I forget the particular tune you mention. I remember your being at our cottage at Easburn when I was seven years old. We had something nice for dinner, and our Dear Father said, and he spoke so emphatically, "Now Louisa, you must repeat these lines I have composed for you: 'Now that I have arrived at the age of seven, May I be made an heir of Heaven'." Oh what a mercy to have been blessesd with pious parents. How often have I thought of the little hymns our late Mother used to teach. us "Lord teach a little child to pray," and so forth. Mr. and Mrs. Capron at Lodesworth are both dead. Their son Jack has married a publican's daughter and is conducting the Pointyz Arms. Mr. and Mrs. Pointyz are dead, and the Cowderoy estate sold to Lord Egmont.

Your Affectionate sister,

LOUISA FRANCES TRILL.

---

## "AND THE GREATEST OF THESE IS CHARITY"

1843—Mercy to Willam—1843

Your letter, finished on the 9th of May, arrived this morning—one month in transit. We are all pleased to notice by the engagingly pleasing style it is written that you are well in body and mind.

I have taken your letter to your Dear Sisters Mary and Louisa . . .

I have, through my bankers, given the following order for you: "Please pay to William Riggs of Fairfax, Vermont, U. S. of America, the sum of 100 pounds sterling, through the House of Bering Brothers and Co., London, and Messrs. Prime, Ward and King, their agents in New York." And may the blessing of God attend the use of this money to you.

I am much pleased this token of sisterly affection appears so acceptable to you, but indeed your kind heart much overrates the matter. For I would be much worse than a "brute" if I should take no delight in sharing with my relatives the earthly good which a kind Providence has so abundantly bestowed upon me. My mode of living is so retired that I can, without inconvenience, offer a present like this without intruding upon my capital a single shilling.

I have been spending a pleasant time in London and Hammersmith. Here our poor sister Sindenia's third son resides. He is named Robert Musgrave Riggs, and is carrying on the business of a linen draper. He is married but has no children. He is the eldest living son, his brothers Henry and John being taken from their earthly home. His brothers William and Thomas, if alive, are somewhere n America. Oh how I thought of you when I passed the end of Friday Street, where you once did business with Mr. Marshall (see William's diary), and also when I passed Naldre's in Cheapside.

I saw Mr. Huburn, once husband to our dear Sister Ann, and his two daughters. One of them, nemed Martha, is married to a Mr. Lewis, an attorney. They all live together in a pretty residence in Dobson Terrace, about midway between Elphenstone Castle and Kensington Common, towards Clapham.

We are so sorry that the late Mr. Baldwin should have so far forgotten the respect due you as his wife's brother, to treat you the way he did. But he is gone, and we will endeavor to bury his faults with him. . . . He never wrote a single line to any of us in England. He left for America in the month of April, 1813. However, amidst all his queer ways we are desirous of doing away with the impression that you might think that you had any affect on his not writing to us. No. it was worse, for we did not know where to address a letter to you from the time you left "Rattlesnake Hill." But we will let all these things pass away.

---

## THE NEW RAIL ROAD.

### Corn Laws Will Be Abolished—Mercy a Good Prophet This Time

1843—Mercy to William, London, Aug. 18, 1843

Your kind interesting letter reached us in three weeks. It used to take six weeks, and we thought it a quick passasge. We now see what wonders can be accomplished by the power of steam, and as for the rail roads, truly I think our ancestors would think such exploits necromancy. What! Travel without horses or any animal by land at the rate of thirty miles per hour. It seems almost incredible. I think your daring aeronaut would hardly dare to fly through the air, and if so, who will accompany him. I am sure I would not.

I indeed should be highly delighted to come and see you, notwithstanding the native roughness of the Vermonters. Perchance their odd manners might merely provoke a smile, and they in their turn, my odd manners might make them smile. Tell your dear boys they must set their faces against the naughty manners of the Vermonters.

I have been to Hammersmith. Visited Robert Barton. He cannot find his brothers in America. Might as well try to find a tiny needle in a load of hay. They first worked for Ashton & Muzzy, No. 8 Cedar St., New York.

I agree with you on John Bull and the Corn Laws. I believe they will be abolished in a short time.

I am now in London at Moore's Fields. Since you were here the Hospital is done away with, and Moore's Fields changed to "Finsbury's Circus." I am in a genteel house near the Circus; rent is 200 pounds per annum, besides rates and taxes. You may well think it is elegant.

Thomas Budden, now 74, is delighted to hear of your welfare. Aug. 18, your dear sister Sindenia's first baby Eliza, completed her 46th year. How wonderful, What a dream. . .

## "AUNT" ABIGAIL IS MISUNDERSTOOD

Horich, Essex, June 12, 1844

Mercy to William.

(Mercy tells of her delightful trip with her sisters to and about London.)

I remember my Dear Father's adage "Health is Life's choicest blessing." I thank you for enquiring at New York about Barton. I fear William and Thomas Barton have gone the way of all flesh.

I am grieved at the painful shyness for so long existing between you and your sister Abigail (Mrs. Baldwin).

If you knew of the trials that poor thing had undergone you would not attribute her seeming want of attention to lack of sisterly affection. Poor Baldwin in dead and gone, and let us bury our differences. He had a bad temper. . . . In regard to his leaving her in possession of riches of this world, it is quite the contrary. After his death she found to her utter astonishment that there were debts to pay amounting to 300 pounds, and, poor thing, all she had was his 50 pounds per annum from the Government, as the widow of a clergyman sent to the Colony by them. She left St. John's and went to live at East Randolph, Vermont, to live cheaper and save up enough to pay his debts. (Then follows a recital of Abigail's long illness.)

And now after eleven years we receive our first letter from Abigail, where she is at Alburg Springs. No intentional unkindness towards you ever rested in her bosom. Far from it, she mentions you in very affectionate terms. Write to her. You two are the only remaining branches of our family in America. Mary is nearing the grand climatrice—nine times seven years.

---

## MERCY'S GRATUITIES TO WILLIAM STILL CONTINUE

My Grandfather Feeds Peaches to the Pigs. William Barton Murdered.

Mercy's Pious Pronounciation of Pleasure on the Passing of Friends.

William Riggs' House in America, with 2 Acres of Ground, Cost $1,000.

## DANIEL O'CONNELL'S TRIAL

## THEY BURY THE DEAD SO SOON IN AMERICA.

1844—Mercy to William—1844

I shall be sixty-three next August. It would be too much for me to travel across the vast Atlantic.

I suppose you have heard about the great Irish Agitator, Daniel O'Connell, who has been trying to bring about the repeal of the Union between England and Ireland. There has been a wonderful bustle about his trial for sedition and rebellion. He is punished with a very heavy fine, 2,000 pounds, and imprisoned for a year.

I think you will say I have reserved the most blessed intelligence till the last: Cousin Thomas Buddin (brother of Sindenia [Riggs] Budden) has been taken Home. He died peaceful and happy, poor dear man.

P.S.—Abigail has seen in a newspaper the wreck of a steamer between New York and Mexico, and among the drowned was one Barton. This, I think, is our poor Nephew.

Ann's youngest daughter, Mrs. Lewis, had a little girl born on the Queen's birthday.

These words came forcibly into my mind when I received your letter: "Freely have ye received, freely give," and I cannot resist the desire of my heart to send another one hundred pounds. Receive it with sisterly love and affection. I have been to Kensington and took tea with dear sister Ann's husband and two daughters. Her son-in-law and their three-weeks old daughter, the Lewis's, were of the party. The tunnel is complete, I went in on the Rotherhite side and came out at Wapping.

What an interesting burying ground is Bunhill Fields. There Bunyon is buried. I saw the tomb of this dear man of God . . . (Author—My kinsmen, the Holloways, are buried there. See end of Holloway Memoirs).

Sister Sindenia's three daughters are still single, residing with their excellent Mother-in-law at Exeter. I like Mrs. Barton very much. I spent a week there in 1835. Eliza often enquires after her Uncle William.

I have an astonishing crop of apricots, peaches, nectarines this year. Henry Goodman told me he had so many in Grimsby, Niagara Township, Canada, sometimes, that he has actually fed his pigs with the delicious fruit.

It is reported that poor William Barton was robbed and murdered a few miles from New York, when on a business trip. He had collected a sum of money for Ashton & Muzzy. This news as a result of your writing the firm, though you were at the time unsuccessful.

How I laughed at your barn being removed by oxen. When I was in Easburn in the summer of 1842, I took melancholy pleasure in sitting on the tomb which covers the mortal part of our dear Parents. In 1839 I visited the tomb of poor Barton and "Sinney" (Sindenia as we used to call her). They are interred in the graveyard of Castle Street Chapel. Then poor Ann's grave I often pass when going to Grove Chapel, Camberwell. But those of poor Michael and Martha are far away indeed—one at Kingston, Jamaica; the other at Toronto, Canada. They are only gone a little while before.

How very strange people in America should bury their dead so soon. Dear Savage (her husband) was kept for nine days. How cheap your houses—a new house with two acres, 200 pounds. My house in Ipswich cost eighteen hundred pounds; with improvements, 2,000 pounds. It is a freehold. Dear Savage's sister Belle is still living, Savage's brother Thomas died in 1835. He left his widow 40,000 pounds. It is feared by many that the Roman Catholic Religion will soon be the established one in England.

The Bartons and Huburns are all pretty well. Rev. Saml. Huburn, Anne's only surviving son, has hardly yet got over the loss of his wife, who died in child bed, August last. They had been married a little over a year. The baby is living.

---

## AUNT ABIGAIL AND UNCLE WILLIAM RECONCILED

Alburg Springs, August 25th, 1845.

Abigail (Mrs. Baldwin) to William.

Augusta (her daughter) wrote to you a few days since to expect Emma (daughter) and myself to visit you. I have met with an accident which renders me lame, and I regret I am obliged to give up the idea of seeing you. My Dear Charles (her son) has gone with Harriet (daughter) and her children below Quebec to the salt water. Had a letter from Maria and Jane (daughters) and Edgar, son, is now 15 and is attending school at Montreal. Charles is 18. How time flies.

Your Affectionate Sister,

ABIGAIL BALDWIN.

---

## PRESIDENT POLK.

## AUNT MERCY TAKES HER FIRST RAIL ROAD TRIP

1845—Mercy to William—1845

I am glad you have a President agreeable to your mind in the good Mr. Polk. I beg of you not to hesitate to tell me if a few pounds would be of service. I have been to Kent to visit your late sister Anne's daughter Anna, now 35. She is very amiable and gets a respectable living by instructing young ladies. She resides at Norwood, Surrey.

I went to Rochester by rail road. I was first afraid, but when seated my fear vanished. I did not like the dark, dismal tunnels through the high Kentish chalk hills. One was a mile and a quarter long (She describes most interestingly a grand trip with Anna through Kent). One day we rode on donkeys to see a beautiful waterfall.

---

## THE RIGGS' ARISTOCRATIC FRIENDS

### "Tiger," Like Ulysses' Dog, Dies of Joy.

### 1846—Mercy to William—1846

The late Earl of Egremont (Estate next to Hollist, where young Goodman was painting when he met Martha) has bequeathed Petworth with its stately mansion to Colonel Wyndham, his natural son, with the understanding that he drop his mother's name, and assume the title of his father—but not the title which went to a nephew.

Death has made a sweep among the great (Riggs' friends) Mr. and Mrs. Poyntz and their two sons, the sons being drowned, and Lady Montague. Mrs. Poyntz saw her boys drown from a window of her house, by a boat upsetting. Her husband was in the boat. He and one other, out of nine, were saved. When she saw her husband alive she fell on her knees on the beach before the great crowd of excited people and said: "I thank Thee, God."

Lord Robert Spencer and Lady Spencer are dead; very few we knew when children at Easburn are now alive. Betsy Newman still lives. The elder Tippens and Mrs. Baker are dead. They struggled with the deepest poverty.

Henry has written from Grimsby, that he fears his sons' business there will not succeed. He was in low spirits. He said you advised him not to consent to Henry Jr. going into business, but it was too late. The Bartons were much better off when in good positions with salaries, but hateful pride was the downfall of them all.

We used to call your pretty dog "Tiger." "Ti." Speaking of your American dog "Tiger" dying of poison reminds me of how your English dog "Tiger" died of joy at seeing you after a long absence at sea in the frigate Amelia, just like Ulysses dog.

It is a hundred years ago this day when our beloved mother entered this world, and she lived in it 82 years, and went to Heaven. She was born at Chichester, June, 1746, departed Nov. 17th, 1828.

The Baldwins are all ill—Abigail, her two single daughters, Jane and children, and Harriet and her infant son. Maria devoted all her time and attention to Jane's children.

I may yet get the proceeds of my bonds (Louisiana State). If I do I shall divide most of it between relations. If I do not I am not concerned. Life is short and eternity is at hand. All will be fulfilled, the Good Book says. "Bread and water shall be supplied."

I have all my mother's letters written to me since 1804 when I was married.

---

Maria Abbot, formerly Spooner, nee Maria Baldwin, daughter of Dr. Baldwin and Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin.

## ALFRED RIGGS COMES IN FOR MERCY'S CRITICISM

William Asks for Ten Pounds More and Gets It, but Mercy's Purse Is Held A Little Tighter. Mercy Discloses a Family Secret to William Maria Declines an Offer of Marriage. Bless the Lord for New Journeying Mercies.

1846—Mercy to William—1846

I should be sorry, dear Brother, that for the sake of ten pounds more your alterations (to house) should not be completed. I will strain a point and send it. Maria Spooner is an amiable lovely creature. I will tell you a secret; it is a grand secret, and I am sure Jane will not hear of it through you, for she would be greatly hurt, that her dear sister should exercise so much self denial on her account. Maria refused a most advantageous offer of marriage from a good man, entirely because she would not leave her dear sister, whose health was very indifferent, with so large a family to care for. We might look in vain, I think, among thousands of young women to meet with such another instance of real kindness and philanthrophy.

We, Louisa and I, having some business in London, went by rail road, August 19th. We spent four hours in London, and at 3 started again for home. We made the sixty-nine miles in two hours and a half, thongh we stopped at every station, and before six in the evening we were comfortably seated at our own tea table. Bless the Lord for "travelling mercies." Read the 121st Psalm for Christian travellers.

On the 3rd of August I received a letter from Montreal. The Theatre Royal is burnt down, and many lives lost. A Mr. Scott and daughter Jane were burned to death. I fear these may be relatives of Mr. Scott, who married Harriett Baldwyn.

Oh, it would gladden my heart to hear of your poor deluded son Alfred had repented. I wish he would return to you and utter the language of the prodigal: "I will be wise and go to my father, etc." Why did Michael go so far away from you (Author—The trouble at that time was simply that the boys did not wish to live in the house with their father's third wife. Being grown to maturity they desired to be independent of a stepmother).

---

## WILLIAM STILL BASKING IN THE SUNSHINE OF MERCY'S LAVISH BOUNTY

### Uncle Henry, Alfred Riggs, and James McCallum Come in for Mercy's Criticism—"Grandmother" Whittiker.

1847—Mercy to William—1847

That poor boy Henry Goodman, Jr., has embarked on the London docks, for America. I suppose he has gone to Grimsby, or to his poor dear broken-hearted father at St. Catharines. Poor Henry Goodman, his father, told me he had sold his pretty premises at Grimsby for the express purpose of putting his son into business with Mr. Ballachey. The boy would never give us any reasonable cause for his coming to England. He said it was for pleasure, and he had only been in business a few weeks. Here, he is spending his money for nothing at all. It's an inexplicable mystery. He dressed like a young nobleman. He got none of my money. That would be putting a cup of poison into his hands.

I told you the only surviving son of our late sister Anna took the money she left at her death to put him through College, and he is now Vicar at Croxton. I visited them. I found Samuel at Croxton with one little orphan girl of four. His wife died at 21, after five years of marriage. He feels his bereavement keenly. I said I regretted I had brought no toy and this strange little child said if she might choose she preferred something useful to wear.

I have had a letter from Arabella McCallum. They have a grant of Government land at Owen Sound to farm. Bell has plenty of trouble and sorrow in various ways. I have no patience with Bell's husband James, he is always a gentleman, but . . . . . Bell seems divinely supported.

My kind love to you and Mrs. R., and to Michael, and—if penitent—to Alfred.

I told you about the death of our sister Sindenia's second daughter, with internal cancer. Her suffering was so terrible that it was a relief to those about her when it was over. She went through much from the "Fiery darts of the Evil One, but Jesus rebuked him and put him to flight." At the last she asked Mary to sing her favorite hymn, "How Sweet the Name of Jesus Sounds," and and then the last lines:

"And may the music of Thy love
Support my soul in death."

The dying one said, "It does, it does indeed support my soul in death."

And so she fell asleep in Jesus.

The child of Sindenia's daughter Martha married Mr. Lewis, they have a son they call Thomas Riggs, and a daughter they call Martha Riggs. They live at Camberwell.

Our late consin Thomas Budden's daughter has been married to a gentleman named Toye (See comments on Say and Sele) on the eighth of last September; a man of large fortune, keeping his carriage. They reside in a beautiful villa near Monmouth, on the border of Wales.

I deeply sympthise with you in the conduct of your son Alfred . . Henry Goodman, Sr., is having a similar experience.

Youny Henry is now in Ipswich, I could not keep him. My servant was too delicate and ill. I sent him to his Aunts, who had a strong servant girl, and they managed him very well (?), especially as I paid two guineas a week for his board.

In three weeks he left for London. His grandmother Whittaker is so infirm she cannot look after him. He is in lodgings there, and so he will remain until he has spent every cent, on playhouse and such trumpery.

He told me his father and mother had left Grimsby, and are now residing at a place called St. Catharines, in the Niagara District, Upper Canada. I am sending you 30 pounds. I pray God for your boy and Henry's boy.

Why do you not grow English wheat instead of maze if it is better?

Young Henry says that Mr. Scott has failed in business. I hope it is one of his strange mistakes.

I have recently returned from a trip for my health. In London I stopped at the "Old Boor." I visited the hop fields of Kent. Where would the hops be without the poles? Where would we stand in the divine life without the Almighty's support?

It is very good of you to suggest sisters Mary and Louisa living where Aunt Evans (?) used to live; but as Providence has bountifully given me means to sustain, I would not take from them the means of making two poor widows comfortable.

---

## PRESIDENT POLK'S DEMANDS ARE JUST

MacAdam Invents a Way to Make Good Roads—My Father and His Brothers Win Nearly All the Prizes at Grantham Academy.

April 16th, 1845—Mercy to William—1845

A man named MacAdam has turned his thoughts to improving roads with success here. He has all the large stones collected and employs poor men and boys to break them into the size of walnuts. The small stones thus broken are strewn all over the road. Very soon the carriages press them all into the ground, thus the roads are capital, and even as the bowling green. This is called MacAdamizing. I am very sorry to see that some men in our Government say they will go to war with Mr. Polk if he insists on what seems to me, the just claims of the United States Government. Many thanks for the inforformation. I have papers from St. Catharines. I see Henry Goodman's sons are carrying everything before them at the Grammar schools, winning most of the prizes. But I hear nothing about the eldest son.

---

## "YOUNG HENRY" HAS A GAY TIME IN "OLE LUNNUN."

He Harrows the Feelings of His Ipswich Aunts—Aunt Mercy Smites Him With the Sharp Sword of Her Wrath.—Ladies Smoke Tobacco In America.

1847—Mercy to William—1847

Young Henry Goodman arrived in Ipswich, April 5th. It is a dreadful mystery his coming here and leaving his business. The money he so secured he is getting rid of here in London at a shocking spendthrift rate. I packed him off to his aunt's and paid two guineas a week for his board for three weeks. Play houses and such trumpery are dear to him. He went to London often.

He said it was a false report about his going to marry. He says such odd things. For instance, that Arabella's eldest daughter Ellen visited you in Vermont, and he said it was the fashion in America for ladies to smoke tobacco. I pray God he will redeem young Henry and your son Alfred (Alfred fought and died for his country, and was a fine fellow. Uncle Henry was a worthy California business man, and honored his father, bringing peace to his grey hairs—Author.)

---

## ABIGAIL'S UNFORTUNATE INVESTMENT

The Firm of Ballachey & Goodman—My Grandfather Comes in for Mercy's Disparaging Remarks.

1848—Mercy to William—1848

Our nephew, Henry Goodman, Sr., cannot shake off that sad backwardness to write letters. As a boy he was naturally low spirited, and since he has grown to manhood the many complicated trials that have assailed him appear to have increased that lamentable depression of his spirits. All we can do under the circumstances is to pray the Dear Lord, etc., etc.

My bonds are with Behring Brothers, the greatest financial house in the world, and I have a guarantee under their hands for their safe return. Their agent went to Louisiana and demanded payment from the State. They said that if the Planters proved to them that they were unable to pay that they would redeem them. The planters replied they could pay, but must have time. They offered to give an additional bond to the holders for the interest, and to begin to pay interest in December next, and so to continue until the principal is paid by installments.

Maria Abbott is suffering from illness. She feels keenly the loss of property. Mr. Scott, who married Harriet Baldwyn, has sustained through trusting a very large sum of money to a bank in England for mercantile purposes. The bank failed. The Egertons with whom Maria is staying were about to move to more commodious quarters. Now they reside at Ida, Troy.

I was sorry to hear that poor dear Michael was robbed of $40. Poor young Goodman had along voyage back to Canada. He simply wrote saying that he arrived, hardly mentioning his father. We don't know what has become of him since. Nothing good I doubt. I fear his evil ways will break our poor Henry's heart. I wrote to the latter before the wickd boy left London, and entreated him to open his mind and tell me what induced him to quit his business so soon after commencing it at Grimsby, with Mr. Ballachey. (Ballacheys and Holloways were connected by marriage). Not a line. He no doubt feels too spiritless and miserable to answer. Arabella says Henry her brother never writes to her. Sad that he should thus neglect his only sister. A sister who always loved him as tenderly as she has.

## MERCY HAS A CONVENIENT LITTLE SCRIPTURE TEXT TO SUIT ALL EMERGENCIES.

"Come Out From Amongst Them" Is the One for Angry Christians.

### SHE GETS A COLD "HOW DO YOU DO?"

Mercy, Like Her Father and Her Brother William, Makes Ill Friends by Expressing Her Religious Views—Sends Money to Abigail and and Arabella, but Toronto Banks Want 25 per Cent to Cash the Drafts.

You are surprised that I have never spoken to my husband's relatives. Mr. Nappin alone gives me a cold "How do you do?" It is because they hate my religious principles, and because Dear Savage thought fit to bequeath to me the whole of his property to do as I pleased with. They wanted me to have a life annuity, and them to have the principle. The family are no friends of mine, nor do I wish it. I am commanded in the best of books "To come out from among them." Dear Savage was the only Christian in the family, and he, dear lamb, was a brand snatched from the burning..

You are a wonderful one, and dear to all who know you. How delightful the account of your trip to Upper and Lower Canada (At that time he visited my father and played on his bass viol and sang a hymn). Henry Goodman Sr. expresses himself exceedingly pleased at your visit. How many years since you two met, and what great changes. Henry's eldest son at Toronto mentions his regret at not seeing you.

Poor Dear Arabella (Grandfather's sister) has been living at Owen Sound. They were in Toronto where her eldest daughter lives. She married a Mr. Barrett. Arabella wrote she was very comfortable in James' society. Poor things, they are living in the wild woods, cultivating land, a grant from the Government. James' father promised to allow him 50 pounds per annum. Since the awful fires at Quebec they have discontinued this annuity, for the brewery has suffered much from fire. It is a blow, as they have several children, too young to support themselves. I have sent a present to Abigail, and a few pounds to Arabella. Maria Spooner tells me the Toronto Bank wanted 25 per cent. discount to cash the draft. She would not pay it. I hope it came out all right. Maria and Jane Egerton express themselves as delighted at seing you at Troy, N.Y., Harriet Baldwin is very happily married to a Mr. Scott in Montreal, and has two sweet children. No more of the Louisiana bond affair—three years' interest on $3,000 is due me. How you and Alfred must miss Michael, who has left you. I have sent Jack Capron (Author—Very little doubt of the Capron relationship, sometimes disputed) part of your letter, and also to our departed sister's children. Jack Capron will be grateful at hearing so pleasing an account of his late dear parents' friends. I received your letter from William Ball. They have twelve children. They know Dr. Goodman; visited him at Grimsby (Query by author—Who are these Balls? When the author was a child a charming old lady, wife of an American Army officer visited his house. Their name was Ball).

## WILLIAM IS BURNT OUT.

Mercy Helps William to Build Again—Still Hammering Away at Henry.

1849—Mercy to William—1849

Your awful calamity by fire was appalling. Indeed your neighbors were very sympathetic. You could not have properly extinguished your light when you went to bed. Not one penny interest on my bands, but the principal may be safe for those who come after me. I wish I had this money to send you some. I recently sent you 30 pounds. I now send you 10 pounds (What has she done with her income?). I hope your kind neighbors will set up a subscription. In the language of Job. "The Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away; Blessed be the name of the Lord."

Arabella says poor Henry Jr.. is a thoughtless boy. She last heard of him in New York. Some years ago, he said he would not write to his relatives any more until the death of his stepmother and her mother, Mrs. Holloway. He said no one would hear where he was or what he was doing. It seemed the poor boy must be possessed of the evil one, and must be gone deranged. I do pity his dear father.

---

## SHE WISHES HENRY SR. HAD STAYED IN ENGLAND.

Death of the Author's Namesake, Alfred Goodman—Uncle Henry Starts for the Gold Fields.

## MARTHA GOODMAN'S CHILD BECOMES A GRANDMOTHER

(Author—Whilst to-day the grandchildren of that grandmother are themselves grandmothers—Time flies.)

1849—Mercy to William—1849

I see by a St. Catharines paper that our nephew Henry Goodman Sr. is a practising physician at St. Catharines. I am glad; but he could have done better at Islington. While there he yielded to a sad, supine and indolent state of mind. I am glad, however, he is giving his children a good education, which is so great an advantage in mature age.

Abigail has sent me nine likenesses of herself and family. Mrs. Egerton's mother is dead, and bequeathed Jane a nice little legacy. Bell's oldest daughter is pretty comfortably married. She has visited her daughter Ellen Barrett, who has a family of sweet little children. Only think of sister Martha's child being a grandmother. It seems like a dream, and how wonderful we are permitted to live in this world a vast number of years. You will be 77 on the 16th of this month.

Mary, Louisa, the Hubruns and Bartons unite with me in kindly remembrance to you all.

This is from Dr. Watt:

Now to the God Whose power can do
More than our thoughts or wishes know,
Be everlasting honors done
By all the church, through Christ, His Son.

I sent these lines to Henry Goodman just at a time he and his wife and family were in sorrow over the death of their dear boy Alfred.

Henry said in his next letter, "I assure you, my dear Aunt, I cannot but look upon those sweet lines as a gift from God, and I do believe it was He Himself who influenced your mind to send them to me." A copy of the lines are now on the great deep, on their way to St. John.

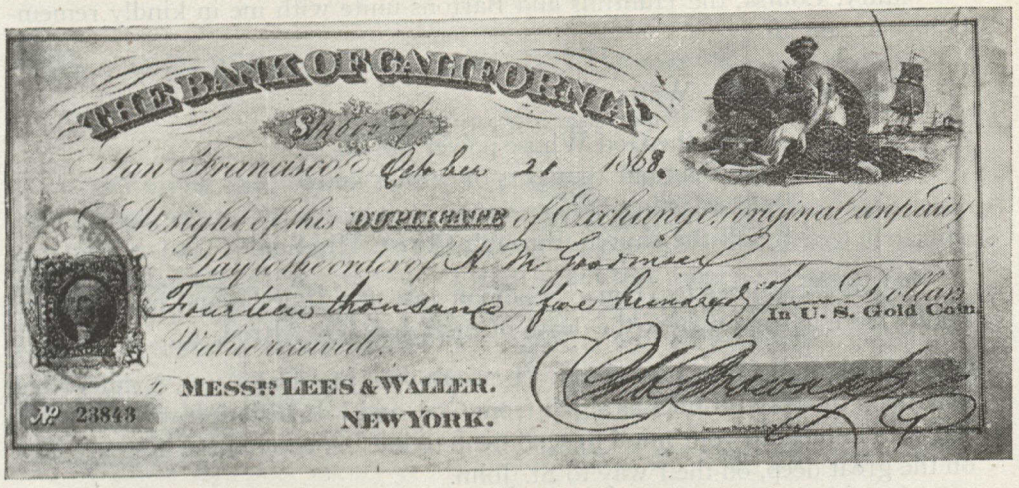
What fearful suspense you must feel on account of the non-appearance of your Michael. I am glad Alfred is with you again. I have been afforded much pleasure by your statement that you have been able to buy thirty acres adjoining your farm. Abigail has been staying with her daughter Harriet Scott. James McCallum visited his parents and he induced them to give him one hundred pounds to carry on his farming business. On arriving home again, however, the hundred pounds was gone (Author—James McCallum decided to spend the money on pleasure. Mercy's righteous indignation makes his action appear reprehensible, and she continues to comment adversely at some length.)

There has been great talk of the discovery of gold in California. Henry Goodman's son Henry who had been working in a store in New York (Stores are called shops in America). This did not satisfy the youth. He must go, forsooth, to see about scraping together some of the said gold. A letter was received from him addressed to his maternal grandmother, Mrs. Whittaker, in London, in which he says "I sail on Friday next for San Francisco, California, seven thousand miles from New York, via Cape Horn. My purpose is to go immediately to the New Eldorado region of gold that has been discovered in that country. As soon as possible I propose writing to my father. The ship I take this voyage in is called the Brooklyn. So when you receive this I shall be on my way to Cape Horn. Signed H. M. Goodman (Henry Musgrave Goodman.) Poor Henry Sr. the burden of this poor boy's doings weighs so heavily on him that he has not heart to take pen in hand.

## AUTHOR'S COMMENT.

If Mercy could have cast a horoscope of the future she would not have worried about Uncle Henry, for he made good in the gold fields. And as for his father, the money Uncle Henry left him, the bill of Exchange, which is here reproduced, was a great comfort to him in his old age.

With this money he started for a trip around the world. On his return his grandchildren used to gather round him at nights, and listen to his relation of his strange experiences in foreign lands.


THE BANK OF CALIFORNIA

San Francisco, October 21 1868.

At sight of this DUPLICATE of Exchange, (original unpaid) Pay to the order of A. W. Grosmer

Fourteen thousand five hundred 50/100 Dollars In U. S. Gold Coin.

Value received.

MESSRS LEES & WALLER. NEW YORK.

No 23843

---

## DEATH REAPS A HARVEST IN THE RIGGS FAMILY

### Sindenia's Five Children Succumb. Huburn Passes Away

## CHOLERA AND REVOLUTION IN CANADA

### Mercy Again Remits.

### Poor Eliza Paid Board to Her Own Stepmother and Did the Work Besides

Of Sindenia's children, all have gone to the silent beyond, but Robert and Mary. Mary is still teaching school, and living with her aged stepmother. Eliza is dead of pulmonary consumption. She is buried in the same grave with her father and mother. Eniza was very affectionate but mentally dependent, so I allowed her twenty pounds per annum after her father's death in 1837—the greater part of which went to her stepmother for board, and she used to do a great deal of house work besides.

---

## SAVAGE'S SISTER BELL DIES AND SCATTERS HER WEALTH AMONG STRANGERS.

Savage's sister Bell is dead, from lung disease. She left 60,000 pounds sterling ($300,000) to strangers—no relations. She did not name me in her will. I suppose she thought I was well provided for.

I have renewed my old bond issue. They promise to pay $200 a year on principal.

1849—Mercy to William—1849

We will shortly hear the Voice of our Beloved Lord, saying "Come up Higher." Do write soon.

Do you recollect poor Huburn, who married sister Ann? Since his younger daughter married he resided with them, and did some business taking orders in the leather trade, but his chief income was from his son and two daughters. He has been suffering from rheumatism. He died September 7th last. His three children followed him to the grave. He is laid beside dear Anne at Camberwell, who departed 17 years ago. Ann, his daughter, tells me they have cause to rejoice at his eternal state. He had the psalms read to him, and when he saw Anne cast down, he smiled and said: "In quietness and in confidence shall be your strength." He was 67.

I hear nothing more about poor young Henry Goodman and his California concern. Abigail's two dear boys are settling down, I am glad to say, to be farmers..

---

## CHOLERA IN CANADA

Charles Baldwyn to William Riggs—1849

The Cholera has been very prevalent all over Canada. We have fortunately escaped it. It was melancholy to see those of our friends young and in health taken away in three days' time. I had three young companions, one was stricken and died, the other two attended his funeral. One died fifteen hours after, and the other in seven hours after. My sisters, Maria and Jane and her family are quite well. Harriett, who married Mr. Scott, is living in St. John's, Que. You have no doubt heard of the troubles we have had. The parliament house burnt. The night ot was set fire to I was in Montreal, and had only left the lower house a moment when the alarm was given. It was indeed a grand sight, but a great waste of wealth. Peace has been restored.

---

## MERCY STILL GOOD TO WILLIAM, NOW BOTH OLD

1850—Mercy to William—1850

I sorrow that your son Michael has disappointed your hopes of seeing him at home. I thank God he has enabled me to send you 25 pounds. The sum I have sent you, you say, together with your fire insurance, has enabled you to build a new house and provide necessaries. Mary is 70, Louisa 61 and I am 69.

I have heard nothing more of our poor dear nephew, Henry Goodman Sr. Poor fellow, though he loves us all and is low-spirited.

(It is strange that in spite of her endearing expressions towards my grandfather she bequeathed him nothing in her will, which always grieved him. Her great wealth, said to be 60,000 pounds, were left to her sisters in Ipswich and to religious friends in the same town, and the charitable institutions. Louisa, the last sister to survive, in turn left most of her wealth to strangers, and nothing to my grandfather.)

---

## MERCY'S OPEN PURSE

### Lord Chatham and "Billy" Pitt—The "Rail Road" Again—Uncle Henry Reaches California Ill and in Distressed Circumstances

1850—Mercy to William—1850

I herein transmit you a letter of credit for fifty pounds.

They have a rail road from Midhurst to London, 90 miles. They have no longer a stage coach.

You remember hearing dear father speak of Lord Chatham, who was the father of Billy Pitt, the Tory. Chatham had more liberal ideas in regard to the dissenters than Master Billy (Then follows a long account of the political religious enactments of 1773).

Poor Abigail is laboring under a low state of the nervous system. Cast a mantle of love, dear William, over all that has occurred in the past.

I have been to Easburn and distributed one pound five to the very needy poor. It is more blessed to give than to receive. The three who received the money were 82, 78 and 90. How annoying to be subject to the intrusion of Mary Mumprey. If I were you I should say it was not convenient to receive them (?).

---

## UNCLE HENRY ARRIVES IN CALIFORNIA, ILL

1850—Mercy to William—1850

Before Jo Shutter died I gave him a pound note from dear Mother, and added a pound to it. He was once rich, that brewery ruined him.

Our dear Nephew has sent me the papers from St. Catharines announcing the death of his second son Alfred, a fine promising boy of 14, who died from scarlet fever after an illness of two days. Henry wrote and said he was about to write to his dear Uncle William. Henry says his son Henry was tossed about on a wide ocean for 210 days before he reached San Francisco. On his arrival he was carried on shore nearly dead with scurvy, and it was five weeks before he recovered, and then was attacked with dysentry. Poor "Harry" is tried in various ways, but from the tenor of his last to me I do hope the Lord is teaching him that crosses from his Saviour's hands are blessings in disguise.

Charles Baldwin says Abigail has been ill with cholera. They could not get money enough to stock their farm and rented it.

---

1850—Maria Abbot to William—1850.

Sorry to hear that you have had your house burned, dear Uncle. Do you ever hear of Michael; so many temptations for a young man away from home. Mr. Egerton, who married sister Jane, has built a very pleasant house in which we are now living at Troy, Yew York. Jane and I have been conducting a school in Troy. Jane's eldest is a very fine girl in her fifteenth year. Dysentry and typhus fever has followed the cholera in Canada, but we have been spared.

I have received a letter from cousin McCallum. Poor dear, what a life of suffering has been hers, and he bears all like a Christian philosopher. Mother is living with four unmarried children; Emma Egerton and the two boys are at St. John. When the cholera broke out Mr. Scott went to St. John, and afterwards moved to Chatham, where he is going in business with his brother.

What an excitement in England over the Pope's action in sending out many bishops. God knows what it will lead to.

---

## COBDEN SENDS HIS RESPECTS TO HENRY GOODMAN, SR.

Michael Riggs the Prodigal Returns to His Father's Home—Dire Results of Catholic Emancipation—Mercy Introduces a Famous Hymn to the Public—Uncle Henry Has a Fairy Godmother Who Gives Him a Hundred Pounds—High Cost of Living in England.

### MERCY'S LAST LETTER

1851—Mercy to William—1851

I sent you 25 pounds in August last, I have not written since. I have now attained the age of seventy years. Only think, Michael was away five years and is now back.

This has been a dreadful land ever since the Catholic Emancipation Act in 1829. The "monster Popery" has been gaining ground every day. Many good people think scripture prophesies are beginning to come true, and that the man of sin will reign for a time, but only for a time.

I correspond sometimes with the editor of the Gospel Magazine. He has published many things I have sent him. I came across one piece in the course of my reading and sent it to him and he gladly published it. I reproduce it in full for you. (Then follows the hymn:

Just as I am without one plea,
But that Thy blood was shed for me, etc.

It is now a standard hymn in the church hymnals. Is it not likely that Mercy brought this beautiful hymn first to the notice of the greater public, and was instrumental in that way in getting it immortalized?)

Sindenia and Ann's children are still living. Ann Huburn is teaching children at their parents' houses at Norwood. Her sister Martha Lewis has added another little girl to her family. It is now four. Charles Baldwyn had a nice position as tutor to the sons of Colonel Hyle. Everything wts so nice when he was taken very ill—disease of the heart he has suffered with since infancy. He was obliged to resign and go home.

An elderly lady named Raymond died last summer and bequeathed to the eldest son of our nephew Henry Goodman, to whom she stood—what is called —Godmother, 100 pounds. I told Henry, and he wrote to receive it and send it to him and he would place it in some bank. In Canada the interest is six pounds per cent. and here it is three pounds and six shillings. I saw the executor, and he says I must have a legal receipt signed by young Henry, who is now digging for gold in California.

The only surviving son of sister Ann got into the church of England, and for years has been the Vicar of Coxton, near Thetford. His name is Samuel. The living was too small, and he resigned. He is now looking to his Heavenly Father, who has promised to help in the hour of need.

Lewis, who married Martha Huburn, has a position in the County Court, Surrey. Everything is so cheap now in England, that one pound per week is not bad, with good management. Sindenia, you know, left nine children behind her. Our Nephew Henry Goodman is 54. He used to go to school at Midhurst with Robert Charley and the great politician, Cobden. Robert Charley says he saw Cobden at Midhurst recently, and he enquired after Henry Goodman.

And now my beloved Brother – in this little Nook. I say – for the present – Farewell! The good Lord have you and yours in His gracious keeping – may He say to each of your Souls – "I am Thy Salvation!" and be Himself – to you as "a well of water springing up to Everlasting Life".

Yours & yours in Him
M. Cobbold –

Her last Letter written just before what 'Aunt' Nancy would of Called Her Happy Release

Norwood – February 23 – 1859 –

I hope my dear Brother, I shall receive a Letter from you soon – a few more steps through this scene of "tribulation" and our dear Redeemer will take us to His Bosom! Let us "talk of Him by the way", and He will come and talk with us, by the Spirit, Divine influences, so that our "hearts may burn within us" as did those of the two Disciples, when walking to the Village of "Emmaus"

"I will not leave you Comfortless; I will come to you" – John [illegible] In the sincere Prayer of your very affectionate Sister –

M. Cobbold.

Williams Bigg –
Farnham
Surrey –
U.K. America –

Riggs Coat of arms that sealed Letter

I have corresponded with the present Editor occasionally, sending him some little things which I meet with in the course of my readings which appear calculated to be acceptable to the dear Household of Faith – He was much pleased with the last Extract I sent him, and had it inserted in the April Number – The Quarterlies I believe the hearty language of all the Lord's People, whether old or young, rich or Poor – I must send you a Copy. –

Hymns –

"Just as I am"

Jesus said unto His Disciples – "All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out" – John 6 – 37 –

"Just as I am," without one plea,
But that Thy Blood was shed for me,
And that Thou bidd'st me come to Thee,
O Lamb of God, I come!

"Just as I am," and waiting not
To rid my Soul of one dark blot;
To Thee, whose Blood can cleanse each spot,
O Lamb of God, I come!

"Just as I am," though tossed about
With many a conflict, many a doubt,
Fightings, and fears within, without,
O Lamb of God, I come!

"Just as I am," poor, wretched, blind;
Sight, Riches, Healing of the mind —
Yea, all I need in Thee to find —
O Lamb of God, I come!

"Just as I am," Thou wilt receive,
Wilt welcome, pardon, cleanse, relieve;
Thy Promise, God, I do believe;
O Lamb of God, I come! –

Some lives seem to go on so long. William's was like that. He appeared to have been on earth over a great period of time. In the eighteenth century he was a successful business man. In modern times we find him playing the bass viol and singing hymns in my father's home.

And there comes another thought: What a sameness there is in human existence. We know about Squire Henry and William, and, thanks to Mercy Cobbald's letters, a great deal about other relations, and then, of course, much more about the existence of our nearest of kin; and when we hold the mirror up to our own lives, can we not trace the same soul's elation, the same weariness of spirit, the same old gamut of human emotions, in different setting, that is all?

Rather more sorrow than joy; rather more hope than realization. And Death, the grim reaper, ever harvesting his crop. What my father quoted to me once, in an hour of disappointment I will now repeat for the benefit of the younger generation, who will have necessarily many disappointments, while they must bear with fortitude and resignation, and look forward to better things:

My son, be not cast down or yet o'er proud,
When skies are clear expect the cloud.
In darkness wait the coming light.
Whatever be thy lot to-day,
Remember this will pass away.

Even if you are young you have often heard the expression "don't worry." But do you realize its significance. In after life there will be a great many adversities which will affect you, and your disordered imagination will make the trouble appear far worse than it really is. Our race has erred too much in this respect. Worry brings on nervous disarrangement, and, what is even worse, causes those nearest and dearest to be sympathetically unhappy.

Perhaps you have heard the story of the aged gentleman, who hung over his mantlepiece that his grandchildren might see, the following motto:

"I am an old man now, and in my time have had many troubles, most of which never happened."

---

## AS FOR AUNT MERCY, HER LETTERS HAVE CEASED

### Dust Has Returned to Dust, and Her Soul Has Gone to God Who Made It

## WILLIAM AND MARY PASSED AWAY; LOUISA LINGERED A LITTLE LONGER

### Cholera and Rebellion in Canada—Louisa's Death—The Baldwins Fear They Will Get Nothing by the Will

1865—From Augusta Baldwin to Harriet Riggs—1865

I am so busy that I cannot prepare my own mourning. I have just written sixteen letters, and write to England to-morrow. I hope, my dear cousin, the

friendship which has sprung up between our two families may continue. Are dear little Willie's black eyes as black as ever? Give my love to Elizabeth.

We have had a letter from Charles, who has arrived safely in England. He was very sick on the passage. When he came out to meals for the first time he was unshaven, and threw his coat over his dressing gown. The Captain said he looked like the husband to a Mermaid.

We all think we will not get the legacy from Ipswich, because the legacy was not in Uncle's possession at the time he died. We believe Mr. Biddle will act honestly, but we think the Riggs will get the legacy and not us (Biddell acted for Mrs. Trill. See Trill will.).

---

## WIDOW BALDWIN'S HARD STRUGGLE

St. John, Que., July 4th, 1863.

From Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin to my Grandfather Goodman.

I have not been well enough to transact business. I hope I will be able ere long, when I will send you the $50 you were so kind as to lend Augusta. In regard to the 75 pounds, if God spares my life I will send it to you quarterly. I have paid to her already more than I could afford, and am now in debt, and have been borrowing money to keep house with. Dear Harry, don't think me ungrateful for your kind considerations to poor Augusta, which I hope she is thankful to you and Mrs. Goodman for.

Your Affectionate Aunt,

ABIGAIL BALDWIN.

---

## LAST LETTER FROM LOUISA—SHE DIED THE SAME YEAR

Extract of letter from Louisa Trill to my Grandfather.

Ipswich, June 5th, 1865.

Dear Henry:—I am so much obliged to you for your kind letter. You will be pleased to hear I can walk to church every Sunday. I wrote to dear Abigail about the 20th, and told her I had a letter from dear Maria Abbott. I have a letter from Mrs. Lewis, in which she speaks of the death of Mr. Austin.

Poor Anna is, I believe, going to her—the widow. What will they do?. We know the Lord does all things well . . . . . I hope the war is nearly over (Civil war). I have read shocking accounts. May you be spared the evil consequences.

The lines your son Edwin (Author's father) wrote are very good on the subject. Poor Mary Barton, I believe is much the same. She is at Jersey with Mrs. Goppy, who is the widow of poor John Barton.

Dear Henry, do think nothing of the trifle I sent you. God bless my dear Henry.

Your Affectionate Aunt,

L. F. TRILL.

---

Extract from the Will of the late Mrs. L. F. Trill.

Will made in 1859. Was alive 1865—See letter.

William and Herman Biddell, Executors.

I give and bequeath my oil painting of dogs by Harrison Weir, and my plate of H.M.S. Duke of Wellington, the portrait of Rev. Thos. Cobbald, and the portrait of Mrs. Routh, unto Mary, the wife of the Rev. C. E. Daniels, of Ipswich. I give and bequeath all my family portraits and the rest of my pictures, prints and paintings unto my Nephew the Rev. Saml. Henry Musgrave Huburn (Note. My Uncle Kenneth writes: I remember the Huburns asking my father to buy these pictures from them for thirty pounds. He declined, saying some of them would take up nearly the whole side of the wall of our rooms. I tried to influence my brothers and others to purchase them, to no avain, however.)

I give and bequeath all my household furniture, wearing apparel and trinkets, linen, china, books, and other household effects and all the money which may be in the house at the time of my decease unto the said William Biddell, absolutely, and I give and bequeath to the several legacies following, to each of the rectors of the time being of the parishes Easburn, near Midhurst, St. Helen at Ipswich, St. Matthew at Ipswich, and Playfare, aforesaid, namely the sum of 50 pounds each to be distributed among the poor. To the Rev. Mr. Woodhouse, or the clergyman for the time being having the management of the Infant School in Ipswich the sum of 50 pounds, to be applied for the benefit of the school. To the East Suffolk Hospital the sum of 200 pounds; to the Ipswich Mission the sum of 50 pounds; and to the Ipswich Mechanics' Institute 50 pounds.

I give and bequeath the further legacies following to my nephews, nieces and three children of my late sister Ann, namely Ann Huburn and Martha wife of Thomas Lewis, the sum of 1,000 pounds each. To my servant Mary Hill if she is living with me at the time, the sum of 19 guineas. To James Jennings, formerly servant to the late Mrs. Hensbridge Cobbald the sum of 19 guineas; to Mr. Arthur Biddell of Playfare aforesaid, for his many acts of kindness and attention the sum of 200 pounds.

To the said Herman Biddell, as remuneration for the trouble in the execution of my will the sum of 200 pounds; to the said William Biddell as a remuneration of the trouble in executing the trusts in my will, the sum of 200 pounds. To my friend William Henry Bailey Minister, 200 pounds.

To my friend Miss Norton (Spinster) 200 pounds. To Geo. Josselyn of Ipswich, solicitor, as a small token of respect and gratitude, the sum of 50 pounds. And I will that the legacies be paid free of legacy duty, and as soon as convenient after my decease.

Such a sum of money out of my estate is to be set aside in parliamentary stock or public bonds as shall pay the annuities set aside by my late sister Mercy Cobbald, for my nephew Robert Musgrave Riggs Barton, and my niece Mary Musgrave Riggs Barton, namely 10 pounds a year each. And I declare that my said Trustee shall pay the sum of 20 pounds yearly for life to Mary Hill, if she should be living with me at the time of my decease, and also the annuities to Mary and Robert Barton shall be during their lives under the will of Mercy Cobbald; and I bequeath to them in addition 10 pounds annually each during their lives, and after their decease the principal shall go to William and Herman Biddell in equal shares. On the day of my death I give and bequeath to Emma Wilding, formerly servant to my late sister Mercy Cobbald, a weekly sum of five shillings to be made on the first morning of every week, and the first payment to be made the vrst Monday after my decease.

---

And, after all, much of the inherited wealth of Mercy Cobbald went like so many fortunes do, to fill the coffers of strangers, who by one means or another, ingratiate themselves into the good opinion of the aged rich at the psychological moment, not always from worthy motives. Louisa was very generous in her bequests to the lawyers and ministers of Ipswich, whilst many of her relatives over seas were suffering for the need of money, and still she was a kind-hearted woman. It was simply a case of wrong influences.

The author wrote at random to Mr. Biddle, Ipswich, hoping his letter might reach the hands of descendants of these Biddle people, and that he could thus trace the whereabouts of Louisa's scattered family treasures. Everything was gone, irreparably gone. In fact everyone in our English line was dead and the belongings hopelessly untraceable.

The author was sent one cheap mourning ring by a daughter of the late executor once worn by Louisa in memory of some old lady, and as a bait to purchase similar cheap jewellery, mostly mourning rings. (Evidently it was a custom to wear such inexpensive rings in those days). Ridiculously high prices were asked for this jewellery, which had little or no connection with the family relics.

The author can only say that the children of the executors of Louisa's estate seem to have inherited the remarkable acquisitiveness of their parents.

---

Extract from a letter from Bertha Taylor, 1906.

I am living in the home where my father Wm. Biddle died in 1900. The only article which I know came from Mrs. Trill is a gold mourning ring, to the memory of Mary Routh. It is a pretty ring, nicely worked with six pearls and a small diamond.

I shall be happy to send you the ring on receipt of four guineas. I am informed by my Aunt that my father gave away Mrs. Trill's things at the time he received them. (Author—Precious family treasures given to strangers and then scattered around by said strangers as largess to make good fellows of themselves.) Three of my father's sisters are living; one of them, Mrs. Everard, has a plain mourning ring, once Mrs. Trill's, to the memory of Rev. Mr. Routh.

---

Letter from the son of Mrs. Trill's executor, 1906

I have a ring which belonged to my mother, and was once Mrs. Trill's. It is similar to the one my cousin mentioned (plain gold mourning ring). I think One pound ten shillings would be a fair price. This offer is good only up to March 31st, after that date I shall dispose of it elsewhere.

Mrs. Trill.

I hope you received an Ipswich News Paper I sent you I think about the 12th April containing the account of the Death of poor Caddon late of Chatham I think you went to School with him at Dr Woolls — I had a Newspaper later from Chatham etc. to me which was dirty & Shatter'd & Damp & Dirty the Letter & Contents — the last news the people of Casebourne have received to put up a Grave Stone for the late Rev. Mr Page in Casebourne Church Yard, who died two or three years ago — I hope the War is nearly over now, I have read shocking accounts of it, may you be preserved from the evil consequences of it — Mr & Mrs Nobbs & sons their kind respects to you, and hope you are all well, I suppose before now you have an other little Grandchild — God bless you my Dear Harry with kind love to you all & remain your affectionate Aunt L Trill

P.S. — The letter you sent Brown wrote are I think very good or the Judges (Civil war)

Mrs. Trill's last letter (died same year).

## "AUNT" MARY'S ROMANCE

### Why She Didn't Marry—Sewing, Sewing, Sewing—The Bundle That Smelt of Camphor.

#### CHAPTER ONE.

Extract from letter to Author from a Kinswoman.

My Grandmother told me this story: Mary was the ugly duckling. All the other girls were pretty. When Mary returned home from school, her education finished, she was at the romantic age, and no doubt had many flirtations. One she did not think was a flirtation. She took it seriously. But somehow or other it did not seem a serious affair for the other party to the arrangement. Mary was never communicative, but she let hints drop, and she looked very happy, her dear homely face all aglow with the love light in her eyes.

Her mother concluded that soon some brave knight would come and sue for her darling's hand in marriage, and as Mary loved him she would consent. In the meantime Mary kept to her room most of the time, doing a great deal of sewing. She always seemed to be sewing.

By and by a great bundle she had been laboring on so long, and that no one had seen, was locked away in her camphor chest.

As the days went on Mary lost her happy look, becoming sad and melancholy, but she made no complaint and spoke no word.

As the years came and went she became resigned, and like her old self again, and just once she whispered to her mother, "I shall never marry."

And none of them knew what was in the camphor chest.

#### CHAPTER TWO.

The Grave Digger's Tools in the Family Chair.

Charles, son of Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin, then a Montreal McGill student, visited his Aunts at Ipswich. He was a particular pet of Mary's, always was. But he nearly fell from grace with his pranks. Because you cannot fool dear old ladies who have their dignity to consider like you can younger and more careless persons.

Charles was full of fun, and up to all sorts of tricks. He just could not help it. But he gave his aunts a great deal of pain, nevertheless.

The old ladies were carried to church every Sunday morning in a sedan chair, by footmen, because Mercy thought it was not right to have the horses work on the sabbath. The red and gold painted velvet lined chair was always

left during service in the porch of the church. What was their horror after service to find in throwing back the robes that their upholstered seats contained grave diggers' picks and shovels, grimed with dirt and rust. They soon found that Master Charles had visited the grave yard during service and in the absence of the grave digger purloined his tools, and placed them in his Aunts' "Sunday Sedan."

### CHAPTER THIRD.

Contents of the Camphor Chest Revealed.

There was a good deal of heart-burning and some tears and much penitence on Charlie's part. Then holding Mary's hand, Charles told his Aunt that he was going to be married to a lovely English girl living at Easburn, not far from where Mary used to live, and she must know her well, and tears of pleasure sprang into the old lady's eyes. Of course she knew her, and she was so pleased for Charlie's sake, and she hoped he would be very happy.

And so when Charles left Ipswich the following day Mary, with a wistful, long-ago look in her eyes, gave him a bundle which smelt of camphor, asking him to promise not to open it until his marriage day.

"I promise," said Charles, and he kept his word, although it was not until four years afterwards that the marriage took place.

### CHAPTER FOURTH.

Charlie is married. Friends have left the house, and in the flower-strewn room he is alone with his bride, when he thinks of Aunt Mercy's parcel, and Charles explains to his wife that four years before his Aunt had given him a mysterious parcel under sealed orders. That is, that he was not to open it until now—meaning until he was married. Then let's open it, answered the bride.

Charles is somewhat confused, and the bride blushes prettily, for these are the contents: A little cradled quilt, made of many colored satin pieces lined with white satin, a tiny lace cap and lace christening robe, together with a wedding trousseau, Oh, so sadly out of style.

So Charles' child wore the clothing intended for a baby that lived only in the imagination of a poor old Maid, fifty years before.

---

## A GREAT FORTUNE LOST TO THE BALDWINS

Extract from Letter from a Kinsman.

"Mrs. Trill left her money largely out of the family. She built a new spire on one of the Ipswich Cathedral. In that church is the Cobbald pew, and still there are the red-clasped prayer books, with the Riggs Arms upon them. My grandfather's father, the Hon. W. D. Baldwin, lawyer in Wales, had two sons, my Grandfather, who was an episcopal minister, was before his death consecrated a bishop; the other son, Richard Baldwyn, entered the army. While a lieutenant his regiment was ordered to India. He was out there for many years, and had risen to the rank of Colonel when he came home on sick leave, and died at his father's home in Wales. He had become immensely wealthy in India, as wealth went in those days, and while on his death-bed he said to his mother: "I wish I had married, then I should have had children to leave my money to. You and father do not need it, but it is yours."

He died, and soon after a woman with a child appeared on the scene, claiming to be "rightful heirs."

The courts judicated the matter for a long time, and then threw it into Chancery for 99 years. The time us up, and we are trying to induce the Welsh courts to give us the money that rightly belongs to us. The fortune was originally 65,000 pounds. What a huge sum this would be at interest. But I fear that justice as far as the Baldwin fortune is concerned will never be adminstered in this world.

---

## CAMDEN'S BRITANNIA

An ancient copy of Camden's Britannia, first published in 1607 in Latin, and revised and published again in English, in 1693, is in the Author's possession.

On the blank leaf is the following inscription:

"This book is first heard of as being in the library of Ogle Riggs, Sheriff of Woolbeding and Hollist.

"From his it passed into the keeping of his son the late Henry Riggs, Esq., of Hollist House.

"The book then passed into the hands of his late daughter Martha Goodman. From her it descended to her son, the late Henry Riggs Goodman, M.R.C.S. of Guy's and St. Thomas Hospital, London, England, and was given by him to his son Edwin Goodman, M.B., who was born in 1833, (died, April

22nd, 1908) and he gave the book to his son Alfred Edwin Goodman, Vancouver, B. C., in the full assurance that it will be carefully preserved and handed down to his son, or some other member of the family. The date of the writing of this presentation is 7th day of June, A.D. 1906.

The book is a foot and a half long and nine inches wide, and contains some 550 pages of ancient British maps and references, compiled by the great Camden. It has been useful to the author in these memoirs.

---

## EXTRACTS FROM CAMDEN'S BRITANNIA.

### Our Ancestors' Shire—Sussex.

South -Sex, meaning South Saxony, in ancient times the seat of the ruling kings. The true Saxon reading is Suth-Seaxna-ric.

The shire was founded by Aella, the first Saxon king, whom Bede calls first among the kings of the English nation. Its first Christian king was Idylwalce, baptized in the presence of Wulpha, King of Mercia.

The last King Aldinus was slain by Ina, 300 years after Ælla landed, and the Shire then passed into the hands of the West Saxons.

---

## EAST-BURN

### Where Squire Henry Lived in a "Pretty Brick Cottage."

Camden writes in 1607: "We are now on the ground where Henry III. fought the Barons, and getting advantage, pursued them. He himself, being defeated, gave his son as hostage.

"Before that day Ethelstan the Saxon had two mints here. We pass by a large lake, and come to a promontory. Here is East-burn. The shore here being called Bow Cliffe; it rises into so high a promontory. It is esteemed the highest cliff in all the South Coast.

---

## MIDHURST

### Frequently Referred to in These Memoirs—Behun the Spingurnel.

On the other side of Cowdry is Midhurst, meaning middle wood. Proud in its Lords the Bohuns. They were once Kings Sperginels, meaning the sealers of writs. Here Sir David Owen, natural son of Owen Tudor, was given with great dowery by Henry I. to the daughter of Sir John Bohun.

## PETWORTH

Often Referred to by Mercy Cobbald—Owned by Lord Egremont.

Next we have a sight of Pettworth, which William, Earl of Arundel, gave to Queen Edelizia's brother, Godfrey, Duke of Brebant, on his marriage with Agnes, the only daughter of the heir of the percies. From which time their posterity have assumed the name of Percy. Both dascend from the flock of Charlaman, very ancient and noble families.

---

## CHICHESTER

Thomas Musgrave Was Prependiary of Chichester.

Chichester in Saxon is Cecestria. It was built by Cissa the Saxon, whose father Aella was the first king. Thus Cissa-tria—The City of Cissa.

There was first a Monastry and Nunnery there. William I. gave the city to Duke Roger, who exacted from it 10 pounds yearly, the King demanding 15 pounds. William decided to establish an Episcopal See there, and appointed Bishop Ralph, who built a cathedral. This was burned down before it was finished. In Henry's time it was rebuilt as it stands to-day.

The Prependiary's House is at the South Gate.

(Note—Where little Elizabeth lived when taken from London by her Uncle Thomas, the Prependiary Clergyman of Chichester.)

Riman was forbidden by the King to build a Castle at Chichester (fearing the power of armed forces). He took the stone he had collected for the purpose and built a tower, which is named after him to this day.

See Thomas Musgrave Wills. He bequeathed two trebel bells to be placed in "Raymond Tower."

---

## HAMSHIRE.

Shires of the Ancient Riggs.

The first shire reduced by the Romans. It was conquered by Vespasian after 30 pitched battles. Valerious Flaccus addressed Vespasian on the victory, thus, making him out more prosperous than Caesar:

"Oh you, whose glorious reign
"Can boast new triumphs o'er the conquered Main
"Since your bold navy passed the British Sea,
"That scorned the Caesar's and the Roman sway."

## SOUTHAMPTON HAMSHIRE

Seat of the Earliest Riggs.

This town is near the River Anton. We have this from the life of a Saint named Tristan: That the Town of Anton was here. This is the origin of the name Hanton (Anton would be so pronounced by some of our English friends) At South-Hanton pieces of wall you may judge as Roman ruins of forts are found and Roman coins dug up. In the Danish wars Old Hanton fell a prey. Gregory, of Monmouth, in his romancing, said the place took its name from the oman Hannon, killed there by a Brittain. And a poet, taking this idea has written:

ANCIENT DUEL BETWEEN BRITON AND ROMAN.

"As to the bank he fled, enraged Arverigus
"With happier speed aimed a fierce blow
"And felled the trembling head.
"And there great Hammon's death
"Proclaimed to Fame a Hammerton everlasting name

---

## THE WHITE CITY

The Royal Roman Weavery—Imperial Dog Kennels
Winchester, Hampshire.

Ralph Riggs, thrice Mayor of Winton Town; Edmond his son twice Mayor when he was gone.

On the western side of the river Alre, lies the famous city of the British Belgae, which Ptolemy and Antonius called Venta Belgarum. The Britons called it Caer—Gwent, meaning white city, referring to the soil of chalk and white clay. The Saxons translated this Wintancester, the Latins Wintonia, and we Winchester.

Here was the royal weavery for weaving mantels for the Emperor and his suite, for making shrouds and sails for the Roman legious.

Here, also, were the Imperial Dog Kennels used by the Romans in the Ampitheatre and for sport. British dogs renouned for their fine qualities, were descended from these Roman breeds. They were used by ancient Britons in their wars, being trained as soldiers to attack the enemy.

Claudium writes: And English Mastifs used to bend the necks of furius bulls.

Here lived Constance the Monk, afterwards made Emperor by his father Constantine. The walls of a Monk's college still stand. The Monk who was here declared Caesar, when taken hence soon died, suffering the vengeance due his affront to religion and his father's ambition.

Here was the Episcopal See endowed by Ethelstan. Here were kept the public records of the Normans.

The City was laid waste by the soldiers in the war between Mawd and King Stephen, when the Castle was never defended so straightly as by Mawd, who gave out to be dead, and caused herself to be carried thence in a coffin, and thus escaped. The Cathedral (where the Riggs are buried, and where a tomb is raised to our Ralph, the Mayor) was honored by the Saxons, as it contained the bones of their early kings, which Bishop Fox collected and put into small caskets, and so preserved them.

---

## HOLLIST HOUSE

The Cradle of a Race—Here Were Born 45 Children by the Name of Riggs.

*Contributed.*

Hollist. A good mansion house and estate belonging to John Lock, Gent., in the reign of Charles the Second, and passed by marriage settlement to Ogle Riggs, Esq., before 1662. Thomas Riggs died, seized of it, S.P. (without issue). It has been purchased by Lord Robt. Spencer.

The hamlets are Buddington, which is situate on the rising ground on the North side of the parish. Bodynton, was one of the tythings held under the earldom of Arundel, and in 1290 was a part of the jointure of Maud, widow of Richard Amundevyle. In the 8th year of Edward II. (1315), it was granted by patent to Ralph Sanzaver and Christian his wife, but with no manorial rights. It belonged to Sir David Owen in 1515. A branch of the family of Coldham held this estate in 1620, who were succeeded by Ogle Riggs, Esq., about a century afterwards."

In Elwes 'Mansions of Western Sussex," under Iping, he says "Fitz Hall, an Elizabethan mansion, modernized by James Piggott, devisee of Anne Bettesworth Riggs, wife of Capt. Thomas Riggs) is the property of Mrs. Piggott."

---

## SUMMING UP.

Riggs, Goodman, McCallum, Holloway

It would be rather tedious for the reader to attempt to follow the life line of these families and trace their crossing and recrossing. The author will therefore assist him in focusing the result of the numerous alliances for this purpose. We will not go back further than the marriage of Ogle Riggs and Elizabeth Musgrave in the Riggs line. Before this marriage the race had been rapidly dying off. It would almost have seemed that by the divine law of nature the Little Virginian had been the instrument in the hands of Providence to perpetuate the family name.

And yet of the seventeen children born to her, however, but one survived to carry on the line, Henry, her ninth child.

Henry had a vigorous intellect and a strong personality. He defied his own father in the cause of what he thought was the right. Sindenia Budden, the woman he married, was of the same self-assertive type.

They had sixteen children, but, as in the previous generation, the "adverse gods" ruled their destinies, an evil dogged their footsteps, and cut them down in their youth—twelve died unmarried. Ann had three children, and they all died young; Sindenia had nine children, and but one married and had no issue, all died in early life. Abigail had ten children, and some descendants still survive. It was, however, the runaway match of Martha Riggs and young Thomas Goodman which helped so splendidly to save the race from extinction. But two children were born as a result of this hasty and at the time much deplored union. However, the result has been that two vigorous strains have developed.

By my grandfather's marriage with Arabella Holloway, the race took on a new lease of life, while the tendency to consumption in my grandmother's family apparently disappeared.

A sturdy, reliant race also sprang from the alliance of my Grandfather's sister Arabella Goodman with James McCallum, who became the Sire of a numerous get which flourishes amazingly and is multiplying apace.

The tendency in these last generations is towards male rather than female progeny, which will be very noticeable in the following tables.

They are, of course, not accurate. It has been impossible to secure all the names of descendants. It may be taken for granted that the progeny is more numerous in the McCallum line than here set down.

| FIRST GENERATION. | No. of Children | Total |
|---|---|---|
| Ogle Riggs and Elizabeth Musgrave | 17 | 17 |
| **SECOND GENERATION.** | | |
| Henry Riggs and Sindenia Budden | 16 | 16 |
| **THIRD GENERATION.** | | |
| Martha Riggs and Thos. Goodman | 2 | |
| Abigail Riggs and Dr. Baldwin | 10 | |
| William Riggs and 3 wives | 4 | |
| Ann Riggs and Jno. Huburn | 3 | |
| Sindenia Riggs and Wm. Barton | 10 | 19 |
| **FOURTH GENERATION.** | | |
| Martha Riggs Jr. and — Lewis | 2 | |
| Saml. Riggs and Wife | 1 | |
| Henry Goodman—Two wives | 6 | |
| Arabella Goodman and Jas. McCallum | 9 | |
| Michael Riggs and 3 wives | 3 | |

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Alfred Riggs and Elizabeth Rude | | 2 | |
| Jane Baldwin and Lebbens Egerton | | 6 | |
| Maria Baldwin and Dr. Spooner | | 1 | |
| Harriet Baldwin and Robert Scott | | 10 | |
| Chas. Baldwin and Florance Bourne | | 1 | 41 |

FIFTH GENERATION.

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Edwin Goodman, Elizabeth Cross | (3 living) | 5 | |
| Kenneth Goodman, Annie Hainer | (3 living) | 4 | |
| Ambrose Goodman, Helen Taylor | (2 living) | 7 | |
| Alice Scott, R. Hollwell | (3 living) | 4 | |
| William Scott | | 2 | |
| Ann Scott | | 1 | |
| Henry Scott, Carry Plaxton | | 2 | |
| Maria Egerton, Dr. Wilson | (6 living) | 7 | |
| Hy McCallum, Georgina Miller | | 4 | |
| Ellen McCallum, Dr. Barrett | | 6 | |
| James McCallum (Several children) | | | |
| Caroline McCallum, D. Arnold | | 4 | |
| Edward McCallum, Harriet Tamlin | | 7 | |
| Geo. Riggs | | 2 | |
| Jessy McCallum, Christopher Thompson | | 11 | 68 |

SIXTH GENERATION.

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Arabella Goodman—Harold Dresser | | 3 | |
| Edith Goodman—Ester Williams | | 5 | |
| Mabel Goodman—Geo. Wedd | | 5 | |
| Ambrose Goodman—L. Matthews. | | 1 | |
| H. C. Goodman—two wives | (3 living) | 3 | |
| A. E. Goodman—Rose Ellis | (1 living) | 3 | |
| A. W. Goodman—Emma Hicks | (3 living) | 3 | |
| E. C. Goodman—Jessie Monro | (3 living) | 3 | |
| Clarance Barrett—Georgina | | 4 | |
| Louisa Barrett—H Campbell | | 4 | |
| Florance Barrett—A Knudson | | 5 | |
| Michael Barrett— | | 2 | |
| Catharine McCallum—H. Hamilton | | 4 | |
| Walter Barrett—Flora Spink | | 1 | |
| Joseph Thompson—Two wives | | 2 | |
| Maurice Thompson—Gertrude Pyke | | 4 | |
| Frank Thompson—Margaret Towers | | 2 | |
| Edwin Thompson—Florance McKay | | 1 | |
| Christopher Thompson—Jean Craig | | 4 | |
| Georgina Thompson, H. Hamilton | | 3 | |
| Ada Arnold—Jas. McArthur | | 7 | |
| Fred Arnold—Ada Pattison | | 3 | |
| Abner Arnold—Lilly Swabey | | 5 | |
| Mabel Thompson,—H. Hutchison | | 7 | 84 |

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Kathleen Hamilton—Ralph Murton | 2 | |
| Abner Arnold—Ada Graham | 1 | |
| Herbert Campbell—Anna McCrae | 5 | |
| Helen Campbell—Hy. Ferguson | 3 | |
| Jas. McArthur, Victoria Osburn | 1 | |
| Dorothy Goodman—H. Fairfield | 1 | 13 |
| Grand Total | | 268 |

---

## RECAPITULATION.

According to the foregoing statement, as the result of the union of Ogle Riggs and the LITTLE VIRGINIAN there have been 268 souls ushered into the world (plus the number designated as "several children" but unnumbered and unnamed), which took place over a period of 200 years, from 1714 to 1916. I have calculated roughly, but I may be mistaken within five or ten either way, that 160 of these descendants are now living, and of this total number at least 104 are descendants of James McCallum and Arabella Goodman, a dominating personality in our race.

Thirty-three descendants represent progeny of Arabella Holloway and Henry Riggs Goodman, and the balance of 23 is the number of the living descendants according to my information, of Abigail Riggs and Dr. Baldwin.

In the first fifty years, between 1714 and 1764, seventeen children were born.

In the second fifty years, between 1764 and 1814, twenty children were born.

In the third fifty years, between 1814 and 1864, seventy children were born.

In the last fifty years, between 1864 and the present time, 114 children were born. Total 268.

So that in the first fifty years, about one every three years, was born; in the second fifty years, about one in every two years was born; in the third fifty years, over one a year was born; and in the last fifty years, over two every year have been born.

The day of large families is at an end, but more units are reproducing than ever before. The mortality in early life has been greatly reduced in later generations.

The race has produced many men and women of superior talents and high mental qualifications, and there have been remarkably few "failures."

Excessive dissipation or immorality are unknown, and the men who have received special training have taken their places in the front rank of their professions, whilst those who have been less fortunate in this respect have worked their way by sheer force of character, into comfortable positions wherever they may be found scattered over the Ameriran Continent.

The living deslendants of Ogle and Elizabeth Riggs are "going strong," and all are mentally and physically sound. Those who answer to the name of Riggs, however, are but three, George Riggs and his daughter Mae, of Pt. Richmond, California, and Elizabeth Riggs of Holyoke, Mass.

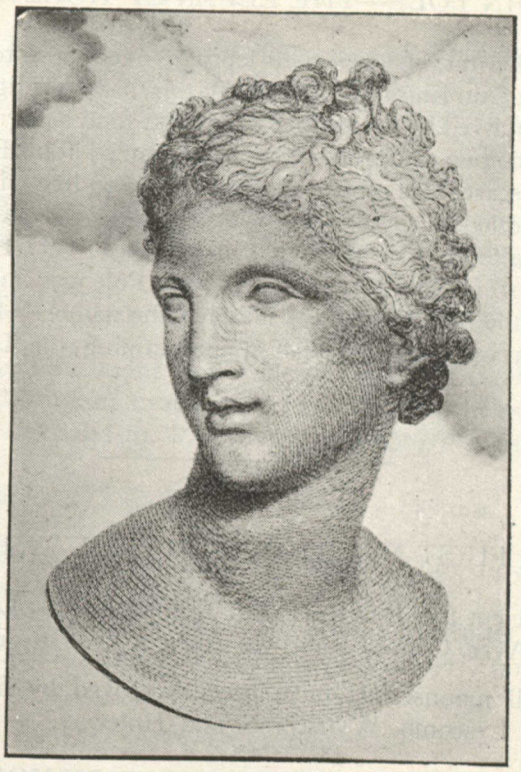
The McCallums who bear the name are few, the reproduction being largely in the female lines.

The living Goodmans, who answer to the name, are as follows: Colonel Kenneth Goodman; Harry C. Goodman; Alfred Edwin Goodman; Edward Cross Goodman; Ambrose Goodman; Helen Maud Goodman; Henry Murray Goodman; Lawrence Goodman; Edwin Ellis Goodman; Edwin Monro Goodman; Arthur Cross Goodman; Elsie Elizabeth Goodman; James Edward Goodman; Eunice Goodman; Emily Goodman; Harold Goodman—Sixteen in all. twelve males and four females, and eleven still unmarried.

## ADDENDA AND ERRATA

### RIGGS.

Page 188. Seventh paragraph: 1670 to 1725.
Page 191. Last line. Erosion—not erasion.
Page 194. Seventh line: Tomes—not Tombs.
Page 198. Eighth line: With the final S.
Page 201. Writing under cut facimile Ralph's signature.
Page 209. Twenty-first line: Tremendous responsibility.
Page 259. Wife of Daniel and his son William both given as Annie Brown—probable mistake.
Page 260. Fourth paragraph, third line: They—instead of that



Head of Venus, by Thos. Holloway.

---

## HOLLOWAY

Arabella Holloway Married Henry Riggs Goodman.

Origin of the Name—Gradual Transition from H-O-L-E-W-A-Y- to H-O-L-L-O-W-A-Y.

The late William Hallaway published a treatise on the name of Holloway, its different spellings, and origin. His daughter, Miss Jane Hallaway, has permitted the author to copy from this work.

It will be noticed that Mr. Hallaway advanced along the line of least resistance. Had he searched among the parish registers for the early Holloways his task would have been far more difficult than it was in making his investigations among the old court records, which covered an immeasurably wider field from a single centre. This is the explanation of his having unearthed so many wicked Holloways in the course of his investigation.

Thus, the reader will be asked to pay more attention to the explanation of the origin of the name than to the personality of these ancient kinsmen.

## JOHN POLE—THE LEPER OF HOLEWAY.

A nameless hermit, stricken with leprosy, lived close to a declivity in the earth, in a locality in England, known at this day as High Gate Hill, near London. This man lived by the charity of others; food being thrown him from a distance. In the course of time, another man, named John Pole, being afflicted with the dread disease, was sent to the great Hole to live with leper No. 1, and those who fed the lepers came to know the place as the Holeway. John Pole was a man of wealth, and he instructed his trustees to erect a Lepers' Hospital at Holeway; and so for hundreds of years John Pole was known as "The Leper of Holeway," while his descendants adopted the name Holeway (without the significant appelation) and assisted in maintaining the Leper's Hospital at Highgate.

---

## THE FIRST MENTION OF HOLEWAY PLACE.

Catalogue of Ancient Deeds in the Public Record Affice—Letters of Privy Seal to Justice Ayre, County Kent, the Ancient Seat of our Holloways.

A.D. 1213—"All manuscripts have been destroyed by fire at ye following places: Lyscomb, Wynscomb, and Holeway."

### A DESCENDANT OF THE LEPER OF HOLEWAY.

A.D. 1280—"Richard Holeway has taken on for life the custody of Lepers at the Lepers' Hospital (Holeway).

### A Half-Hung Holeway.

A.D. 1280—"The King is pleased to pardon William de Montekanise the trespass he is said to have made in receiving within his liberty, John, son of Hugh Holeway, after he was said to have been hanged on the gallows for larceny, whence he had escaped alive, and the King has granted that William may erect the gallows and may have and hold them in his liberty, and in the same state as he held them before they were thrown down by the judgment of the King's Court."

### John Holeweye—Assaulted by a Hussey

A.D. 1280—"Under the King's Seal, Commission granted to Walter Seamel and others, on complaint of John Holeweye; that Margaret Hussey and her son, did assault him on ye Highway."

### Sued for 22 Cents.

A.D. 1285—"'Under ye King's Seal,' Granted to Ralph, son of Hugh de Holleweye, eleven pence, being a year's rental for pasturage in Holleweye Marsh, from Thomas de Wingate.

Grevese Gets a Billiwack.

A.D. 1299—"The King do grant for life, for long service rendered, the Billiwack of Braggastock, to Grevese Holeway."

Henry Gets Inglewood—Famous in Song and Story.

A.D. 1300—"EDWARD REX do grant for life to Henry of Holeway ye Biliwak of Inglewode."

Grevese Greed Loses Him His Billiwack.

A.D. 1327—"Edward Secundus Rex is pleased to take from Grevese of Holeway, the Biliwak of Braggestock, and from his heirs for ever; for he did sell forest land to Walter Scut, ye King's enemy."

Holeway's Cattle on Pembroke's Pasture.

A.D. 1319—"Complaint by ye Earl de Pembroke. For as ye said Earl was empounding cattle, straying within his liberty (aforesaid cattle ye property of Abbott Holeway) His servants were set upon by ye said Abbott Holeway, and also Richard of Holeweye and said cattle released."

Another Pardon.

A.D. 1327—The King is pleased to pardon Robert Holeweye, accused with others of muthering Philip of Winches."

Ye Parish of Holeway.

A.D. 1558—"Rent collected in the Parish of Holeweye from persons of the name. These are the spellings of the name occurring in the Parish, so named, for the year 1558: Holeweye, Holeway, Holewey, Holwey, Holewaye, Hallaway, and last, but not least, Holloway, thus showing the gradual change from Holeway to Holloway.

A Rye House Holloway.

John Holloway was executed under that name, during the reign of Charles II., for participating in the Rye House Plot. He was a Presbyterian merchant of Bristol. He escaped for a time, going to the West Indies. When captured, he said he had been inclined to give himself up. But when he thought of his creditors losing so much money with his head, he decided to keep it on his shoulders and pay them off. I relented (he continued) and confessed to the King. They offered him a trial, he said it was a waste of time. He wished, however, to accuse the Government of mismanagement and acting against the King. He was beheaded.

## ADMIRAL HOLLOWAY'S ANCESTORS

### One Holloway's Name Spelled Three Ways.

As late as 1672, members of the same family spelled their name differently. After this date the style seemed to have become fixed, and it was then men of the name rose to great eminence in England.

In 1672, William Holloway was appointed Judge Advocate of Gibraltar.

In Warner's History of Somerset, it sets out that one Holway was elected Prior of a Monastry. In another place it sets out that Prior Holoway (the same man) anticipating that this Monastry could not be kept up, had resigned, with a pension. Again, this same man is referred to by Dugdale as Prior Holeweye. Thus the same man's name is spelled three different ways.

### Must Go the Hole-Way.

Miss Hallaway continues: "I think my father's book proves conclusively that your Holloway ancestors were the Holeweyes, Hallaways, Holways, Holeways, Holloways, etc., referred to, and that their descendants under the name of Holloway and Hallaway can be found in every country in the world.

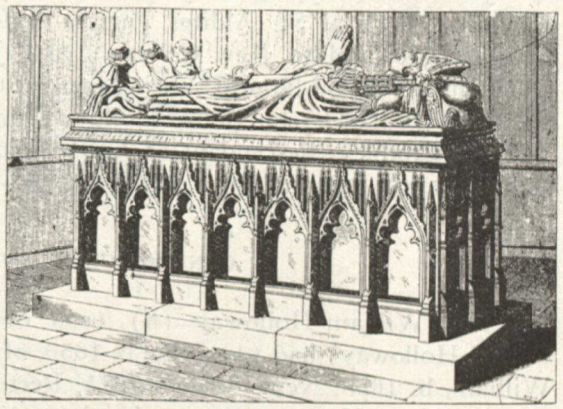
They are our kinsmen, and we must acknowledge them all, the good and the bad, the noble and the ignoble. We must go the "Holeway." I believe that very few families are able to trace the origin of their name so definitely.

## HOLEWAY.

### The Leper Home of John Pole Is Now Called Holloway

"The name of this place was anciently written 'Holeway-Beside-London,' and it comprehends what lies on either side of the highroad up to High Gate." It was distinguished as Upper and Nether Holeway. The road is so old that it has given its name to the neighborhood. However, as early as 1647, the name of Adam Holloway of Iseldon occurs, and it shows this place must have been called Holloway (so spelled) for some time previous.

Our ancient kinsman
William of Wyckham
From a print of the original
in an old English History.



Here lies our great kinsman, William of Wyckham, close by the tomb of that other forebear and famous commoner,
Ralph Riggs Maior.

---

## OUR LINE.

GENERATION I.

John Holloway, born Portsmouth County, Southampton; scholar at Winchester, 1578! Fellow at New College, Oxford, 1586; buried at St. Michael's Church, Oxford, 1632.

He married Alice, daughter of Miles Lee, Lee County, Chester; she died at nearly 100 years of age, in 1671; buried with her husband. They had issue: (1) Richard Holloway, Sergeant-at-law, b. 1595; (2) John Holloway, Registrar of Berkshire, and Steward of New College, b. 1598; (3) Rev. Wm. Holloway, Rector Harwood Magna, County Bucks, called Thomas in church books (perhaps Thomas William), d. 1667, m. Elizabeth, daughter Thomas Barker, Esq., of Harwood Magna, Fellow of New College, 1588, and ninth in descent from Agnes, sister of William of Wykeham, founder of Winchester and New Colleges. Elizabeth was buried, 1696; (4) Francis; (5 )Elizabeth, m. Thomas Tudor, descendant of the Tudors of England, and Principal of Jesus College; (6) Mary, m. Edward Daniel; (7) Alice, m. Lewis Harris, Oxford.

## COLLATERAL FAMILY.

John Holloway, son of John Holloway (2) had a son, Sir Richard Holloway, born at St. Aldites Parish, Oxford, 1626; admitted Winchester School, 1640; Fellow New College, 1644; Justice of Common Pleas, 1633-1638; turned out by James II., being one of the Justices who acquitted the seven bishops (He had a son, John Holloway, who had Elizabeth, who married William Bromley; descendant of Lord Chancellor Bromley). (This is a collateral branch, not our line.)

### GENERATION II, OUR LINE.

Rev. William Holloway (3) (son of John Holloway and Elizabeth Barker Holloway) had (1) John, b. 1650, of New College, 1669, d. 1670; (2) William, b. 1658, New College, 1675, Rector Great Harwood, d. 1718, who married, first, Honour, second daughter of Hugh Barker, M.D.; secondly, Elizabeth, daughter Henry Whitehead( they had Charles, b. 1706, scholar Winchester, 1722); (3) Charles, b. 1660, d 1699; (4) Robert, b. 1663, Fellow of Winchester.

### GENERATION III., OUR LINE.

Charles Holloway, son of William (grandson John), was apprenticed to John Coggs, goldsmith, London. Free of the Guild, 1678. Gave two silver plates to Harwood Church, which bear the Harwood arms and are still in use.

He m. Elizabeth, dau. of Rev. John Costillion, D.D.; secondly, Martha, dau. of Hugh Barker, Esq.

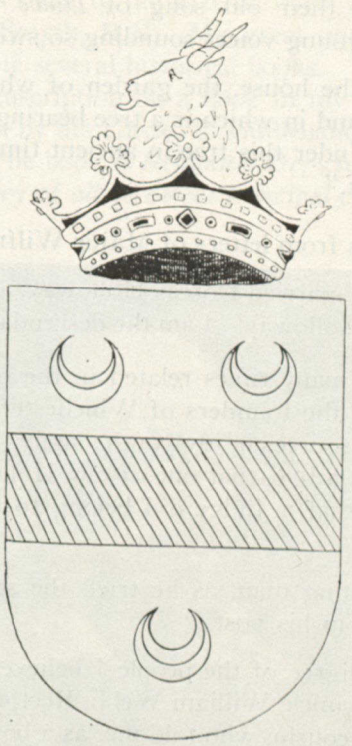
Elizabeth d. 1699. (So that three Holloways married into the Barker family, descendants of William Wyckham's sister.)

The author is indebted for the Holloway line thus far to Major Webb, Bridge House, Berks, England.

The above pedigree is as represented to Major Webb by his father and his cousins when he was a boy. Later he searched the records for himself, and learned wholly what had been told him in part, and presented the result of his labors for these memoirs. They may be safely accepted by kinsmen as essentially correct.

Thus the Holloways are descended from Agnes, the sister of William of Wyckham, that great patron of learning and twice Chancellor of England, and were kin to the doughty Justice, who defied a king in the cause of Truth and Right.

Admiral Holloway, of the same family, when applying for his arms at the College of Heraldry, gave his father's name as Robert Holloway. This Robert was the brother of the father of Thomas Holloway, of London, and our direst ancestor.



Holloway Arms.

These Arms were used by Ambrose Holloway, my grandmother's brother. A silver spoon, bearing the crest is in my possession. It was once the property of Ambrose Holloway.

Admiral Holloway did not see fit to give the name of his grandfather. If he had done so posterity would have been indebted to him. His neglect to follow a well-known custom of those applying for arms in the College of Heraldry has complicated matters for the genealogists, for, strangely enough, there is no pedigree extant of this distinguished kinsman, Admiral Holloway.

GENERATION IV.

Robert, father of Admiral Holloway, and Robert's brother, whose given name we do not know, and who is our ancestor, comprised the fourth generation.

---

## GENERATION IV.

Founder—The Brother of Robert Holloway—The Admiral's Father

Extract from the letter to the Author, written by the late E. Julia Slann, nee Holloway, 1904.

I have been visiting Winchester, the home of our kinsman, William of Wyckham. I was present at the breaking-up day of the College he founded,

and heard the boys sing their old song of *Dulce Domum,* in the College grounds. Their happy young voices sounding so sweet in the evening air.

My niece lives in the house, the garden of which was once part of the grounds of the college, and in which is a tree bearing a plate, with the inscription, explaining that "Under this tree in ancient times the boys were wont to sing their *Dulce Domum.*"

Extracts from letters of Major Wilfred Webb.

My own father first married Dorcas Holloway, and then as his second wife the widow of Ambrose Holloway. I am the descendant of the second marriage.

Our families were many times related in the old days. The Holloways claimed to be the kin of the founders of Winchester and New College, Oxon. I heard this from many sources in my youth; lately I have looked into the matter. I also heard, when a boy, that one of our Holloways was a Judge in the old days, and I found that a Judge did belong to the Holloways, who were Founder's kin.

He was an interesting man, as he tried the seven Bishops, and for his work was dismissed from his post.

I send you the pedigree of the people I believe to be your Holloway ancestors. It was my half uncle William Webb, Rector of Pyton, and my father, and also more than one cousin, who told me, as a boy, that some of the Webbs (Holloway Webbs) were descended from the kindred of William of Wyckham, Bishop of Winchester, and founder of New College, and I believed that this was through the Holloways, my uncle's mother being a Holloway.

Admiral Holloway did record his family at the Herald's College, but he only recorded his father and mother.

He gave Captain Thomas Holloway his commission in the Navy (son of our ancestor John). On the admission papers of Admiral Holloway's father as a solicitor, no mention is made of his parents (A mystery which will probably never be cleared up).

I am going to send you a Holloway spoon, as you are of that blood and will value it so much. It is a silver spoon bearing the Holloway crest. I have many drawings of the Arms. One is on my grandfather's shield in my hall. His first wife was a Holloway.

The Holloway Arms are: "Gules a Fess Vair, between three crescents, argent, a canton ermine." This, I believe, is the correct coat, and the one Ambrose Holloway used. (Ambrose Holloway was my grandmother's brother —Author.)

Thomas Holloway, I have heard, was a rich merchant, or a well-to-do one, dealing in iron in the city of London, and his wife's portrait, by "Russell," shows that they were people of repute.

Thomas was b. 1690, and d. 13th June, 1757.

Louisa Baumstadt was sister to the wife of Peter Guilleband. The sister secondly married Captain Smyth, R.N. My great uncle was the Rev. John Webb, of Tretire, who wrote several historical books.

The following is the inscription on a book in my possession: "Ambrose Holloway, presented to him by his Uncle, P. Guilleband, Esq., on the evening of the 19th Dec., 1820." The book is *Britannia Depicta. Being a correct copy of Mr. Ogilby's actual survey of all ye direct principal cross roads in England. Published* 1753.

A Portrait by Vandyke, sculptured by our famous kinsman, Holloway, the artist. The work is remarkably fine, and a magnifying glass should be used while examining it. Note the veins in the forehead, and the indications of great power in the set of the mouth and nostrils. The query in an unknown hand may be answered thus: Bentivoglio Giovanni was born at Belogna, 1438, seven years before the murder of his father Annibal, the Chief Magistrate of the State.

In 1462 Giovanni contrived to make himself master of the State, which he continued to rule with stern sway for half a century; but his encouragement of the fine arts and his decorations of the city by superb edifices gilded his usurpation. He was expelled by Pope Julian II. and died in the State of Milan, aged 70 years.

GENERATION V.

## THOMAS HOLLOWAY.

Iron manufacturer, London, England, born 1690. He died in 1757 at the age of 67. He urged his son Thomas to carry on his business. But Thomas was of too fine a calibre for his father's calling; he declined, and thus was saved to the nation one of the foremost artists of his day.

Thomas Holloway Sr., m. Ann, daughter of — Broadstreet, Esq. He appears to have been free of the Smiths' Guild at 21. According to Parish Registers, he served as Questman, 1752; Warden, 1756. His will is dated 1757.

His wife, Ann, died fourth March, 1776, aged 52. Her features have been immortalised by the crayon of Russell. The photograph here produced being a copy of this picture, now in possession of a Mr. Smith, Bournemouth. So highly prized by him for its artistic merit as to be beyond the reach of those who would value it for sentimental reasons. The author attempted to save this portrait for the family by offering $500 for it. He is afraid that his suggestion to purchase it at this price was the cause of amusement to Mr. Smith, for he, the author, was informed through a common friend, that if the offer were pounds sterling instead of dollars, it might be taken into serious consideration.

Extract from letted Major Wilfred Webb.

The original picture of Ann Holloway, I feel sure, is worth five hundred pounds.

Issue of Thomas Sr. and Ann (Broadstreet) Holloway.

(1) John; (2) Thomas; (3) Ann (who married Mr. Bass and had son, Frederick Bass—see Jno. Holloway's letter); (4) Peace (who married Mr. Bowles); (5) Daughter, who married Mr. Bodlyge (See Jno. Holloway's letter); 6, 7, 8, died in infancy.

GENERATION VI.

John Holloway, Esq., Head Clerk of the Bank of England (200 clerks under him), b. 1750, d. 1820. He m. first Elenor Jane, daughter of Richard K. Jenkinson, a solicitor of Charles Square, Hoxton, near London (who died 28th Dec., 1792, aged 37). (He, Richard Jenkinson, m. Elizabeth, daughter of Hy. Dean, of the firm of Sir Charles Marsh, Dean & Co., Bankers, Reading). John Holloway married, secondly, Louisa, daughter of Richard Baumstadt, Esq., He was buried in Bunhill Fields, London; she in St. Catharines, Ont., Canada.

---

## LOUISA BAUMSTADT

Extract from a letter from the Author's father, the late Edwin Goodman.

John Holloway of the Bank married secondly Louisa Baumstadt, my grandmother. Her ancestors came from Holland and France, with the Huguenots in 1685, after the revocation of the edict of Nantes, by which the Protestants were deprived of all protection in the exercise of their religion. This fatal act of Louis the Fourteenth did more to damage France and destroy its strength and prestige than anything he had ever done, as the Huguenots were the very bone and sinew and brains of the country.

It was the Huguenots who brought over to England the silk weaving industry, and other industries that formerly flourished in France, and gave that country a supremacy which was lost to England when she foolishly, at the bidding of the Church of Rome, revoked the edict issued in 1598 by Henry the Fourth, called "Henri Quatre" by the French. Peter Guilleband was the head of this silk weaving colony referred to, which included the Baumstadts.

Anglice Baumstadt was the ancestor of Louisa Baumstadt, who was connected by marriage with Peter Guilleband, being the sister of his wife. This Peter Guilleband became immensely rich and left to his son, Peter, a clergyman, four hundred thousand dollars, a princely fortune in those days. To Louisa Baumstadt he left £1,000 and a mourning ring. On the outside was his hair in black enamel and on the inside the scription: "Sacred to the memory of Peter Guilleband, Esq."

Louisa Baumstadt as a girl. Second wife of John Holloway of the Bank. A miniature bequeathed to the author by the late Eleanor (Holloway) Slann.

---

## THE AUTHOR IS BEQUEATHED A CHERISHED FAMILY TOKEN

Extract from Letter of Late E. Julia Slann.

"I enclose the photograph of my late sister Eleanor,, taken last year. She had had it ready to send to you, including the writing on the back. She was in her 80th year. She did not look it.

She left two sons and four daughters. Four days before her death my sister said that you might be interested in knowing that she recollected your great grandmother, Mrs. John Holloway, as an old lady, who jumped her on her knee when she was a child of four.

I am sending you the miniature of this great grandmother, Louisa Holloway, nee Baumstadt. I am very pleased you should have the original. When last with my sister I told her you had expressed a wish to have it, and in a conversation with her children she said that she would like to gratify your wish, and so after her death the children thought of what she had said, and all agreed that the original should be sent to you, and we all know you will value it highly.

You will understand it is my sister's gift to you, sent by her children."

---

PORTRAIT OF ANN
THE FAMOUS "RUSSELL"

Ann (Broadstreet) Holloway, wife of Thomas Holloway, Sr., father of the artist. The lady with the beautiful face which has been the heritage of the Holloways to this day.

This lady was idealized by her distinguished son Thomas Holloway, who "was wont to gaze abstractedly on his Mother's portrait, when she was "no more," and to "speak rapturously"—as his biographer tells us—" of her angelic countenance."

The author adds his tribute: She died comparatively young. She was accustomed to visit the poor and sick and on one occasion she notified a poor woman that she would call upon her at a certain hour. The woman scrubbed the floor, and otherwise prepared for Mrs. Holloway's reception, who, on her arrival sat in a chair with her feet on the still wet boards. There was no fire in the room. She caught cold which settled on her lungs and proved fatal. She was then about fifty-two years of age. She left behind her five children, three having died in infancy.

---

## EXTRACT FROM LETTER.

Late E. Julia Slann.

I send you Mrs. Thomas Holloway's portrait (she was the mother of Thomas the engraver). The sweet lady whose lovely face we are all so proud of, she was your great, great, grandmother. It was taken from a crayon drawing, which it is said Thomas, her son, gazed on so rapturously.

The original is in the possession of a Mr. Smith, who values it highly as a work of art. I am afraid it is useless to ask him to sell it. But I will have my niece Gertrude, who knows him, sound him for you."

---

## PORTRAIT OF ANN.

### EUGENICS.

If you gaze long on Ann Broadstreet's face it will haunt you. You will see it again in your dreams, with its eternal smile. It is a perfect oval, the forehead broad and smooth; the eyes like those the poets speak of as the windows of the soul; the nose finely formed, and of such delicate proportions as to lend an added charm to a mobile mouth, which, characteristically feminine, smiles upon the world from Russell's great masterpiece, inspiring as it did in those other days, a feeling of optimism and faith; faith in God and humanity, for we know that it lightens up the features of a good, kind, broadly charitable woman. It is a beautiful face, from the high domed forehead to the rounded, slightly cleft chin; this little cleft, a flaw, the only flaw which while it adds strength of character to the features, also accentuates the perfections of an angelic countenance.

It is Ann Broadstreet's heritage to the Holloways, to the fifth and sixth generation.

Do we not find in some families that there is often a mental, moral, or physical strain, which seems to dominate the whole?

Such was Ann Broadstreet's influence on the race. Her lofty character and physical perfections, like tendrils of the parent vine, reproducing themselves. For her living descendants, particularly in the female line, are peculiarly and characteristically self-respecting, cultured and refined, which tends to keep their lives wholesome and their faces fair—hall marks of the race.

And he who knew the descendants of Ann, as the author has learned to know them, could not fail to notice the imprint of her beautiful character in their lives.

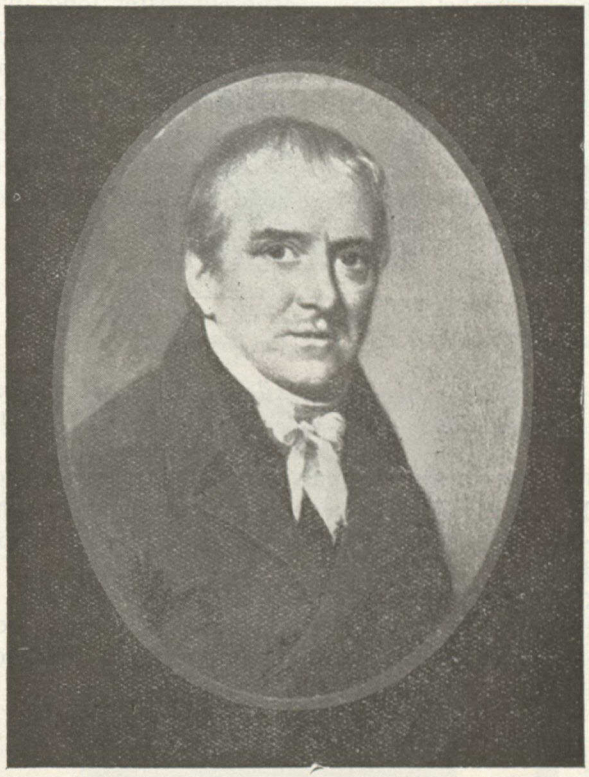
As to the features of the Holloway descendants, they are a strange study, for intermittently Ann Broadstreet's face appears, with almost startling effect, to the student of physiognomy.

Mark well the features of Ann of the Portrait, bearing in mind the wonderful charm of expression and the eternal smile. Then study the portrait of John Holloway her son, by the great Englehardt; of Thomas Holloway, the famous engraver (by himself); of Mary Peace Holloway (Ballachey); Capt. Thomas Holloway (by himself); Annette (Holloway) Seabrook; Eunice (Holloway) Seabrook; Eunice Seabrook (Harrison); Arabella Holloway (Goodman) (my grandmother); Reginald Slann, Bournemouth, England; Edwin Ellis Goodman (my own son), note the Broadstreet smile after 150 years; and in a most marked degree Annette (Seabrook) Godson (Vancouver, B. C.); undoubtedly, also, the reader will be able to trace the Broadstreet—or shall we say Holloway, face, in many of the descendants of Alfred Holloway, living in Ontario and British Columbia, as well as in the Goodman line in Ontario.

---

## JOHN HOLLOWAY AND ELEANOR (JENKINSON) HOLLOWAY.

Had issue: (1) Died in infancy; (2) Ann, m. Thos. Webb, Esq., the historian; (3) John Holloway, Esq., d. a bachelor, 1854, b. 1781, he was a stock broker of South Town, Great Yarmouth, Norfolk; (4) Dorcas, m. Wm. Webb; (5) Mary Peace, m. George Baker Ballachey; (6) Martha Philadelphia (extract from letter of late E. Julia Slann, "We have had a death in the family on April 30th, 1906, the youngest son of Richard Slann and Philadelphia (Holloway) Slann, died suddenly in the street."); (7) Captain Thomas Holloway, R.N., who married Elizabeth Jane, daughter of Thomas Rudkin, Lynn, Norfolk.



My Great Grandfather John Holloway of the Bank, from a miniature on ivory by the famous Englehardt, greatest of miniature painters. Now in possession of the Author. On the back of the frame are these words: *Pinxit, G. Englehardt,* 1807, *E. Goodman, M.B., to A. E. Goodman.* This picture has been valued as worth $1,000 as a work of art.

---

## COLLATERAL FAMILIES.

Issue: Eleanor Jane, Elizabeth Julia, married their first cousins—two brothers—Eleanor married John Slann, and Elizabeth married Thomas Holloway Slann.

Eleanor's children: (1) Bernard Cecil (married, no children); (2) Alice Maud Mary (West) (Married; one son, Vivian West); (3) Edith, deceased; (4) Gertrude Elizabeth, unmarried; (5) Mary Beatrice, unmarried; (6) Edgar (married; three children); (7) Mabel Evelyn Margaret, unmarried.

Elizabeth Julia's children: (1) Eric Thomas Richard Raphael, deceased ten years after; (2) Violet Lilian Julia (Henville) married, no children; (3) Christian Olive (unmarried); (4) Flora Adelaide Beatrice (unmarried); (5) Sylvia Winnifred Clemence (deceased); (6) Reginald Holloway, unmarried.

Eleanor and Elizabeth Slann are absent, after long lives of great usefulness. They were typical Holloways, of great refinement and culture of intellect, and their lovable Christian characters typified in innumerable letters to the author has caused them to be much lamented by him. Eleanor Jane Slann actively assisted in preparing these memoirs, at eighty years of age whilst her sister Elizabeth Julia Slann largely contributed to whatever success has been attained in the earlier Holloway genealogy, and was a constant and very kind correspondent.

---

*Faded photographs and letters, silent harbingers of tears,*
*Shall we leave them in the litter of the wasting of the years?*

The following writings of great interest have been saved to posterity by Violet Henville, nee Slann, of Bournemouth, England, daughter of Elizabeth Julia (Holloway) Slann, and grand daughter of Captain Thomas Holloway.

The original autograph letters from "Grandmother" Slann (Martha Philadelphia Holloway); and Captain Thomas Holloway, son and daughter of John of the Bank, are undoubtedly the only ones in existence.

---

## SIGNATURES.

First and foremost is the handwriting of "Grandmother" Holloway, "the girl" whom Captain Thomas Holloway married. She was a child of 13 when she attended the funeral of Louisa Gooch, his affianced wife, on which occasion she helped to carry the pall. Some time after the funeral Thomas Holloway said to her parents: "Take care of little Elizabeth, and, all consenting, I will marry her when she is 16. And, all consenting, he kept his word.

Other important signatures are those of John Slann, husband of his cousin Eleanor (Holloway) Slann, and son of Richard and Philadelphia (Holloway) Slann, who was daughter of John Holloway of the Bank. Also of his brother Thomas Holloway Slann, who also married his cousin, Elizabeth Julia Slann, nee Holloway, sister of the above Eleanor Slann, and both daughters of Captain Thomas Holloway.

There are also the signatures of the brother and the wife of the brother of Elizabeth (Rudkin) Holloway, wife of Captain Thomas Holloway. The signature of Mrs. Rudkin reminds us that she is still alive, at 81, the only remaining link in that generation between the present and the past.

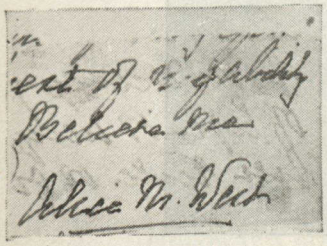
. . . . . .

Three years have passed since the above was written regarding Mrs. Rudkin.

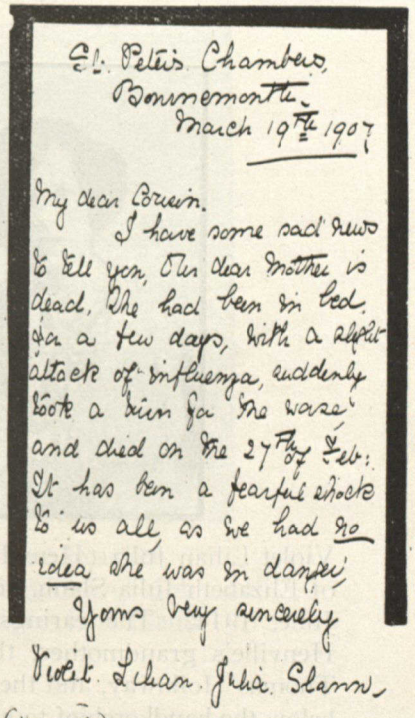
Eleanor Jane (Holloway) Slann, daughter of the Thomas Holloway, R.N. b. July 22, 1824; d. May 16, 1905.

Elizabeth Julia (Holloway) Slann, second daughter of Captain Holloway, R.N., who died 27th Feb., 1907. **(Two Portraits)**

Alice Maud (Slann) West, daughter of the late Eleanor (Holloway) Slann.



Reginald Holloway Slann, only living son of Elizabeth Julia Slann, nee Holloway, taken Sept. 1913, Bournemouth, Eng. *At the Front.*

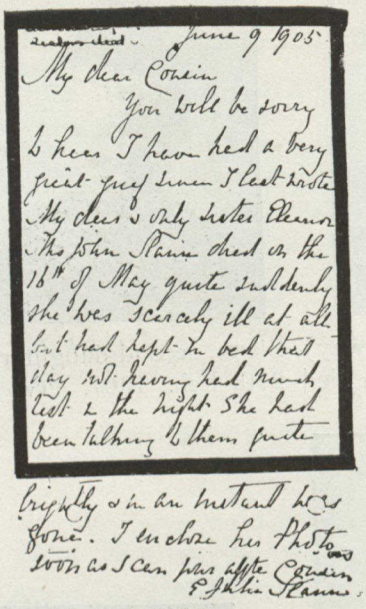


St. Peter's Chambers,
Bournemouth.
March 19th 1907

My dear Cousin.
I have some sad news to tell you, Our dear Mother is dead. She had been in bed for a few days, with a slight attack of influenza, suddenly took a turn for the worse and died on the 27th Feb. It has been a fearful shock to us all, as we had no idea she was in danger.
Yours very sincerely
Violet Lilian Julia Slann.
(Hemmitt)

you are in the Old Country

Yours, Sincere Cousin
(Son of Elizabeth Julia Slann)
Reginald Holloway Slann



June 9 1905

My dear Cousin

You will be sorry
to hear I have had a very
great grief since I last wrote
My dear & only sister Eleanor
Mrs John Slann died on the
18th of May quite suddenly
She was scarcely ill at all
but had kept in bed that
day and having had much
rest & the night She had
been talking to them quite
brightly & in an instant he was
gone. I enclose her Photo as
soon as I can get after Cousin
Yours affte
F. Julia Slann.

Flora Adelaide Beatrice Slann, third and youngest daughter of the late Elizabeth Jula Slann, nee Holloway, Taken 1913.

Violet Lilian Julia (Henville) Slann, daughter of Elizabeth Julia Slann, nee Holloway. Taken June, 1914. The earings belonged to Mrs. Henville's grandmother, the wife of Captain Thomas Holloway, and the chain barely show-below the handkerchief to her grandfather Captain Thomas Holloway, who wore it in all his battles.

Yours sincerely
Violet Henville

Cecil Bernard Slann, son of John and Eleanor Jane Slann.

Mabel Evelyn Magaret, fifth daughter of John and Eleanor Jane Slann.

Elizabeth Belinda, wife of Cecil Bernard Slann.

Gertrude Elizabeth
Third daughter of John and Eleanor Slann.

Mary Beatrice,
Fourth daughter of John and Eleanor Jane Slann

---

Extract from letter from Violet Henville, nee Slann, dater January 12th 1916:

We went to see the old great aunt Rudkin( who married Grandmother Holloway's brother) in Norwich. She is 84. We fell in love with her on the spot. She is the sweetest little old lady I ever saw. Oh how delighted she was to have us. The fuss she made over us was touching. And now I could almost cry as I write. She is dead. I had a nice cheery letter from her, Dec. 2nd, and on the 15th she was dead.

Mrs. Henville writes that she located and visited the graves of her father Thomas H. Slann, in the churchyard at Attleburg, Norfolk, and had engraved on the stone *"In Loving Memory of Elizabeth Julia (Holloway) Slann, wife of Thomas H. Slann."*

The graves of Captain Thomas Holloway (Stenval Green cemetery) and of his wife "Grandmother" Holloway were also visited. That of Mrs. Henville's sister Winifred Sylvia, and her brother Eric; also Richard Slann's grave at Yarmouth (husband of Martha Holloway), and that of John Holloway, brother of Martha, at Yarmouth—Author: These facts are recorded as a possible guide to future generations of Holloway descendants. The location of gravestones is important in genealogical research.

---

## LETTER.

From Captain Thomas Holloway, R.N., to His Daughter Elizabeth Julia, on Her Homecoming From School, Xmas Holidays.

My Dearly Beloved Julia:

This time you see your own Dear Father's writing to congratulate you on the approaching happy meeting (D.V.) next Thursday at the station, and may the Almighty bless you, my child, with good health, so that we may rejoice together and thank Him for all His great goodness to us.

We are very sorry you are the victim of chillblains, but hope a change may benefit you. We are all now quite well, except occasionally your Dear Mamma has a little cough; so, too, have I.

Bring your muff. Remember us kindly to Miss Prisser, and if you have a good opportunity, our respectful regards to the good Vicar. Now, my beloved child, may God grant you a safe journey, and with the love of your Dear Parents, we remain most affectionately,

T. and E. J. HOLLOWAY.

20th December, 1853.

Enclosed is the order for ten shillings.

---

## LETTER.

From "Grandmother" Slann to Her Niece and Daughter-in-Law Julia, Wife of Thomas Holloway Slann—It was Mrs. Richard Slann( nee Martha Philadelphia Holloway) Husband Who Assisted Thomas Holloway the Great Artist, as Engraver in the Reproduction of Raphael's Cartoons.

May 5th, 1865.

My Beloved Daughter:—Dear Louisa would have replied to your kind note had she not been so fully engaged. Therefore, as such is the case I have

taken the office of informing you of our plans in accordance with your notice. Should all be well, we hope to be with you on the day notified, namely the 13th. Most truly do I hope we shall have the great pleasure of meeting each other in the possession of good health, that valuable blessing, and I do hope your Dear Husband will meet us on our arrival at Holt. I shall feel much obliged in having inside places secured for us, for I am very sure we could not ascend to the TOP (stage coach).

I sincerely hope Mr. Tuck will reserve them or we should be in a pretty predicament , considering the distance.

I am not surprised that it should be so long and (situated as you are) sufficient reason for your not being able to visit us, and consequently must be postponed till a more favorable time.

Receive my sincere thanks, my dear Julia, for your kind sympathy regarding my nervous indisposition which increases with my age, which, after all, is a natural result.

Dear L. has performed your commission according to your request. Were you aware of the expense of the articles? If not, you will be astonished, as I was, but no doubt the material is very difficult to manufacture, which accounts for it.

What very delightful showers we have had; truly, I hope you have been equally favored. It is really quite a pleasure to see the improvement it has affected after so long a drought. It was very much needed and therefore a very great blessing to be thankful for.

How can we ever be sufficiently thankful to the Almighty for His numerous mercies vouchsafed to us. Surely gratitude should be the prevailing feeling of our hearts.

In conclusion receive our united best love, and present the same to my beloved son, and earnestly and daily praying to our Heavenly Father to bless you both with every temporal, but above all with every spiritual gift, believe me, my dear Julia,

Your loving and affectionate Mother,

M. P. SLANN.

From Grandmother Holloway wife of the Captain to her daughter Elizabeth Julia my Mother Written Dec: 31 1877

Yours loving & Janet Mother

E J Holloway

Kilvarin Rudkin, Brother of Grandmother Holloway, & Brother-in-law of the Captain. Written Feb: 1884.

Love to all Kisses to the dear children and with our united love to yourself and trusting to hear from you soon

We remain
Yours Affectionately
Wm. Rudkin

Widow of above
Still alive at 81

Your Affectionate Aunt
M Rudkin

— Sepulchres Contributed by Violet Henville née Stann

Sepulchre of the Late Eleanor Stann

and Reggie Love from all & very much from your loving sister

Eleanor Stann

John Stann. Husband of Eleanor. My Mother's sister.

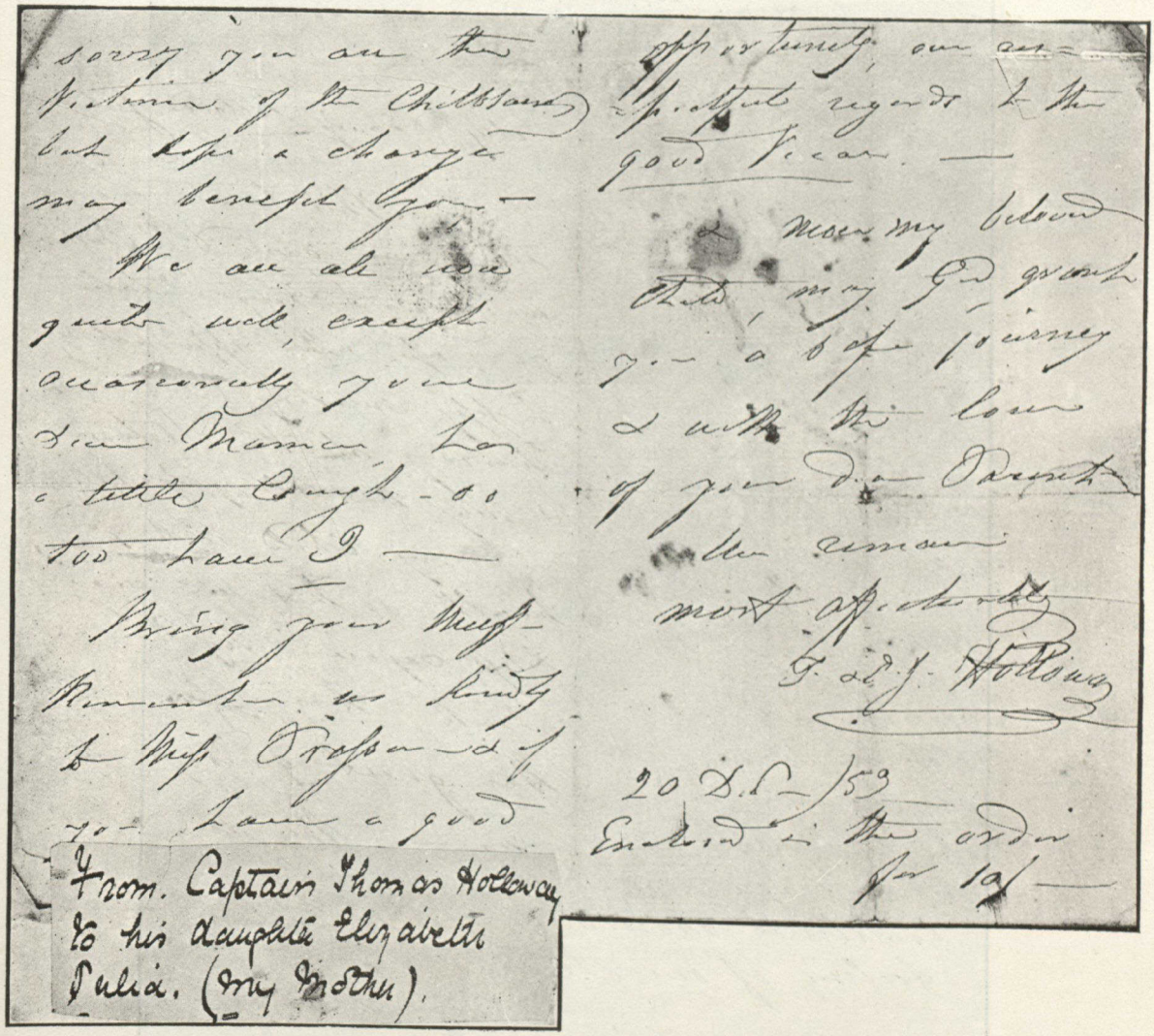
Thomas Holloway Stann. my Father Husband of Elizabeth Julia

all your kindness. Eleanor and trusting that all will end as speedily and satisfactorily as the last Eleanor Rudkin

Faithfully yours
J Stann

Holt Sunday 5th May 1844

Eliz. Holloway
Stann



From. Captain Thomas Holloway
To his daughter Elizabeth
Julia. (my Mother).

sorry for all the
pain of the Childbirth
but hope a change
may benefit you —

We are all very
well, except
occasionally your
dear Mama has
a little cough — or
too Love I —

Bring your Mess-
mates as kindly
as Miss Drayson if
you can a good

opportunity, our respects
to the
good Vicar. —

Now my beloved
Child, may God grant
you a safe journey
& with the love
of your dear Papa

Believe me
most affectionately
T. & J. Holloway

20 D.C. 59
Entered in the order
for 10/ —

a Journey and situated as you are is sufficient reason for you not being able to write and consequently must be excused till a more favorable opportunity at the same time receive my sincere thanks for your kind sympathy in regard to my nervous temperament which increases with my age, much it affects all but a natural result — Dear L. has perfectly & your commission according to your request were you aware of the expense of the articles you will be astonished as I was but no doubt the material is very difficult to manufacture which accounts for it — What very delightful showers we have had truly do I hope you have been equally favored it certainly gave a pleasure to see the improvements it has effected after so long a drought it was very much needed and therefore a great blessing to be thankful for. How can we ever be sufficiently thankful to the Almighty for his numerous mercies vouchsafed to us surely gratitude should be the prevailing feeling of our Hearts —

From Grandmother Slann to her niece & daughter-in-Law. Julia. wife of Thomas Holloway Slann. & our mother. please return

## JOHN HOLLOWAY—LOUISA BAUMSTADT.

John Holloway and Louisa (Baumstadt) Holloway, his second wife, had issue (1) Ambrose, solicitor, City Road House, b. 1795, m. Elizabeth Precilla dau. of Thomas Massett of Bishop's Gate Street, London, d. Jan 6th, 1822, aged 27, leaving one daughter, Elizabeth Precilla, who m. Rev. Theodore Heckler, chaplain at Grand Duchey at Baden, she lived in Plymouth as a widow. After Ambrose death his widow m. William Webb, she being his second wife, he having had two sons by his first wife Dorcas. She married, thirdly, Rev. Wm. Slattery; (2) Eleanor Jane, d. consumption, Aug. 18, 1817, aged 21; (3) Arabella, m. Henry Riggs Goodman, M.D., He died 1879, she died 1885. (4) Alfred, surgeon Hatton Garden, b. 1802, m. Sarah Massett, dau. of Samuel Bagster of Old Windsor; (5) Edwin, d. of consumption while studying law, Oct. 8th, 1822, aged 21; (6) Caroline Sophia, d consumption, Oct. 26th, 1814 (See Obituary); (7) Sophia Reeve, d. consumption Sept 17th, 1816; (8) Elizabeth.

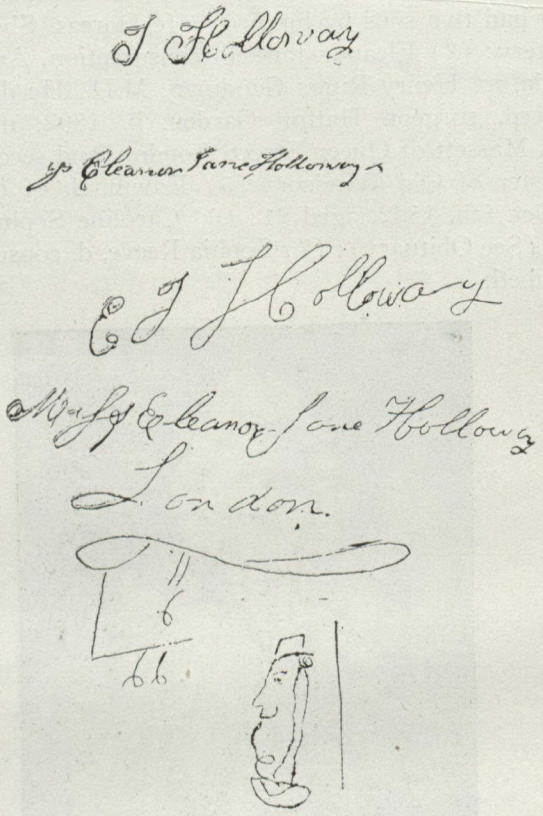
Mrs. John (Baumstadt) Holloway

---

## EXTRACT OF LETTER OF LATE ELIZABETH JULIA SLANN.

Mrs. Goodman, nee Arabella Holloway, and her brother Alfred were the only surviving children of the second Mrs. Holloway to live to middle life. Many of her brothers and sisters are buried at Bunhill Fields, their graves being clustered around the tomb of the great John Bunyon, by reason of which theirs have not been disturbed.

The following letter was written to Eleanor Holloway, my grandmother's full sister, and second child of Louisa (Baumstadt) Holloway, while she was attending Rhodes Seminary High Gate (Note that High Gate was the birthplace of the ancient Holloways—See Origin of Name). This letter is 103 years old, and Eleanor was fourteen when she received it—poor little girl, like her sisters and brother, she died of that dread disease, consumption Ambrose, it is feared, also succombed to the same disease (see his letter to my grandmother).



The school book of Eleanor Jane Holloway, my grandmother's sister. She died of consumption, aged 21, She was the second child of John Holloway of the Bank and Louisa Holloway, nee Baumstadt.

My dear & beloved Daughter

Admiral Holloway has written me word that he expects Tom will shortly set his foot on English ground — but the time cannot be ascertained owing to the winds &c — The above happy intelligence you will receive with pleasure — not so perhaps as what will follow — As Tom will have no certain time to stay our Journey, to see you, is at an end for we cannot be absent for a week — Instead of our coming down to see you we shall send for you to come up the moment he arrives — Your dear Mama is very much disappointed as She fully expected to have the pleasure of a Voyage — and so are all our little ones who were to have accompanied us very much mortified — Thus you see my dear Anna that the plans we form with so much pleasure are frequently frustrated — to be sure — the pleasure of seeing our beloved Sailor after such a long absence will amply compensate for the present disappointment —

of an acquittal at that great Humble Day of the Lord fills you with gratitude & pleasure ——— What an invaluable blessing ——— May our beloved Saviour excite in us the purest love & gratitude & fill our Mouths with his praises ——

I have the pleasure to tell you that we are all well. Your dear Mother & all our Fire Side send their love & blessing. Remember us most friendly & affy to Your good & very amiable Governess ——— Mr Rhodes calls upon us frequently again on his return ——— And now my beloved Dearest Jane God Almighty bless you & preserve you in his love & fear strengthen & heal your Body & prosper you for a long useful & happy life ———

So prays

My lovely daughter

Your ever affectionate Father

J Holloway

Redruth Office ———
Augst 22nd. 1811

I inclose a pound Note ——

## EXTRACT FROM MEMOIRS OF JOHN HOLLOWAY Jr. SON OF JOHN HOLLOWAY, Sr.

John Holloway Sr. is mentioned in biographical dictionaries as having gained fame as a lecturer in England, his most attractive subject being "Animal Magnetism."

In a biographical sketch which the writer has before him is this reference, dated 1827.

"A few years previous to the present period the new and interesting subject of Animal Magnetism was presented to the public attention. It was first popular in France, and soon in the hands of very able persons became highly attractive in England. Mr. John Holloway offered himself as a candidate for this new species of fame, and soon surpassed most of his competitors by his new and imposing style of lecturing. In London large parties of well-informed persons assembled at his house to hear the abstract questions discussed and the results explained.

"With the mind already prepossessed it is not astonishing that perhaps superficial metaphysics, when combined with an ardent and devout style, strongly fascinated and gratified the imagination. Such energy and real piety overcame the heart; and a ready tribute of praise was at hand. It is not insinuated that animal magnetism is not without some foundation in truth; but it soon receded before the allurements of other novelties, and at length became the subject of ridicule and satire from the fact that unqualified persons aimed at carrying it beyond its proper limits.

"With the correctly initiated, the simple theory was that of the influence of mind upon mind, to acquire which was the art taught in the lectures in question. Thus what was first known as animal magnetism afterwards became known as mesmerism, hypnotism, and has to-day become a demonstrable science and under other names is used no doubt by Christian Scientists and other modern cults."

---

## LETTER FROM JOHN HOLLOWAY

100 Years Old.

City Road, Nov. 6th, 1814.

My Beloved Daughter:—(Mary Peace Holloway)

I send you the enclosed which I wrote last Sunday, and which I had inscribed in the weekly paper called "The Instructor." If my life is spared I intend to publish a full account in which I shall notice a few passages in my

father's and mother's lives; in the life of Frederick Bass, my nephew and my my dear sisters, especially my sister Bodlydge. May my God and Saviour sanction the work by his blessing.

Two cautionary remarks should never be forgotten:

1. Never to leave undone what in the last hour of this life we shall lament over, in its omission.

2. Never to do that, which in the same sad moments will produce unavoidable sorrow.

City Road Nov 6. 1814

My beloved Daughter

I send you the inclosed which I wrote last Sun. which has inserted in the weekly paper called the Instructor — If my life is spared I intend to publish a full account of which I shall notice a few passages in my Father & Mothers life — the life of Fred^k Bass my Nephew & my dear Sisters — especially my sister Bodlydge — may my God & Saviour sanction the work by his blessing

Two Cautionary remarks ought never to be forgotten — 1^st never to leave undone what at our last hour of this present life we shall lament over in its omission — 2^dly never to do that which in the same sad moments will produce unavoidable sorrow

Nov 6 1814 May the joyful remembrance of your dear deceased but now triumphant Sister be a motive to fresh diligence in making your calling & election sure — may it keep you from undue attachments to earth — preserve you from all levity of spirit — and that our dear Lord may possess your soul with the same blessed hope — the same happy confidence of faith is the most earnest prayer of

My dearest Daughter

Your ever Affectionate Father

J Holloway

I have inclosed 6 Copies for your present & humble Visitors & other if your friend — you may as many more as you please —

Rev^d W Wood — the Superintendent of the Circuit preaches the Sermon this ~~week~~ Evening —

Turn over

## THE DEATH OF CAROLINE SOPHIA

The obituary referred to illustrates the extreme piety of the Holloway family, and the ultra-religious tone adopted in those days even in ordinary conversation. The obituary contaianed 3,000 words. The author has only reproduced the closing sentences.

A chain, the gift of Mrs. Ballachey, made from this child's hair after her death, is in my possession. It is light brown in color and lustrous as when cut from the child's head a hundred years ago.

---

## THE CLOSING HOURS OF POOR LITTLE CAROLINE SOPHIA.

Her countenance once more brightened at her hearing that Satan would not take her nor any one who loved Jesus; and hearing her mamma join in the same sentiment she cried out "Ah, then indeed, I am assured I love Him, and that Jesus loves me; and at this moment she was again all peace and joy, and using all the strength she could collect she spoke divinely of her Saviour, eagerly wishing that all might hear her confession of what love she felt for Him.

Then she begged to see her Uncle, and she called for good Dr. Hamilton, not for medical but for spiritual advice, for which purpose he was with her a few weeks. As is his constant practice, he had spoken to her of the love of Jesus and of Heaven and Heavenly joys, the Saviour which she never lost.

Her uncle had also been up in Town to visit her, and had much comforted her. But, alas, neither could now visit her, both were out of town, one at Hampton Court, the other to visit patients. When she knew how impracticable it was to see them, she sweetly acquiesced in the Divine will and continued happy, blessing and praising the name of Jesus. Except in the above instance, Our Lord mercifully considered her weakness and her soul enjoyed sweet repose, her only anxiety (and this arose from her great pains) was lest her patience could not hold out; and most importunate she was that we might pray for her, that in this respect she might be preserved to the end. When either of her parents were praying with her and speaking of redeeming love, using of course the names of Jesus, Christ, Saviour, Redeemer, etc., no language can express the view of her countenance; the name was truly music in her ears, and caused her heart to bound with joy.

The last night was a night of severe affliction, but during the intervals of her spasms as usual she rejoiced in the hope of glory, saying "It will be but a moment and I shall be with my Lord," And so she continued until eleven o'clock in the forenoon. At this time (and it was the last minute of her life) her mother was constrained to go downstairs to give vent to tears. Her afflicted father had taken his leave an hour before. She lay now reclining her

head on the shoulder of a dear female friend, who, holding her hand said "Very soon I hope we shall all be with you in Heaven, my dear." At which the dying Saint opened her eyes and with increasing blessedness in her features, as though Heaven itself was imprinted, assented with her head.

She again closed her eyes and without a sigh or the least difficulty of breathing, or even the least tremulous motion, she was released, and of course found herself with The Lord, Who having manifested His love for her in early infancy, had produced such a love for Him as it would be diffiicult to describe.

---

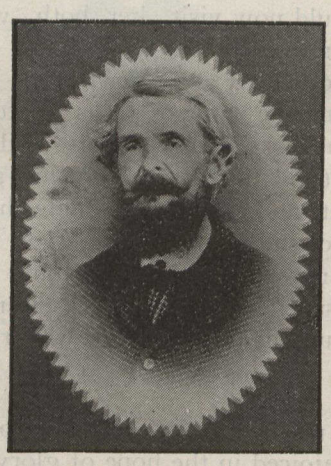
## EXTRACT FROM LETTER FROM THE LATE MRS. BALLACHEY.

I send you a likeness of your father. The date would be about 1853. I think a good picture might be made from it.

We also beg your acceptance of a hair chain which was given to me by your grandmother, the Mrs Goodman of my young days. My daughter Isabel is pleased to give it to you, as a relation, and knowing you value family relics.

The hair in the chain was from the little girl Caroline Sophia, of the obituary written by her father John Holloway.

The letter was addressed to my husband's mother, Mary Peace Ballachey, nee Holloway. It is wonderful that it has survived all the wreckage of years.



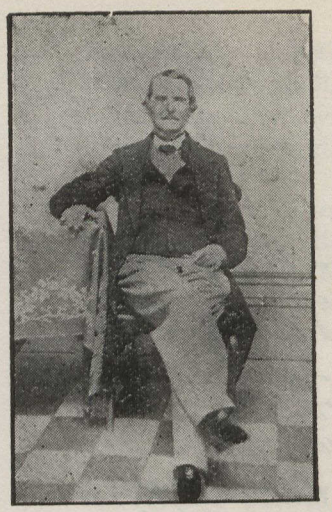
Doctor Alfred Holloway, founder of the Holloway family in Canada, and full brother of my Grandmother Arabella (Holloway) Goodman. Taken when he lived at Mount Bridges, Ontario.

composed and painted. the prettyest thing he had ever seen — I also play my violin every evening and I have improved vastly - so that the neighbours often come in to hear me. — In the morning I study history and Geology and when I am tired I read some light literature - I have read all Sir Walter Scotts and also Dickens works. — I do wish I had been brought up an artist — I feel that I should have acquired greatness — I never liked my profession indeed my address is not sufficiently good - I did very well among the Dutch but their address with them did not signify. and I made among them many wonderful cures and that was all they cared about — but enough of myself. Good bye — I will write you the last verses I wrote yesterday — one on our hope in Christ —

Our glorious membership in Christ.
Makes all our earthly honors dim. —
And all the blessings we desire
Are nought to what we find in Him —
All earthly pleasures fade away —
All honors sink to nothingness —
Before the glories of his grace
And nothing short the soul can bless.
What glorious future for that soul
To whom the grace of God is given,
And the dear privilege we boast
Of "Our Father who art in heaven".
How delightful it is to feel
That we have a Father there,
Who invites us all to come,
And accepts our humble prayer
Who can the path of life feel dull?
Who can ever feel despair? —
With such a glorious hope as this —
A heavenly life we shall obtain.
For ever happy full of bliss
For ever with the Lord to reign!

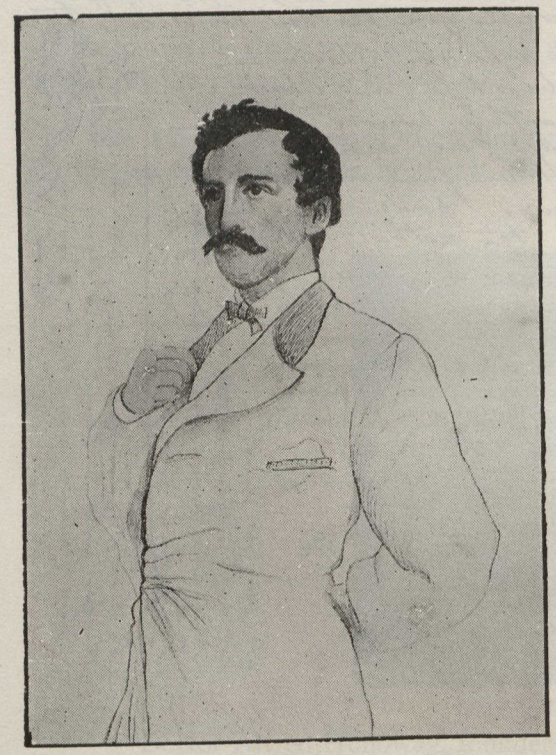
No sin or sorrow can enter there
Nor hate or grief or pain
But love and love for ever!
For God is love and God is there!

My dear daughter, remember me kindly to your good husband and children and believe me to be your affectionate father



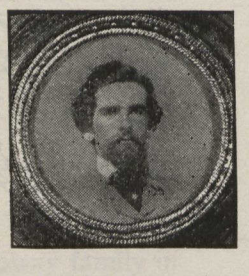
Doctor Alfred Holloway. In later life he was a member of the Royal College of Surgeons, England.

Italy—A sketch by Dr. Alfred Holloway.



Boothe, the slayer of Lincoln. Sketched by Dr. Alfred Holloway in 1865, during the excitement following the assassination.

Augusta Holloway, nee Bagster, wife of Dr. Alfred Holloway and daughter of Samuel Bagster.



Alfred Holloway Jr. in his younger days (son of Dr. Alfred Holloway).

Descendants of Alfred Holloway Jr. and their life partners—A family reunion on the occasion of the 84th birthday of Alfred Holloway, Jr.
From Left: Back row, standing—Mrs. (Holloway) Bateman; Alice Holloway; Mrs. (Holloway) Ridgeway; George Sawyer; Hattie Sawyer; Hubert Trumper; Allan Bateman. Front row—Vaughan Bateman; Alfred Holloway Jr.; Mrs. (Holloway) Weston, Mrs. Alfred Holloway; Cornelious Trumper; W. E. Sawyer; Mrs. Hubert Trumper; Mrs. Kemp.

---

## COLLATERAL FEMALES

### GENERATION VII.

Doctor Alfred Holloway married, secondly, Augusta Bagster. He migrated to Canada, first to St. John's, P.E.I., then to Jordan, near St. Catharines, live (My uncle Alfred and Alfred Holloway, Jr., were named after him. He is buried in Strathroy, Ont.—Author.). The children were (1) Alfred, Jr.; (2) Louisa Annette; (3) Arabella Victoria; (4) Augusta Bagster; (5) Eunice Birch.

Daughters of Alfred Holloway, Jr.
From left: Julia Arabella, who married Mr. Fox; Alice May Holloway; Lilla Louisa, who married Mr. Ridgeway; Augusta Annie, who married Mr. Weston.

GENERATION VIII.

Alfred Holloway, Jr., married Julia Croft, and had issue (1) Alfred Ernest, born 1863; (2) Elizabeth (Bessie) born 1865; (3) Alice May, born 1870; (4) Lilla Louisa, born 1872; (5) Eunice Birch Bagster, born 1875; (6) Julia Arabella, deceased, m. Gus Fox; (7) Augusta Annie.

GENERATION VIII.

Arabella Victoria Holloway, married Arthur Webb (deceased) and had issue (1) Amy Louisa, b. 1870; (2) Lucy Evelyn, b. 1871; (3) Mabel Eleanor, b. 1878.

Mrs. Arthur Seabrook

GENERATION VIII.

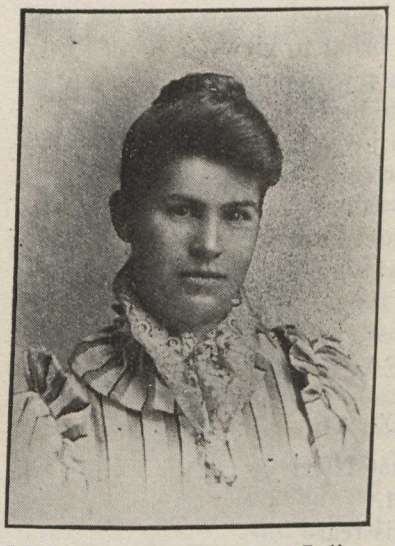
Eunice Birch Holloway, married Arthur Seabrook and had issue (1) Augustus Paul, b. 1863; (2) Percy Bagster b. 1864; (3) Ivan Arthur (deceased) 1865; (4) Francis Herbert, b 1868; (5) Edwin Rhodes, b. 1871; (6) Kenneth Goodman, b. 1879.

Mrs. Arthur Seabrook,
nee Eunice Birch Holloway.
Taken many years ago.

Arthur Seabrook and Francis and Clifford,
sons of his son Francis Seabrook.

Ernest Leslie Holloway, aged two years and seven months; eldest son of Ernest Holloway, son of Alfred Holloway, Jr. and grandson of Dr. Alfred Holloway.

This is an important young man as he represents the present generation bearing the name. He and his brother and father being the last males of the line.



Mrs. Gus. Fox, nee Julia Holloway, daughter of Alfred Holloway, Jr.

Elizabeth (Bessie (Holloway) Bateman, b 1865, second child of Alfred Holloway, Jr. and Julia (Croft) Holloway, and wife of Allan Bateman.

From left: George, son of Augusta (Holloway) Sawyer and Ernest Holloway, son of Alfred Holloway, Jr.

Miss Alice Holloway, daughter of Alfred Holloway, Jr.

Lilla Louisa (Holloway) Ridgeway, daughter of Alfred Holloway Jr., wife of Fred Ridgeway; and children Adelaide and Ernest.

---

## CONCLUDING LINES OF SONNETT ON "HOME"

By Dr. Holloway.

For memory then could never bring to view
The former scenes of love, nor joys renew;
A total void must then be in the heart,
A barren desert from which joys depart.
Then fond remembrance never could be ours,
To mitigate the sadness of hours;
To've loved and lost is hard indeed to bear.
It had been worse if love had not been there.

---

## A SONNET ON "PEACE."

By Dr. Holloway.

Oh, Lord, I thank Thee that I feel
No hatred in my heart,
And that my happy peace is real–
Oh, ne'er may it depart.

For peace, sweet peace is worthy more
Than riches, glory, fame.
And loss of peace I'd more deplore
Than empty honors vain;
No hate to any in my heart
Disturbs its even flow.
Oh may the feeling ne'er depart,
To work another's woe.
Peace, sweet peace is far before
The triumphs of success;
And with us may it ever dwell
Forever us to bless.

---

## VERSE ON "LOVE"

By Dr. Holloway.

Oh how dark that heart must be,
That never throbbed with love;
And still much darker it must be
That God's great love don't move.
Jesus the Mediator stands,
And so holds forth his saving hands;
From all eternity designed
To ransom with his blood MANKIND.

---

## CANADA.

Verses by Augusta Bagster Holloway (Mrs. Sawyer) daughter of Doctor Holloway.

Canada, dear Canada,
Land of freedom and of love;
Land of wealth and plenty,
And a sunny sky above.
Canada, our peaceful home,
We love thee for thy sake alone.

Canada, dear Canada,
Ruled by our gracious Queen,
Who loves the Great Dominion,
Though the ocean rolls between,
And her subjects love her just as well
As those who in old England dwell.

There's room for thousands more,
The hope of coming years;
For here the starving emigrant
Dries up his weary tears.
For on our rich and fertile soil
He soon succeeds, with honest toil.

Oh happy land of promise!
As England is the vine,
So we're the tendrils and the fruit
That round the stem entwine.
Oh, land of our adoption,
Our hearts are wholly thine.

We can boast of lakes and rivers,
Of lovely fruits and flowers:
There's not a happier spot on earth
Than this Canada of ours;
And the Union Jack floats in the breeze
As proudly as across the seas.

Our railroads and our cities
Are increasing year by year;
Our fine old noble forests
How fast they disappear.
A magic hand seems o'er the scene;
We'll ever sing "God Save the Queen."

---

## LETTER FROM DR. ALFRED HOLLOWAY.

Mt. Bridges, Canada West,
Jany. 1st, 1866.

To Mrs. R. Seabrook
New Westminster, B. C.

My Dear Daughter Louisa A,

I wish you and yours a happy new year. I have not heard from you for so long that I am now quite anxious about you. Do write me a few lines. I do not wish to trespass too much upon your valuable time and maternal duties, but I do wish to know very much how you are, and how you are getting on.

Tell your husband he must come back, for oil has been struck; it happened last Thursday, close to his mother's farm, on Campbell's place, at a depth of 145 feet. The people are wild with excitement about it. The shares of the Caradoc Oil Co. have risen 500 per cent. It seems probable I shall be a millionaire yet, for oil is seen in my creek, it comes out from under a bank.

There is a new company forming in consequence, and so I hope to be able to tell you some good news. The first day I went around, I obtained some $1,200 out of the $4,000 proposed capital for the Home Park Creek oil well. I have put down Rhodes name for five shares. I think he had better have them or more, for they will probably pay well; but he must let me know as soon as possible, as the shares will soon be all taken up. If he does not take the five shares I will take them myself.

I have three more grandchildren since I wrote last. Augusta has a beautiful girl; Alfred also has a girl, and Eunice a fine boy (One of the defenders of Canada). I heard of your boy; I should like you to tell me all about him, and also my grandaughter how does she grow? She looked very lovely when she left us; do her good looks continue?

My niece, Elizabeth Holloway, is about to be married, and is to live in Germany.

As regards myself, I seem to have taken a new lease, for I am quite well, and stouter than I used to be. My fingers used to get numb and dead in the morning, but they are all right now.

Augusta is fatter than ever; she is a comely matron. Eunice has recovered her good looks. Augusta has now four bouncing boys, and Emma three fine boys, each one improving on the other.

Alfred's boy is rather thin, but the girl, three months old, is a pretty little thing, and fat.

The Seabrooks are all well, also, but I have not seen any of them lately.

They are also digging for oil in Delaware, and have found a tin mine. Several wells are going down, but they have not yet struck oil. (Then, according to the old-fashioned custom, follows a long religious discourse, after which the letter continues:)

I must tell you how I pass my time. I have a little practice, just sufficient but nothing to spare; I read and write verses, sometimes I draw, and lately I have attempted painting original subjects, and have succeeded far beyond my expectations.

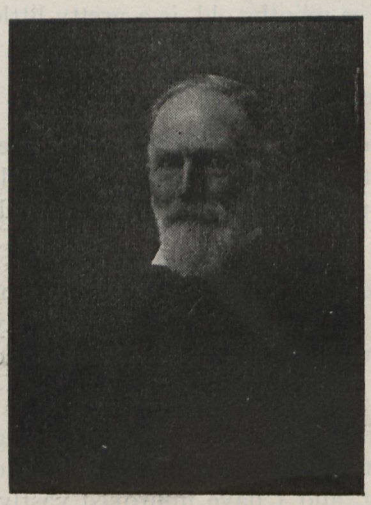
Mr. Stoddard was here lately, and he said the painting of Venus rising out of the sea, which I had composed and painted, the prettiest thing he had ever seen. I also play my violin every evening, and I have improved vastly, so that my neighbors often crowd in to hear me. In the morning I study history and geography. I have read all Sir Walter Scott's and all Dickens' works.

I do wish I had been brought up an artist. I feel that I should have acquired greatness. I never liked my profession, indeed, my address is not sufficiently good. I did very well among the Dutch; but then, address with them did not signify, and I made among them many wonderful cures, and that was all they cared about.

But enough of myself. Good-bye.

Louisa Annette Holloway at 16. In those days light dresses could not be photographed satisfactorily; therefore the young lady placed a shawl of darker material over her light gown.

The late Louisa Annette (Holloway) Seabrook, daughter of Dr. Alfred Holloway and Augusta (Bagster) Holloway, and the wife of Roads Seabrook.



Roads Seabrook, widower of the late Annette (Holloway) Seabrook

---

Clever verses written by the daughter of Doctor Alfred Holloway, Augusta Bagster Holloway (Mrs. Sawyer), which in theme are a sequel to the foregoing letter of her father. They were written in 1875, on the occasion of the same oil excitement referred to by Dr. Holloway.

## OIL ON THE BRAIN.

Farewell, petroleum, once more we're sane.
Away with such nonsense; we'd 'OIL ON THE BRAIN
While we hoped we aimed high, and we all did our best,
But now for the turkey, and ham, and the rest.
No "Yankees" or "Enterprise" ever again
Shall turn all our heads—We had "OIL ON THE BRAIN."

We explored the whole country wherever a trace
Of oil could be found, and chose a fine place
At the foot of a hill, in a well watered dell,
And so we proceeded in sinking our well.
Wild were our dreams of petroleum and gain.
We surely were troubled with "oil on the brain."

We built up a derrick, both stately and high;
But like Babel, its top didn't reach to the sky.
And we sunk our well downward to almost as deep,
Near the place where the fiends and hobgoblins sleep;
And after a while we struck a small vein,
And we almost went crazy with oil on the brain.

The advice of our President always was good;
Secretary, Treasurer, did as they should;
All the directors labored and toiled,
But the whole trouble was that we couldn't find oil.
But it wasn't our fault; there was no one to blame;
We're sorry we ever had "Oil on the Brain." '

### GENERATION VIII.

### The British Columbia Line.

Louisa Annette Holloway, daughter of Dr. Alfred Holloway, was born in London, England, January, 1841, and died in Victoria, B. C., October, 1911. She married in 1860: Roads (often incorrectly spelt Rhodes) Seabrook, who was born in Stowe House, at Caradoc, Ontario; educated at Livingstone Academy; came to British Columbia during the Cariboo gold rush; lived in New Westminster for some time, from whence he moved to Victoria, where he has lived for many years, being a prominent citizen, and largely identified with Victoria's commercial growth; Anglican.

Issue: Four children, as follows: (1) Eunice Mary Louisa; (2) Bagster Roads Seabrook; (3) Joseph Ivan Seabrook; (4) Annette May Seabrook.

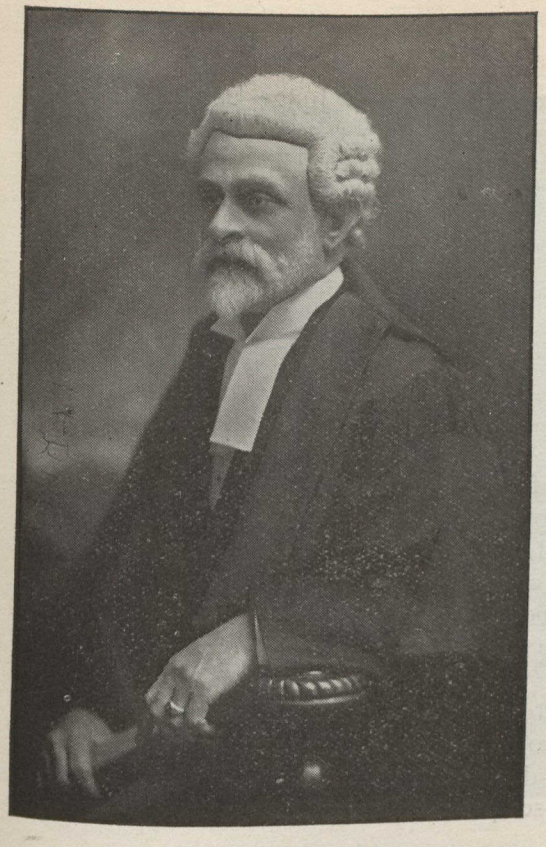
### GENERATION IX.

Eunice Mary Louisa, the first child, was born in Stowe House, Caradoc, Ontario, June 1861; educated at private school; Anglican. Resides at 1323 Harrison Street, Victoria, B. C.. In November, 1880, married:

His Hon. Judge Eli Harrison was born in England, Feb., 1851; came to British Columbia in 1858; educated at Collegiate Institute and private tutor; Barrister, Solicitor, Notary Public, etc., 1874; acting Registrar General of Titles, B. C., 1875; Law Clerk to the Legislature, 1876; Clerk of the House, Provincial Legislature, 1878; Solicitor to Attorney General's Department, 1878; elected Bencher, law society, 1883; J. P. and Stipendiary Magistrate for B. C., 1884; County Court Judge, Cariboo and Lillooet, 1884; Judge of the County Court, Nanaimo, 1889; Local Judge of the Supreme Court and Judge of the Court of Revision under the Assessment and Franchise Acts; Commissioner, and held Assizes as Justice of the Court of Assize; was commissioner on different occasions to hold public enquiries in regard to matters such as jail administration, as to the squatters on the E. & N Railway Belt, disastrous fire at New Westminster, etc. Prepared British Columbia County Court Act and Rules of Court; retired after twenty-five years' service as a Judge. Anglican; delegate to the Anglican Synod at Victoria; held commission from the Rt. Rev. Bishop Sillitoe of New Westminster as lay reader; was one of the four delegates from Canada to the Protestant Episcopal Convention of the United States of America at San Francisco, California, 1901.

ANCIENT FREE AND ACCEPTED MASONS: Past Grand Secretary; Past Grand Junior Warden Grand Lodge of British Columbia; Grand Representative Most Worshipful Grand Lodge, England, Manitoba and New Hampshire; P. P. Z. Columbia R. A. Chapter; Code Commissioner and author of the First Masonic Code of British Columbia, for years one of the three trustees of the masonic temple and property, Victoria, B. C. Presented with plate and resolution of thanks for services by Masonic Bodies; made honorary member of Vancouver Quadra Lodge No. 2; has 32nd Degree in Scottish Rite Masonry; Honorary Member Victoria Post of Native Sons; member of Natural History Society; one of the charter members of the Union Club, Victoria, B. C. Residence 1323 Harrison Street, Victoria, B. C.

---



His Honor Judge Harrison
Taken in 1909

Mrs. Harrison, nee Eunice Mary Elizabeth Seabrook and wife of Judge Harrison, from a snapshot taken in 1906.

To Mrs. Harrison, Holloway descendants owe a debt of gratitude. It was through her kindness alone that it was possible to glean more than a very meagre record of the descendants of Louisa Annette (Holloway) Seabrook. Indeed Mrs. Harrison has not only supplied complete records for these memoirs, but many very interesting photographs which add a unique charm to this portion of the history of our race.

Mrs. Seabrook, nee Roads, mother of Roads Seabrook.

Harrison Arms

Eunice Bagster
Sister of Mrs. (Doctor) Holloway. The lady who illustrated "Pilgrim's Progress," and was praised by Robert Louis Stevenson. See photo of Lace Handkerchief.

Children of Eunice Mary Louisa (Seabrook) Harrison and Judge Harrison: (1) Eunice Agatha; (2) Paul Phillipps Harrison; (3) Victor Birch Harrison; (4) Claude Lionel Harrison; (5) Bernice May Seabrook Harrison; (6) Herschel Roads Harrison.

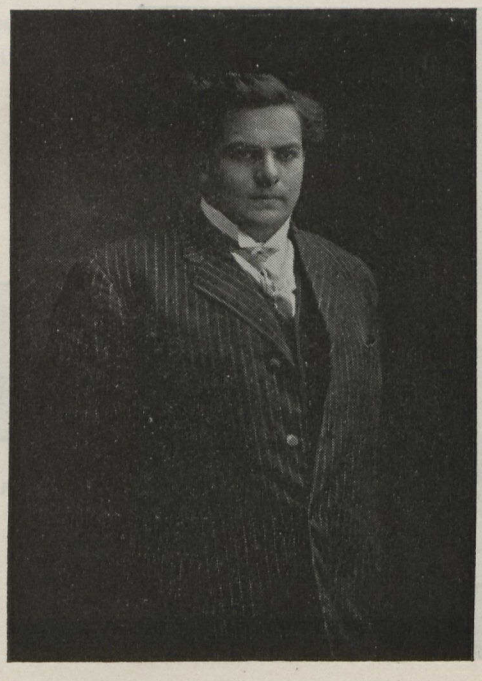
In non-technical language, certain parts of the Harrison and Seabrook coats of arms (the Holloway and the arms of other branches of the different families were not included, although this could have been done in a slightly different, but much more laborious, way) were combined by the Heralds' College of England in 1902, into one coat, under special grant to Judge Harrison, to be borne by him and his descendants with due and proper differences according to the Laws of Arms.

The description is as follows: Per chevron invected argent and sable, two roses in chief and a demi-lion in base all countercharged. Mantling, sable and argent. Crest: On a wreath of the colours a demi-lion gules, charged on the shoulder with a rose argent, between two crosses patee fitchee sable. Motto: *Sis memor et persta.*

GENERATION X

Their first child, Eunice Agatha, was born in Victoria, September, 1881, educated Angela College. Anglican. Married Oct. 1904, John Colborne Coote, land owner, descendant from distinguished Irish ancestors.

Paul Phillips Harrison, Barrister and Solicitor.
Eldest son of Judge Harrison and Eunice (Seabrook) Harrison



Herschel Roads Harrison.

Bernice May Seabrook (Harrison) Forsythe.

Charles Anderson Forsythe
Captain 50th Highlanders, B Company.
Husband of Bernice (Harrison) Forsythe.

GENERATION X.

The second child of Judge Harrison and Eunice Mary Louisa Harrison, was born, Victoria, B. C., December, 1882; educated Corrig College and Collegiate Institute; Anglican; Barrister, Solicitor, Notary Public, etc., commenced practicing law, Victoria, 1906, subsequently at Conrad, Yukon Territory, and Atlin, B. C.; removed to Cumberland, B. C., where besides his practice he is general solicitor to Canadian Collieries, Ltd., Solicitor to Canadian Western Lumber Co., Ltd., and Royal Bank of Canada. Married Lillian Anthea Weir, Halifax, N.S.; has two sons and two daughters: Leland Lionel Harrison, Claudia, Bernice, and Clinton Harrison.

GENERATION X.

The third child of Judge and Eunice Harrison, Victor Birch, was born in Victoria, November, 1884. Anglican; educated Corrig College and Collegiate Institute; Barrister, Solicitor and Notary Public, etc.; commenced professional career at Ladysmith, B. C., 1908, and was for some time Magistrate of that city; now practicing law at Nanaimo, B. C.

GENERATION X.

The fourth child of Judge and Eunice Harrison, Claude Lionel, was born at Victoria, B. C., Sept. 1886; educated at Carrig College and Collegiate Instltute. Anglican. Barrister, Solicitor, Notary Public, etc.; City Prosecutor for Victoria, B. C. Married Isabelle Moore of Victoria, Canada.

GENERATION X.

The sixth child of Judge and Eunice Harrison, Herschel Roads, was born Departure Bay, B. C., February, 1896. Educated Corrig College; Collegiate Institute and private tutors. Student-at-law, etc. Anglican. Residing in Victoria.

GENERATION X.

The fifth child of Judge and Eunice Harrison, Bernice May Seabrook, was born in Victoria, Sept., 1888, educated at All Hallows School, Yale, B. C. Anglican. In August, 1912, married Charles Anderson Forsythe. He was born at Kinning Park, Glasgow, Scotland, April, 1880, connected on father's side with Sir Peter Coats, and through him with the present Marchioness of Douro (married eldest son Duke of Wellington) and on mother's side with the Earls of Eglinton. Educated at Garnethill and Allan Glen's School, matriculated, 1905; took degree of chartered accountant, June, 1903; Secretary of Provand's Lordship Antiquarian Club, 1907-1909. Early in 1909 was selected by London directors of the British Columbia Electric Railway Co., Ltd., out of a list of 228 names, to be their chief accountant in Victoria, B. C.. Arrived in Victoria June 5th, 1909. Resigned from B. C. Electric Ltd., 1912, to start practice on his own behalf as a chartered accountant. Was one of the strongest promoters of the 50th Regiment Gordon Highlanders of Canada, and on the formation of the regiment took a commission as one of the original officers (Captain "B" Company), later after passing examination for major, was appointed to that rank, and the war having accelerated promotions is now Lieut.-Colonel. Journeyed to Ottawa to obtain permission from Militia Department to raise battalion for overseas; was assured that request would be granted shortly. Anglican. Have issue one son, Gordon Hamilton Harrison Forsythe.

GENERATION IX.

Returning to the parental line, the second child of Louisa Annette Holloway and Roads Seabrook: Bagster Roads, was born New Westminster, March, 1865; educated at Collegiate Institute; Anglican. Married Elvira Crosby, of Markham, Ontario, November, 1888. Consulting Engineer and Inventor, Toronto, Ontario. They had issue Norman Bagster, b. Victoria, Feb., 1890; educated at private schools in California; associated with his father in engineering projects; Anglican. And Ada Beatrice Elvira, b. Victoria, 1891; educated private school, California; Anglican (Married Albert Todd, retired Alderman, 1914, Victoria City) (They had issue Jos. Ernest, and Richard Hunter Todd.)

GENERATION IX.

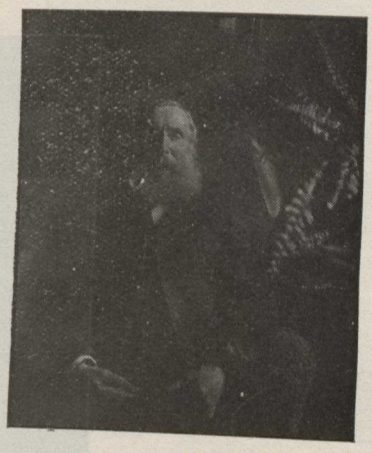
The third child of Louisa Annette (Holloway) Seabrook and Roads Seabrook, Joseph Ivan, born in New Westminster, Nov. 1866; educated Collegiate Institute; for many years mine owner in Yukon Territory, now retired, Residence, Victoria, B. C. Anglican.

Annette May, the fourth child of Louisa Annette (Holloway) Seabrook and Roads Seabrook, was born June 1868, New Westminster, B. C.; educated private schools and several years at Art Schools, Philadelphia, U.S.A. In June, 1899, married Charles Arthur Godson, of Vancouver, B. C., president Robertson-Godson Co., Ltd., Montreal, Vancouver, and other Canadian cities. Resides Vancouver, B. C. Have issue one daughter, Joy Annette May.

---

## ONTARIO HOLLOWAYS

Edith Wilhelmina Sawyer
Daughter of William Sawyer
and Augusta Bagster Holloway
b. 1865. Taken 1905.



William E. Sawyer
Husband if Augusta Bagster
(Holloway) Sawyer.

GENERATION *VIII.*

Augusta Bagster Holloway, Delaware, Ont., m. William E. Sawyer, Oct. 1860, and had (1) Sophia Jane Augusta, b. 1861; (2) Harriet Mary Caroline, b. 1862; (3) Laura Annette, b. 1864; (4) Edith Wilhelmina, b. 1865; (5) George Edward, b. 1867; (6) Catharine Ruth, deceased.

Augusta Bagster Sawyer, nee Holloway, wife of William Sawyer, and daughter of Dr. Alfred Holloway and Augusta (Bagster) Holloway.

GENERATION IX.

Sophia Jane Augusta, eldest dau. of William E. Sawyer (d. July 1915) and Augusta (Holloway) Sawyer; m. Hubert J. Trumper, 1899, who, like his wife, descended from the Bagsters, so that their child is doubly descended from this famous family, he having Saml. Bagster, of Paternoster Row, as his great-great-grandfather, through his parents, their mothers being first cousins.

They had issue (1) Cornelius J. W., b. 1900.

Harriet Mary Caroline, daughter of William Sawyer and Augusta Bagster Holloway, b. 1862. Taken 1905.

GENERATION IX.

Alfred Ernest Holloway, m. Elizabeth Piggott, and had (1) Ernest Leslie; (2) Eunice; (3) Clifford.

GENERATION IX.

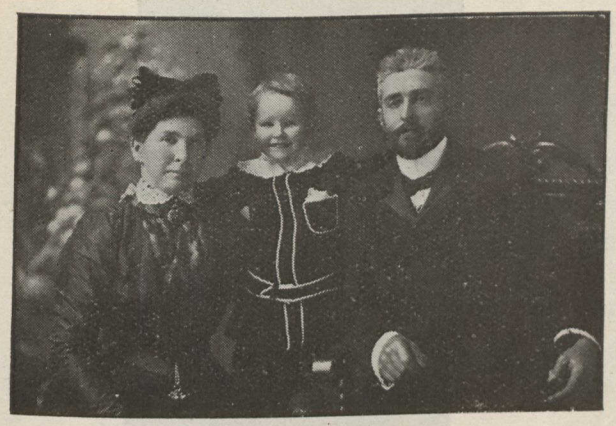
Allan Bateman m. Elizabeth dau. of Alfred Jr. and Julia (Croft) Holloway, and had issue (1) Julia Vaughan.

GENERATION IX.

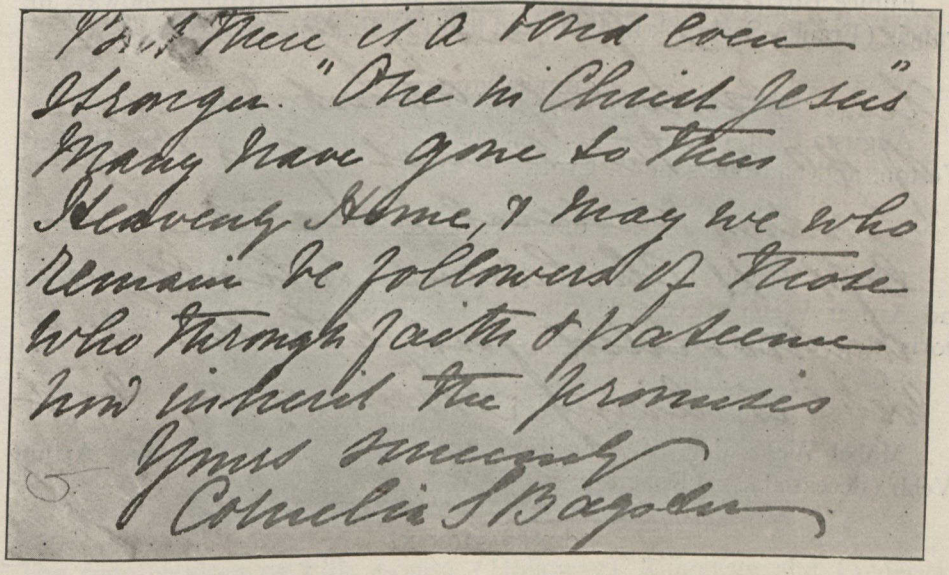
Laura A. dau. of W. E. Sawyer and Augusta Bagster (Holloway) Sawyer, m. T. C. Kemp.

GENERATION IX.

Lillia Louise Holloway, dau. of Alfred Holloway Jr. and Julia (Croft) Holloway, m. Frederick Philip Ridgeway, and had (1) Adelaide; (2) Ernest; (3) Winifred May; (4) George Croft.



Hubert Trumper, Sophia Jane Trumper, and Cornelious Joseph William Trumper. It was largely through the efforts of Mr. and Mrs. Trumper that the Author has been enabled to produce such an exhaustive record of the Ontario descendants of Doctor Alfred Holloway, my Grandmother's brother. Mr. and Mrs. Trumper spared no effort to supply exhaustive data and accompanying photographs. For their co-laboration, and those who assisted them, my sincere thanks.



Julia Harriet Vaughan Bateman daughter of Elizabeth (Holloway) and Allan Bateman.

Ernest Holloway and sister Julia Arabella, taken many years ago. He has two sons who are the hope of the Holloway descendants in Canada, that through these sturdy sons the name may be perpetuated. Ernest Holloway is living in Walpole, Sask., Canada.

GENERATION IX.

Eunice Birch, sixth child of Alfred Jr. and Julia (Croft) Holloway, m. Francis (Frank) Seabrook in 1900, and had (1) Francis; (2) Clifford.

GENERATION IX.

Augusta, dau. of Alfred Jr. and Julia (Croft) Holloway, m. Herbert Weston, and had one son, H. Croft.

GENERATION X.

Edward Parrott, m. Amy L. Webb (dau. of Arabella (Holloway) Webb and Arthur Webb (deceased), and had (1) Arthur B. (at the front); (2) Doris M.; (3) Hilda A.; (4) Audrey.

GENERATION X.

Mabel Webb, dau. of Arabella Victoria (Holloway) Webb, and Arthur Webb (deceased), m. Robert Jex.

GENERATION X.

Augustus Paul Seabrook, first child of Arthur Seabrook, and Eunice Birch (Holloway) Seabrook, m. Amy Horton, and had issue (1) Viola; (2) Frederick.

GENERATION X.

Percy Bagster Seabrook, second son of Arthur Seabrook and Eunice Birch Holloway Seabrook, m. Mabel Gibson, and had issue (1) Richard; (2) Arthur; (3) William.

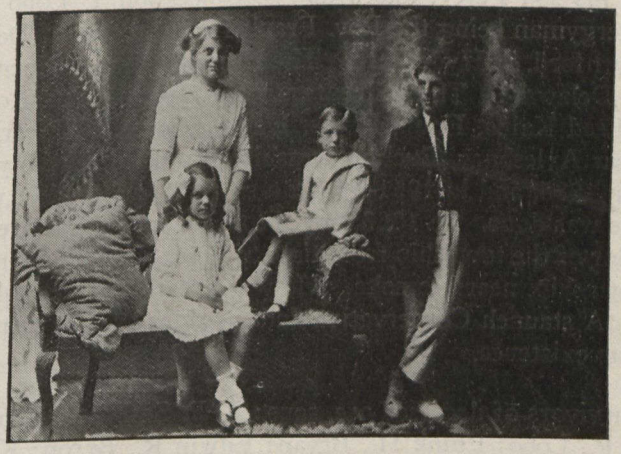
GENERATION X.

Edwin Rhodes Seabrook, fifth child of Arthur Seabrook and Eunice Birch (Holloway) Seabrook, m. Frances Garnett, and had (1) Kathaleen; (2) Helen; (3) Donald.

GENERATION X.

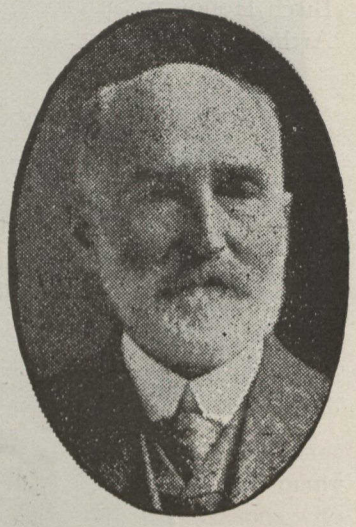
Kenneth Goodman Seabrook, sixth child of Arthur Seabrook and Eunice Birch (Holloway) Seabrook, m. Eleanor Guerin, and had (1) Ivan; (2) Gerald.

Fred Ridgeway and Lilla (Holloway) Ridgeway



The four children of Lilla Louisa (Holloway) Ridgeway and Frederick Philip Ridgeway.

Francis Seabrook and his wife
Eunice Berch (Holloway) Seabrook

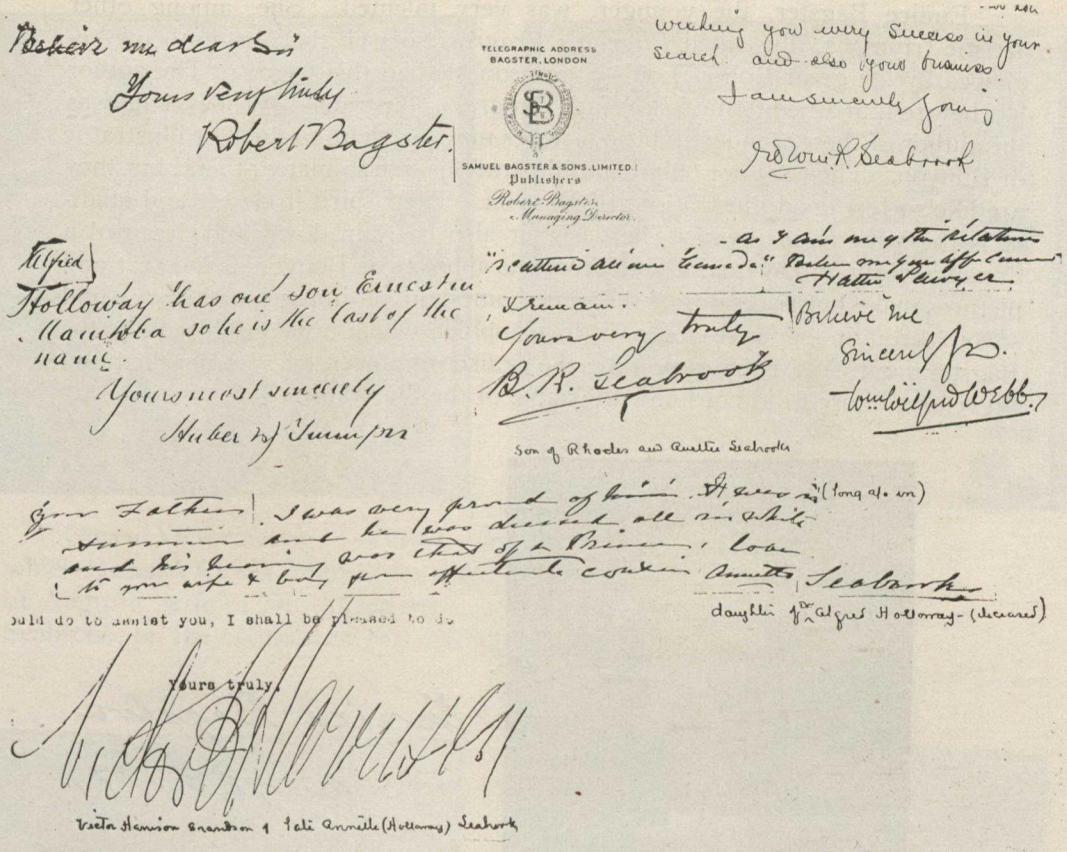


Arthur Seabrook

## A LOBO PIONEER—THE LATE ARTHUR SEABROOK

The funeral of the late Mr. Arthur Seabrook, who died in London on the 5th inst., was held on Thursday afternoon last. Service was held at the residence of his son Percy, lots 5 and 6, concession 1, Lobo Township, the officiating clergyman being the Rev. Frank Leigh, rector of Delaware and the Rev. Mr. Durnford, of Hyde Park. The interment was made at Christ Church churchyard, Delaware. The pallbearers were Messrs. Wm. Robinson, George Kernohan, Fred Kains, Frank Kains, Harry Shore, W. Merriam. Deceased was born near Aylesbury, Buckinghamshire, England, in the year 1832, came to Canada in 1835, and in 1851-2 built a sawmill in Caradoc, where an extensive business was done. In 1866 moved to a farm in Delaware, and was reeve and councillor of the township from time to time. In 1883 he moved to a farm in Lobo Township, near Komoka. He was greatly respected by a large circle of friends. A staunch Conservative and a reader of The London Free Press ever since its existence.

The survivors of deceased are, sons: A. P. Seabrook, Vineland, New Jersey; Percy P., Lobo; Frank H., Bryan; Edwin R., Byron; Kenneth G., London. One brother, Rhodes, in Victoria, B. C., and one sister, Mrs. M. A. Parrot, Byron.




---

## BAGSTER.

James Bagster (1665) m. Priscilla Gregory, and had George Bagster (died 1703), who m. Jean Stocker, and had George Bagster (d. 1795) who m. Alice Bonner, and had George Bagster (b. 1739, d. 1819), m. Mary Denton, and had Samuel Bagster (b. 1772, d. 1851, m. Augusta Birch (whose father was John Birch whose grandfather was William Birch), they had Cornelius, Birch Bagster (b. 1815, d. 1893) m. Susanna Maria Aitkin (whose ancestor was James Aitken, Laird of Ryes Fockley b. 1609 who had John Aitken, who had George Aitken, who had John Aitken, who had George Aitken b. 1779, Panmure Island, m. Hannah Beairsto, and has Sussanna Maria b. 1815). Cornelius Bagster m. Susan Aitken who had issue (1) Ada Eunice Bagster, who m. Simon Crawshaw and had Leonard, Wilfred, Ernest, Raymond, Eustace, Aubrey, Norman, Bertram, Muriel and Kathaleen; (2) Mary Ellen Bagster, m. Victor Hollinsworth and had Bernard Hall and Eric Victor; (3) Alice B. Bagster, who m. Joseph Trumper and had Hubert Joseph, Oscar Bagster, Victor Leopold, Ashlyn Aitken; (4) Cornelia; (5) Eva Rosa.

Eunice Bagster, the younger, was very talented. She, among other artistic triumphs, illustrated *Pilgrim's Progress* so well that, on its being reviewed by the great Robert Louis Stevenson, he had this to say: "The author has before him an edition of *Pilgrim's Progress,* illustrated. Whoever he was the author of these wonderful little pictures may lay claim to the best illustrator of Bunyon. They are not only good illustrations like so many others; but they are like so few good illustrations of Bunyon. Their spirit in defect and quality is the same as his own. The designer also has lain down and dreamed a dream as light and as quaint and almost as apposite as Bunyon's, and text and pictures make but two sides of the same homespun yet impassioned story (and so on through ten pages of a little pamphlet which was produced by the Bagster family). At the same time the praise of Stevenson was unasked and Stevenson himself did not know the name of the illustrator.

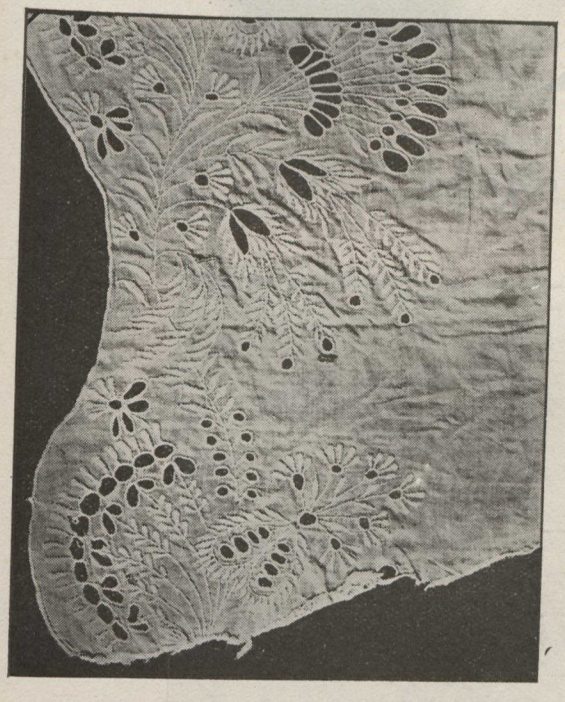
Eunice Bagster
Aug 23 1777

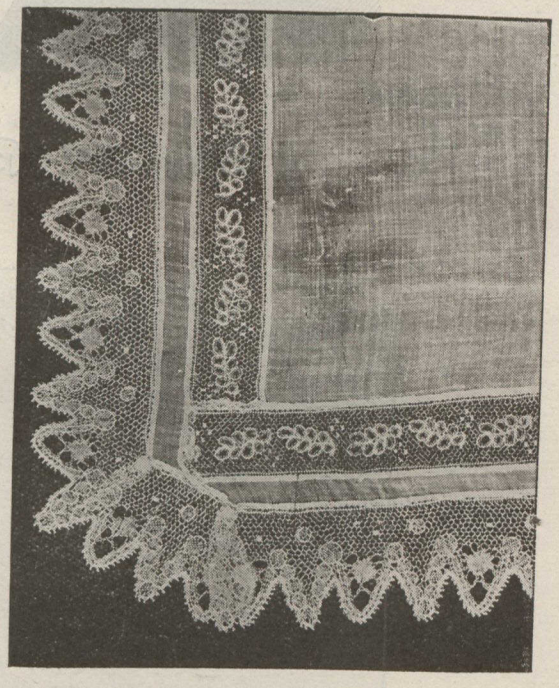
Eunice (Berch) Bagster, wife of the famous Saml. Bagster

In connection with Mrs. Bagster and her friendship with Queen Victoria, that is rather an interesting anecdote. Her late Majesty while visiting at her home, noticed that she was engaged on a piece of fancy work. On enquiring as to what it was for, she was told it was a lace handkerchief to be sent as a wedding present to her great-granddaughter, Eunice Seabrook, in British Columbia (a country which Queen Victoria herself had named). Her Majesty said she would like to contribute a piece of silk for the construction of the bag, and this she did, sending it over by Princess Alice the following day.

The photographs represent the back and front views of the completed bag, the background of which was Imperial blue in color. This talented lady also wrote the entire bible in verse, a copy of which is now in possession of Mrs. Judge Harrison, nee Eunice Seabrook.

Queen Victoria Bag, worked by Mrs. Bagster when 100 years old, for which Queen Victoria supplied the silk. Mrs. Eunice Bagster was the mother of Augusta, wife of Dr. Alfred Holloway. The bag was worked for Eunice Seabrook, on the occasion of her marriage to Judge Harrison.





A corner of lace handkerchief, worked by Miss Eunice Bagster, daughter of Mrs. Eunice Bagster, and sister of Mrs. (Dr.) Holloway, Presented to her great-niece Eunice M. L. Seabrook.

Samuel. Bagster

The Engraving from which
this was taken is in
my possession. It was
Executed by the great
John Linnell
Presented by my dear friend
Cornelius S. Bagster

## SAMUEL BAGSTER.

### Doctor Alfred Holloway's Father-in-Law.

On the 19th of April, 1794, Mr. Samuel Bagster, then a young man just out of his seven years' apprenticeship to William Otridge, commenced business as a bookseller at 81 Strand.

The first day the shutters were taken down he sold Johnson's Poems, 45 volumes, to Mr. Bastard, for eighteen pounds, sterling, and from that day to the day of his death his business prospered, increasing eventually to enormous dimensions, particularly in the publishing lines.

Strange as it may appear, and it will be news to many, the bible trade was a close monopoly.

In London the King's Printer and two Universities alone were allowed to print bibles. Mr. Bagster, however, shrewdly over came this objection by publishing an annotated bible. He was legally justified in his course, and the work was so well done, the notes so wisely and carefully selected that it met with wide favor. These bibles were published in polyglot (that is different languages, between the same covers). His greatest biblical triumph was publishing the Book of books in eight different languages, into one volume, showing the eight in one opening.

This was called the *Biblia Sacra Polyglotta Bagsteriana.*

After this was issued *Common Prayer* in eight languages.. Strange to say Bagster had the field to himself, and amassed great wealth. He became eventually so famous that he was offered knighthood, but declined. In 1822 his entire plant was destroyed by fire.

### "CAST YOUR BREAD UPON THE WATERS AND IT WILL RETURN A THOUSAND-FOLD."

On the following morning Sir J. W. Lubbock, Bart., his banker, called on him. "Keep up your confidence. I will give you all needful assistance," he said.

Bagster remembered this generous conduct, when, three years later, there was a run on Lubbock's bank. Bagster gathered up all available cash and presenting himself at the depositors' window, said in a distinct voice: "So satisfied am I of the stability of this house that I wish this were thousands of pounds instead of hundreds I am depositing." This remark had a distinct effect on the crowd, which wavered, and at length the run stopped and Lubbock was saved.

*"Many Tongues on Earth but One in Heaven."*

This was the title of the New Testament, published in eight languages. A book helped to make Bagster's fame. The title was in Greek.

For the second time, at this period, Mr. Bagster was presented at Court. The first presentation was eleven years before, and the Sovereign George IV. had died. When he was presented to William IV. he asked the privilege of presenting a copy of his *Biblia Sacra Polyglotta Bagsteriana.* The Archbishop of Canterbury on walking with him towards the King saw he was lame from rheumatism, and at once took the big volume out of the venerable man's arms and carried it himself. Which lead to the remark being made by his biographer: "See thou a man diligent, he shall stand before Kings."

Bagster published the verbatim reprint of Tyndale's New Testament, and afterwards the entire bible translated by Miles Coverdale, in 1535. The Duke of Sussex lent his copy for the purpose. The leaves were not touched by the profane hands of human beings while the copy was set, and at night it was kept in a vault locked in a glass case.

In 1836, Mr. Bagster took his three sons, John, Benjamin, and Jonathan, into partnership. The firm is now a limited company under the management of Robert Bagster, whose kind letter and great courtesy enabled me to learn something of this famous House. Miss Cornelia Bagster also wrote numerous letters and was very considerate in giving me information which enabled me to further carry on the search for strayed strands of the family webb. Several beautifully worded letters of Miss Bagster's I shall always keep in memory of a very cultured lady, and a kind correspondent.

Mrs. Samuel Bagster lived to be one hundred years of age, and, as previously stated, had the very unusual honor of being visited by Queen Victoria on one of Her Majesty's jaunts through the country.

---

## BALLACHEY.

In 1906 the author received very entertaining letters from Mrs. Ballachey, of Oxford. She was then 82 years old, but from the optimistic tone of the letters and firmness of the handwriting, the author fancied her but half that age. These letters were a source of pleasure, for they were bright, cheerfully worded, hopeful and strong, and gave one the sense of goodness of living. Mrs. Ballachey placidly looked back into the past and hopefully into the future.

It was a male descendant of this line who was a business partner of my uncle Henry Goodman.

It was through Mrs. Ballachey's kindness that I received several highly interesting photographs of my father in early life, and Mary Peace (Holloway) Ballachey and others. . . . . .

The above reference to Mrs. Ballachey was written three years ago.

Extract from a letter from Violet Henville, nee Slann, dated Jan. 12th, 1916:

"Mrs. Ballachey (the old lady) is dead some months ago, I believe."

This estimable kinswoman must have lived to be over 90. In 1906 she prophesied—a great upheaval as a result of the mental fever in Europe—It has come.

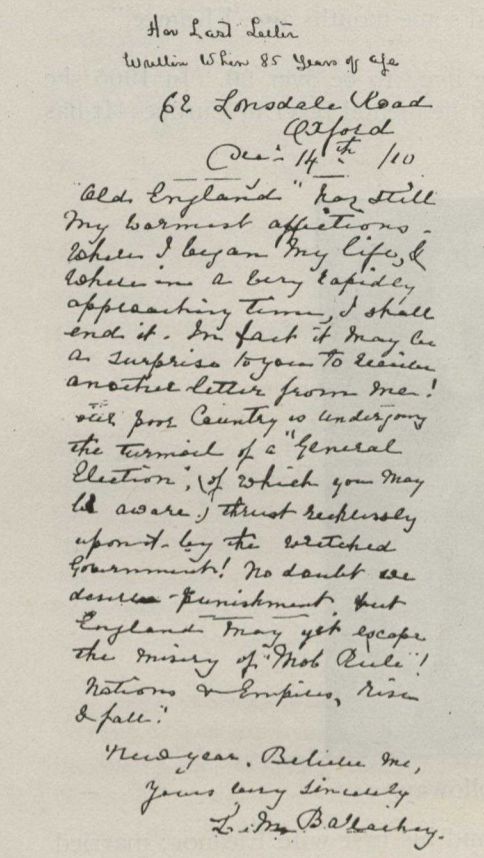
Mary Peace Holloway.

Daughter of John Holloway of the Bank and his first wife Eleanor; married George Baker Ballachey, grandson of Beryamin Panayoty Ballachey. Said to have been a Greek political refugee.

There were twelve children, but those only are named here who married and had descendants:

(1) Catharine, m. James Michael Webb, a cousin (and had one son, J. Herbert, who married Elenor Gatton, and they had one son, Reginald, and two daughters). (2) George, who m. Mary Everett (a(nd had four sons, and three daughters, George the eldest m. Mrs. Bell, and lives in Brantford, Ont., and William is a clergyman in New Zealand. The others are in Canada). (3) Dorcas, m. Saml. Webb, her cousin (her eldest son is the only one in England, the Rev. S. W. P. Webb, the others are in New Zealand). (4) John Panaoty, m. Louisa M. Gurney (Mrs. Bellachey, the correspondent referred to above). Their surviving children are Mary Eliza Bellachey, Isabel James, John G. Panayoty, Henry Holloway, and Arthur Watts—who had four children). (5) Sophia Holloway Ballachey, m. Rev. Edward Hill, and had one son, Rev. Edward Ballachey Hill, who married Maud Spicer.

The following is the last letter written by Mrs. Ballachey to the author:

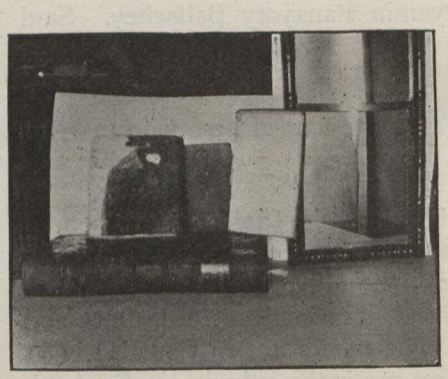


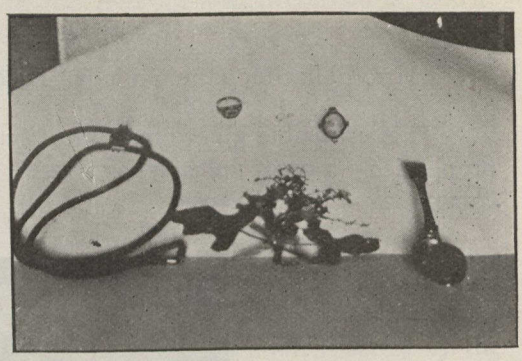
Her Last Letter
Written When 85 Years of Age

62 Lonsdale Road
Oxford
Dec. 14th /10

Old England" has still My warmest affections. Whilst I began My life, & Whilst in a very rapidly approaching time, I shall end it. In fact it may be a surprise to you to receive another letter from me! For our Country is undergoing the turmoil of a "General Election", Of which you may be aware; I thrust recklessly upon it by the wretched Government! No doubt we deserve punishment. But England may yet escape the misery of "Mob Rule"! Nations & Empires, Rise & fall.

Next year. Believe me,
Yours very sincerely
L. M. Ballachey.





RIGGS-HOLLOWAY RELICS.

Left—Hair chain, made of the hair of Caroline Sophia Holloway, the little daughter of John Holloway, who died of consumption, and of whom John Holloway wrote as to her dying hours.

Memorial ring and hair brooch, once the property of Louisa Riggs Read and Abigail (Riggs) Baldwin. Silver spoon, containing the Holloway crest, once the property of Ambrose Holloway the brother of the Author's grandmother.
Volume lying flat, Camden's Britannia, which has been in the family nearly three hundred years. On top of this book the wonderful sheep's hide covered arithmetic of William Riggs.

Next to it the Biography of Thomas Holloway. The looking glass was presented by William Riggs to his second wife among other things on their wedding day. It is in a wonderful state of preservation.

---

## LETTER FROM ISABEL JAMES, NEE BALLACHEY.

Granddaughter Mary Peace (Holloway) Ballachey

I am sending you a "Venus" (engraved by Thomas Holloway). It was among my Aunt Ballachey's things. She was my father's eldest sister, and died at Edgfield Mount, unmarried.

The other engraving "After Raphael," I send you, was given me by my grandmother. My grandfather owned it. I also send two engravings done by my Aunt Sophia Holloway Ballachey. She was christened Holloway from her mother's name. She married a clergyman named Hill, and died when 23 years of age. He never married again, dying at 76. My great grandfather was John of the Bank. I wonder if it was your father I was so fond of when I was four years old. He would carry me on his shoulders, and I was so afraid he would bump my head. He had brown hair and I would put my arms around his neck and kiss his head.

My Canadian relatives spoilt me as a child, then I went to a stern relative who was so strict that I was heart-broken. That was long, long ago.

---

GENERATION VII.

## COLLATERAL FAMILY.

## CAPTAIN THOMAS HOLLOWAY.

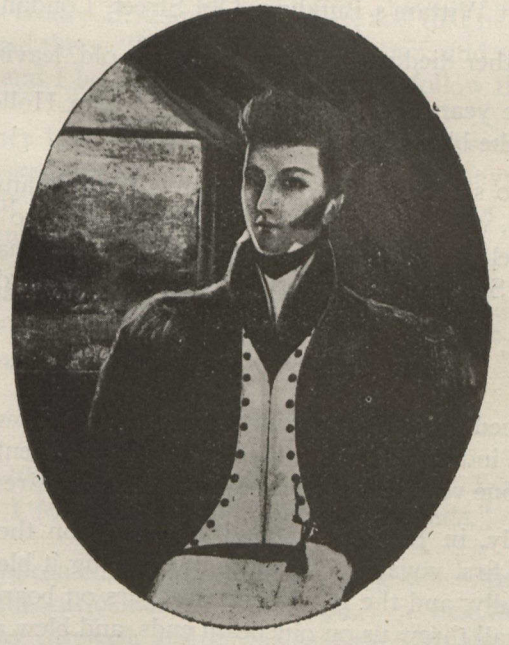
Son of John Holloway of the Bank, our Ancestor.

Perhaps no autobiography is quite so unique as that written by Thomas Holloway, for, sitting before a looking-glass he painted his own portrait to adorn its pages.

---

## EXTRACT FROM LETTER OF LATE JULIA E. SLANN.

My father Thomas Holloway, was the son of John Holloway of the Bank, who was a cousin to Admiral John Holloway, under whom my father served during the Peninsular war. My father retired at the peace of 1815 and died in 1854.



Captain Thomas Holloway, British Navy.

"Soldier rest, thy warfare over;
Sleep the sleep that knows no breaking;
Dream of battle fields no more,
Morn of toil nor night of waking."

## EXTRACT FROM LETTER OF LATE E. JULIA SLANN.

My sister Eleanor has lent me an oil painting of my father, Captain Holloway, in full dress as a lieutenant of the Royal Navy. He executed it himself from his reflection in the looking glass, so a peculiar interest attaches to it in our minds. He became Captain shortly afterwards. I send you a copy of this picture.

## COMMENT OF AUTHOR.

It is to be regretted that the entire autobiography of Captain Thomas Holloway cannot be published, as every word is of absorbing interest. During his service in the Navy he visited all parts of the civilized and semi-civilized world, and his story of the towns and their inhabitants reads like a historical romance. The records of the numerous battles he took part in are really war chronicles of the times. They, too, unfortunately, can only be given in brief.

---

## AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

## CAPTAIN THOMAS HOLLOWAY.

Written for His Daughter Eleanor.

I was born at Wittam's Building, Old Street, London, October 23, 1790.

My dear mother died when I was two years old, leaving six children.

I was twelve years old before my father (John Holloway of the Bank) could determine the bias of my mind.

I was sent to school to Rev. Mr. Ready, at Peckham, and there I met a young gentleman, who, although but thirteen, had been to sea for two or three years, and he so eloquently related his adventures as to make me desire to follow such a life. So, soon as I returned from school I made my wishes known to my father.

### SEES A SHIP SINK WITH ALL HANDS.

But he seemed prejudiced against such a course, however; but my persevering entreaties induced him at last to reluctantly consent to a test. His idea being that after one voyage I should be cured of my desire to follow the sea.

Consequently, in January, 1805, I embarked on the Berwick for Leith, Scotland, on my first voyage. Towards the evening it blew a gale, and tossed us about dreadfully, and the fair lady passengers on board were both alarmed and sick. A squall threw us on our beam ends, and blew away the top sail and jib. Then followed a general scream from the ladies, until it was drowned by a body of water pouring over us, making a complete breach.

I was but thirteen then, but I scrambled on deck, and not being seasick assisted with ropes, etc., for which the captain thanked me.

Our own peril we momentarily forgot in witnessing the wreck of a foreign vessel close to us, which went down with all hands.

She appeared to windward on her beam ends, and a sudden gust turned her over bottom up. For a moment we saw the wretched crew buffeted about by the great waves, or clinging to the dreck, then all disappeared. In such a sea it was madness to attempt to save them. This was my christening for a sailor. On shore I secured quarters with a family, father and mother and two smiling plump-cheeked damsels. My life was quite happy, for I waas well fed and well entertained. I had turkey, fish and plum pudding for meals. There was health, happiness and peace. These halcyon days were to be short; in three weeks I left the delightful family. The young ladies followed me to the point of embarkation, and after a few kisses and the wishing of mutual blessings, I bid them adieu.

I shall ever, with warmest gratitude, remember the kindness of the parents and of the dear sweet young girls with their fascinating behaviour.

### A VIOLENT STORM AT SEA—HIS MIND SET ON JOINING THE NAVY.

One day it Leith I saw a young gentleman dressed in cocked hat and uniform, and I asked my fair companions why he was so altered. They informed me he was from a British Man-of-War, and that he was a midshipman. I remarked then and there, "I shall be a midshipman, and so this thought took possession of me, and I became set and resolved to follow the Sea.

On my journey back we encountered very rough weather, but I arrived safely home and asked my father to fit me out for the Navy. My father tried to dissuade me, but in vain. I decided that if I could not have his consent, I would run away and be a cabin boy.

However, at last, my dear father yielded to this extent: That to prove that it was not a boyish whim, he would send me on another voyage to my old quarters in Scotland.

### HIS PLEASANT HOLDING GROUND.

I embarked with the same captain. On landing I made for my old "moorings" which I found such good "holding grounds."

I was gladly welcomed, the affectionate young ladies spending most of the time showing me the curiosities of Edinburgh. When the time came with difficulty could I say farewell, and it was said through the channel of waters which ran down my cheeks. When I could no longer speak I could hear their prayer for Heaven's blessings to be showered down upon me.

On the returning voyage a heavy squall struck us and flung the ship's furniture in every direction. The contents of the dinner dishes were thrown over me as I sprawled on the cabin floor, and, besides that, a young lady held me tight by the leg in her terror. I did not relish the "pickle" I was in. It would have been a charming sketch for Hogarth.

I could see other tender fair ones kicking and struggling and attempting to crawl to windward. My head was below my heels and I could not break away from the tight grip of the young lady who had hold of my leg, for she was bigger and older than I was, and in this position, I was battered by the broken dishes with every lurch of the ship.

### AN ABODE OF GROANS.

The Captain shortened sail and the ship steadied. He then descended to the "abode of groans." Turning to me he said, "Ah, my little hero, you have been obliged to "throw up" at last." "No, sir," answered I, "it is your pots and pans that have been thrown up." Next day I was again violently flung against the ship's beam, and my nose damaged. I arrived home safely, and the captain who went to my father to receive payment, said he never saw a lad evince a stronged disposition for the sea, and endure its attendant hardships so heroically.

As I still insisted on following the life of a sailor, in spite of my rough experience, my father abandoned all hope of curing me, and asked Admiral Holloway, our kinsman, port admiral at Deal, to take me, as midshipman, on board his flagship. The admiral said he would feel great pleasure in forwarding our wishes. The admiral told my father that I should have a large sea chest stored with all manner of things.

### HIS LITTLE COCKED HAT AND SWORD RIDICULED IN LONDON.

Then I accompanied my friend, Captain Baily, to buy me a cocked hat and sword. I went home and surveyed myself a full half-hour in front of the glass. Highly delighted with the change in my person, I went to visit my friends, thus decked out, but no sooner was I on the street when the boys and girls, beholding such a strange little object, for I was but fourteen years of age, followed me from neighborhood to neighborhood, calling "Little Bony," "Little Midshipman," and "Little Captain." With my dignity mortified and my patience exhausted, I drew my sword and vowed vengeance on my tormentors. This made them laugh the more, and there were as many heads stuck out of windows as on a Lord Mayor's day.

One fool makes many, and the crowd grew bigger and bigger, and I do not know what I should have done had not a big, burly man stepped into the breach. He stood in front of me and shouted in a great voice that he would "eat 'em alive," if they did not disperse. They did go away, but when I hurried on my way without my protector, they returned to the attack and followed me in droves, shouting their derisive vociferations at me, and kicking up such clouds of dust that it became difficult to reconnoitre the foe. I deemed it prudent at length not to hazard an engagement, and watching my oportunity, accomplished an honorable retreat.

### HE BOARDS A MAN OF WAR FOR DUTY.

Accompanied by my brother John, I visited the admiral's house at Deal, and met Captain Succomb, and accompanied him on board the Utrecht, 64 guns. There are ships in the navy which carry 130 guns, but she was so large in my eyes that I fancied that it would be a day's journey to travel over her; the number of men reminded me of a bustling village.

My brother left me and I was alone. All strange, and the very language unintelligible. I was not a little discomfited. I thought that this new profession claimed my attention, activity and zeal. I revived my spirits, and one of my companions hurried me down to my new quarters, which was called the after cock pit. Here I found darkness made visible by the light of a few rush candles. No sunbeams ever darted warmth or light into this underwater abode, ,and, to be honest, this dismal residence imparted no very favorable impression of my future enjoyment and a gloomy feeling crossed my breast. I was, however, soon attracted by novelties and the gloomy impression wore off,

### SHOCKED AT SWEARING MIDDIES.

Having been educated by a pious father, it was greatly offensive to me to hear God's name blasphemed in every breath, and I was horrified to hear my young companions thus sending forth oaths and curses without the least thought and meaning. If I had the assurance to rebuke them a coarse laugh was the reward. Finally, as far as I was concerned, these oaths were checked in my presence, and I was for some time known as the Methodist. I was not unmindful, however, of their uniform goodness to me as they guided me step by step to a knowledge of ropes, sails, anchors, yarns, guns, and masts, and in watching by night and day.

### EARNED HIS TITLE.

Holloway was soon rated midshipman for presence of mind in danger. He was commissioned to carry the admiral's wine ashore for a banquet. He was struck by a squall, and the small boat sprung a leak. His companions urged him to throw the wine overboard. He took out his watch, and as the men bailed with their hats he calculated the intake of the water and found that by pulling hard they could make land before they sank, which they did, and he saved the wine. On returning to his ship he was told by the officer in command he was rated midshipman.

### SAVED BY A TAIL.

When on H.M.S. Gratton, 54 guns, we received word to transfer to the Prince of Orange, 74 guns, and prepare for a foreign station. One day in Oporto Sound of Plymouth, when returning on ship from shore, the midshipman in charge ordered a man to the mast to adjust a rope. His weight threw the boat on her beam end. I could not swim, and we were all in the water. I seized the first thing which presented itself, which in this case was the long tail (periwig) of a sailor. He shouted to me to let go. I refused, and he, being a strong swimmer, swam back to the upturned boat with me, or I should have

perished. We got on the bottom of the boat and all shouted together until we were heard and saved.

I thanked "the Being who holds the waters in the hollow of His hand." On the 23 November, 1806, we sailed for Malta. Here we were instructed to make for Smyrna, as Turkish and English relations were strained, and, as it was we arrived just in time to take on board the English residents. As we passed the shore forts, we were fired upon by 80-pound shots, and returned the fire. This was the first time that I had faced the enemy's guns. No damage was done.

### HIS BAPTISM OF BLOOD

Orders were received to attack the City of Constantinople, and my ship accompanied the English fleet to the Turkish capital.

The fleet was off Constinople, when the alarm gun was fired, and we found a ship on fire. On lowering the boats and going towards her, we saw it was the Ajax, 80 guns. We did what we could, but had to cut our own cables as the ship was drifting towards us too fast to do otherwise. There were 800 on board. The Ajax drifted ashore and blew up; 400 perished.

The following day the fleet attacked Constinople withous success, and sailed away. When passing the Island of Myteline I got my baptism of blood. The boats from our ship were sent to capture a big turkish treasure ship laden with gold and silk. The men boarded the ship and fought hand to hand with the foreigners, who would not yield until forty "long bearded Turks lay stretched, ghastly corpses, on the deck, and thirty-six others were wounded." All this time a hot fire was being poured into the fleet by the shore battery. One 80-pound shot struck two ships and killed twenty men. This shot was preserved and taken home to England. The officers and men who captured the big Turkish brig were awarded prize money, as she was richly laden. In this engagement Commander Wilson was slain.

### THE UNION JACK FLOATS ON POMPEY'S PILLAR.

On the 24th of February, 1807, my ship sailed for Alexandria, Egypt. An English sailor, without the knowledge of the inhabitants, climbed to the top of Pompey's Pillar, and thereon affixed the Union Jack. The natives were very much puzzled when they saw the British standard flying from this ancient monument.

### BUOYED UP BY BLADDERS.

Egyptian Women Cannot Compare With England's Fair Ones.

At Alexandria I was going to shore to bathe (with others) in a small boat, when it upset. I had not yet learned to swim, but for precaution had two bladders with me, filled with air. These kept me afloat till rescued.

In describing his stay in Egypt he says when enjoying a trip to a beautiful lake and lazily watching the chamelions changing color on its rim, we were suddenly fired upon, and with difficulty escaped by flight. This was our first notification that war had been declared.

In another place, describing the dress of the women of Alexandria, he says: "The dresses of the women are remarkably rich and elegant and tasty. A splendid girdle is the usual band around the waist, and the folds of their garment tastefully arranged hang as low as their ankles. However, their artificial or natural beauties do not rival our dear countrymen, who in the eyes of their protectors, will ever appear the most charming on the face of the earth."

## PENINSULAR WAR.

### HIS CAPTAIN DISOBEYS ORDERS.

In 1807 and 1808 England and France were at war, and France was being hindered in her attack on Spain.

Holloway's next engagement was against the French. He writes: "We had been cruising off Toulon, when a report reached us that French vessels were in the vicinity. We had orders to await the fleet where we were, and deliver supplies, but our captain felt it his duty to pursue the enemy. We were late in overtaking them, but captured many small boats and 500 soldiers on a transport.

The fleet arrived, and as they did not find us with the expected supply, they sailed without us. We overtook them January 18th, 1808."

### HOLLOWAY'S BRAVE ACT—HE SURVIVES A BLOODY FIGHT.

### DEATH OF HIS COMMANDER, CAPTAIN SUCCOMB.

"In January, 1808," Holloway writes, "a great force of French made a descent on the coast of Calabria, opposite the Island of Sicily. It was expected that they would fall upon the town of Reggis. Lieut. Hank and myself and eight men were directed to sail for this place while the fleet was anchored off the town, to help the garrison. We were driven in by the storm two miles from town, the enemy being encamped between it and us. Thus circumstanced we had to use the greatest care. We tracked the boat along the beach, every moment expecting the challenge of the enemy. We were able, by watching the lights of the French camp close by, to decide upon their contemplated attack next day, and at dawn we got back to our ship and reported to the fleet. Next day the whole French army moved towards the town, and the atack commenced on both sides with determined bravery. Furious was the onslaught on both sides. The town was taken and retaken. Captain Succomb, in the 'Delight,' commanded the fleeet to pour in their grape and shot against the French, thus killing great numbers. I was on board a transport, and our hull was so riddled with bullets that we had to retire. The Delight, on which Captain Succomb commanded, got aground, and she could not be got off. The enemy ranged themselves opposite her under the shelter of a brick wall, but to the honor of the French, before they began their fire they offered quarter and fair terms if Captain Succomb would strike his colors.

This he decisively disdained to do, and the canonade commenced, throwing upon the brig such a deluge of shot that few escaped destruction, among them

Captain Handifield, commander, Captain Succomb, in command of the fleet, and his nephew, and fifty of the crew. The enemy, killing nearly all on board, took possession.

"When they boarded we threw on deck a cask of combustibles, which, igniting the powder in the magazines, blew up the ship and all the French on her. Captain Succomb was removed by the French in a dying condition before the ship was blown up. The enemy captured the town and a number of our gunboats and prisoners were taken. We asked the French general to allow us to have the dying commander with us, as our chaplain was his brother, and to his credit he granted the request. He lived in intense suffering for two days and nights, when he passed away loved and honored by all, and giving me his blessing.

'The enemy next attempted the capture of Scylla, garrisoned by British soldiers, and we assistetd the castle from the water. No advantage could be gained on either side—tthe fighting was most stubborn—until the enemy received strong reinforcements of men and guns they made no progress. Even then it was not until every gun was dismounted and the fortress in ruins and a great number slaughtered that the place was taken. We had to protect the retreat of the defenders of the castle towards the fleet, and our loss was severe, several of our boats being sunk."

### BRITISH VICTORIES—THE FRENCH TURNED TAIL.

After transfers and many other skirmishes, in 1810 I boarded the Ajax for the Mediterranean. On the way we captured a French brig and sent it home. On the 10th of June, 1810 (memorable day) the admiral ordered an attempt at capturing the entire enemy's fleet off Cape Sicily. The British fleet consisted of a ship of 80 guns, two of 74 guns, and a frigate of 32 guns. The enemy had a numerous fleet of ships of 120 or 74 guns each.

A storm was raging when the attack was made, and the enemy were caught hastily shortening sail. They were pounced upon, and before they could recover were thrown into confusion. They, however, got into battle array and opened fire. Their shots went wide, and the small fleet of the British ran in and their guns hit the mark every time. We saw the enemy prepare for flight, and tried to head them off, but they escaped to the shelter of the land forts, but while they were flying before us, we made dreadful havoc. The manœuvres of the small British fleet against the numerous fleet of the enemy was remarkable, and it would have been a sight for the British to see the big fleet run before them. They lacked skill in managing their ships, if not lacking courage. Their defeat was watched by thousands of people who lined the shore. Lord Collingwood, commander-in-chief, complimented the little fleet on its victory.

Captain Holloway describes his home coming after several years at sea. He says: I was so affected that "my heart seemed to knock me down." I embraced all those who made my home so happy to me, and thanked God for my safe return."

Then, he says, I was beginning to get disgusted with the service. I heard two naval officers remark that favoritism was being shown. Officers who had done great service for their country were being overlooked and those who had little to recommend them beyond aristocratic ancestors were being promoted over their heads. While prize money was not being distributed as promised.

He said: I decided to quit the service, for I believed what these officers said. However, my brother John, after much persuasion, induced me to abandon the idea.

I shipped on board the Isis, and we visited Ireland, and were most kindly received, and my prejudices entirely removed regarding the Irish people.

Captain Holloway, in describing the cemetery in the Island of Sicily, writes: I descended a flight of steps impervious to the light, reminding the Christian of the valley of the shadow of Death which he must pass; if he have Christ with him he need not be afraid. After a torch had been handed me I passed along a passage to a great vault, where I saw thousands of skeletons placed in niches in the wall, and draped in clothes suitable to their calling when in life. There were also tens of thousands of skulls piled on top of one another. Here relations of the dead came while we were there, and thus saw the skeleton forms of their departed loved ones. I do not approve of the custom. Let our dear dead be once mourned. We should not continually open the wounds of sorrow.

### SHOT THROUGH THE HAT.

Captain Holloway writes that on receiving orders we sailed for the island of Elba, where the great Napoleon was afterwards detained a prisoner. Here we spied two French brigs twelve miles distant. The boats of our ship were sent out to capturue the brigs. It was a vain hope. After pulling twelve miles and when about to board the enemy, a murderous fire was sudednly opened upon us, and men fell all around me. An officer next to me fell shot through the head and I myself received a ball which passed through my hat and around my skull. We did not waver, but returned volley for volley, until we were wrecks on the ocean and our boats loaded with dead and dying. A fresh breeze springing up the survivors got safely back to the ship.

The fight was watched from Elba and from the ship, and the spectators said that for the numbers engaged the fight was the bloodiest and most stubborn for years. Next day we captured a large frigate, the Dromadore, laden with naval stores.

### VICTORY FOLLOWED BY DEFEAT.

By this time the coast of Spain was in the hands of the French. It was decided by the admiralty to send the fleet to Smyrna and prevent the attempt of the French to carry provisions to the beleaguered city of Barcelona, to destroy the fleet bringing the provisions and to take the city itself.

Six hundred men were landed two miles south of the place. The enemy posted themselves in barns, cottages and hedges and potted off our men as they marched to the attack. Myself and my brother officers commanded the pike

men; after marching from five to eleven we reached the gates of Barcelona and stormed the fortress and city, sword in hand. The struggle for victory was obstinate and bloody, numbers falling on both sides, but the spirit of the British was splendid, and they would not retreat, but forced their way onward inch by inch until the enemy gave way exhausted and the town was captured and the French driven out.

"This success should have satisfied the British, but it did not. They were flushed with victory and pursued the enemy a long distance after destroying the guns in the garrison. The enemy became reinforced and their numbers were much superior to ours; then they turned on us and charged us on the run. we were two miles from the town and suffered terribly as we fell back on the city. Our ammunition became exhausted and they came upon the heels of the British and cut them up most unmercifully. There was no time to shut the gates against them, and they got into the houses firing upon the British from the windows. The slaughter was dreadful.

### HE HAD LEARNED TO SWIM AND SO SAVED HIS LIFE.

### SHOT DEAD GUZZLING WINE.

It may hardly be believed, but in the midst of this havoc numbers of British seamen, instead of firing their pistols at the enemy, used them to make holes in the wine casks, of which a great number were found. They fired bullets into the casks and placing their mouths at the orifice, in this position they were shot dead. Thus it was shown how soon sailors out of their element fall into temptation. A speedy retreat was all that could be done, and when arriving on the shore our boats were not there, having been taken to another place by mistake. Then we had to jump into the water. Those who could not swim were taken by the enemy or killed. I reached one of the ships in safety, having learned to swim. When the roll was called two hundred were missing, including the commander, Captain Fane. The enemy, when reinforced, had twelve hundred men. We accomplished our mission, however, having destroyed the guns, the forts and the ships of the enemy."

### GETS HIS COMMISSION.

In speaking of his commission, Captain Holloway says: January 1st, 1812, was the day my six years' time expired. It was the day of my examination, also. I was then 22 years old. The night before I slept with "Hamilton Moon" (Naval Tactics authority) under my head, wishing it was inside.

However, next morning I plucked up courage, and at eleven o'clock mustered on the Port Admiral's ship, the Cumberland, with brother officers, for the ordeal. It came my turn, and after the Captains had satisfied themselves that I was fit to command a ship, I was handed my signed certificate, which put the seal on my further hopes of happiness. My joy was great. We dined on shore together (those who received certificates), and drank to our Captains. I am sorry to say we tasted too many bumpers, for in the morning our heads had taken possession of the place our feet ought to be.

I was soon rated Master's Mate, and subsequently Lieutenant. After a two months' cruise I return to Portsmouth. We had not been anchored many hours before Captain Dalton came to me and said, taking me by the hand, "Now my young friend, I have the happiness of acquainting you that My Lords Commanders of the Navy have sent you your commission, dated 10th day of March, 1812.

My joy was like the husbandman, who, having sewn his seed, looked anxiously for the time of harvesting. Had I not ploughed the ocean for six years, and now was my fruitful season of gladness.

My father received a most affectionate letter from Admiral Holloway, and a kind letter from Lord Sidmouth, and my brother-in-law Mr. Ballachey came down with my father to furnish me with requisites for my new office.

My father went back to London and I joined the H.M.S. Fane, 74 guns. From the respect paid me I soon felt the importance of my rank, and my pride was flattered at such good fortune. The deference shown to me was new, strange, and very pleasant.

My first voyage was to Minorca, to ship military stores to Spain. It is only 33 miles in circumference. The town is neat and clean, but I cannot say much for the people, who are cruel and vindictive. Their vices are sanctioned by their priests.

We then sailed for Alicant.

### HOLLOWAY'S SERIES OF VICTORIES AS COMMANDER.

### HE PROCEEDED TO SPAIN WITH THE FLEET.

We charged the enemy at Altea, and cleared the town. We then sailed for Benedoine. Here we had some hard fighting, but Providence smiled on us, and we were again victorious over the French. We went from there to Ballagsune, the French being in possession were attacked and driven back. At Iotose the same thing happened. At Mennesdoa, after hard fighting the British again defeated the French. At Esabia the French fought desperately, but the British fleet stormed the town aand drove out the enemy. Still another village, the name being forgotten, was relieved from the cruelties of the French, which were dreadful.

At Alicant four hundred men were landed, and too sure of victory they attacked the village without caution. The British were overcome by numbers and driven back to the boats. I was given command of a captured French war ship, and the fleet sailed for Marraquor. Here the garrison of the enemy consisted of 1,200 men and the British forces of 20,000. The army was in charge of Sir John Murray, and the fleet in command of Admiral Holloway.

### CAPTAIN HOLLOWAY'S GLORIOUS VICTORY.

I was ordered with my crew to take the fortress of Ballaquer, which blocked the passage of the army. I carried it by the sword after three weeks' seige. In the meantime the fleet was bombarding the shore forts. The morn-

ing the city was to be assaulted by the army, the fleet was surprised and mortified to see General Murray marching away from the enemy with his whole army. Admiral Holloway ordered him under arrest, and placed another general in command, whom he sent for to Malta. In the meantime the French blew up the garrison and city, and left the ruins in the possession of the English.

On the 10th of April, 1807, the Isis was anchored off Spithead. On the 19th we were paid off and transferred to the Antelope, fifty guns. We were directed to sail to Cherbourg and watch the movements of the enemy. We were only on that duty a few days when, on returning to our former anchorage, we hoisted Admiral Holloway's flag. He came on board, and we fired a few guns as a salute, and weighed anchor, making sail for Newfoundland, Admiral Holloway having been appointed governor of that island.

We reached St. John's harbor, 18th July (three months in crossing) and landed Admiral Holloway. This was the first time I had crossed the ocean.

### COLONY OF NUNS.

I received the greatest kindness from Admiral Holloway, who, studying my welfare, proposed that I take a trip to the Western Islands on board the frigate Vestal, Captain Gonsbury. Of course I could not but thank him for the privilege offered. We made a pleasant run to St. Michael's, one of the largest of these islands. The liberality of the natives gave me much satisfaction, and our visits to the nuns, of whom there are a great many here, afforded us much pleasure, their generosity and many other circumstances combined to afford much mutual delight, and when the conditions of these interesting virgins congregated together, forming a bright display of piety and virtue was contemplated, it is no wonder that feelings of deep sympathy and regret should occupy the breast. These nuns otherwise disposed of would make accomplished and useful members of society and make many happy men husbands and joyful fathers. For, be it known, it is not, as is too frequently conjectured, a voluntary seclusion. As for the many, they are the victims of much cruelty, forced by stratagem from their homes and their country and thus wilfully and wickedly disposed of their lawful property and their liberty. Oh what monsters of iniquity there are in the world, but they must give an account of themselves before the tribunal of a just and righteous God.

### CUPID PLAYED THE SAME PRANKS A HUNDRED YEARS AGO.

It happened most unfortunately our Captain fell deeply in love with one of these interesting victims; a love which was mutually strong and affecting. No stone was unturned to accomplish their wishes, in vain were solicitations upon solicitations, demand upon demand, threats upon threats made, to get the lady out of her close and unjust confinement. She had taken the veil, and all our persevering eloquence, backed by her lovely importunity was useless.

His zeal, his love, his heart in flames, drove him to despair, and it was with some little difficulty he was prevented going to extremes; indeed, he was forced to leave his broken-hearted lady to her fate.

The shaft of love had entered so deeply into his soul, however, that he left the service and sank under these distressing circumstances.

This story should have the effect of making our own women rejoice at the privileged position they enjoy. We happily live in a land of liberty, where equal laws are distributed, where no such scenes sicken the heart, and where there are no walls to keep from our hearts those whom we love.

BLEAK NEWFOUNDLAND AND HER DOGS AND CANNIBALS IN 1807.

We reached St. John's harbor on our return. To give a description of St. John's town would afford little pleasure, so insignificant and ill built. The Governor's house is the only building in appearance, promising any degree of comfort. The town is built of wood, and the streets narrow and dirty make it close and miserable. The island, too, is flat and barren and marshy, producing no fruit, subsisting no cattle, and valuable is the spot where a little grass grows. Cod fifishing is the support of the place, and they supply other countries to a very large amount. It is a fine nursery for seamen, and it is strange and very amusing to see the boats sailing in and out actively engaged in the extensive fishing. There are here very fine large dogs, natives of the island.

Their size and strength is astounding, their sagacity and keenness of sight is truly surprising. Many instances could I furnish to prove this. They are in winter used to draw sledges. The natives are all, I believe, cannibals, timid, suspicious and unsociable, and all means to bring them to traffic with English settlers has proved fruitless, and as few comforts or pleasures presented themselves we were not sorry to leave.

The rest of Captain Holloway's private diary consists of the description of seaport towns in almost every part of Europe, and as he was far more actively engaged than Admiral Holloway, he describes many sea fights, where he won his spurs over and over again.

When France and England became friends, Captain Holloway left the navy and lived the life of a retired naval officer on the island of Jersey, dying in London, 1854, at 64 years of age. His career was a very brilliant one, being a hero of a hundred fights. His country neglected him, and scores of his fighting comrades, far inferior men, had titles conferred on them for much less honorable and less glorious victories. Unlike the Admiral, he fought sword in hand, face to face with death on many a bloody field, and escaped death closely a hundred times, seeming to bear a charmed life.

On the 22nd of December, 1814, Captain Holloway paid off his ship, and he lost no time, he says, in securing a stage for London, after having so long and, as faithfully as he could, performed his duties for his King and Country. Shortly after peace was declared.

He concludes as follows: After a few years recreation on shore I retired into the country of Norfolk, joining the family of my brother-in-law, Mr. Ballachey and his wife, my sister Mary Peace, whose residence was at Edgefield, a pretty village near the town of Holt. Here I spent some time and now thought of marriage.

Fortunately I soon found a young lady whose unaffected piety and good sense, together with a good set of features and a fortune of one thousand pounds, won my heart and on declaring my sentiments I was kindly encouraged to hope—all I could desire. The families on both sides were equally agreeable and the courtship continued to ripen into the fondest attachment and preparations for a union were made.

I hired a good house near London, which I furnished and made as comfortable as my purse could afford and the period of our marriage drawing near. I hastened to the young lady who was residing at her uncle's at Gessleham, in Suffolk. Upon my arrival my heart gladdened with the cheerful prospect before me. I was in the next moment after sunk into the depths of despair. I found my beloved intended wife, Louisa Gooch, seriously ill, having caught a bad cold which confined her to her chamber. The mutual sorrow I cannot describe nor shall I dwell upon the several stages of her prostration and painful disorder, which terminated in death by consumption.

Everything that could be done and devised for her recovery was done. Some weeks previous to her decease, she requested to be removed to Edgefield. This was accomplished, but on her reaching my brother's, she was evidently sinking under the fatal stroke. I watched her every moment, and the affliction was dreadful to us both. She was finally brought to submit to the severe dispensation and was astonishingly resigned as she approached the valley of the shadow of death. She feared no evil, having possession of the faith of hope in Jesus Christ. The moment came, her spirit fled. and I was left alone.

Just before she died she requested me to pray for an easy demission, and while I was pouring out my soul to the Lord to suport her, she departed to a better world without a sigh.

She was buried in the chancel of the village church at Edgefield, and a marble stone records her memory and worth. My grief was long and severe.

Several months passed away and time, whose efficacy accomplishes wonders, gradually restored my feelings to their proper tone.

It was about a year after the death of my affianced bride that I thought seriously of looking out for a wife, and I was not long in finding a young lady whose beauty, piety and endowments satisfied my mind of the happiness I should enjoy in affecting such a union.

I hastened to her guardians when my mind was once made up, and after a short interview with the young lady, her assent placed me in the happy path which I hoped would lead me to the hymnal altar.

You will naturally, my dear daughter, be anxious to learn the name of this beloved female most dear to you, as well as to me. It was Elizabeth Jane Rudkin, your own most dear and affectionate mother, who at the time of my first forming her acquaintance was 13 years old, for your dear mother was one of the girls who supported the pall of poor Louisa Gooch, and I had never forgotten the sweet proof of her unaffected sympathy shown to the dear de-

ceased during her illness, but to me after her death; and I must likewise acknowledge her lovely features were well remembered by me. In short I fell deeply in love with your dear Mother. Our courtship was not long, for your father would not delay the happy day, and on the first of May, 1822, the bell of Bashan village church announced the joyful news that we were man and wife.

I can only inform my beloved daughter that had it been the will of God she would have had a brother, but he was born dead on account of an accident to her dear mother. Your father and Mother have now been married ten years, and each year has added much happiness and increased our mutual love. You have our constant prayers that you may be a blessing to your parents and an heir to eternal glory.

When you can read this little book I will present it to you, should I be spared. If not your beloved mother will do so, if she survive me.

I can only inform you I have written with plainness and truth, and must beg of you to attribute any mistakes to the head and not the heart, and I request that you may keep this book as long as you may live.

Your affectionate Father,

THOMAS HOLLOWAY.

Finished at Johnstone, near Carmairthon, South Wales, January 31, 1831.

P.S.—By Elizabeth Julia, youngest daughter of Captain Thomas Holloway—Not born when this autobiography was written.

After referring to many places here parents resided, she writes:

Finally, the home was located in the Channel Islands, at the very entrance of France, although belonging to England. My mother, when asked if she would live there said "Anywhere to get away from Weymouth."

The family, including Father, Mother and Sister Eleanor took up their abode at Jersey. There, in 1837, I was born.

The beautiful southern home, with its tropical growth, is then described. Here I lived all the first years of my life, and knew nothing of grief or sorrow. I was nine when Eleanor, my sister, married her cousin John Slann.

At fifteen I went to boarding school at Oxford. I learned to chatter like a little French woman. At Jersey, I and my neighbors spoke the old Norman French, my father being in England, decided to take me home, but my Uncle John dying, he and mother went to the funeral at Norfolk, August, 1854, and on my father returning to London he was stricken with typhoid fever and died two weeks after his brother John.

My mother and I often visited England after that, and I sometimes met my cousin Thomas Slann, whom I afterwards married.

## ROBBED OF HONOR BY THE ANGEL OF DEATH

TARDY RECOGNITION OF A LATIONAL HERO.

P.P.S.: My grandfather Thomas Holloway, but for his untimely death, would have received the title of Vice Admiral. Indeed the papers appointing him to this high office had been made out, but he died suddenly before they could be signed—(P.P.S by his granddaughter Violet (Henville) Slann, June 26th, 1914.)

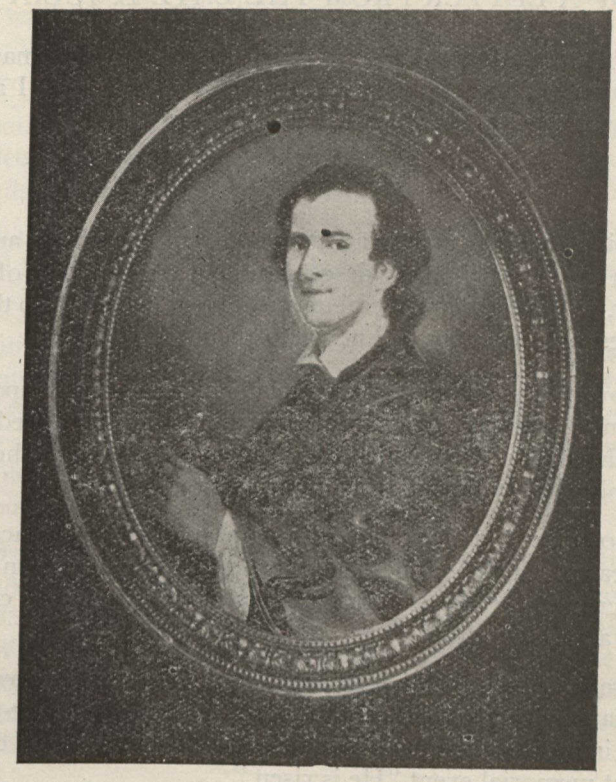
---

## JOHN HOLLOWAY, JR.

Another Unfortunate Love Affair.

John Holloway, (mentioned by his brother Thomas,) the son of John Holloway of the Bank, is remembered particularly as having written the memoirs of his celebrated Uncle Thomas, the Artist. He, John, Jr., died a bachelor at 74, at the home of Mrs. Ballachey, no doubt as a result of a tragedy in his own life. For on calling to see his affianced wife to whom he was greatly devoted, he was informed by her distressed parents that she had disappeared during the night. No trace of her was ever found afterwards. The Author is in possession of this biography. John Holloway, Jr., shows in his family memoirs a high standard of literary merit, and a keen insight into human nature.

This is John Holloway, who said that at school one morning he knew something was wrong by premonition, and when told his mother was dead was not surprised. When he woke up his pillow was wet with tears, and when the Head Master called him in he said he knew the master was going to say: "Your mother is dead."



Our famous artist kinsman, Thomas Holloway, historical engraver to George III.

GENERATION VI.

## MEMOIRS OF THOMAS HOLLOWAY, ENGLAND'S FAMOUS ENGRAVER

I have before me a book on which is written "To Mrs. Holloway, with the Author's affectionate regard." On the title page are these words: "Memoir of the Late Thomas Holloway by one of his Executors, and most respectfully dedicated to the subscribers to the engravings from the cartoons of Raphael, London. Published by the Author. Sold by Samuel Bagster, No. 15 Paternoster Row, MDCCCXXVII. Baxter and Thoms, 14 Bartholomew Close." And this is written also on the fly leaf: "To Alfred Edwin Goodman, with love and best wishes of his father E. Goodman, May, 1904."

The author of this work, as before stated, was John Holloway Jr., son of John Holloway of the Bank, and nephew of Thomas Holloway, the artist, and grandson of "Ann of the Portrait.

## EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM THE LATE E. JULIA SLANN.

I borrowed a large crayon drawing of my great Uncle Thomas Holloway, the Artist (executed by himself) whose memoirs you have, and I am sure you would like a copy of the crayon which I now send you.

---

This memoir of a great man is a very important document, and should be in the possession of every Holloway descendant, but it is long out of print. The author, however, will make very liberal extracts from its pages, so that all information of interest at least may be known to them.

John Holloway says: The most exemplary men look back upon their own lives with too much severity of examination to feel an unalloyed satisfaction at the review; the standard by which they endeavor to govern themselves discovers too distinctly every deviation from perfection.

To such, however, the biography of a good man is always acceptable, and his praise agreeable. In the circle of natural affinity, admiration of estimable characters is increased by affection and respect which makes the contemplation of their virtues a pleasing duty.

After the separation of death especially, another and more powerful feeling arises in their favor, we look towards their grave and behold not darkness and corruption, but in iminagination a light like that which the angels diffused when announcing that memorial event "He is risen."

We are sensible that in life they often erred, but graceful tenderness softens the eye of justice, and veils from a too strict regard the faint traces of their little foibles. Their imperfections overlooked in the multitude of vivrtues they practiced. (Author—Let every reader of these memoirs take this beautifully worded and veiled admonition to heart, and if there are estrangements among living kinsmen, let them exist no longer.)

The retrospection of a well spent life and peaceful end of a good man presents the most beautiful of all pictures to the mind, and is equally calculated to inspire satisfaction, confirm regard, alleviate sorrow, and incite to imitation.

If these sentiments are correct an apology is scarcely required in offering to the public the following memoirs:

Thomas Holloway was born in 1748, in Broad Street, and was the oldest son of his parents. His father was sufficiently easy in his circumstance to afford a useful education to his children. He (the father of Thomas Holloway) was a man possessing great vivacity of disposition, inclining perhaps to versatility.

Both parents were deeply imbued with religious principles, but Mrs. Holloway (nee Ann Broadstreet) was a splendid instance of this power. Hers, indeed was the Christianity of the sex, animated, yet gentle, fervent in the highest degree, yet judicious; at once cheerful and profound. Her natural and

social virtues were in perfect harmony with this Heavenly impulse; as a mother she was all tenderness, as a friend all kindness; her smiling deportment won every heart; the poor found her their patroness, the rich their monitor, guide and example.

Her death was distinguished by an ardor of rapture that few experience, and was indeed so remarkable that it was nevevr forgotten by any of her children, particularly the subject of this memoir.

Often has Thomas Holloway contemplated the beautiful portrait of his mother, until his own countenance appeared to reflect the same serene and elevated expression (Note expression in portrait by himself—Author.)

He acquired the constant habit of rising at most unseasonable hours to read and recite, being assisted by the celebrated rhetorician Mr. Quinn. This well ground acquisition combined with a natural suavity of temperament, ever after influenced his uniform propriety of deportment, which always in his case conciliated kindness and engaged attention. He was a person of short stature and rather muscular form, but was yet graceful and dignified.

As he grew up, his parents being dissenters (and evidently of prominence in London—Author), he had the society of distinguished ministers at his own family hearth. Here he heard the impassioned zeal of Whitfield; the reasoning decision of Wesley, the pathos of Romaine, and the venerable Rowland Hill. He was constantly with men not only remarkable for their christianity but for their intellectual endowments. He became a Baptist, and was receivevd into the congregation of Dr. Stennett.

Mr. Holloway never married; but was twice engaged in the bonds of affection. His first and most passionate attachment was harshly interrupted by the avarice of his intended father-in-law, who wanted his daughter to elevate herself in the world by wealth; he never forgot his disappointment. He sometimes in his familiar moments said he was not able to lose the impression of that last hopeless look which, with the poignancy of female sorrow, told him their separation was final.

The second instance which happened in the sober maturity of years was rather the effect of congenial religious sentiments than simple love. This under the mask of external attentions of courtship first faded into friendship and then yielded on both sides to the neutralizing circumstances of contrary situations in life.

This did not make him misanthropical. He was always a polite advocate of the sex.

When very young he conceived a strong prediliction for drawing, afterwards confirmed by able instruction at school. At the usual time of selection a mode of life he rejected the advantage then open to him as elder son of the lucrative business of his father, and after some hesitation he was apprenticed to Mr. Stent, an eminent seal engraver.

Under the care of this artist he executed some very superior work on steel, especially a head of "Ariadne," which gained him general praise.

His apprenticeship being ended he attended the Royal Academy, drawing and modeling in wax from the antique, and availed himself of the advantages of lectures by Joshua Reynolds.

### THE MANNERS OF DR. JOHNSON AND GARRICK COMPARED BY HOLLOWAY.

He used sometimes to relate an amusing incident showing the different temperaments of bluff Dr. Johnson anr the polished actor Garrick while he was attending a lecturue at the academy. Here the students numbered among them many of the nobility and many of rank. On one occasion when the elegant Dr. Reynolds was reading a composition, in walked Dr. Johnson, in complete dishabille; he entered carelessly and without regard to the interruption and disturbance caused by his unceremonious demeanor, threw himself into a chair which he had seized in another part of the room, immediately in front of the lecturer. Soon afterwards Garrick came, and perceiving it was his misfortune also to be late, with a graceful inclination of respect, and concealing himself as much as possible from notice, stepped forward with caution and sheltered himself behind the professor's seat till the conclusion. There was the inclination to salute the great actor with applause to show their admiration of modesty and good breeding, and thus express their indirect reproof, their sense of negligence, and rude assurance in a man so illustrious as the great moralist Dr. Johnson.

### HOLLOWAY ILLUSTRATES A GREAT WORK.

Thomas Holloway rose rapidly to fame. His first great work was the English publication of Lavator's Essays of Physiogonomy. A liberal patron of the arts encouraged him to engrave duplicates of the antique for this work and original pictures in this country of which Lavator had not been able to avail himself. Dr. Hunter, the great divine, was engaged in the translation.

Both men being now eminent in their different walks of life, attracted a great patronage for the work (It was often called Holloway's Lavator), which was, howevevr, affected by the French war, which convulsed the world and absorbed men's passions.

While this work was progressing, Holloway invited to his dinner table freuently Rev. Dr. Hunter, the eminent Scotch divine, the learned Fuseli, the serene and elegant Lindsay. So pleased were these guests with Holloway's hospitality that they told him their greatest enjoyment was always at his table, not at the table of those who gave more showy dinners, but where there was less wit. Dr. Hunter, at one of these dinners, saw a picture by Burney, 'The effects of solitude upon the good and bad," portrayed by a young man drinking wine from a glass handed him by a recluse. "What," said Dr. Hunter, "Paint the hapipness of solitude by drinking wine alone, and in the hands of a young man, too!"

On another occasion a guest made sport of the Bible, thinking to please the bright-natured and high-spirited Fuseli. "The Bible, the Bible, sir," repeated Fuseli, with an emphasis of look and gesture that at once silenced all argument, "It is the poet's book. "It is the painter's book."

At this time Holloway's attention was drawn to the crayon portrait of his mother by Russell, a photograph of which is here reproduced, his stimulated his effort to excel in portrait painting, and he exhibited several specimens in miniature and life size at Somerset House. The portrait of himself is the one from which was taken a photograph for the purpose of illustrating this sketch.

He also executed portraits of his eldest nephew and niece, which are certainly equal to any examples of crayon work, and it cannot be doubted that if he had made this his sole object he could have been one of the finest portrait painters of the day. Two elaborate prints of Dr. Price and Dr. Priestly gained him great reputation, both will bear comparison with the finest productions of English art.

---

## EXTRACT FROM LETTER OF LATE ELIZABETH JULIA SLANN:.

I have heard my father talk of Lavator (famous French author of scientific works), and say that he and my Great Uncle Thomas Holloway were warm friends indeed, their research, it seems to me, was the beginning of the spread of that doctrine (in England) known as hypnotism, but in those days called animal magnetism.

(The Author was appointetd Librarian of the Vancouver Library for the City of Vancouver in 1910, and one of his first acts was to secure a rare set of Lavator's Essays, on the approval of the Board, which contains 100 engravings by Holloway, where they can now be seen.)

Thomas Holloway's mind was not altogether free from the prevailing bias when the French revolution broke out. He, like many other good men, hailed the rising star of French liberty as the signal of the overthrow of civil despotism and the end of an intolerant religion, which he thought would be substituted by protestantism and toleration.

The revolutionists were not seen at first in their true colors. At length the immortal volume of Burke appeared which dispelled the mists of error and darted a detecting ray into the bosom of the dreadful scene in which impiety treachery and ferocity had been perpetrating the most heinous crimes.

Thomas Holloway became a convert and decided that liberty was best secured by alliance with monarchical institutions. He saw that the splendor of the Court were the refinements of elegance, the polish of manners and the distribution of wealth cultivated courage, patronage of arts, and encouragement of literature and industry.

At this time he executed many engravings for the noble publications of Boydell, Macklin and Bowyer, and embellished beautiful editions of English classics.

For a short time he ceased labor and lectured for his brother on animal magnetism in London. He attracted large crowds by his imposing style of lecturing, and as a result of the fame of his relation (John Holloway of the Bank), who had also been one of the foremost advocates on the same doctrine. Such was the attraction of Thomas Holloway's lectures, that many men of eminence came to hear him and he often gaily mentioned the anecdote of the polite eagerness of his scientific supporters amongst the liberal profession, who would vie for the office of turning over his pages and attending to the requisites of his desk.

His circuit duly performed he surrendered his credentials and the contents of his literary chest to their deserving and highly gifted owner (Our John Holloway of the Bank).

### THE CARTOONS OF RAPHAEL

The memoir has now arrived at a most interesting and important period in Mr. Holloway's career.

The Cartoons of Raphael were at Windsor Castle; Dorigny's prints were in universal reputation. They were but humble imitations; it was the greatness of the Cartoons which made the prints popular.

If Raphael had painted nothing else he would have been immortalised by these shadows of his greatness. The surpassing excellence consists as well in the graces of expression, the delicacy of effect, and the shadowy softness and richness of his harmonies (The author then goes into a long dissertation of the well-known fact that great works of art have often to be studied closely to be appreciatetd, and refers to eminent artists being apparently prejudiced against the world's most famous paintings.). Mr. Holloway, when conversing on the subject mentioned a similar anectdote of Opie, who avowed that he had often seen the cartoons without justly appreciating their merits. Mr. Holloway asked him to examine them more attentively, and he did so, and became an enthusiastic admirer.

### THE GREAT GARRICK REPRESENTS A RAPHAEL CHARACTER.

Garrick is again mentioned in connection with the cartoons of Raphael, which were engraved by Holloway. It appears that all the eminent men of the day visited these cartoons, many when Holloway was at work upon them. Garrick visited them among the rest. Holloway says: "A select party, amongst whom were Mr. West, president of the Royal Academy, and Mr. Garrick, visited the Earl of Exeter at Burleigh House. After dinner the conversation turned to Garrick's beautiful villa at Hampton; then on the neighboring palace, and as an obvious subject the cartoons at Hampton were mentioned.

Garrick, addressing himself to West, said, "These cartoons are spoken of as the first works of art in the world, yet I have often passed through the gallery in a hurried manner, perhaps with other companies, without beingmuch

impressed with them." West expressed surprise and replied: "The superior excellencies of these pictures can only be discovered by study, as must naturally be supposed. I am surprised, however, that you, Mr. Garrick, should not be arrested in your progress when you looked at them and not have your attention attracted by some principal beauty or figure is extraordinary." "Name one," said Garrick, impatiently. Elymas was instanced. "Ah," replied Mr. Garrick, "I now recollect, I was struck with this figure, but did not think it quite in character. This man was an attendant at the court of a Roman governor, and, as versed in obstruse subjects, could be no vulgar fellow, yet he stands with his feet straight forward in the manner of a clown."

"Why did not Raphael make him, in his distress, extend his arms like a gentleman while seeking assistance?" The company, highly interested in the conversation, united in requesting the favor of Mr. Garrick to personate the sorcerer as he would on the stage; adding the compliment that the great actor was always led by the strong feelings of his mind into such perfect expressions of look and propriety of attitude suitable to the character he represented that the theatre and actor were forgotten in the impresison of reality with which he governed his audience. He consented, and by the time he was in the middle of the floor appeared the exact counterpart of Raphael's design. Mr. West softly approached him and desired him not to alter his position, but to throw off his blindness and survey himself. "I am Raphael's Elymas! I am Raphael's Elymas!" he exclaimed, to the great delight of Lord Exeter and his guests. Mr. West bantered him on his inelegance of attitude, and he replied that a man in such circumstances, when deprived of his sight by a superior power, will not present the foot incautiously to obstacles or think of a graceful extension of the arms. Fingers and toes, like the feelers of an insect, will be advanced for discovery and protection. It was considered by the company a new proof of the accuracy by which the finest painter that ever lived delineated nature, and that Garrick was the best actor of the world.

Mr. Holloway was lead to the engraving of the cartoons by West, the President of the Royal Academy. This letter speaks for itself:

Newman street, March 23rd, 1800.

Dear sir,—It is a satisfaction to me to have it in my power to announce to you that I yesterday had the honor to be with his Majesty (George III.) when he was so gracious as to signify his pleasure that the cartoons of Raphael were at your service to engrave prints after; and further signified that one of the motives which induced him to place them at Windsor was that they might be of benefit to the arts. (The pictures were before much out of view at Buckingham Palace.)

I hope you will have health and enjoyment of many years to accomplish this great undertaking. This is the sincere wish of, dear sir,

Your friend and obliged,

BENJAMIN WEST.

Thomas Holloway, Esq.

Holloway had at this time before the commencement of his great work. been acknowledged the first engraver in England, and was appointed historical engraver to the King.

Copy of a letter from the Earl of Dartmouth, Lord Chamberlain of George III.:

Berkeley Square, February, 1807.

Sir,—In consequence of the statement in your last letter, I have given direction that you shall receive your warrant of historical engraver to his Majesty, free of expense, whenever your leisure shall enable you to come to town to be sworn in, at the Lord Chamberlain's office, in the stable yard, St. James.

I conclude it will not be long before your subscribers receive their first deliveries of the cartoons. I have seen a specimen of them, and it is my opinion that their excellence must ensure their success.—I am sir,

Your obedient servant,

DARTMOUTH.

Mr. Thomas Holloway.

### AT LENGTH THE GREAT WORK IS COMMENCED.

Holloway had scaffolding erected and a stove placed in the gallery at Windsor to facilitate his work. In fact, the King ordered it done. Holloway stood on the scaffolding three weeks without starting work, simply studying the paintings and waiting for inspiration.

Benjamin Beechy, while Hololway was at work, mounted the platform and went into raptures of Holloway's preparatory drawing of the famous cartoons

### GEORGE III. INTERESTED.

The King took a keen interest in the work, and gave orders that no one but Holloway must be allowed to engrave from them. He also gave orders to the chairman of the Board of Works to make everything comfortable and as easy as possible for Holloway in the palace. His Majesty frequently watched the progress of the work, as did the Royal princesses. The King often familiarly conversed with Holloway while he was at work, not forgetting to intermingle a few pleasant sarcasms on the apparent slowness with which the work proceeded. Once he said "Mr. Holloway, I have only to live three hunrder years to see the termination of your labors." His Majesty was correct in his observation of the artist's caution, for Holloway realised the importance of his work, which would make or mar his reputation for all time.

### ROGERS THE POET INTERESTED.

Among the patrons of the pictures was Mr. Samuel Rogers, the poet, who stood in the front rank. His support cheered Holloway and brought him

many famous patrons. The work was dedicated to the King. It was such an enormous labor that Holloway's nephews, both young artists, Mr. Slann and Mr. Webb, co-operated with him, after Holloway had spent many years on the engravings. The expense was so enormous that the subscriptions had to be increased in price, and most of the subscribers agreed to voluntarily raise their subscriptions.

Holloway was visited by Princess Amelia shortly before her death, and becoming quite friendly with this amiable daughter of George III. his grief at her death was profound.

Extract from Letter of Isabel (James) Ballachey: "It has been suggested that the reason Thomas Holloway the artist never married was because he had fallen in love with Princess Amelia, and never ceased repining over her death."

From an old Print:

"Princess Amelia was a favorite daughter of George III. She died in 1810, after a long and painful illness, which was cheered by the promises of the gospel and a good hope of an imperishable crown in the heavens. The following touching and descriptive lines were written by her during her affliction:

"Unthinking, idle, wild and young;
I laughed, and danced, and talked, and sung;
And proud of health, of freedom vain,
Dreamed not of sorrow, care, or pain;
Concluding in those hours of glee,
That all the world was made for me.

"But when the hour of trial came,
When sickness shook this trembling frame,
When folly's gay pursuits were o'er,
And I could dance and sing no more;
It then occurred, how sad 'twould be,
Were this world only made for me."

The author, John Holloway, says: "It was at the Royal residence of Windsor that Mr. Holloway was sometimes condescendingly visited by the Princess, whose gracious smiles and affable manners were to him the highest honor and support; this is almost approaching sacred ground, as the recollection is associated with the subsequent most afflicting event."

Suffice to say the artist tear flowed in unison with the nation, and the grief of the royal father at the death of the lovely Amelia.

The first engraving was not finished until five years after the first drawing was made.

The cartoons were then moved back to Hampton Court, and here many more years were spent before the last of the cartoons, the death of Ananias and Elymas were presented to the public.

HOLLOWAY'S DEATH.

Holloway died, however, after the sixth engraving was exhibited to the public. He had removed to Coltishall, in Norwich. There, in February, 1827, surrounded by the greater proportion of his relatives, was serenly closed a life which for almost eighty years had been devoted to usefulness and goodness. His death was like the sleeping of an infant or the fall of a flower which drops from its stalk to the earth, not from the pressure of the breeze, but through its own maturity. He was a man of great piety, boldly stood up for right principals, and his friendships were life-long. He was a close friend for his whole lifetime of Dr. De Valangin, who was his teacher at school; also of the poet Samuel Rogers.

To another friend, Mr. Hollick, he wrote just before his death: "Our friendship commenced when we were young men, and is now prolonged into that of aged Christians; this will exist and ripen in a future and better state. The present life is but a bud of being."

He endowed a school for the poorer class of children at Ditton, Norfolk, and sustained it by contributions solicited from friends and from his own purse until he died, when it was sustained by his friends. He used to frequently visit the school and lecture to the children and encourage them to live rightly.

If he felt anger it was when he resented an impious act or remark. He was soon over his anger and died without an enemy in the world. One day he called on a common friend of his, and the immortal physician, John Hunter. He found the professor remarking in debasing terms on the helplessness and meanness of the infantine state, and indeed ridiculing the birth of man.

A BOUT WITH THE GREAT PHYSICIAN, HUNTER.

This was an occasion in which the pious Holloway became angry. He said: "The helplessness of a child undoubtedly calls forth the affection of the parents, and by its long continuance turns that affection into habit. The ray of intelligence, diffused in pleasing smiles over the expressive features, soon reveals the intellectual principle, and attaches importance to the infant almost at birth. And independent of natural considerations the weakness of the object illustrates the power of Providence, whose superintendence of so frail a charge proves that there remains a destiny beyond the present state which gives to decaying mortality the opportunity of eternal happiness."

This was too much. John Hunter could not tolerate this two-fold attack on natural and religious ground. His patience was overcome, and having an uncontrollable aversion to argument or denial, he immediately left the house.

FROM "DICTIONARY OF FAMOUS ENGLISHMEN," VANCOUVER LIBRARY.

HOLLOWAY, THOMAS. Engraver, b. London, 1784. He was articled to a steel engraver named Stent, by whom he was chiefly employed in engraving steel ornaments. He subsequently attended the academy schools in 1773; first appeared at the royal academy as an exhibitor of seals and engraved gems,

later, and up to 1792, he was a frequent contributor of miniatures and portraits in oils and crayons, though his chief occupation was line engraving, which he practiced with ability.

His earliest published plates were small portraits for magazines, chiefly for non-conformist ministers, with which he was much associated.

He painted Charles Howland, Duke of Norfolk, and Sir Timothy Priestly, 1792; Dr. Richard Price, 1792.

He was employed to illustrate Boydill's Shakespeare, Boyer's History of England; Bell's British Theatre, and Lavator's (Physiogonomy) Translated by Hunter, five volumes, 1789, and 1798; Magazine of Fine Arts; T. Dodd's Manuscript of Memoirs of Engravers in the British Museum; Redgrave's Dictionary of Artists; Royal Academy Catalogues and Apell's Hendbuch Kupferstich Semmlar.

The author, John Holloway concludes his memoirs thus: His reward commenced on this side of the grave. He enjoyed the personal kindness as well as patronage, of some of the most highly distinguished and honored individuals in the country, and the pleasing reputation of a superior artist.

His remains were deposited in the principal aisles of Coltishall Church, amidst the grief of relatives and the respect and esteem of neighbors.

---

## POEM BY JOHN HOLLOWAY, Jr.

Where mingles the dust of the greatly good,
  Beneath the Sabbath-worn aisle it lies;
Beneath the tread of the Peasant rude,
  And the knees of religious votaries,

But there is not always a Sunday group
  Waiting around the altar to pray;
In silent solitude oft we may stoop
  And weep o'er the stone that covers his clay.

Tears hide the inscription: we think of the man
  Recalling his virtues and talents of mind;
We think of his holy and beautiful plan
  Of living to God as well as mankind.

When with sweet reflection so soothing, we stay,
  No longer his ashes our thoughts then employ;
We turn to the realms of eternal day,
  And see him again—A spirit of joy.

After Raphael.

The work of our kinsman, Thomas Holloway, the artist.

Admiral Holloway.

First cousin to John Holloway of the Bank; friend of Nelson, and companion of princes.

Like all the race, he was very pious, and his habit of reading the Bible on odd occasions gained him the good-natured ridicule of some who were not so religious.

When he was a captain on the frigate Soleby he met Captain Horatio Nelson, and a warm friendship sprang up between the two, which lasted until death separated them. It was at the Leeward Islands on this frigate that the admiral met the then Duke of Clarence, captain of the Pegasus. Holloway's plain and rigid honesty of character (so truly depicted in his features) attracted the discriminating abilities of the second son of George III., and this prince permitted the blunt familiar sincerity of his friend, who thus encouraged sometimes ventured to give that disinterested and manly advice which too seldom reaches the ears of princes.

On one of these occasions the prince thought that Holloway's remonstrance savored too much of quaintness and better adapted to the pulpit than the man-of-war. The prince remonstrated with his friend, and happening to observe a Bible which lay open on the rudder head, the prince said: "Why, Jack, you are always reading the Bible; are you going to write a commentary on it?" "No, sir," replied Holloway, "but the longer I read the book, the greater is my eagerness to return again to its perusal. I find in it all the principles of duty and, among other things, to put my trust in God and not in any child of man."

Captain Holloway and Captain Horatio Nelson attended the Duke to the Leeward Islands.

LETTER FROM THE HERO OF TRAFALGAR.

Lord Nelson's friendship for Holloway is shown in the following letter:

"August 22nd, 1803,

"My Dear Holloway: Your letter by Mr. Taylor I received from Admiral Campbell. Mr. Taylor being gone to Malta, a place probably I shall never see during my command. However, I shall be happy in showing every attention to your recommendation. I am sorry you are not employed, but I think it must come at last, for, as you observe, your nerves are good, and your head I never heard disputed. The Narcissus not having joined I have not had an opportunity of seeing your nephew at Lyons. Your son-in-law, Captain Otway, will get a ship and I hope his Culloden; and that you may both soon be actively employed, is the sincere wish of, my dear Holloway,

Your obliged and faithful friend,

(Signed) NELSON and BRONTE.

Admiral Holloway was born in Wells, Somersetshire. At 13 he told his father, who was Robert Holloway, barrister, that he had decided to go to sea. In 1760 he was sent on board the Antelope, fifty guns. He served two years under Sir Hugh Palliser. He was shortly after with Admiral Durell, com-

mander at Halifax. Admiral Durell dying, Holloway threw in his fortunes with Admiral Hood. In 1771 he was advanced to the rank of lieutenant, and continued with Admiral Hood on the Marlborough guardship, where he met Admiral Hugh Christian. On the breaking out of the American war he asked to be sent to the front, and was placed in command of the Perseus, and did considerable active fighting. In 1793 Admiral Hotham took command of the fleet sent to block up the remains of the French batteries on the islands of Saint Honora and Saint Margaretta, as well as on Cape Garoupe. Holloway was appointed captain of the fleet. Two engagements with the French fleet are mentioned in which Captain Nelson and Captain Holloway were conspicuous. One of the enemy was attacked by Captain Nelson and another commander, and reduced to a wreck. Two of the French fleet tried to tow the wreck away, and were pounced upon and captured with 2,500 troops, 400 being killed.

Captain Holloway had much to do with these splendid victories, and at the end of Admiral Hotham's despatch he is prominently mentioned, being the only officer referred to.

As a result of this victory Hotham was raised to the Irish peerage. Holloway was also rapidly advanced as was Nelson.

In the Admiralty Chronicle are these entries:

"June, 1801.

"The King has been pleased to appoint John Holloway Rear Admiral of the Red."

"April 23, 1804.

"Rear Admiral Holloway of the Red to be Vice Admiral of the White."

"May 15th, 1804.

"Admiral Holloway is appointed to the command at the Downs."

"October 25th, 1804.

"This day it has been the King's pleasure to appoint John Holloway, Esquire, Admiral of the Blue."

"November 9th, 1805.

"Vice Admiral Holloway of the White to be Vice Admiral of the Red."

"April 4th, 1807.

"The King has been pleased to appoint Vice Admiral Holloway of the Red, Governor of Newfoundland and commander of the station."

These promotions were, of course, the result of favorable despatches from commanders in many sea fights in which Holloway not only displayed great bravery, but was even more famous as advisor to other commanders in times of great peril. In fact he became so popular with King and Admiralty Lords

that he was offered a seat in the admiralty board, which would have given him a title. He was a member of a race, however, who did not seek titles, and he declined.

Extract from "Encyclopædia of Chronology," by Woodward & Gates; published in 1872.

Page 709. HOLLOWAY, JOHN, ADMIRAL. Born at Wells, Somersetshire, 1742; enters the Navy, 1760; serves under Lord Howe in N. America, 1778; serves under Rodney in West Indies, 1779; Post-Captain, Jan. 1780; takes part in relief of Gibralta, Sept, 1782; Captain of the Fleet under Admiral Hotham, 1794; assists in suppression of mutiny at Spithead, May, 1797; Rear-Admiral, Feb. 1799; Vice-Admiral, Apr., 1804; serves under Lord Keith, 1804-7; Governor of Newfoundland, 1807-9; Admiral, Oct. 1809; died at Wells, 26th June, 1826.

From Burk's Landed Gentry.

Admiral John Holloway, who died in 1826, m. Elizabeth Walrond, eldest dau. of Main Twete Walrond, Esq., of the Island of Antiqua and Philadelphia (Is this where John Holloway's daughter Philadelphia got her name?). Admiral Holloway and his wife Elizabeth had 3 daughters and 1 son: (1) Clementina, m. Sir Robert Walter Otway, Bart.; (2) Emma; (3) Anne; (4) Thomas. (See incident bearing on similarity of features of Thomas Holloway the Admiral's son and our kinsman Capt. Thomas Holloway).

ONLY SON DIES AT SEA.

Admiral Holloway's only son died at sea. The Naval Chronicle says of this death: "We are particularly sorry to record the untimely death of a most promising young naval officer, the only son of the brave and good Admiral John Holloway, who died on board the Narcissus, 13 years of age; but he had served four years and a half actually at sea. He was present at the action of Cadiz. The young man was buried by permission of His Silician Majesty in a grotto garden at Palermo."

In the diary of Captain Thomas Holloway he refers interestingly to this death. He says: "One day I was honored with an invitation to dine on shore with the admiral's family, which, besides himself, consisted of his lady and two daughters. I had not been long at the table when the admiral's lady looked attentively at me, and a moment after fell back in a faint in her chair. The admiral and company were much alarmed. When she was removed to her chamber all were curious to know of the reason of the lady's sudden collapse, when the admiral informed them that a little boy at the table had occasioned the illness, at the same time pointing to me. It appears Mrs. Holloway had lost an only son when midshipman at sea about my age. The admiral had called me by name, and being of the same name and wearing the same uniform and bearing a striking resemblance to her dead son, brought her grief so pointedly to her mind as to cause a nervous collapse. She declared that she would never see me again.

Extract From Letter of late E. Julia Slann:

"I have heard my father speak of this incident at the dinner table and lament that he was never allowed to see Mrs. Holloway again."

Admiral Holloway's Plot in Bath Cemetery.

THE ADMIRAL AT NEWFOUNDLAND.

In Volume 23 of the Naval Chronicle appears the following:

Address from the President of the Society of Merchants to Vice Admiral Holloway, Governor of Newfoundland, on his leaving the island.

St. John's, 21st Oct., 1809.

Sir: The Society of Merchants have directed me to make known to Your Excellency, the grateful sense they entertain of the facilities you have afforded them upon all occasions in the prosecution of this most important branch of commerce—fishing—during the term of Your Excellency's government of the island.

The polite and ready attentions, sir, which you have invariably shown to their representations, they have conceived it to be their duty sometimes to make, have impressed them with sentiments of veneration and esteem for your person and character, and they cannot feel but real concern that the period should be arrived that the continuation of your authority—which has been exercised with moderation and dignity, and with a religious regard to the general interests, will in the customary course of government cease.

Nevertheless they will still cherish a hope, that the essential services rendered the trade of fishing by Your Excellency may induce your return to this government.

Could their approbation, sir, reflect any additional lustre on a character not less distinguished for private worth than for public virtue, Your Excellency

has a just claim to that approbation. Too proud to possess sentiments they do not feel, and too just, they trust, to acknowledge merit where it does not exist, it is a duty they owe to their public situation, to declare without disguise their sentiments on this occasion.

Your Excellency will go from this government of Newfoundland accompanied by the regret and esteem of all good men, and wherever in these momentous times may be your future destination, whether employed in the service of your country or seeking repose in the bosom of retirement, they most sincerely wish you every happiness.

I entreat Your Excellency to believe that I feel a sincere pleasure in having been chosen as a medium of this communication, and with the assurance of the most profound respect and esteem, I beg leave to subscribe myself.

Your Excellency's most obedient and humble servant

J. MACTAIRE,

President Society of Merchants.

---

Governor Holloway's answer to the Society of Merchants:

Port Townsend, St. John's, Nfld.,

22nd Oct., 1809.

Sir: I am honored with your address on behalf of the Society of Merchants of St. John's.

The sentiments it contains, coming from so respectable a body and so fully expressive of their appreciation of my conduct, will always afford me the most pleasing reflection.

In the discharge of my duty I can with great truth aver, I had no other object in view than the general welfare of the fishing, and the carrying out of the instructions of my royal Master. I beg you to assure the society that the several papers committed to my care shall be faithfully laid before His Majesty's ministers, with my earnest representation for their serious consideration.

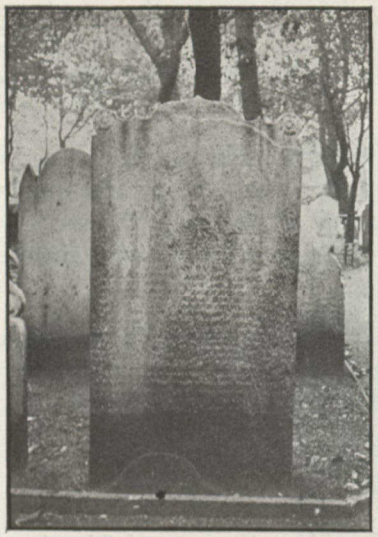
It is much to be lamented that the Chief Justice and Merchants do not act together with more cordiality. I trust, however, that the public business will not be neglected, or the authority or the respect of the court so highly necessary to be supported by the government of the island—be in any way lessened. With my sincere wish for the prosperity of the island, and the welfare of the Society of Merchants, and the community at large.

I beg you to believe me to be your faithful servant,

J. HOLLOWAY.

James MacTaire

President of the Society of Merchants, St. John's.



Front of ancient Holloway gravestone at Bunhill Fields, England, photographed by Henry Rigg, Esq., of Ealing, London, for these memoirs. Mr. Rigg very kindly contributed these precious photographs. He secured them with much difficulty, being obliged eventually to obtain a special permit from the authorities. The thanks of the Holloways for this and many other kindnesses on their behalf are due to Mr. Rigg.

Back of Holloway gravestone at Bunhill Fields.

Bunyon's gravestone in background. Here are buried the father and grandfather of my grandmother Arabella (Holloway) Goodman.

---

## LETTER SHOWING THE KINSHIP OF ADMIRAL HOLLOWAY.

Written by John Holloway to Eleanor his daughter, 114 years ago .

August 22nd, 1811.

My Dear and Beloved Daughter:

Admiral Holloway has written me word that he expects Tom will shortly set his foot on English ground—but the time cannot be ascertained owing to winds, etc. The above happy intelligence you will receive with pleasure; not so, perhaps, as what will follow: As Tom will have no certain time to stay our journey to see you is at an end, for we cannot be absent for a week; instead

of our coming down to see you we shall send for you to come up the moment he arrives. Your dear mamma is very much disappointed, as she fully expected to have the pleasure of a voyage, and so are all our little ones, who were to have accompanied us, very much mortified. Thus you see, my dear Eleanor, that the plans we form with so much pleasure are frequently frustrated, to be sure the pleasure of seeing our beloved sailor after such a long absence will amply compensate for the present disappointment.

I read your letter to Dorcas; it does equally credit to your hand and heart, but there is one sentiment in it which is only true in a restricted sense. It is the peculiar glory of Christianity, and that which distinguishes it from all other religions, that all true believers in Jesus Christ who have passed from death to life eternal have all their sins forgiven that if they persevere to the end, none of their sins or iniquities will appear against them.

"Bold shall we stand in that great day
For who ought to our charge can lay,
Fully through Thee absolved I am
From guile and fear, and sin, and shame."

Oh what encouragement is here to love our Saviour to our dying day.

"Your sins and your iniquities I will remember no more forever: I will cast all your sins behind my back." The Bible is full of such passages, and we ought, as disciples of Christ, take all the comfort out of them. So that, my dear girl, no one will have to give an account of their sin but those who die in an unpenitent state. I should not be surprised if the thought of our acquital at the great terrible day of the Lord fills you with gratitude and pleasure—what an invaluable blessing. May our blessed Saviour excite in us in the present love and gratitude and fill our mouths with His praises.

I have the pleasure to tell you that we are all well. Your dear mother and all now here send their love and blessing. Remember us most friendly and affectionately to your good and very amiable governess. Mr. Rhodes called upon us and will again on his return. And now, my beloved Eleanor Jane, God Almighty bless you and preserve you in His love and peace, strengthen and heal your body and prepare you for a long and useful life.

So prays, my loving daughter, your affectionate father,

J. HOLLOWAY.

Redeemed Office, August 22nd, 1811.

I enclose a pound note.

---

The family were all dissenters and great admirers of the early religious reformers. It is then poetic justice that the sanctity of Bunyon's tomb at Bunhill Fields should shield from harm the remains of the Holloways, many of whom were buried in one plot, near the tomb of the great Bunyon; for

England, wishing to preserve Bunyon's tomb from destruction, pushed back the hand of encroaching commerce from its sanctified surrounding, and the Holloways' dust will there remain undisturbed perhaps until that "great Day of expiation" to which they all looked with peaceful content, and to which John Holloway so happily referred in his letter.

AN EXTRACT FROM "THE PULPIT" PERIODICAL.

Sir: If ever the beautiful representation by Peters in his engraving of the Resurrection of a pious family is likely to be realized, it will be in the family on so many members of which the following epitaph, or rather, series of epitaphs are written. The circumstance of so much real worth being buried in one tomb and recorded on one stone renders an object of curiosity as well as of grateful surprise. These epitaphs are to be found in Bunhill Fields burying ground on a stone within a few yards of Bunyon's tomb; having had the happiness and honor of a personal acquaintance with several of the individuals whose names and Christian virtues are recorded, I request an insertion of it in your interesting weekly miscellany. It may tend to show the advantage as well as importance of a pious education, and if it should meet the eye of any affectionate survivors it may console them to know that the worth, the departure of which they can never forget, is not overlooked by the casual reader, and that the memory of these just ones is blessed by strangers as well as by relatives.

Yours, etc.,

GULIELMUS.

---

*In memory of*

MR. THOMAS HOLLOWAY,

*Who exchanged this life in full assurance of a better, on the 3rd day of June, 1759, in his 38th year.*

ALSO

MRS. ANN HOLLOWAY

*Wife of the above, who, after a life of activity and usefulness, departed in the triumph of faith, on the 4th of March, 1776, in her 52nd year. Calm peace and holy joy, and hope divine, and love and sweet benevolence were thine. Go dearest parent, to thy Saviour's breast, and in His kind embraces ever rest.*

ALSO

THREE OF THEIR CHILDREN WHO DIED IN INFANCY.

In Memory of

ELEANOR JANE HOLLOWAY,

*Who departed this life December 28th, 1792, aged 37; leaving an affectionate husband and six children to mourn her irreparable loss. In various relations of*

*life, as a wife, a mother, and a friend, she eminently excelled, and which crowned all; she was an humble follower of the Lamb of God. Farewell for a little while.*

ALSO

*Here rest in a certain hope of a joyful resurrection the mortal remains of*

CAROLINE SOPHIA HOLLOWAY

*Whose immortal spirit ascended to its God and Saviour, October 26th, 1814, in the full triumphs of faith and holy love. Aged 10 years.*

ALSO

SOPHIA REEVE HOLLOWAY,

*Fourth daughter of John and Louisa Holloway, who departed this life 17th of March, 1816, aged 9 years. Of such is the Kingdom of Heaven.*

ALSO

ELEANOR JANE HOLLOWAY,

*Who departed this life, August 28th, 1819, aged 21 years*

*A cheerful innocence adorned her bloom,*
*And piety conducted to the tomb,*
*Affection's tears that mingled o'er her dust*
*Attest the praise sincere the tribute just,*
*Remembrance long shall prove a mourner's part,*
*And raise her mausoleum in the heart.*

HERE ALSO ARE INTERRED THE REMAINS OF THE SAID

MR. JOHN HOLLOWAY,

*Who died in his 70th year, March 28th, 1820. He left two sons and three daughters, the offspring of his first marriage.*

AND

*Three sons and one daughter of his second, with their afflicted mother. He was a man admired for the strength of his understanding, the vivacity of his ideas, the cordiality of his affection, his benevolence and general usefulness. His principles were those of Christian, but his mind was not narrowed by peculiar notions. He believed God to be the Father and Benefactor of the whole Human Race.*

*Intelligence that shed her sacred light o'er youth's bright glance and age's Coming night.*
*The cordial smile that looked and gave relief, the eye that glistened at another's grief,*
*The ever anxious hope and changing fear*
*In our poor ruin lie dissolving here;*

*'Tis but the clay that God, Who being gave,*
*Can from the dust the vital essence save;*
*Reconstitute divine the mouldered form,*
*Fresh from the grave, and blooming from the worm,*
*When summoned to enjoy the radiant bliss*
*Of that immortal state succeeding this.*

ALSO

MR. AMBROSE HOLLOWAY,

*Eldest son of John and Louisa Holloway, who died January 6th, 1822, aged 27 years. Regretted by his many friends for his amiable qualities*

ALSO

EDWIN HOLLOWAY,

*Youngest son of John and Louisa Holloway, who died October 8th 1822, in his 21st year. Deeply lamented.*

---

## HOLLOWAY—GOODMAN

(Compiled 1915. Subject to constant change)

According to the following summing up, there were in all about 207 descendants of Thomas Holloway, Sr. and Ann Broadstreet. There were in reality a greater number as it has been impossible to get a complete list. Of those actually recorded, 118, or about half of the number are now living. Of the single families the Goodmans are the most numerous (by this is meant the units bearing a family name):

1. Thomas Holloway, b. 1690 ..... Absent m. Ann Broadstreet, b. 1721. Absent
2. Holloway, John ..... Absent m. Eleanor Jenkinson ..... Absent
   m. Louisa Baumstadt ..... Absent
3. Holloway, Thomas ..... Absent
4. Holloway, Ann ..... Absent m. Mr. Bass ..... Absent
5. Holloway, Peace ..... Absent m. Mr. Bowles ..... Absent
6. — Daughter ..... Absent m. Mr. Bodlyge ..... Absent
7. Died in infancy .....
8. Died in infancy .....
9. Died in infancy .....
10. Holloway, Ann ..... Absent m. Thomas Webb ..... Absent
11. Holloway, John ..... Absent
12. Holloway (died in infancy) Absent

12a. Holloway, Dorcas ..... Absent m. William Webb ..... Absent

13. Holloway Mary Peace.... Absent m. Geo. Ballachey ..... Absent
14. Holloway, Martha ..... Absent m. Richard Slann ..... Absent
15. Holloway, Thomas ..... Absent m. Jane Rudkin ..... Absent
16. Holloway, Ambrose ..... Absent m. Elizabeth Massett ..... Absent
17. Holloway, Elizabeth ..... Absent
17a. Holloway, Eleanor Jane .. Absent m. Theodore Heckler ..... Absent
18. Holloway Arabella ..... Absent m. Henry Goodman ..... Absent
19. Holloway, Alfred ..... Absent m. Sarah Massett ..... Absent
m. Augusta Bagster ..... Absent
20. Holloway, Edwin ..... Absent
21. Holloway, Caroline ..... Absent
22. Holloway, Sophia ..... Absent
23. Holloway, Elizabeth .....Absent
24. Holloway, Alfred Jr. .... Absent m. Julia Croft ..... Absent
25. Holloway, Louisa Annette Absent m. Roads Seabrook .....Present
26. Holloway Eunice Birch...Present m. Arthur Seabrook ..... Absent
27. Holloway, Arabella .....Present m. Arthur Webb ..... Absent
28. Holloway, Augusta Bagster .Pres. m. W. E. Sawyer ..... Absent
29. Holloway, Alfred Ernest..Present m. Elizabeth —— .....Present
30. Holloway, Ernest .....Present
31. Holloway, Eunice .....Present
32. Holloway, Clifford .....Present
33. Holloway, Elizabeth .....Present m. Allan Bateman .....Present
34. Holloway, Lilla Louisa...Present m. Frederick Ridgeway .....Present
35. Holloway, Eunice Birch ..Present m. Francis Seabrook .....Present
36. Holloway Augusta .....Present m. Herbert Weston .....Present
37. Holloway, Julia ..... Absent m. Gus Fox .....Present
38. Holloway, Alice .....Present
39. Holloway, Eleanor ..... Absent m. John Slann ..... Absent
40. Holloway, Julia E. ..... Absent m. Thomas Slann ..... Absent

---

## DESCENDANTS ARABELLA HOLLOWAY and HENRY GOODMAN

0. Goodman, Henry Riggs... Absent m. Judith Whittaker ..... Absent
m. Arabella Holloway ..... Absent
1. Goodman, Henry, ..... Absent
2. Goodman, Edwin ..... Absent m. Elizabeth Cross ..... Absent
m. Jessie McCallum ..... Absent
3. Goodman, Alfred ..... Absent
4. Goodman, Judith ..... Absent
5. Goodman, Kenneth .....Present m. Annie Hainer ..... Absent
6. Goodman, Ambrose Sr. .... Absent m. Helen Taylor ..... Absent
7. Goodman, Henry Calvin ..Present m. Madge Murray ..... Absent
m. Edith Waters .....Present

8. Goodman, Henry M., Jr. . . Present m. Julia Finlay . . . . . Present
9. Goodman, Lawrence . . . . . Present
10. Goodman, Dorothy . . . . . Present m. Herbert Fairfield . . . . . Present
11. Goodman, Alfred Edwin . . Present m. Rose Ellis . . . . . Present
12. Goodman, Harry his son . . Absent
13. Goodman, Louisa, his dau. . Absent
14. Goodman, Ellis, his son. . . Present
15. Goodman, Louisa . . . . . Absent
16. Goodman, Edward C. . . . . Present m. Jessie Monro . . . . . rresent
17. Goodman, Edwin M. . . . . Present
18. Goodman, Arthur C. . . . . Present
19. Goodman, Elsie Elizabeth . Present
20. Goodman, Arthur C., Sr. . . Absent m. Emma Hicks, . . . . . Present
21. Goodman, James Edwin . . Present
22. Goodman, Eunice . . . . . Present
23. Goodman, May . . . . . Present
24. Goodman, Ambrose, Jr., . . Present
25. Goodman, Harold . . . . . Present
26. Goodman, Helen Maud . . . Present
27. Goodman, Arabella Agnes. Present m. Howard Dresser . . . . . Present
28. Goodman, Mabel . . . . . Present m. George Wedd . . . . . Present
29. Goodman, Edith . . . . . Present m. Ester Williams . . . . . Present
30. Goodman, Maud . . . . . Absent
31. Four infants, children of
Ambrose Goodman, Sr. Absent

---

DRESSER

1. Dresser, Helen Marion . . . Present
2. Dresser, Margaret . . . . . Present
3. Dresser, Frances Maud. . . Present

---

WEDD

1. Wedd, Stanley Musgrave . Present m. Gretchen Van Norstrand . Present
2. Wedd, George Maynard . . Present
3. Wedd, Lawrence Martin . . Present
4. Wedd, Clementina . . . . . Present
5. Wedd, Kenneth Goodman . Present

---

WILLIAMS

1. Williams, Ester Kenneth. . Present
2. Williams, Gretchen . . . . . Present
3. Williams, Owen Rudolph . Present
4. Williams, Edith Lee. . . . . Present
5. Williams, Mabel Lee . . . . . Present

## FAIRFIELD

1. Fairfield, Herbert Holloway . . Pres

---

## BASS

1. Bass, Frederick ..... Absent

---

## SLANN

1. Slann, son of Richard.... Absent
2. Slann, Barnard Cecil.....Present m. ——— .....Present
3. Slann, Alice Maud .....Present m. Mr. West .....Present
4. Slann, Edith ..... Absent
5. Slann, Gertrude .....Present
6. Slann, Edgar .....Present m. ——— .....Present
7. Child of above .....Present
8. Child of above .....Present
10. Child of above .....Present
11. Slann, Mary Beatrice .....Present
12. Slann, Mabel .....Present
13. Slann, Eric Thomas ..... Absent
14. Slann, Violet .....Present m. Mr. Henville .....Present
15. Slann, Christian Olive ....Present
16. Slann, Flora Adelaide ....Present
17. Slann, Sylvia Winnifred .. Absent
18. Slann, Reginald .....Present

---

## WEST

1. West, Vivian .....Present

---

## BALLACHEY

1. Ballachey, Catharine ..... m. Jas Webb (cousin) .....
2. Ballachey, George ..... m. Mary Everett .....
3. Ballachey, Dorcas ..... m. Sam Webb (cousin) .....
4. Ballachey, John ..... m. Louisa Gurney ..... Absent
5. Ballachey, Sophia ..... m. Edward Hill .....
6. ——— .....
7. ——— .....
8. ——— .....
9. ——— .....
10. ——— .....
11. ——— .....
12. ——— .....

13. Ballachey, George, Jr.....Present m. Mrs. Bell .....Present
14. Ballachey, Rev. William...Present
15. 16, 17, 18, 19 being two more sons and three daughters of George Ballachey, Sr.
20. Ballachey, Mary Eliza ....
21. Ballachey, Isabel .....Present m. Mr. James .....Present
22. Ballachey, John .....
23. Ballachey, Henry .....
24. Ballachey, Arthur (The last five children of John Ballachey There were more)
25. 26, 27, 28, four children of Arthur Ballachey.

---

## WEBB

1. Webb, Herbert .....Present m. Eleanor Gatton .....
2. Daughter of Herbert .....Present
3. Daughter of Herbert .....Present
4. Webb, Rev. S. W. P. .....Present
5. Brother of above .....Present
6. Brother of above .....Present

---

## HILL

1. Hill, Rev. Edward .....Present

---

## SEABROOK

1. Seabrook, Eunice .....Present m. Judge Eli Harrison.....Present
2. Seabrook, Bagster Roads..Present m. Elvira Crosby .....Present
3. Seabrook, Joseph Ivan....Present
4. Seabrook, Annette May ...Present m. Charles Arthur Godson...Present
5. Seabrook, Norman Bagster Present
6. Seabrook, Ada Beatrice ...Present m. Albert Todd .....Present
7. Seabrook, Augustus .....Present m. Amy Horton .....Present
8. Seabrook, Percy .....Present m. Mabel Gibson .....Present
9. Seabrook, Ivan ..... Absent
10. Seabrook, Francis .....Present m. Eunice Holloway .....Present
11. Seabrook, Kenneth Goodman. Pres. m: Eleanor Guerin .....Present
12. Seabrook, Viola .....Present
13. Seabrook, Frederick .....Present
14. Seabrook, Richard .....Present
15. Seabrook, Arthur .....Present
16. Seabrook, Wililam .....Present
17. Seabrook, Edwin .....Present m. Frances Garnet .....Present
18. Seabrook, Kathleen .....Present
19. Seabrook, Donald .....Present
20. Seabrook, Ivan ..... Absent
21. Another child .....Present
22. Seabrook, Francis .....Present
23. Seabrook, Clifford .....Present

## TODD

1. Todd, Joseph Ernest .....Present
2. Todd, Richard Hunter ...Present

---

## HORTON

1. Horton, Viola .....
2. Horton, Frederick .....

---

## WEBB

1. Webb, Amy Louisa .....Present m. Edward Parrott .....Present
2. Webb, Lucy Evelyn .....Present
3. Webb, Mabel Eleanor ....Present m. Robert Jex .....Present
4. Webb, Arthur B. .....Present
5. Webb, Doris M. .....Present
6. Webb, Hilda A. .....Present
7. Webb, Audrey .....Present

---

## HARRISON

1. Harrison, Eunice Agatha..Present m. John C. Coote .....Present
2. Harrison, Paul Phillips...Present m. Lillian Weir .....
3. Harrison, Victor Birch ...Present
4. Harrison, Claude Lionel..Present m. Isabella Moore .....Present
5. Harrison, Bernice May....Present m. Maj. Chas. A. Forsythe...Present
6. Harrison, Herschel Roads Present
7. Harrison, Leland Lionel ..Present
8. Harrison, Claude .....Present
9. Harrison, Clinton .....Present

---

## FORSYTHE

1. Forsythe, Gordon Hamilton .Pres.

---

## SAWYER

1. Sawyer, Sophia Jane.....Present m. Hubert Trumper .....Present
2. Sawyer, Harriet .....Present
3. Sawyer, Laura .....Present m. T. C. Kemp .....Present
4. Sawyer, Edith .....Present
5. Sawyer, George Edward..Present
6. Sawyer, Catharine Ruth .. Absent

---

## TRUMPER

1. Trumper, Cornelius .....Present

---

## BATEMAN

1. Bateman, Julia Vaughan ..Present

## RIDGEWAY

1. Ridgeway, Adelaide .....Present
2. Ridgeway, Ernest .....Present
3. Ridgeway — .....
4. Ridgeway .. .....

---

## WESTON

1. Weston (one child) .....

---

## PARROTT

1. Parrott, Arthur .....Present
2. Parrott, Doris .....Present
3. Parrott, Hilda .....Present
4. Parrott, Audrey .....Present

---

## RECAPITULATION

Holloway, Goodman, Slann, Ballachey, Seabrook, et al.

| NAME | TOTAL | LIVING | REMARKS |
|---|---|---|---|
| Holloway ... ... ... | 42..... | 12.... | Bearing name, 4 or 5 |
| Goodman ... ... ... | 35..... | 20.... | Bearing name, 16 |
| Dresser ... ... ... | 3..... | 3.... | |
| Wedd ... ... ... | 5..... | 5.... | |
| Williams ... ... ... | 5..... | 5 | |
| Fairfield ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Bass ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Slann ... ... ... | 18..... | 14.... | Bearing name 11 |
| West ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Ballachey ... ... ... | 28..... | Unable to say | |
| Webb ... ... ... | 6..... | .... | |
| Hill ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Seabrook 2 families .. | 23..... | about 22.... | Bearing name about 19 |
| Todd ... ... ... | 2..... | 2.... | |
| Horton ... ... ... | 2..... | 2.... | |
| Webb ... ... ... | 7..... | 7.... | |
| Harrison ... ... ... | 9..... | 9.... | Bearing name 7. |
| Forsythe ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Sawyer ... ... ... | 6..... | 5.... | |
| Trumper ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Bateman ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Ridgeway... ... ... | 4..... | Unable to say | |
| Weston ... ... ... | 1..... | 1.... | |
| Parrott ... ... ... | 4..... | 4 | |
| | 207..... | 118.... | |

## ADDENDA AND ERRATA

### HOLLOWAY.

Page 358. Caption to cut: Coote Family Arms.
Page 361. First paragraph: d Oct. 30th, 1916, aged 47, at Vancouver, B. C.
Page 443 Elizabeth Riggs' signature should be on page 251.

## IN THE NAME OF GOODMAN

There have been eminently good men in every nation since the world began. Famed for their goodness, and we know that in many instances they were given, by courtesy, the additional cognomen of "Goodman," as a Hall Mark of a well spent life.

Many of the pioneers of New England had the prefix "Goodman" placed before their name. One, Isaac Cummings, b. 1610 an ancestor of my mother's, was designated "Goodman" Cummings, and his wife was known as "Goody" Cummings.

It is a simple matter, then, to conjecture how the name originated.

No doubt a great many families in different parts of the world bearing this name or its counterpart in foreign tongues, sprang from different founders. A few cases will suffice here:

(From Camden's *Britannia*)

---

## GOOMAN THE DANE

Goodmanchester in Huntingdonshire.

Guthran the Dane was conquered by King Alfred and given estates in England. He was also called Godrun and Gooman. The name of his town was Goomanchester, and is now called Goodmanchester—Chester signifying "Camp."

(From Lower's *Names*)

In Chester (again Chester), England, lived William Bleward, Lord of the Maples. He had a son he called David le Clerk on account of his scholarship, and David's son was called "Goodman" on account of the excellency of his character, and others gave him that name. His crest was Battlements and upper part of Tower argent, thereon a woman couped at knees, vested, azure hair dishevelled, or, in dexter hand a rose, guled, stocks and leaves, vert.

Goodman Crest, possessed by all families named Goodman, who have ever used or claimed a crest, and, no doubt, used by our own family in earlier days.

The Chester crest has been adopted by all Goodmans of prominence since that day, while the arms have been invariably different variations of the double headed eagle. Undoubtedly our line was of prominence at one time in England, and this would have been our crest.

(From Camden's *Britannia*)

(From Sketch of his Life) Speaking of his love of antiques and ancient ruins he says: This propensity of nature was seconded by the two Goodmans, Gabriel and Godfrey, Doctors of Divinity, and they kept up my spirits with supplies of books and money.

In Winchester Gabriel Goodman secured me the position of second master in the school.

Queen Elizabeth converted Winchester Cathedral into a Collegiate Church and Gabriel Goodman she appointed Dean, a person of particular worth and integrity who helped me in my studies.

### GOODMANS FIELDS

In another place Camden speaks of urns and coins found in Goodmans Fields when digging foundations for new buildings.

Thus the name was once borne by great and good men. Many Goodmans are mentioned in history, but none with such honor as these famous divines. A John Goodman was passenger on the Mayflower. He died in New England, and none knew his history. A story that he lived among the Indians and changed his name and his descendants are alive to-day, has been investigated and proven quite improbable.

Shakespeare uses the word Goodman as Grandfather, and in King Henry III., Scene IV., line 93, "Goodman Adam"; and as a term of reproach in Twelfth Night, Act IV., Scene iii., line 134, "Goodman Devil."

Two monks came over with William the Conqueror, named Goodman. It was Jacques Bonhomme who incited the French peasants to rebellion in 1358, against the Nobles. And there was a Don Gusman, leader of the Spanish Armada. It will also be remembered that the name was assumed bv James V. of Scotland, when he paid his visits in disguise through the districts around Edenburg, "Goodman of Ballengeich."

### FIRST GENERATION.

All descendants of Thomas Goodman, the artist, who give the matter any thought are convinced, and their conviction is so strong that it cannot be shaken, that our early Goodmans were a prominent family possessing superior talents and means to exercise them.

Through an accident of some sort that cannot be readily discovered, a break has appeared in the records, but the author believes that it is only a question of time until the family is traced back to its early progenitors.

In the time of our known ancestor Thomas Goodman, no one of his family were sufficiently interested to make a written record of the race. In my grandfather's day nothing said by him regarding his ancestors was recorded in imperishable form, nor was there any attempt that is known of, to have him write all that he knew of his paternal family.

Much of what he did say, however, is remembered by his son, Colonel Kenneth Goodman, who is still living. Thus the statement of a father to his son regarding his father and grandfather is as sound and as safe evidence to chronicle as any signed and sealed document would be.

My Grandfather, then, is known to have said that the Goodmans were from Leicester, and afterwards at Berkshire. So that if no record was found in Berkshire it would not be surprising as the time the Goodmans lived there may have been short, and they may have made no lasting impression of that shire. It is possible that before this volume goes to print a clue may be found in the former shire.

My Grandfather further stated that his Grandfather lived in a large stone mansion (evidently in Leicester) surrounded by 200 or 300 acres of land, in fact, that he was a country squire.

My Grandfather also spoke of his Grandfather's death, and stated that he was so angry at being bequeathed but one hundred pounds, when he should have been the chief beneficiary, that he would not accept the money from the estate.

---

## SQUIRE GOODMAN.

Was born about 1750; married, and had issue: (1) Thomas, lived in London; (2) Utrecia; (3) Celecia or Letitia; (4) J—, probably John.

My Grandfather kept a diary in London when a medical student of 20. Several clues were obtained from this little book. He writes:

"I have received a letter from Mrs. Duff (her husband was Doctor Duff) saying that J. Goodman had called and had not heard of his sister U.'s marriage (Utrecia)." Thus J. Goodman was introduced to posterity as an uncle of my Grandfather.

Again my Grandfather writes in the same diary: "I met a child of my Aunt Utrecia's,—or was it Mrs. Duff's?—at all events it was one of my cousins." (Author—Here Aunt Utrecia is introduced and the question of the possible relationship of Mrs. (Dr.) Duff is opened up.)

Again, my Grandfather is reported to have said: "My Aunt Letitia married Lord Say and Sele." It was in this way that Letitia was located.

Utrecia married a bank clerk in Islington, then a suburb of London. They had three children. Unfortunately my Grandfather does not mention the name

of his Aunt Utrecia's husband, so that he cannot now be traced. My Grandfather described his father, Thomas Goodman, as a short thick-set man of enormous strength, saying that he had seen him split a two-inch board in half with his bare fist. He had a great deep voice (which almost every male Goodman of to-day possesses) and a hasty temper (and they possess that too—and when that voice is raised in anger—but, as Kipling says, "that is another story.")

Thos. Goodman possessed a highly organized artistic temperament, being a brilliant painter and a skilful musician, he was handsome and polished in his manners. He was a fond brother, as he wrote constantly to his sister Utrecia, and correspondence is tedious unless the heart or mind is engaged.

Although my Grandfather spoke with bareness of detail regarding his father, he never referred to him unkindly, or without the respect due from a son to his parent.

From all that can be learned, however, from the meagre sources of information available, Thomas Goodman, although undoubtedly a genius, did not possess those dull, staid, ostensibly pious qualities which in that day went to the making up of good citizenship.

Although he became a friend of the greatest men in England, his restless nature did not enable him to stay long enough in one locality to warrant his having a place among the famous celebrities of the day. He was encouraged by many titled patrons of art and if he had so desired could have left a brilliant name to posterity, and would have been remembered among the Immortals

But he only remained long enough on Life's stage to act an emotional romantic part, and leave his name to a virile race of people. He was a brilliant and versatile, but his entrance was unheralded and unsung, and his exit unnoted, and his name is unrecorded by his contemporaries on the family roll of honor.

But was he not famous? The author believes he was, but that he was also self-effacing, and lacked those essential qualities of pride, egotism, and ambition which would have preserved his name for the Nation and his descendants.

Now that he has been so long gathered to his fathers, we must strive only to remember his great talents, and also that but for his passionate nature, which would never be gainsaid, he would not have run off with Martha Riggs and married her in spite of her parents' protestations, and would not have been the Sire of our family; for the fruits of that runaway match (which was of a piece with Thomas Goodman's whole life), has been the issueing into this world of 240 human beings, and 165 of them still live.

The result of those ardent stolen interviews in the shaded avenues on the grounds of the old Hollist in Woolbeding; the midnight trip by the London coach, and the marriage in Gotham—poor, tender-hearted, trusting Martha Riggs. She soon began to long for the love of her parents, which had been

denied to her on account of her rash act. Bitterly they turned their hearts against her. She was disowned, and mourning fell upon the house of old Squire Riggs, and his numerous family. Her dear name was never mentioned except in whispered prayers at bedtime: "God bless Martha, God soften Father's heart, and bless Martha."

And the stern Squire in the solitude of the night, he, too, prayed for the strayed lamb. How his heart yearned for the little girl who had been his pride, his hope and his joy; for was he not to have made her a great lady, and married her to an English Lord.

But it was not to be. It is a matter of family history that Squire Riggs had refused Martha's hand to young Goodman, on the grounds that he had made other plans for his daughter, and he did not wish her to unite herself for life with a man whose religious views were not in accord with his own, or what they should be—to use his own words, he was a "godless man."

So the young people ran away. One with her heart beating with tender trusting love, that all would yet be set right with her dear parents; and the other as a daring cavalier risking the rage and unforgiveness of an angry afther to possess for his own the lady of his thoughts.

Martha relented. Reared in the lap of luxury; loved and caressed, soothed with tender words, she in time pined for those dear home associations which she had lost, perhaps forever. A daughter came, and it was when another child was expected that, weary and disheartened, she made her way to London and threw herself on the mercy of her friends.

Her father was communicated with; his heart softened, and he hastened to the Capital and brought her home with him.

The second child was born at Hollist House, and was my Grandfather, and from these two sprang the sturdiest race of our Riggs line since the days of Old Ralph Riggs—three times Mayor of Winchester Town.

So come blessings in disguise, and how hard sometimes it is to recognize apparently astounding misfortune, as anything but dire calamity.

Thomas Goodman married Martha Riggs, and had (1) Arabella; (2) Henry Riggs.

I have said that the Goodmans were a prominent people. One of my reasons for thinking thus, is that Thomas Goodman's son, my grandfather, was, at twenty years of age, the close friend and constant companion of all the eminent artists of London.

My Grandfather was not an artist, and showed no talent in that line, neither were the Riggs of an artistic temperament. This association must have come through his father and his grandfather, while his father's great talents must have been highly appreciated, and the man esteemed for himself by these eminest artists, as they constantly invited to their homes and firesides to be a companion to their children, this medical student, then walking the hospitals of London, the only son of that other great artist, Thomas Goodman.

One day, in London, my grandfather met his father, Thomas Goodman, quite by accident. He, Thomas Goodman, complained that he was rather short of ready money, and asked for the loan of five pounds. This, my grandfather gave him. They shook hands and said good-bye, and my grandfather never saw his father again.

Thomas Goodman disappeared. His wife lived to become the heroine of our race, and will ever be remembered as

---

## MARTHA THE GOOD.

Her character, tempered in adversity, enabled her to endure and triumph over obstacles from which many women, reared as Martha was, would have shrunk.

Crossing the ocean to an unknown land, she established herself in Lower Canada as an educationalist.

She succeeded, brought up her children, surrounding them with comfort and refinement, and before discontinuing her labors, saw them settled in life, prosperous, and contented, with families of their own—Nine little ones calling her Grandma.

## IMPORTED THE FIRST PIANO

Martha taught the grandmothers of Quebec the Classics, Deportment, Music and the three R.'s. Her Ladies' School became famous both in Upper and Lower Canada. For the first time since the capture of Quebec from the French, daughters could receive the higher education at home.

Martha Goodman imported the first piano into Canada from England, and it was not necessary to go abroad to learn music. Afterwards, in York (Toronto) where she lived with her daughter, Mrs. Goodman's school attained the same success as it did in Quebec.

## MARTHA RETIRED IN 1826.

Dr. Scadding, in his well-known "Early York and Toronto," has this to say:

### MRS. GOODMAN'S LADIES' SCHOOL.

A little to the north (of Duke Stree), on the left side of George Street, was the famous Ladies' School of Mrs. Goodman. This had been previously the homestead of Mr. Stephen Jarvis, of whom again immediately. Two or

three of these familiar names appear in an advertisement relating to land in this neighborhood, in the GAZETTE of March 23rd, 1826: "For Sale: Three lots or parcels of land in the town of York, the property of Mrs. Goodman, being part of the premises on which Miss Purcell now resides, and formerly owned by Col. Jarvis. The lots are each fifty feet in width and one hundred and thirty in depth, and front on the street running from King Street to Mr. Jarvis' Park lot. If not disposed of by private sale they will be put up at auction on the first day of May next, at the office of the U. C. Gazette.' York, March 10, 1826."

ST JAMES' CHURCH.

. . . . . And lastly, in the interstices of the assemblage was to be seen a plentiful representation of generation number three; young men and lads of good looks for the most part; well set-up limbs, and quick faculties; in some instances, of course, of fractious temperament and manners. As ecclesiastical associations are at the moment uppermost, we note an ill habit that prevailed among some of these younglings of the flock, of loitering long about the doors of the church for the purpose of watching the arrivals, and then, when the service was well advanced, the striplings would be seen sporadically coming in, each one managing, as he passed his fingers through his hair and marched with a show of manly spirit up the aisle, that he attracted a degree of attention; attracted, perhaps, a glance of admiration from some of the many pairs of eyes that rained influence from a large pew in the eastern portion of the north gallery, where the numerous members of the Ladies' School held a commanding position.

It is rather interesting to note that this author, Dr. Scadding, has a nephew, George Wedd, who married Mabel Goodman, the great grandchild of Martha (Riggs) Goodman.

The Author has called "Martha" the heroine of our race, and my Grandfather always referred to her in glowing terms of praise; and my father spoke of her with great admiration.

The whole world loves a brave woman who battles against the buffeting waves of adversity unafraid, and wins out, and who is still feminine in her ideals. Such was Martha, my Great Grandmother.

Montreal 24th March 1834

My dear Brother

You may be very sure I sympathize with you, on the occasion of the sad news you have recently sustained, and which I fear you will feel during life - yet I trust the great and merciful Father of all, will inspire you with wisdom and strength to enable you to perform the double duties of both Father & Mother to your dear little boys - You cannot imagine with how much anxiety I have expected to hear of your safe arrival at home, and of your proceedings there, I have sent frequently to Willards, & have written but all in vain - Mr Baldwyn also wrote me and appears to be hurt, & displeased at your long silence, I hope you will find our Agent, I am sorry to say died yesterday morning - adieu my dear Wm believe me ever 20th May - Affectionately Yr Sister

Goodman

Letter From My Grandfather to My Grandmother.

My Dearest Bell:— Toronto, Dec. 20th, 1836.

I should have written before this to you, had not I expected to bring my poor Mother's affairs to an end. In that, however, I have been disappointed, but as I am lead to expect a loan of money on mortgaging property for £200 currency, which sum will be needed for adjusting all the claims against her, in about a fortnight, I think it will be better for me to remain.

My poor Mother is paralyzed in both hands and feet. She knows everyone when they first approach her. She frequently talks of you and asks how many children you have and their names. She does not like the name of Ambrose as she associates the idea of the Jesuits with it. I do not think she will die soon, poor thing. The Chief Justice made her will the other day, in which she divided her property between Belle and me. After paying all expenses there will be £700 each.

Hardly an hour passes in which I do not wish to see my little dark-eyed darlings and their Mama. Kiss them two times a-piece for me.

Yours very affectionately,

HY. R. GOODMAN.

## THE PASSING OF MARTHA

Mrs. James McCallum had gone to church with the children. Grandmother was lying on the sofa, and James McCallum was reading aloud to her from the Bible: "Whosoever believeth in Me shall be saved," words of consolation and hope, and of life everlasting beyond the grave, and as he read, the soul of Martha The Good was passing. James McCallum ceased reading, and quietly asked "Are you all right?" There was no answer; but if the volume of the sacred law is a true writing, Martha was "All Right."

Grave of Martha the Good.

## GOODMAN, WHITTAKER, HOLLOWAY

Henry Riggs Goodman, m. first in 1826, Judith Whittaker, of Great Marlow; secondly, in 1831, Arabella Holloway, of Islington.

He had by his first wife, Judith Whittaker. (1) Judith, died without issue; (2) Henry. And by his second wife, Arabella Holloway, (1) Edwin; (2) Alfred; (3) Ambrose; (4) Kenneth.

## AN ENGLISH GENTLEMAN OF THE OLD SCHOOL

My boyhood recollection of my Grandfather is that he was an English gentleman of the old school, always dignified, and at the same time of a kindly manner; quick, sympathetic and generous impulses. He pitied the sufferings of his fellow creatures, and it was well known over the country side, that during the period of his large practice, stretching over a number of years, he asked nothing from the sick poor, for his profesisonal services.

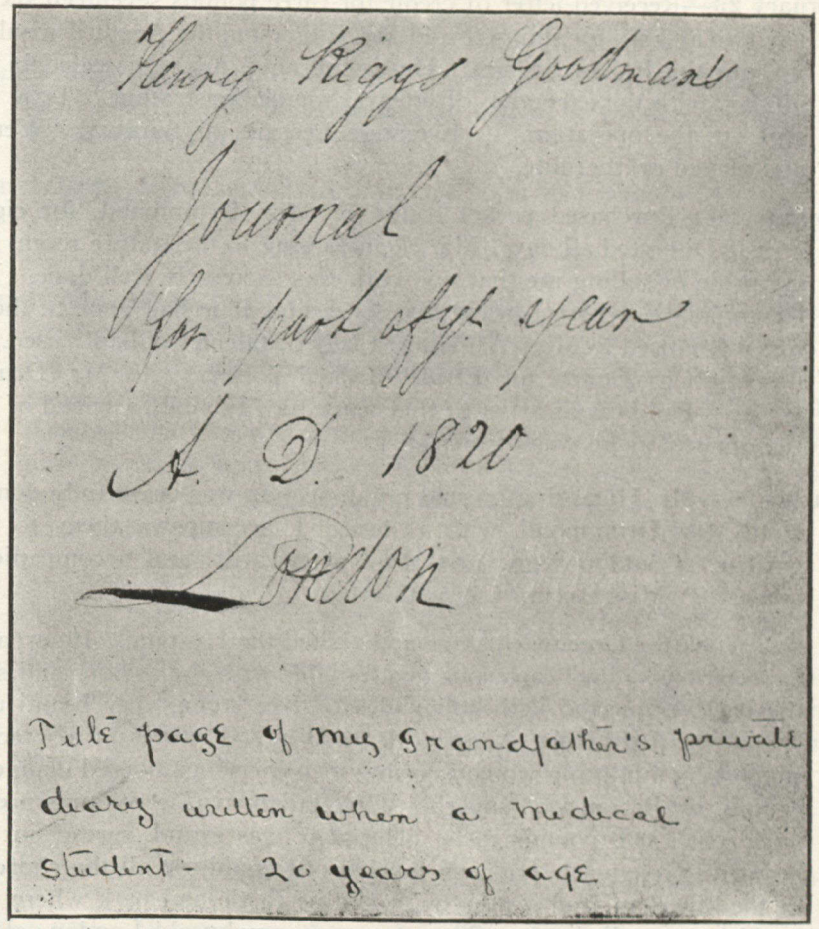
He was, however, enabled to live comfortably, by a dispensation of Providence. For at intervals he fell heir to small legacies from relatives.

He was educated in childhood by his Grandfather, Squire Riggs, but when a boy of 12 came to Quebec with his mother.

### VOLUNTEERS FOR THE AMERICAN WAR.

Martha Goodman's reception at Quebec was most encouraging. Her son, an enthusiactic Britisher, soon after lanading volunteered for services against the Americans in the war of 1812, at the remarkably early age of 13. He was a big able-bodied boy, and was given a musket and put on the ramparts of Quebec as sentinel.

In that city he finished his preliminary education, and as soon as he was old enough, was sent by his mother to London to persue his medical studies. This he did, walking Guy and St. Thomas Hospitals.




Title page of my Grandfather's private diary written when a Medical student - 20 years of age

## EXTRACTS FROM GRANDFATHER'S DIARY, 1820

### Trying Life of a Medical Student, Ninety-Four Years Ago.

January, 1820—Determined to write a diary, prompted by the punctuality of a Canadian friend and school fellow, A. Buchanan.

Paid two guineas for Millington's lecture on experimental philosophy. At Hospital dissected part of an upper extremity.

January 22—Lecture on cancer and on chemistry. Dissected muscles, nerves and blood vessels of thigh. Attended general dissection. Attended anatomical lecture. Evening, had misfortune of breaking Miss Dixon's comb, enquired the price of another. Paid half guinea for dissecting material to Beadle—this was half price.

Query—Why would not a jar contain the electric matter much better if all the air was abstracted from it by spirits or air pump. (Note—In the light of subsequent events this looks like a rather erudite reflection.)

February 23—Received letter of credit for three pounds seventeen six; had to pay two and six for stamp. I told Mr. Rogerson, the Agent, I would like to go into the Indian Service. He discouraged me. Dissected in hospital all day, with the exception of interval for demonstration. Isaw Blizzard perform the operation. Evening: Lecture on Surgery. Went home and played on the flute.

February 24—Purchased pocket comb for Miss Drummond, for eight shillings. Dissected all day. Mr. H. in passing to the lecture room, flattered my pride by telling me that my work was extremely well done. Went to Drummond's, where I heard that Eliza and Jane had gone to theatre. I was introduced to Miss Wooding, a lady of talent, but badly used. I gave the comb to Emma for Eliza. Talked politics with Mr. Drummond. (Note—The famous artist of that name, undoubtedly a friend of Thomas Goodman's, as he was of his son.).

January 26—Mr. Hetherington said my dissection was beautifully done. Note from Miss Drummond, with a desire I accompany them to Convent garden. Could not go; met them afterwards, and accompanied them home. A Miss Accum was with them.

Took the Greenwich stage and visited the Hospital. It surpassed my expectations. Two capacious quadrangles with the asylum and school at the back, connected with collonades of free stone, very beautiful. The chapel was beautiful. Altar work by West. Pictures of a wreck—Men supporting a fainting woman; young men carrying an aged man, etc. The ceiling, by Bacon, was superb. The Italian marble columns are said to have cost 1,000 pounds each. The view was grand, spread out beneath beautiful Greenwich, and one fancied one could see all the church spires in the kingdom, and nearer by, a Gothic castle and park where the deer could be seen distinctly. Then far away smoky old London. I asked a sailor I met about the hospital. He said it would accommodate 2,000 people. He was a pensioner, dressed in the uniform of the place, three cornered hat, etc., great blue coat and brass buttons. On my way home, called at Drummond's; met them all and walked home with Miss Accum. It was a delightful night, so took a very circuitous route.

February 28—Bought Shakespeare's Works—nine volumes—for fourteen and six.

YE OLD TYME SILVER BUCKLES.

March 1st—Purchased a pair of silver buckles for my pumps.

March 3rd—Bought an extremity which I intend having injected for dissection.

March 6—In taking off my dissecting dress, felt a slight pain in ye arm pit, and examining it, found the part swollen. The pain took my appetite away; I became alarmed, as my pulse rose to 112. Shivering came on, and I was conducted home by two other pupils. On my way met Huddon, of Quebec. Went to bed, and vomited. Trouble caused by a slight puncture in dissecting about three weeks previously.

ST PATRICK'S DAY IN THL MORNING—ONE TOUCH OF NATURE MAKES THE WHOLE WORLD KIN.

March 17th—Went out with Hays and Buchanan to celebrate St. Patrick's day, which we did by drinking two bottles of whisky, and amongst four, at two o'clock got home sober.

March 18th—Went with Buchanan and Hays to Richmond.

HE KNOCKS A MAN DOWN.

March 20th—Went to Brook's (Note—another artist), and had a good supper. I was returning home when I had occasion to knock a man down. (Note—the Author remembers his father saying that his grandfather was very powerful when a young man, and that on one occasion a big husky fellow insulted a lady he was with, and with one terrific blow of his right he laid him flat on his back, and walked on—The author used to look at his grandfather and wonder, with his gentle ways, how he could ever have done such a thing.

HE VISITS AUNT UTRECIA AND HEARS OF HIS FATHER.

March 26—Went to Huburn's (His Aunt) and dined; afterwards went to Napier's (Note—Well-known artist of that name). There saw one of Mrs. Duff's children, my Utrecia's, or *one of my cousins* (Note—This clue it has been impossible to follow up. All attempts to trace the Duffs or Utrecia's family have failed.)

HE HEARS OF HIS FATHER AGAIN—THE SAME UNSETTLED MODE OF LIVING.

March 27th—Wrote a long letter to my Grandfather (Squire Riggs).

March 28th—Visited Bedlam, Vauxhall, and from there went to the Napier's, where I stopped till 12 o'clock.

March 29th—Called on Drummond. He was busy preparing for the Museum.

April 2nd—Went with Brooks to Islington, to see Utrecia (his aunt). She was not much altered, her husband is a good sort of young man; has a situation in ye bank, worth near 300 pounds. They have three children, the two eldest, boys, the youngest five weeks old. From her I learned that my father (Thos. Goodman the artist) was at Stroud, about twelve miles from Glouster, and had still the same unsettled mode of living (William Riggs, called Martha Goodman, widowed in 1812; in 1820 her husband still lived—Author.)

SAFETY IN NUMBERS

April 8th—Went to Napier's. Heard an unpleasant remark about visiting Mrs. Fraser without a third person being present.

April 9th—Drank tea with Mrs. Fraser, at Great St. Cloud. Called at Huburn's. Met Miss Drummond there.

April 15th—By invitation, went to Ridout's. There met Miss Ruth Napier; I am invited to dine at Utrecia's. Did not go. (Note—Every time he speaks of Utrecia's he mentions Brooks, who always goes with him. There may be some significance in this.)

April 3rd—Called at Huburn's (Nee Ann Riggs).

MEETS AN ACTRESS.

April 23rd—Took dinner at Huburn's, and after dinner walked with her. She left me at Waterloo Bridge, and I went on to Drummond's, where I met Mrs. Fraser and Miss Smithson, an actress of some celebrity, and after a most pleasant evening on my part, I walked home with Mrs. Fraser and Miss S. They gave me a general "invite," which I would most willingly accept, but for my inability to distribute happiness.

BECOMES A SURGEON AND DOCTOR—DRUMMOND EXHIBITS PICTURES

April 29th—This day Headington finished his lectures on surgery, and after making me an affectionate, though short, speech, he handed me my certificate. Went to hear a Wesleyan preach, a Mr. Lucy. Called on Drummonds, and Napiers. Jane is in Jersey.

May 1st—Went to British Exhibition of Pictures. Good, but nothing particular. The only picture which attracted my attention was "The Portrait of a Lady" by Sir T. Lawrence. The face was admirably fin ished, but the background was rough. Drummond's picture of Jane was the most conspicuous, and the first that I saw. Drummond had five or six hung. Stothard's, which I like, were eight in number; and Elsie, Emma and Jane had each a picture there, in crayons.
(Note—These were his artist friends, and, of course, the friends of his artist father. These artists cannot give evidence to-day—the descendants of Drummonds or Stodhardt's cannot be traced.)

A BLUE WATCH RIBBON—HEARS OF HIS FATHER—LEAVES FOR EASBURN A FULL-FLEDGED DOCTOR.

May 2nd—Old Mr. Drummond requested all our company, so off we went, and there met Brooks and Mrs. Fraser. Miss Accum played ye piano, and Brooks and Emma sang.

May 2nd—After the Chemical lecture to-day, obtained my certificate. Wrote to Mother and Bell and called on my Aunt Utrecia, where I stopped an hour to read a letter from my Father, who was very ill at Stroud in Gloucester. I visited Drummonds, and we parted with many kind wishes.

May 3rd—Went to Camberwell and dined with the Huburns, and paid Mrs. H. for boots and shoes. I called on the McCallums, Mrs. Stothard and

Mrs. Fraser. I saw Miss Drummond and she gave me a note from Miss Accum, enclosing a blue watch ribbon she had bought for me at aHammersmith Fair. (Ye watch ribbon is worn around ye neck attached to ye watch and fob to prevent pocket picking, so when ye watch was jerked ye pull would be felt at ye neck.—Description from an old book). Called on Dickinson's and Stodhart's, and went home to pack for Easburn. Set up talking with Smith and Fox, and started to pack.

Mrs. Humphrey (his land-lady) came to wish me good journey, and we kissed and parted. I went to bed at three and was called before 6. I left my lodgings and lunched at the Bolt in Ton. (Note—Where eight years before his mother had left with Wm. Riggs, to seek her fortune in a strange land). I climbed up on the waiting coach and started on my journey to Easburn. On reaching home found Grandma unwell, Grandpa and aunts tolerably well. The pleasure I felt can be imagined by all who meet their friends whom they love. It seems like the Garden of Eden after the noise, bustle and dirt of the City of London.

LOOKING FOR A JOB.

He tried to get a Billet in East Indies, or New Holland. If he had succeeded . Kinsmen, what then?—Refused Aunt Mercy's Loan—That Apothecary's Shop saved the day—Gets a Position with Mr. Shaw.

August 28th—Went to Messrs. Thornton & West, London Bridge, to ask for employment in ye services of ye East Indias. They wanted no one. I visited the lottery drawing and went home.

August 30th—I went to the Jerusalem Coffee House, where ye sea captains congregate . I asked a sea captaian if he sailed to India. He said he did, but it was the wrong time of year. I then visited Hale, ye apothecary, who gave me five tickets of vacancies (for young doctors.) One was a Mr. Shaw, Great Marlow, Bucks. I wrote to him for a position. Sold my spoons for three pounds four; paid Mrs. Humphries 19 shillings and 11; and paid small debts.

September 1st—Went to the Exchange to enquire about a position in the New Holland Service. Was told the person employed must pay 80 pounds for his passage, but would be employed on board. This did not meet with my purse or approbation (If he had gone, kinsmen, would we have had an ego?) Went to Mrs. Fraser's and Stothard's. Old Mr. Stothart shook hands very cordially and talked about history and that sort of thing. Mrs. Fraser asked me to tea. I declined.

Sept. 4th—Received a very friendly letter from Mr. (Doctor) Shaw, with directions to call on him next evening. Aunt Cobbald has arrived from Sussex, and with Aunt Huburn, took tea with me. Aunt Cobbald took possession of my bedroom and I slept downstairs.

Sept. 5th—— Went with my Aunt Cobbald and called at Mr. Shaw's. Bishopsgate Street. We talked half an hour. His salary is only twenty pounds and living in the house. My Aunt Cobbald offered me one pound, but I refused.

Sept. 7th—Saw Mr. Shaw. He told me to come to Great Marlow as soon as I heard from him. I called on Utrecia at Islington. She had heard from my father, he was better than he had been. Call on Mrs. Powney and Miss Hudson; they were pleased at my having seen Charlottte B. at Easburn. Arabella is a good girl. I promised to make something for her. Went to Drummond's. Miss C. gave me two paper lanthornes, a present for my sister.

Sept 12th—Long expected note from Mr. Shaw.

### KIND-HEARTED LANDLADY—A RING FOR MISS ACCUM.

Went to Mrs. Duff's. Called on Napiers. Called at Stodhart's. Met Mrs. Fraser and Miss Accum. Went home with Miss Accum; endeavored to prevail on her to write to me. As in trifling concerns she sometimes changes her mind, she may in this.

Sept. 13th—Bought Miss Accum a ring—a recompense for the watch ribbon. Left Mrs. Humphries unpaid. Instead of objecting offered to lend me more; I declined.

I arrived at Mr. Shaw's, and Mrs. Shaw received me kindly.

Sept. 14th—Mr. Shaw says we will take turns in going to church.

Sept. 24th—Dined with Mr. and Mrs. Shaw at Mrs. Brown's.

### CUPID IS AIMING HIS ARROW.

He Meets Miss Whittaker—Subseuently Marries Her.

September 25th—Thought I had escaped the ladies, but they constantly appear. Dined out, rather reluctantly, with Mr. and Mrs. Shaw at a sister of Mrs. Shaw's. There I met Mrs. W———. Also met Mlle. Granier and Madam Granier. Attended several patients. Went to Bible Class and walked home with Miss Edwards.

September 29th—Business is reviving. To-day took the Lord's Sacrament.

October 1st—Business brisk (Then follows a long list of patients visited.) The presence of a certain young lady disturbs me (In French he describes his feelings towards the lady, who, no doubt, afterwards became his wife). Wrote to Aunt Abb., James, and Bell.

October 20th—I have received letters from grandparents and parents, much to my delight. The receipt of these letter gives me more vigor. (And here the diary of the author's grandfather ends abruptly. His mind obsessed by his medical duties, the remaining leaves being filled with reports on the progress of patients.

## EXTRACT FROM LETTER FROM MRS. BALLACHEY

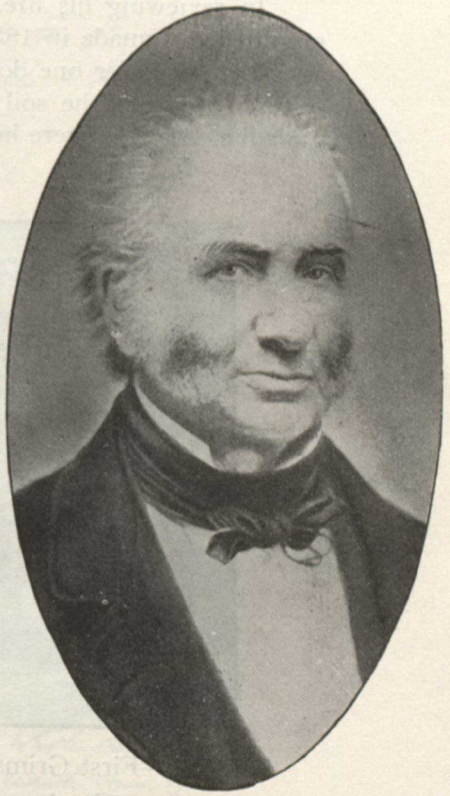
How well I remember your grandfather in my younger days, and also your grandmother. She was a good musician and I remember her exceedingly small hands which appear so prominent in the distorted photograph. What pleasant little evenings we had at her house in Grimsby, with her upright grand piano. The piano was given to her by her father as she was the most musical of his daughters. She gave it to her brother Alfred.

---

## WHAT MY FATHER SAID ABOUT MY GRANDFATHER.

After practising in Great Marlow for six years, Henry Riggs Goodman married his first wife. She was a daughter of a gentleman in the civil service of England. After two children were born, she died and he moved to Islington (No doubt to be near his Aunt Utrecia). Here he met Arabella Holloway, and married her. Moving to Canada, his second wife's mother, Mrs. John Holloway, accompanying them.

My Grandmother.
Arabella (Holloway) Goodman, daughter of John Holloway, of the Bank, and Louisa (Baumstadt) Holloway.
Sister of Captain Thomas Holloway and Founder of the Canadian Family
A pious, amiable English Gentlewoman.



My Grandfather.
Henry Riggs Goodman, son of Thomas Goodman and Martha (Riggs) Goodman.
"His life was gentle, and the elements so mixed in him that nature might stand up and say to all the world—'This was a man'."

Judith, the daughter by his first wife, died as the result of an accident, for, while walking along the top of a stone fence (originally surrounding "our" house) she fell and so injured her brain that she died from the result. The son by the first marriage, Henry, who died of heart disease at Salt Lake City, was a well-known freemason, and was buried by that order at Virginia City, Nevada, where his tomb may be seen. Henry Jr. was six years old when Henry Goodman, Sr. married again. All left Grimsby in 1846, and moved to St. Catharines, that we boys might have the advantage of better schooling.

Here Henry Goodman Sr. practiced medicine, until I graduated in 1854. Some years after he and his wife went to live at Parkhill with his son, Lieut. Col. Kenneth Goodman.

---

## LAND AT A DOLLAR AN ACRE

In reviewing his life, it might be said that Henry Goodman, when he migrated to Canada in 1833, was offered land in the heart of Hamilton City as it is to-day, for one dollar an acre. He thought, however, that for agricultural purposes the soil at Grimsby was better. So Grimsby became his Canadian home. There he settled in temporary quarters.

1833—First Grimsby home of my Grandfather, Henry Riggs Goodman. My Father's birthplace—1833.

He soon moved into a permanent residence, more suitable for the practice of his profession, having offices and residence combined. Three children were born here, (1) Edwin; (2) Ambrose; (3) Kenneth.

From Wm Rodman

Kent 25th Dec. 1835

My dearest Belle

You will I am quite sure begin to be very anxious to hear from me, restless & unworthy as I am and I should have written ere this to you, had I not expected to have brought my poor Mothers affairs to a satisfactory arrangement – in that however I have been disappointed up to this time; but as I am led to expect a loan of Money on Mortgaging the property for £200. Currency which Sum will be needed for adjusting all the claims against her, in about a fortnight I think it would be better for me to remain as patiently as I can here, than to come back again and expend so much on travelling expences

My poor Mother is paralized in both hands and feet, She knows every one when they first approach her, but in a few moments She flies off and talks nonsense, She frequently talks of you asks how many children you have & their names She does not like the name of Ambrose as She associates the idea of the Jesuits with it, and in few minutes repeats every thing, yet I do not think

the little Bank Stock I received in payment for the colt It will be three whole days before a Letter from you will reach me, if you write directly to me very affectionately

Wm R. Rodman

Grimsby home of my Grandfather, Dr. Henry Riggs Goodman
when practicing his profession.

## FROM MY GRANDFATHER TO MY GRANDMOTHER. NOVA, 1835

My Dear Bell: The business here required my presence for some days. Am anxious to know if you have received any letter from England. James will bring up the calves and heifer, with a note from your ladyship, as I begin to long to see some indication of your existence after even so short an absence.

Do kiss all the brats for me, and remember me kindly to your mama.

---

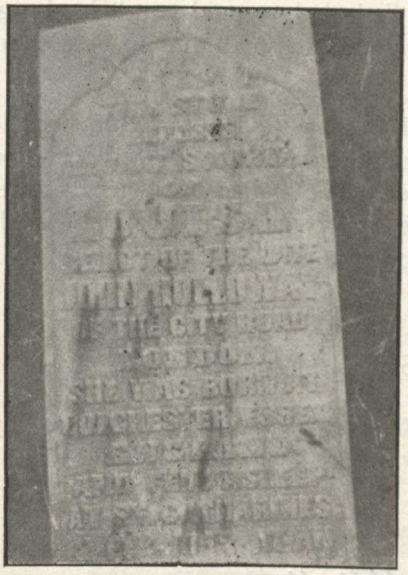
## MY GRANDFATHER, H. R. GOODMAN, TO HIS UNCLE WILLIAM RIGGS, GRIMSBY, 1846

Your letter reached me safely with a ten dollar bill enclosed (repayment of loan). I can appreciate your having taken so long a journey to see me at your time of life. It brings back the warm feelings of youth to my recollections, when the tender care of my grandmother and my affectionate aunts was over me. The rough world and its many cares have much rubbed and abraided my mind, but I shall ever regard your visit as a bright spot in my career. As my Edwin says, "I wish he could always stay with us. All the boys speak of you and laugh at "Mr. Polk." "Why, Papa," says Alfred, "Uncle William thinks you quite a boy." So flies time and changes come; thus, when you came home from sea from the frigate Amelia, I was like my little ones are. Now I am 46.

There is this consideration: The Lord changeth not, and is ever the same. There is a prospect of war between U. S. and Great Britain. May it be averted.

For if it comes it may involve the world in such a conflict as it has never yet witnessed.

Henry is anxious to get into business for himself. I shall try to start him. Mrs. Holloway and Mrs. Goodman desire to be remembered. Give my regards to Mrs. Riggs, and when writing to Mrs. Baldwin, give her my affectionate regards.



Grave of Louisa (Baumstadt) Holloway, my great great grandmother, and her grandson Alfred Goodman, in the St. Catharine's cemetery. She lies beside her grandson, Edwin Goodman; his wife, Caroline Elizabeth (Cross) Goodman; his second wife, Jessie (McCallum) Goodman; his son's (Harry Goodman) first wife, Madge (Munay) Goodman; F. Edwin Goodman's son, Arthur William Goodman; a daughter, Louisa Caroline Arabella Goodman.

---

## GRANDFATHER.

### MEDITATION.

I never saw my grandfather cross or irritable. He was invariably cheerful. We always knew where to find him—on the verandah, smoking. There he was at all times accessible. We would often struggle for the privilege of climbing on his knee. After he had gathered us all under his arms he would put his pipe away and commence: "Once upon a time—" When fairy tales had run out he would sometimes show us experiments in natural philosophy.

### COAL GAS.

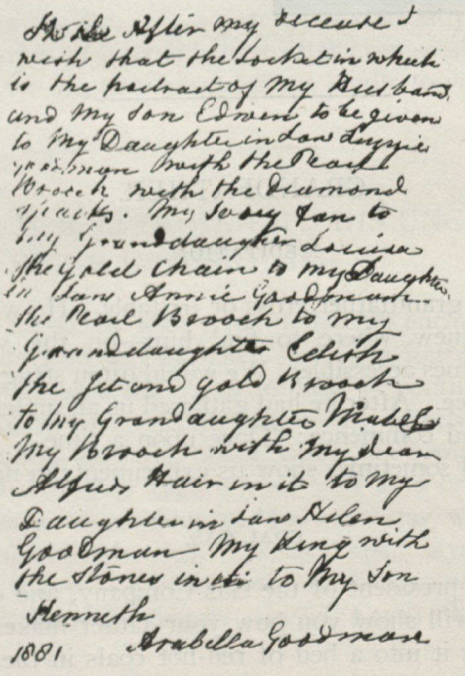
Father was vice-president of the Gas Company, and once Grandpa said: "Come, Children, I will show you how your father makes gas," and, taking a clay pipe, he thrust it into a bed of red-hot coals in the stove, and after it had remained there for a moment, he lit a match and applied it to the stem, when a thin blue flame appeared, "That," he said, "is gas."

I remember how he used to call in a gentle voice to my grandmother, "come to tea, Belle," and another voice would answer, "coming, presently," then a dainty little pink-cheeked old lady would appear in a silk dress (always "in her best" for the evening meal), and after supper, when we were settling down to our lessons, Grandfather would light a candle, the old-fashioned wax candle and snuffers (for Grandma preferred 'the light of other days'), and taking the candle from Grandpa, the little lady would say "Good-night children," and I used to think her voice sounded so small and so gentle, just like she was.

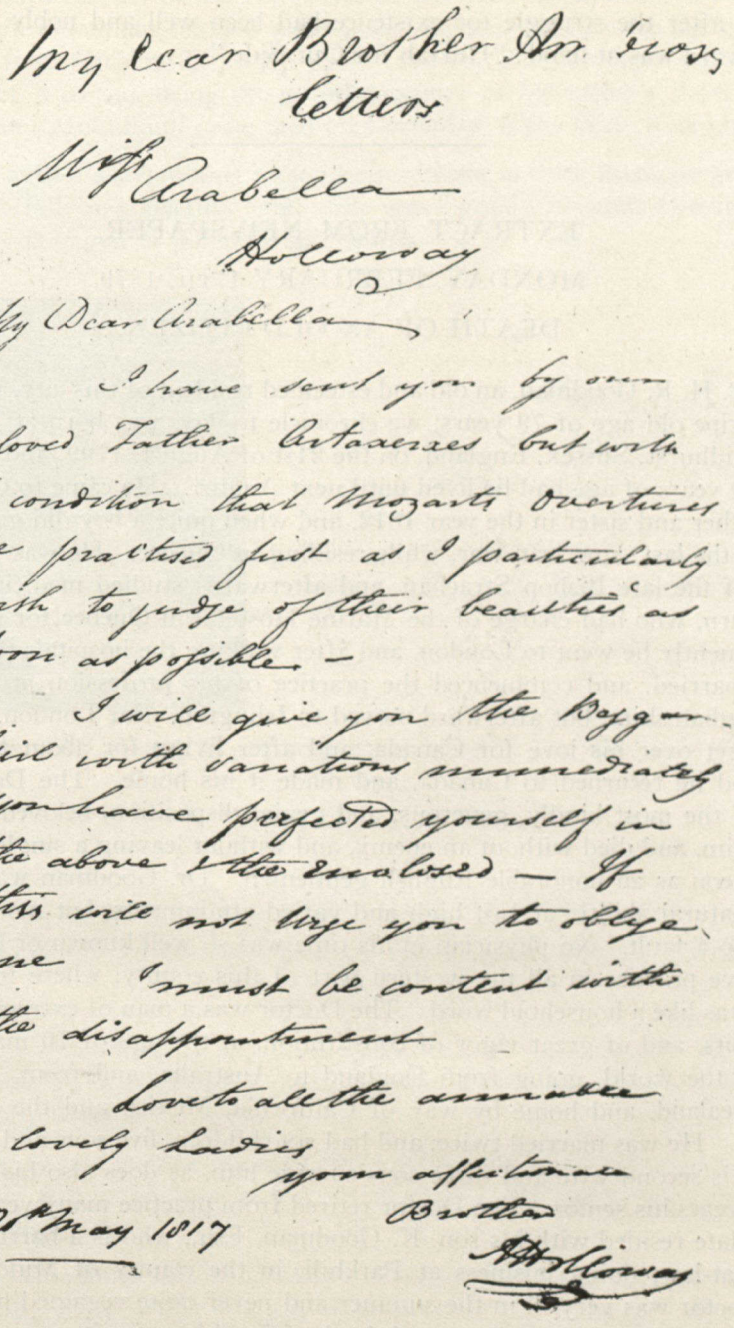
My Grandmother was a little Englander, and looked with suspicion and disfavor on anything born, bred, or made outside the United Kingdom. By her grandchildren she was simply adored. We looked upon her as a dear little girl—just grown old without growing up, so pretty and dainty was she, and this idea of ours always amused her immensely.

## FROM MY MOTHER'S SCRAP BOOK.

Died, on Saturday, August 1st, 1885, aged 87 years and nine days, Arabella Goodman, relict of the late Henry Riggs Goodman.



Codicil to my Grandmother's will.



My dear Brother Mr. Gross,
letters
Miss Arabella
Holloway
My Dear Arabella
I have sent you by our
beloved Father Artaxerxes but with
a condition that Mozarts Overtures
are practised first as I particularly
wish to judge of their beauties as
soon as possible —
I will give you the Beggar
Girl with variations immediately
you have perfected yourself in
the above & the enclosed — If
this cannot urge you to oblige
me I must be content with
the disappointment
Love to all the annalia
& lovely Ladies
your affectionate
Brother
25th May 1817
W. Holloway

---

## "HURRAH FOR OUR SIDE."

"These were the last words of your Grandfather," wrote my Uncle Kenneth, who was at his bedside, when he quit this life.

This strange utterance made a deep impression on my mind. It was so like him. It was such an expression which might have been expected from him, when that peace which passeth all understanding lit up the last moments

of his life. Would that we could say when it comes our turn, say with conviction after the struggle for existence had been well and nobly waged, and our reward was at hand: "Hurrah for Our Side."

---

EXTRACT FROM NEWSPAPER.

MONDAY, FEBRUARY 17TH, 1879.

DEATH OF AN OLD CITIZEN.

Dr. H. R. Goodman, an old and esteemed resident of this city, whose death at the ripe old age of 79 years, we chronicle to-day, was born at Eastbourne, near Midhurst, Sussex, England, on the 21st of August, 1799, and would have been 80 years of age had he lived until next August. He came to Canada with his mother and sister in the year 1812, and when quite a boy did garrison duty during the last American war, while residing in Quebec. He was for a time a pupil of the late Bishop Strachan, and afterwards studied medicine with Dr. Cockburn, who had charge of the Marine Hospital in Quebec for many years. Subsequently he went to London, and after walking the hospitals there, graduated, married, and commenced the practice of his profession at Marlow, in Buckinghamshire, but afterward moved to Islington, near London. He never could get over his love for Canada, and after living for about ten years in England he returned to Canada, and made it his home. The Doctor was a man of the most kindly, generous, and genial disposition, beloved by all who knew him, and died without an enemy, and without leaving a single blot on his escutcheon as an honorable English gentleman. Dr. Goodman was a man of great natural ability, and of high and varied attainments, but modest and retiring to a fault. No physician in his time was so well known or had such an extensive practise in all the western part of this county, where for years his name was like a household word. The Doctor was a man of extremely temperate habits, and of great vigor of constitution, at the age of 70 making a trip around the world, going from England to Australia, and from Australia to New Zealand, and home by way of California, Mexico and the West India Islands. He was married twice, and had six children, five sons and one adughter. His second wife and three sons survive him, as does also his sister, who is two years his senior. The Doctor retired from practice many years ago, and has of late resided with his son, K. Goodman, Esq., who is a barrister and attorney-at-law, doing business at Parkhill, in the county of Middlesex, Ont. The Doctor was very ill in the summer and never quite regained his strength, but grew weaker and weaker, until death claimed him for its own at 2 o'clock p.m., on the 15th of February, 1879. *Requiescat in pace.*

---

FOURTH GENERATION

GOODMAN—CROSS—McCALLUM.

And so, it is said, that to enable the boys to get a better education, Dr. Henry Goodman moved to St. Catharines; and we are told by Mercy Cobbald

that the boys carried off all the prizes at the "Grantham Academy." And Dr. Edwin Goodman became a medical practitioner, like his father, and he married, first, Caroline Elizabeth Cross (see Cross Memoirs); secondly, Jessie McCallum, a cousin, being the grand danghter of his father's sister, Arabella (Goodman) McCallum. She died on December 12th, 1910, without issue.

The author's stepmother took a keen interest in these memoirs and assisted very materially in collecting data. She was a good Christian woman, and was constantly engaged in philanthropic works.

Sincerely
Jessie G. Goodman

Most Sincerely Your Relative
Elizabeth A. Riggs.

Jessie (McCallum) Goodman, second wife of Dr. Edwin Goodman.

---

EXTRACT FROM NEWSPAPER:

DEATH OF MRS. GOODMAN SHOCKED MANY FRIENDS.

September 10, 1912.

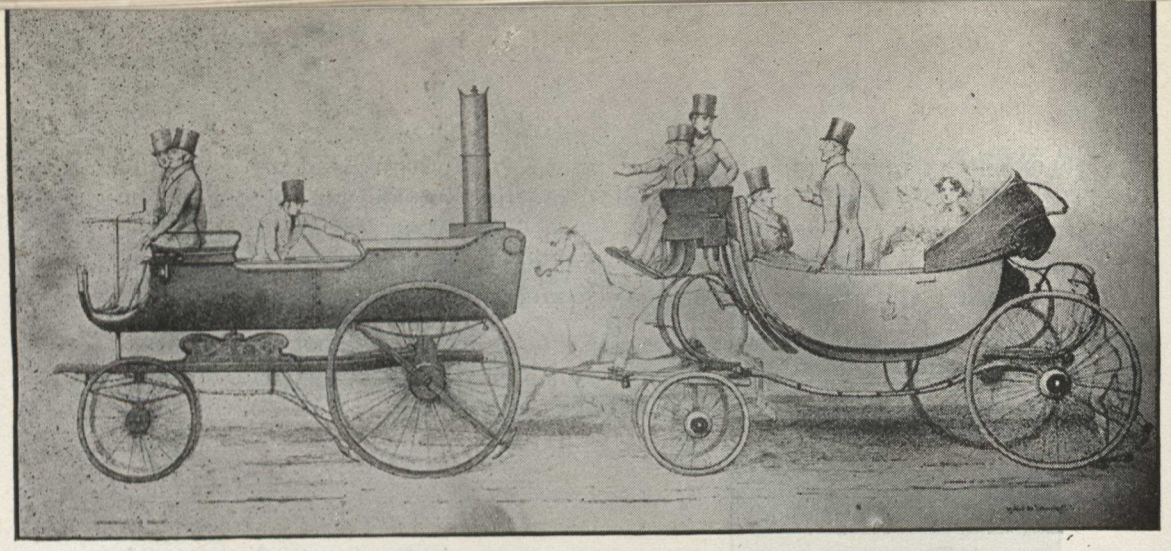
The sudden death of Mrs. Goodman, widow of the late Dr. E. Goodman, at her home on Ontario street, on Wednesday afternoon, came as a great shock to her many friends.

Mrs. Goodman had not been in good health for some months past, but her death was most unexpected, as she had only been seriously ill since Monday night.

Mrs. Goodman was, before her marriage, Miss Jesse Georgina McCallum, of Toronto, niece of the late Dr. Barrett of Upper Canada College, and became the second wife of Dr. Goodman in the year 1891.

Mrs. Goodman was a member and regular attendant of St. Thomas' church, one of the workers in the Women's Auxiliary, for some years a faithful teacher in the Sunday school and a most enthusiastic Daughter of the Empire, of which order she became Regent at the last elections.

She is survived by two sisters—Miss McCallum and Mrs. Herbert Hamilton; one brother—Captain F. H. McCallum, all of New Hamburg, Ont.; by two nephews—Owen and Gerald Hamilton, and by two nieces—Mrs. R. C. Murton, of Toronto, and Mrs. Alban Butler, of this city.

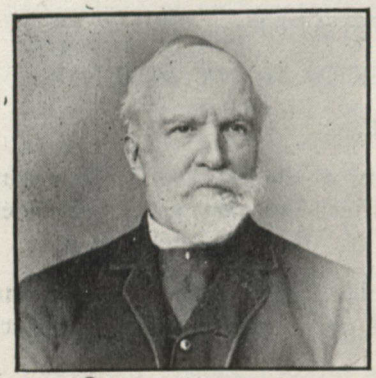


Treirthie invented the road transit engine in 1800, in England. The first satisfactory road engine to run over rails was operated in England in 1829 (The Encyclopædia Britannica says by Geo. Stephenson, between Stockton and Darlington). Our family history states that Mrs. Ballachy's (Gurney) uncle successfully operated the first railroad.

The late Mrs. Ballachey wrote: This illustration shows the Gurney steam carriage on its return from Bath (Aug. 12, 1829). It was met at the Hounslow Barracks by the barouche of the Duke of Wellington, which was then attached in place of the trailer. The whole distance of 84 miles had been travelled in 9 hours, including stoppages, while the normal speed was 14 miles per hour.

See page 344

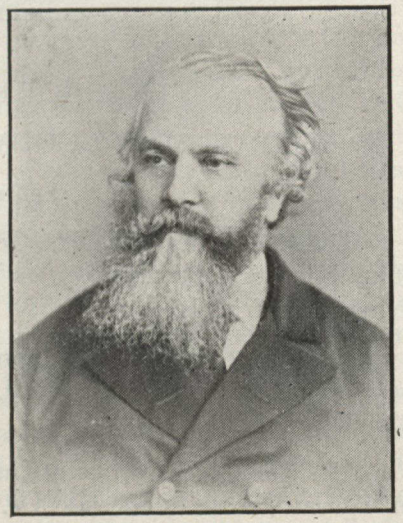
---



Late John Slann.

Husband of late Eleanor (Holloway) Slann. See signature.

See page 334



Late Thomas Slann
Husband of late Julia E. (Holloway) Slann. See signature.

See page 334

---

## ERRATA AND ADDENDUM—SLANN.

Page 322, paragraph 2, line 3. Hugh Smith, who owned the "Russell" of Ann Holloway, was a banker of London. He is now dead.

Page 327, paragraph 3, line 3. Third child Elizabeth Julia Slann Christine (not Christian).

Page 332, paragraph 2, line 1. Grave of Captain Thomas Holloway is in Kensal Green (not Stenval). His wife is buried at Attleburgh, Norfolk.

THE OLD HOMESTEAD, ST. CATHARINES, ONT.

Where my grandfather lived when he moved from Grimsby; where my father lived; where his children were born, and now in possession of my brother, Henry Calvin Goodman, eldest son, as it should be. The house is a hundred years old. There was half an acre of ground behind the old home when I was a boy, where, under the warm summer skies, we grew all kinds of fruit in quantities, from melons and grapes to winter apples and pears.

---

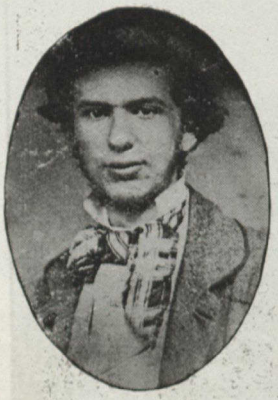
## GOODMAN-CROSS

Edwin Goodman, was the eldest son of Henry Riggs Goodman and Arabella (Holloway) Goodman.

He married Caroline Elizabeth Cross, daughter of Calvin B. Cross, of Windsor, Vt., U. S. A.

## "THE PATER"

Affectionately so called by his children.



A rare old daguerrotype on copper, of my father at 19. (Contributed by the late Mrs. Ballachey.)

My Father, aged 24.

## MEMORIES

When a young man it was decided that the author's father should be educated for a doctor of medicine, that he in turn might take over the practice of his father, Dr. Henry Riggs Goodman.

Edwin Goodman was of a very studious turn of mind, and while preparing for examinations frequently sat up all night propped with pillows, that he might carry off the honors in his classes. In this he succeeded, but at the sacrifice of his health. "Dr. Henry Goodman's children carried everything before them at the Grantham Academy," vide Mercy Cobbald's letter. His sedentary mode of life, in his student days, lent a droop to his shoulders, and a thoughtful look to his face, and as he never ceased the habit of delving deep into philosophical questions, he carried these marks of tense thought, and mental strain, throughout his life.

It was thus he overworked the mind at the expense of a none too vigorous body; it was thus he sewed the seeds of chronic or nervous dyspepsia, which, no doubt, hastened his death, the cause of which was given as "acute gastritis."

### PHYSICIAN, ARTIST, POET AND ORATOR

He was a man of most remarkable attainments, excelling in whatever he turned his attention to. He was a physician of great skill, an artist of merit, a poet of ability, and an orator easily excelling all others upon the political hustings of the County. He was a writer of reputation, and so well known became his articles in the public press, in medical journals, and in widely published magazines, that he justly earned the title of "The Learned Doctor," a title he carried with him to his grave.

HIS CASHED SEGARS—A SCHOOLBOY LETTER OF 1848—FULL OF FUN AT FOURTEEN.

My father quoted Latin before I knew him, and was quoting Latin all the length of his days, and thus he commenced his school-boy letter:

*Mater, Veni Huc Celeriter?*

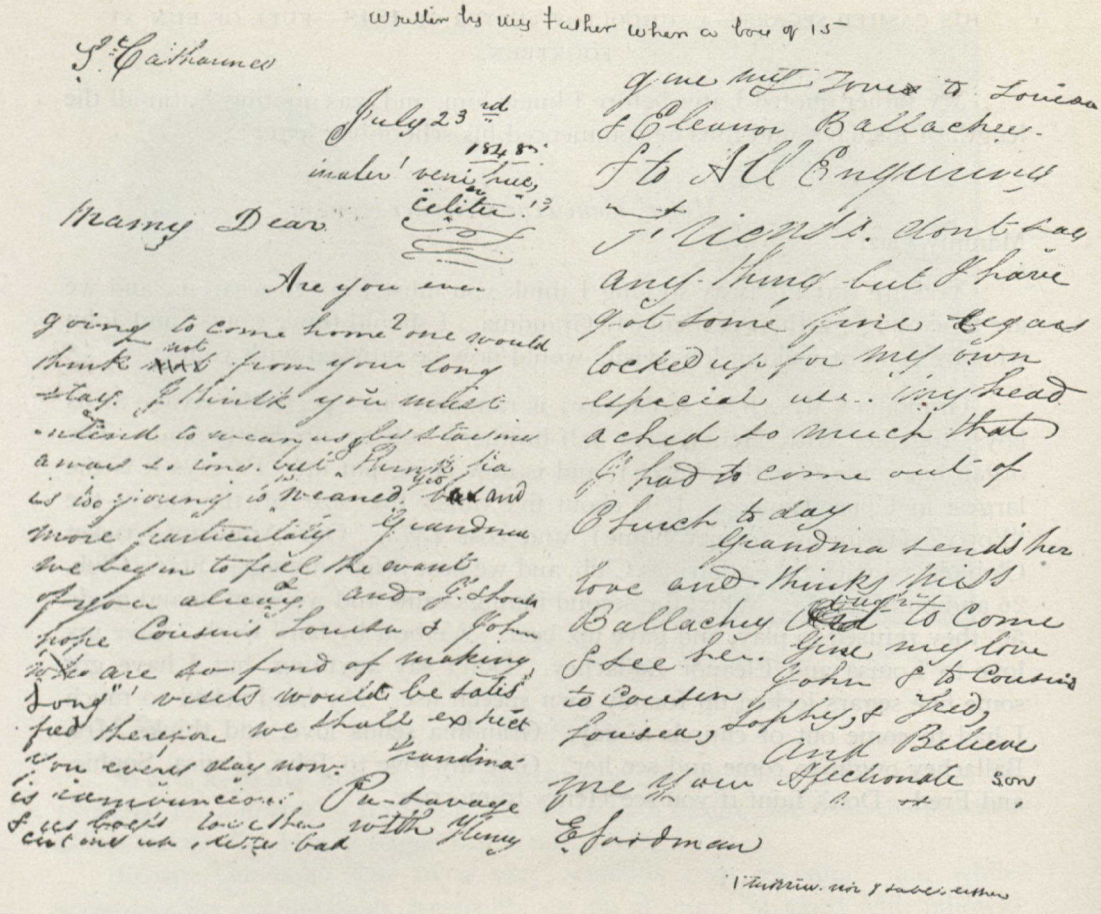
Mammy Dear:—

You are staying away so long I think you must want to wean us, and we are too young for that, particularly Grandma. I should think Louisa and John who are fond of making long visits would now be satisfied with yours.

Grandma (Mrs. John Holloway) is rampuncious—perfectly savage at us boys, together with Henry (his half-brother) cutting up pretty bad. The organ has come (for the church), and is now being put up. Pa says it is the largest in Upper Canada. It is about five times the size of the one at the "Forty" (Grimsby, former home), and cost £375. Our Academy Cricket Club played with St. Catharines Club, and we beat it first innings—St. C. Club, 26 and our Club 38. When the second innings came and we went in and made 56, they refused to play, and gave up, beat. We beat by hard work. Give my love to Louisa and Eleanor Ballachey. Don't say anything, but I have got some fine segars locked up for my own special use. My head ached so much I had to come out of church to-day. Grandma sends love, and thinks Mrs. Ballachey ought to come and see her. Give my love to John, Louisa, Sophie, and Fred. Don't faint if you see Henry to-morrow.

Your Gt. Grandmother
Wardman, emigrated to Canada in the early years of the 19th Century, and established a ladies School in Quebec, which was very successful. She brought the first piano from England that ever came to Canada. She had letters to the Bishop "Mountain" of Quebec, and to the British Governor of that date, whose name I cannot recall (over)

Good bye again, and
God bless you! The Old Pater
E. Wardman



Written by my father when a boy of 15—

St. Catharines

July 23rd 1845

Mamy Dear

Are you ever going to come home? one would think not from your long stay. I think you might send to me and us by Stacie away so long. but Pumpkin is so young is weaned and more particularly Grandma we begin to fill the want of you already, and I think hope Cousin Louisa & John who are so fond of making long visits would be satisfied therefore we shall expect you every day now. Grandma is pronounced Pumpkin & we both love them with many a kiss and a little bad

give my love to Louisa & Eleanor Ballachey. to All Enquiring Friends. dont say any thing but I have got some fine eggs locked up for my own special use. my head ached so much that I had to come out of Church to day

Grandma sends her love and thinks Miss Ballachey ought to come & see her. Give my love to Cousin John & to Cousins Louisa, Sophy & Fred, And Believe me Your Affectionate Son

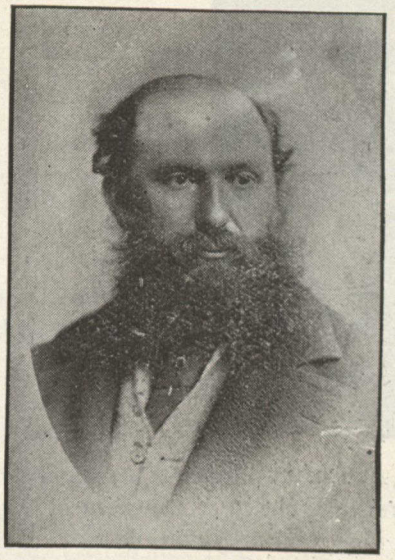
E. Jarman

1 Pattern. nir 7 tabes. cotton

ACTIVE PUBLIC LIFE.

My father filled nearly all civic positions in the gift of the people. He was a staunch conservative, and for many years president of the Conservative Association for the County of Lincoln. He was a close friend of Sir John A. McDonald, Senator McKenzie Bowell, anad the leaders of the party in his day and time. He was frequently asked to stand for Lincoln in the Dominion House, but steadfastly refused, owing to a diffidence peculiar to the race. He seemed always in office, however: He was coronor for Lincoln County, chairman of the Board of Health for St. Catharines (a separate body from the city council), chairman of the Library Board and kindred institutions as long as I can remember; in fact he was never out of harness in civic affairs.

As a small child the author can recollect him bringing home a great number of trophies from rifle matches, and he was always an enthusiastic patron of sport, but excelled as a rifle shot.



Mayor Goodman.

MOTHER.

"I love to look on woman when her eye beams with the radiant light of of charity;

"I love to look on woman when her face glows with religion's pure and perfect grace;

"Oh, then to her the loveliness is given which thrills the heart of man like dreams of Heaven."

TWICE MAYOR OF ST. CATHARINES.

He repeatedly refused to stand for Mayor of St. Catharines, until I took the matter into my own hands. The time for election was approaching, and he had been asked by friends to stand for the Chief Magistrateship. He stated that he would only accept the position by the unanimous consent of the electors, as he disliked the anoyance and fatigue of a political contest.

I asked him if he would be satisfied if he were petitioned by about 500 citizens. He said he thought he would, for that should assure his election without his asking for votes. (The entire vote then was not over 3,000). Without consulting him I circulated a petition up one street and down another. No one refusing, I soon had five hundred names on the list, and calling my father into the dining-room unrolled the petition.

"Here are your five hundred petitioners asking you to stand for Mayor," I said. "Do you consent?"

It was a proud day for me when my father put his hand on my shoulder and said, "I consent."

He was elected, and re-elected the following year by acclamation. Besides holding office in different public bodies, he continued to practice medicine and take a deep interest in freemasonry.

Mother, Father, my late brother Arthur and myself, taken in 1885, 31 years ago, at the time I first thought of writing our family memoirs. I, the bearded boy, was then 24 years old.

A PROMINENT FREEMASON.

In craft masonry he attained the highest possible rank locally, that of District Deputy Granad Master. He inaugurated the first Royal Arch Chapter and Knights Templar Commandry in his jurisdiction, and also organized the Masonic Compact, a benevolent society whose object was to look after the widows of departed brethren.

The Pater—In the Evening of Life.

"Oft in the stilly night, ere slumber's chains have bound me,
"Fond memory brings the light of other days around me,"
"The smiles, the tears of boyhood years;
"The words of love then spoken;
"The eyes then shown, now dimmed and gone;
"The cheerful hearts, now broken."

### MENTALLY SOUND TO THE LAST.

He still maintained his vigorous mentality when I saw him, close to the end of his earthly career.

Though trembling with old age, and the infirmities of life, his eye was as clear, and his look as keen, and his interest in the world as sustained as it ever was.

My last walk with him was on the occasion of a big Fair being held in St. Catharines Drill Hall. We were on our way to have our photographs taken: "Father and the Boys," here reproduced.

### HIS READY WIT—MADE IN ST. CATHARINES.

My brothers Arthur and Edward had arrived "home" with myself, to see the "pater" for the last time. An exhibition was being held, called "The Made in St. Catharines Fair."

We three boys aggregated in weight 630 pounds (Arthur 220, Edward 210, and myself 200). In passing the store of Josiah Holmes, an old friend, my father walked to the door and said: "I am taking these boys as an exhibit to our "Made in St. Catharines Fair. Pretty good specimens, eh?"

Last Stage of All—Father and the Boys.
Pater; Harry (insert); myself; Edward; Arthur.

## ELIZABETH *****.

A Poem, written two years before he married my Mother, Elizabeth Cross—
Found in my Mother's Scrap Book.
1855.

When the wind sighs o'er the ocean, love,
When stars gleam in the sky,
Thy soothing voice breathes softly, love,
And speaks thy loving eye;
And I feel, though far away, love,
By fate condemned to part,
That thy image, ever clinging, love,
Will twine around my heart;
'Twill guide my lonely footsteps, love,
And shed a gentle light,
Illume my saddened pathway, love,
Clad in the robes of night.
Though tossed on time's tempestuous breast,
Thy form alone I see;
My heart to others calloused, love,
Dreams, thinks alone of thee!
In nature, every object, love,
By God adorned with grace,
Transformed, assumes thy likeness, love,
And images thy face:
The high o'er arching vault above,
The moon, mild, chaste and fair,
Shed o'er my soul thy virtues, love,
And stamp these ever there.
Ah! should these lines e'er meet thee, love,
Let not displeasure swell
Within thy breast, but deign at least,
A kind, though sad, farewell.

---

Written as a Young Doctor, at the loss of one of his first patients.

## IN MEMORIAM.

*Alice Rykert, Died 1st October, Aged Seven Years.*

'Twas Sabbath,
And a Sabbath eve,
And balmy was the air;
I saw a sight which made me grieve,
And yet, the sight was fair.

Sweet Alice
In her coffin lay;
Dear Alice,
Naught but lifeless clay.

A rosebud, nearly closed, I found
Each little hand within,
And many a flower was strewn around,
With sprigs of jessamine.

Oh! fragrant flowers,
Though fair to see,
Still—not so fair, so sweet, as she.

The stricken mother, sad and pale,
Lay prostrate on her bed;
And. gazing upward, told her tale,
While many a tear she shed.
Yet—oft she cried,
Amidst her pain,
"My babe and I shall meet again."

It need hardly be said that both these poetical efforts are of exceptional merit.

---

My father was a man of great self respect. He sometimes sacrificed much to retain his dignity. He was always master in his own house, and as his children grew to manhood he demanded the respect due to him as head of the family. And it was given him. He was not ostentatious in his affections, but we knew, through the stories that would leak out through our mother, that his love for us all was deep and strong, and was simply hidden behind a dignified reserve of manner; and when real sorrow visited us he was wonderously kind and attentive, and at the sick bed as gentle as a woman.

This is what the Author remembers of his father. The sentiments he ever held in regard to him were admiration, respect and love, and the greatest of these was love.

---

(From Local Paper.)

DR. EDWIN GOODMAN CROSSES THE BAR.

One of St. Catharines Most Distinguished Citizens Succumbs to Illness of Several Months' Duration This Morning—Sketch of His Useful Career.

---

A heavy pall of gloom settled down upon the city of St. Catharines this morning, when it became known that Dr. Edwin Goodman had crossed the bar.

As a citizen, as a leading member of the medical profession in this city, as a trenchant writer on medical and other subjects, and as a municipal officer, his was an eminently useful life, and St. Catharines is to-day reaping to a degree that can hardly be estimated, benefits that have been derived from his long residence. He was a man of wide reading along various lines, and of broad culture, and this, together with his advanced ideas on municipal and political questions, especially such as affected the public health, made him a singularly useful citizen, and early in life gave him prominence in civic affairs. Few men, indeed, have rendered greater and more gratuitious service to the city than the distinguished citizen who has just passed away.

Edwin Goodman, M.B., was a native of Grimsby, where he was born seventy-five years ago, and a son of the late Dr. Goodman, who for many years prior to his death, resided in St. Catharines. Coming to St. Catharines in his boyhood, the deceased received his education in the public schools of the city, and in old Grantham Academy, later graduating in medicine with highest honors.

After his graduation he located at St. Catharines, where he spent his entire professional career, and by his skill as a medical practitioner, succeeding in building up a very large and lucrative practice. Early in life he began to take a deep interest in municipal matters, and in 1877 he was elected to the City Council as one of the Aldermanic representatives of St. Thomas' Ward. From that day until his death he was identified in one capacity or another with civic affairs, having occupied almost every position in the gift of the people.

The deceased served as Mayor during the years 1891 and 1892, having defeated Dr. Elliott after a keen contest for the position. His services as chairman of the Board of Health since 1896, and as a member of the Collegiate Institute Board, and in other civic offices, are so well known that they require no comment at this time. In every capacity in which he served the people Dr. Goodman was noted for the fearlessness, thoroughness and unselfishness with which he safeguarded and advanced the city's interests.

The fact that St. Catharines has been exempt from epidemics has been largely due to his efforts. He has always seemed to labor for the welfare of the city without fee and without reward. He served as coroner for many years, and his verdicts were always among the most satisfactory given.

Dr. Goodman always took an active and prominent interest in the Masonic Order. He was initiated about forty-five years ago as a charter member of Maple Leaf Lodge, No. 103, and held successfully the positions of Worshipful Master, First Principal of Mount Moriah Chapter No. 19, and Eminent Commander of Plantagenet Preceptory, afterwards being electetd Grand District Superintendent of the R. A. Chapters in the Niagara District. In 1878 he was unanimously chosen D. D. G. M. of the Blue Lodges of the district. His services to Plantaganet Preceptory were invaluable, and that magnificent body of Masons who turn out to-day may almost thank Dr. Goodman for their existence as a Preceptory.

He was also a member of Union Lodge, No. 16, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and for many years was medical officer of the lodge, a position he resigned about a year ago. To his efforts the existence and present standing of the Masonic Funeral Aid Association is largely due.

As a patron of athletic sports Dr. Goodman was well known, and his skill both on the ice at the old Scottish game of curling, and on the bowling green in the more modern sport called forth expressions of admiration from those who witnessed it.

Dr. Goodman was always a strong Conservative, and served as President of the City Association for some years, and afterwards for three years as Vice President of the County Association. He was invited more than once to contest the county for legislative honors, but always refused, stating that his profession and his patients could not be neglected.

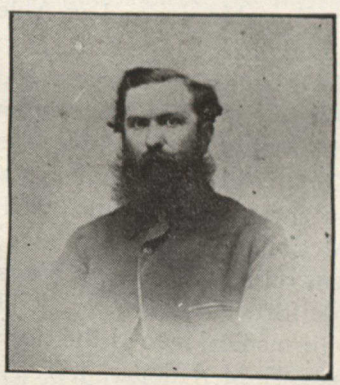
The Doctor was twice married, and leaves four sons, Harry, Alfred E., Edward and Arthur, and one daughter, Louisa, by his first wife.

His second wife still survives him, and has been unceasingly kind and unselfish in her devotion to him during his long and tedious illness.

The deceased was a staunch Episcopalian, and in his younger days took an active interest in the affairs of that church.

At the organization meeting of the St. Catharines Old Boys' Association, a short time ago, he was elected one of the Honorary Presidents.

In many ways his demise will be mourned by the citizens, but the record of his useful life will for many years serve as an incentive to noble deede to the youth of the city.



My Father.
Edwin Goodman, M.B. at the time of his marriage to my mother, Caroline Elizabeth Cross.

---

## BORNE TO REST BY SORROWING FRIENDS.

Remains of Dr. Goodman Interred in Victoria Lawn Cemetery, Yesterday, and Escorted to Their Last Home by Hundreds of Citizens Who Had Known and Loved Him Well.

The final scene in the earthly career of the late Dr. Goodman took place yesterday afternoon, when, after a long and useful life—three-quarters of a century—the greater portion of which was devoted to the welfare of his fellow men, his remains were tenderly and lovingly laid to rest in Victoria Lawn Cemetery by those with whom he had been so long associated in the different affairs of daily life.

Not for a long time has such a large and representative funeral procession wended its slow way along the streets of St. Catharines. All classes of citizens, all creeds, were represented, all testifying by their presence, as well as by their spoken regrets, to the high place the deceased had occupied in their respect and esteem.

Banked in beautiful wreaths and sprays of flowers, mute tributes of affection, the casket lay, which held the remains of him who had played such an important part in the citys life, and friends of years standing took a last farewell ere the features were finally closed from view. A short service was conducted in the home by Rev. N. I. Perry, Rector of St. Thomas' Church, previous to the formation of the funeral procession.

Attended by a guard of honor composed of members of the Masonic fraternity, the remains were borne to the hearse and the cortege moved towards St. Thomas' Church.

The Niagara District Veterans' Association led the funeral procession. Following them were the members of the St. Catharines Bowling Club; Mayor Campbell and the City Council; exMayors and ex-Aldermen; Board of Health; City Officials; Maple Leaf Lodge No. 103, F. A. & A. M.; Mount Moriah Chapter, No. 19, R. A. M.! Plantagenet Preceptory, No. 8, followed by the hearse. The mourners—Messrs. Harry C. Goodman (son), city; Edwin C. Goodman (son), New York; Arthur W. Goodman (son), Perth; Col. Kenneth Goodman, K.C. (brother), Parkhill, Ont.; Henry M. Goodman (nephew), city; Ambrose K. Goodman (nephew), Toronto; G. Hamilton (nephew), Toronto, and Captain F. H. McCallum (brother-in-law), New Hamburg, followed in carriages. After them rode Messrs. C. I. Benson, W. A. Mittleberger, John Cawker, Dr. J. H. Comfort, H. J. Taylori, J. H. Ingersoll, K.C., and S. W. Secord. Representing the medical men of the city were Drs. W. H. Merritt, F. S. Greenwood, J. Sheahan, E. M. Hooper, J. T. Armour, J. G. Sutherland, J. M. Jory, A. G. Ludwig, W. J. Macdonald and J. A. Mahon. Representing the Security Loan Company were Messrs. E. F. Dwyer, J. J. Timmons, M. Y. Keating and A. W. Moore. The St. Catharines Gas Company wes represented by Messrs. H. J. Taylor, J. H. Ingersoll, K.C., and Dr. W. H. Merritt.

The bearers were Bro. F. A. Southcott and W. Bro. A. R. Thompson, Maple Leaf Lodge No. 103, A.F.& A.M.; Rt. E. Sir Kt. George Burch, and Rt. E. Sir Kt. Levi Yale, Plantaganet Preceptory No. 8; V. E. Comp, Dr. F. Killmer, V. E. Comp, H. J. Johnston, Mount Moriah Chapter No. 19.

The service in the church, conducted by Rev. N. I. Perry, was attended by a congregation that filled the church to overflowing. The remains, escorted

by the Masonic guard of honor, were met at the church door by the Rector, who repeated the opening words of the beautiful and ever-impressive Anglican burial service:—"I am the resurrection and the life," etc. Hymn No. 140, "Jesu, Lover of My Soul," was sung by the choir, the congregation joining. The Rector then read the 90th Psalm, followed by the reading of I Corinthians, 15th chapter. The hymn, "One Sweetly Solemn Thought," was then sung.

Rev. N. I. Perry addressed the congregation briefly, describing the boyhood, youth and young manhood of the deceased, who, he said, had followed the profession of his father, in the very house in which he died. So far as his health allowed, the deceased devoted his life and his talents to the welfare of his fellowmen. He was a wide reader on many subjects, and his endeavor was always to keep abreast of the times. He had several opportunities to represent the constituency in Parliament, but he declined, because of his devotion to his chosen profession, which is one of the most difficult and most honorable professions in the world. We are inclined to slight it, but there is little money in it for those who adopt it. Good deeds are done in the profession that are beyond the price of money. "When I came here I heard many members of the older families speak of him who is gone, speak of his care and kindliness in sickness, by day and by night. When we look back over his life and recall what he has accomplished and the place he has won, we must acknowledge that he must have been a scholar and a gentleman, an expert in his own line, and I cannot help but believe a man of God. He who comes in contact with sickness, who touches with gentle fingers this body so wonderfully made, must be a man of God. Men must be judged by the work they do. Some of the older members of the medical profession in this city have gone before, but their names are still household words.

"We are here to-day to do honor to one who played a noble part in the life of our city. From the standpoint of business, from the municipal standpoint, from the professional standpoint, he played it well. It is only right that we should say a few words—not in the way of praise, but in the way of encouragement, perhaps in the way of exhortation.

"Some of you who are present to-day answered the drumbeat in 1866, in 1885, and in 1899. We should remember that ere long we will have to respond to a more Imperial drumbeat.

Our brother was a poet of no mean talent, though he never signed his writings with his own name. One of his poems, written on the coming of Christmas, I would like to read to you to-day, to show that he had a deep and abiding faith in the hope of better things to come after death's portals have been passed. This, brethren, is the poem, and the lesson it teaches shows that 'though dead he still speaketh':—

> The Juggernaught of time through countless years
> Relentless moves, regardless of the tears
> Of sorrow for the fallen by the way,
> Of all who laugh, or weep, or work, or pray.

However devious though their course may be,
Each stream that flows, flows onward to the sea;
And wealth and poverty, and good deeds and crime,
Alike will moulder in the tomb of time.
As day succeedeth day, and years roll on,
Men come and go—they are—and they are gone.
They laugh and weep, they fight, and work, and sigh,
And hate, and love, and labor, and, then—die.
If death ends all, how sombre is the view!
It matters little, what men say, or do:
Evade the law, defraud and scheme, and plan,
Plunder their neighbor, when, and how they can;
Cheat, murder, steal, and lie, and curse and swear,
Escape the gallows—then, what need they care?
But if there be another world than this?
An endless world of suffering, or of bliss?"

---

Strangely enough, the concluding lines of my father's poem have been lost, and thus the answer of my father to the eternal question is not known by the author. "But if there be another world than this?"—Momentous query, which each of us must answer for ourselves. If my father knows the answer now he cannot tell, and the great thinkers of the human race, those who have passed beyond the grave, they, too, may know it, but of what avail, they have only left to us their mental impressions and their heart's' yearning before the veil was lifted:

I can but think that good may fall
As yet far off at length to all;
And every winter change to spring,
So run my thoughts, but what am I?
An infant crying in the night,
An infant crying for the light,
And with no language, but a cry.—TENNYSON.

---

Death is the chilliness before the dawn,
We shudder but a moment, then awake
In the broad sunshine of another life.—LONGFELLOW.

---

Nature has bestowed upon man alone an erect stature,
And raised his thoughts to the contemplation of Heaven
As if it were connected with him by relationship and was
his ancient home—CICERO.

---

Life is a narrow vale between the cold and barren peaks of two continents; we strive in vain to look beyond the heights; we cry aloud but the only answer

in our wailing cry; from the voiceless lips of the unreplying dead there comes no word, but in the dark hour of death hope sees a star, and listening love can hear the rustle of a wing—ROBERT INGERSOL.

One moment in waste annihilation's space;
One moment the well of life to taste.
The stars are setting and the caravan
Starts for the dawn of Nothing.
Oh, make haste!
I came like water, and like wind, I go
Into the unknowing, and why not knowing?
And whence like water, willy nilly flowing,
And out of it as wind along the waste
I know not whither, willy nilly blowing,
What without asking, hither going whence;
What without asking, whither hurried hence.—THE HINDOO
[FATALIST.

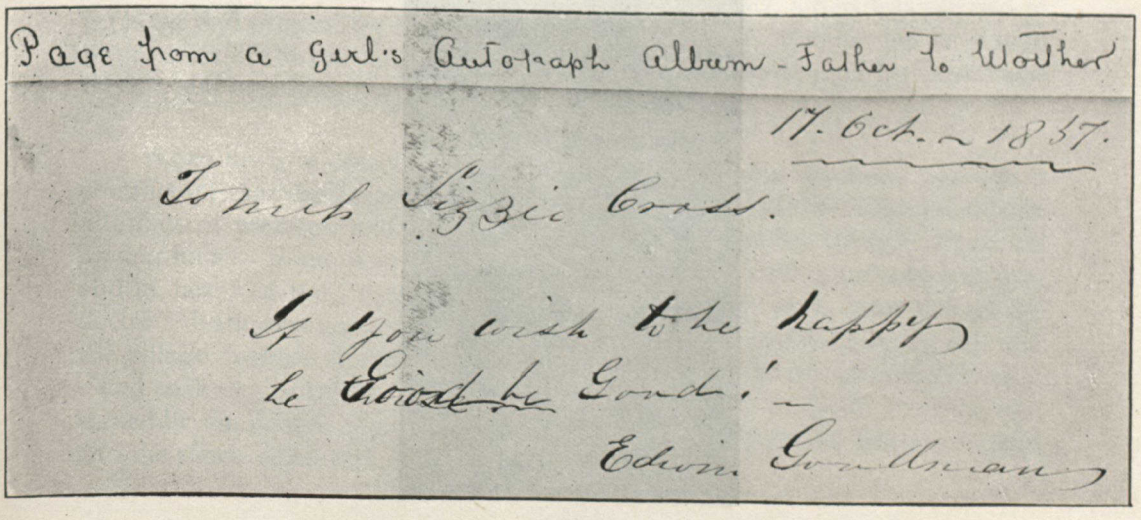
---

My father once said to me: "If you cannot understand, remember this, that the word 'God' means 'good', and in loving goodness we love God, and so we cannot go astray."

This thought was in my father's mind when, as a young lover, he wrote the message to Lizzie Cross (who became my mother)—in her autograph album.

"If you wish to be happy be good."

Whatever the poet said, or the fatalist said, my father, I believe, had the right idea. He had first written "be wise", but scored this out, and wrote instead, "be good."


Page from a Girl's Autograph Album - Father To Mother

17. Oct. — 1857.

To miss Lizzie Cross.

'If you wish to be happy
be Good — be Good.' —

Edwin Goodman

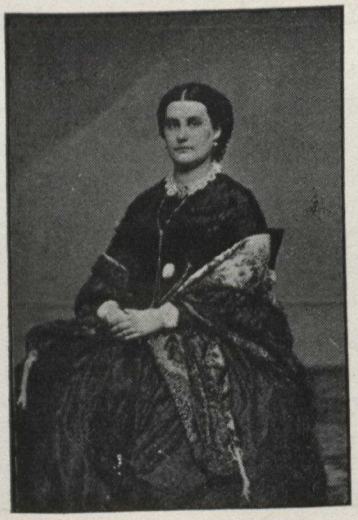
It was Kingsley who wrote:—

"Be good, my dear; let who will be clever:
Do noble things, not dream them all day long.
And so make life, death, the vast forever
One grand sweet song—

On this spot a monument has been erected to the "Pater," by his children: Harry; Alfred; Louisa; Edward and Arthur. Louisa and Arthur have solved the great enigma of existence.

---

GENERATION VIII.



My Mother. At the time of her marriage to my father in 1858.

Caroline Elizabeth Cross, daughter of Calvin Bailey Cross (Bailey, Jonathan William Jr.; William Sr.; John; Robert Sr.), married Dr. Edwin Goodman, meeting him in St. Catharines, Ontaria, while in a visit to her uncle, Dr. Luther Cross. On her marriage in 1857, my mother was 19 and my father 24; on the days of their death, my mother was 52 and my father 74.

My mother is remembered by her children as entirely devoted to their interests. Her whole life was lived for them, and her thoughts were all for their welfare, comfort and happiness.

It is, however, only after mature years, when the great cares of the world weigh heavily on the children who yet survive, that they can fully appreciate the unwearying kindness and gentleness, of their mother's love, and the inexhaustibleness of her patience and resignation, under trial and difficulty. It is now only that they have come to understand the unthinking youth, impatient of restraint, untempered by real sorrow and trouble, ill repaid the great love and devotion, which will stand as long as they live, as a monument to their mother's memory.

My mother's death was untimely, as her ancestors in most cases lived to a great old age. In this connection a good story is told of her father, C. B. Cross:

When 50 years old he fell ill and consulted the village doctor (Windsor, Vermont), who sounded his lungs, and very gravely told him that he had consumption, and had it badly. My grandfather, who was very much frightened, was advised to go to Boston, and consult a certain eminent specialist on lung diseases, and thus make sure of the village doctor's diagnosis.

My grandfather took the advice of the local practitioner, and journeyed to Boston and consulted the great physician about his lungs. The village doctor's diagnosis was confirmed, and what is more, Mr. Cross was advised to go home and prepare for his inevitable destiny in a few months; but he was to prolong his life as much as possible by putting a muffler around his throat and mouth, and breathing into the muffler.

When my grandfather got home, he found business was brisk (he was a contractor), and he forgot all about the muffler, and was working outside in all kinds of weather, and as the months went on he never thought about his having lungs. Some years after he was still working out in the cold and wet, and he heard of the Boston physician's death. A few years later the village doctor's death was announced, but my grandfather persisted in living on, and the village doctor's children grew up and died, and still my grandfather persisted in living, until 45 years had been passed since his death warrant was signed by the Boston physician. Finally, at 95 years of age he fell down stairs and the shock killed him, but his lungs were all right.

Alfred got his book—he likes it. I read it too. I hope you can sell the farm, so to have it off your mind—babe

I would like a photo. of it—finish—hope we shall see you in Canada—again soon—I am saving books for you to read (good ones) when you come. Dr Crosses corner lot looks very pretty now it has been cleared. I was past there today—Edwin is well—in fact we are all well—the baby has a cold—the changes are so great. he slips out doors in the rain sometimes.

Your aff daughter
C. E. Goodman.

GOODMAN-CROSS

EXTRACTS FROM MY MOTHER'S BIBLE

In My Mother"s Own Handwriting.

Death of Caroline (Cummings) Cross

"My Mother died at seven o'clock, June 19th, 1887, aged 84—Dearly beloved."

"Caroline Elizabeth Cross was born January 4th, 1836, at Windsor, Vermont; married Edwin Goodman, of St. Catharines, Canada, West Post-office, on October 20th, 1857.

"Issue Five Children

"Henry Calvin; born August 3rd, 1858 (Lives in the old home at St. Catharines.

"Alfred Edwin, born November 2nd, 1860 (Vancouver, B. C.).

The late Louisa Caroline Arabella Goodman, daughter of Edwin and Elizabeth Goodman, taken as a child. She was beautiful and talented. The only photograph the author has been able to secure. She grew to be a handsome woman, and in the full bloom of her young womanhood was sought after by the eligible young men of her home town, who in later life were prominent in their chosen careers; but Louisa remained unmarried to her death in spite of numerous advantageous proposals.

Sketch by Louisa Goodman when a little girl.

"Caroline Arabella Louisa, born May 2nd, 1862 (died Feby. 28, 1916, aged 53 years.).

"Edward Cross, born February 25th, 1864. (Vancouver, B. C.).

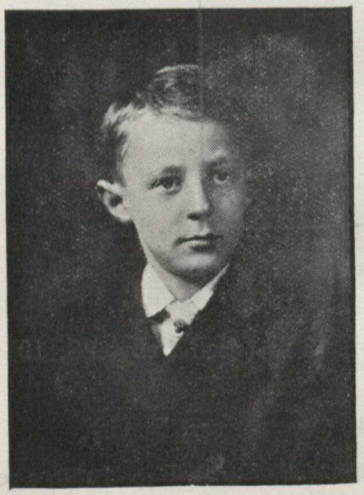
"Arthur William, born February 22nd, 1866. (died 19th Feb. 1913, aged 47 years.).

"Henry Murray, born April 20th, 1887, grandson of Edwin and Elizabeth Goodman, and son of Henry Calvin Goodman and Madge (Murray) Goodman."

Henry Murray Goodman married Julia Finlay. His father, Henry (Harry) Calvin Goodman married the second time Edith Waters, and had issue (1) Dorothy, who married Herbert Fairfield; (2) Lawrence.

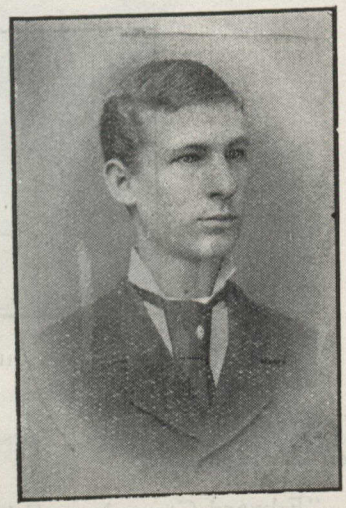
Henry Murray Goodman, aged 26.

Son of Henry Calvin Goodman, and Madge (Murray) Goodman (deceased). After securing a lucrative position as a mechanical electrician, he became laudably ambitious, and is at this writing fitting himself for the higher walks of his chosen profession.



Lawrence Holloway Goodman, aged 12.

Son of Henry Calvin Goodman and Edith (Waters) Goodman.



Henry Calvin Goodman.

Taken many years ago. No persuasion would induce my talented brother to sit for a photograph. I have not met his equal as regards versatility of talent. He might have been eminent in a dozen spheres of life, but for the reticence and self-effacement peculiar to the race.

Lawrence, son of H. C. Goodman, holding in his arms Herbert, daughter of Dorothy Fairfield, nee Goodman.

Edith (Waters) Goodman, wife of Henry Calvin Goodman.

---

## LEFT FOR VALCARTIER AFTER HIS MARRIAGE.

### Ridley College Student Left Bride of Few Hours Behind.

*Special to The Mail and Empire.*

St. Catharines, Aug. 28. (1914).—When the train bearing the 7th Field Battery left for Valcartier this afternoon it carried among the volunteers for the front a bridegroom of a few short hours in the person of Herbert Fairfield, a student of Ridley College and well known as a successful member of college track and field teams. The young artilleryman, who is a son of G. H. Fairfield, the well-known St. Catharines stationer, was married in the morning by Rev. Canon Ker. chaplain of the Regiment, to Miss Dorothy Goodman, daughter of H. C. Goodman, member of one of the oldest families of this city, from whom he parted almost immediately after the ceremony to leave for the front.

---

Let me record here that the father of the young bridegroom, Herbert (Bert) Fairfield, was the chum and constant companion of the author in the days of his ardent youth.

And so it came to pass, while the father was fighting for his country in far off Flanders, a son and heir was born to the young mother, and Herbert Holloway Fairfield is the last to be recorded of our race in these pages.

May he live long and prosper; may he never forget the maternal side of his lineage.

Dorothy Elizabeth Fairfield, nee Goodman, aged 17.
Daughter of Henry Calvin Goodman and Edith (Waters) Goodman.

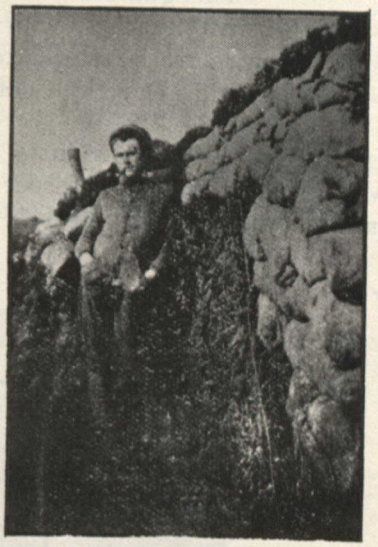
Dorothy Goodman was thus married under most romantic circumstances. For, as has been recorded, on the eve of their marriage her husband, scion of an old and respected family, was called to the front to act a soldier's and a hero's part.

Herbert, son of Dorothy Goodman.

Herbert Fairfield.
Husband of Dorothy Goodman.

These lines are not written for the present, but for all time. Then it is fitting to say, that the bride was a young lady of great beauty and charming manner, of remarkable vivacity and rare intellect for one so young. For on her marriage day she was still almost a child, while her husband was handsome and romantic, and a lover of brave deeds. At this writing he has passed through almost incredible hardships at the shell-torn battle front, and has been promoted to Lieutenant on the field. In several engagements he has had remarkably narrow escapes. He has earned the Victoria Cross more than once, but as so often happens, his heroic deeds did not come under the notice of a senior officer.: This is a strange world, where fortune does not always favor the brave. But what does it signify?—In our family Herbert Fairfield has been written a hero and fitting husband for one of the most beautiful women of our race.

Herbert Fairfield at the front.
Every inch a soldier and a hero.



Herbert Fairfield at his dug-out

This speaking photograph is remarkable for its atmosphere. It brings one, in fancy, close to the front, a few hundred yards from the trenches. A picture of a war-scarred hero.

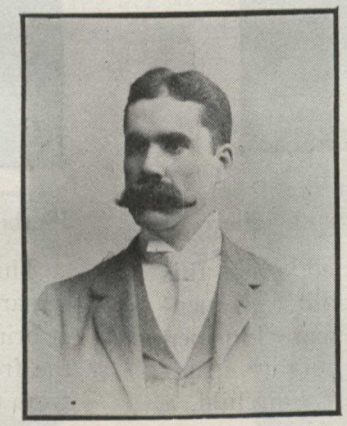
The Great War started when this volume was completed, and scant mention can now be made of many kinsmen who are engaged in the mighty struggle. As regards Herbert Fairchild, a short extract from his wife's letter to the author must suffice:

"My husband was the minimum age for enlistment. I did not keep him back, but could have done so. He will come through safely. At Langemarck his battery was in a hot corner, two guns pointing one way and two another, and they poured 4,000 rounds each into the massed Germans, point blank. They saved the guns and their Commander was decorated. Herbert had his thumb smashed (bone removed), he was shot through the collar, and his cheek grazed."

This gun crew advanced within a few hundred feet of the German trenches, with 8 other crews. They were the only crew to reach rest quarters without the loss of a man. Herbert Fairfield (Dorothy Goodman's husband) on extreme left.

Alfred Edwin Goodman, married on April 16th, 1896, Rose Ellis of Victoria, B. C., and had issue: (1) Harry, died in infancy; (2) Louisa, died in infancy; (3) Edwin Ellis, b. 1900.

## EDWARD CROSS GOODMAN.

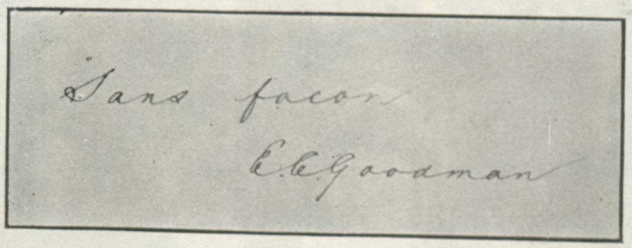


Edward Cross Goodman.

Son of Dr. Edwin Goodman and Elizabeth (Cross) Goodman.

Edward Cross Goodman, son of Dr. Edwin Goodman, received his early training in the Bank of Commerce, St. Catharines. Like the author, he left his home town to seek his fortune in wider fields of usefulness, and in course of time filled positions of great trust and importance. He lived for fifteen years in New York City, and during that time was six and a half years Chief

Assistant to an expert railway accountant, after which he was six years with the Audit Company of New York; four years as senior accountant on staff, and two years as chief accountant. He was two and a half years in business for himself as public accountant.




He also spent four years of his business career in Philadelphia, two years of which he was manager for Philadelphia branch of the New York Audit Co. His reputation was now assured, and he was in such a position that his services were sought after by some of the larger concerns of the State.

He was offered the position of Comptroller of the Barber Asphalt Paving Company, and accepted, filling the position with credit to himself and employers. This firm is capitalized for $35,000,000, and has offices in all the more important towns on the American coast.

Edward Cross Goodman's home in New Jersey.

Edward Cross Goodman married Jessie Momo, 15th July, 1894, and had issue (1) Edwin Monro (Mun); (2) Arthur Cross (Art); (3) Elsie Elizabeth (Dolly).

Jessie Monro's mother was the daughter of Rev. Dr. Strong, who came to Canada as chaplain of the British troops. He was rector of the First Episcopal Church in Baytown (afterwards Ottawa).

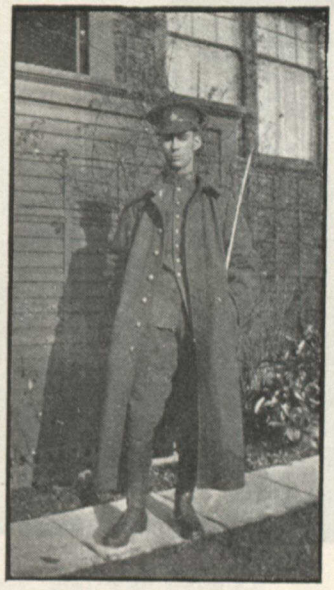
The family of Edward Cross Goodman, taken some years ago. Monro; Jessie (Monro) Goodman; Elsie, on her mother's lap; Edward Cross Goodman standing, and Arthur in front of him.

Jessie (Monro) Goodman was the daughter of Thomas Monro and Ellen (Story) Monro. He being born in 1831, and dying in 1901, and she being born in 1832, and dying in 1903. He was a civil engineer coming to Canada with his father (from his birthplace, Londonderry, North of Ireland) when he was 16. His father's name was Thomas Monro, also a civil engineer, and his mother's name was Ellen Lindsay Monro.

He, Thomas Monro, Jr., was in the employment of the Canadian Government for 50 years, being superintendent of the Welland Canal, and afterwards of the Soulanges Canal. The author remembers him well. He was a cultured gentleman of commanding appearance, and won the respect and friendship of everyone with whom he came in contact.

Monro Goodman, at the Front with Transport Car.

Cadet, aged 17.



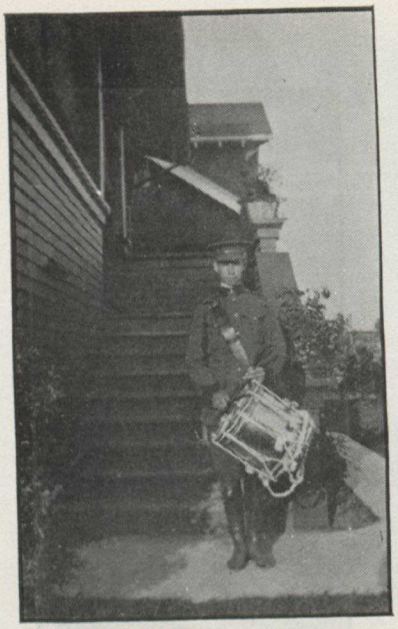
At the Front, aged 18.

Monro Goodman.

Son of Edward Cross Goodman and Jessie (Monro) Goodman.

Taken on the occasion of the famous Canadian Cadet tour through Australia. When the Australian press commented very favorably on British Columbia's big boys, who looked so much older than they were. Monro was 17 years old, and six feet three inches in height. He was attending the University of British Columbia. He will be educated when peace is declared, to follow in the footsteps of his grandfather, and his great grandfather, as a civil engineer. He is now doing his bit for King and Country in Mesopotamia.

Monro Goodman is at this writing serving his country at the front. He writes home constantly, and as he is in the transport service will be running great risks, but those who know him will be sure that he will ever do his duty to the very letter, with a firm and steadfast resolve. He will be one of the quiet kind of soldier heroes, who say little but serve well. He has a tremendous capacity for hard work, is a giant in size, and is of a lovable and kindly nature with a great host of many friends of both sexes.

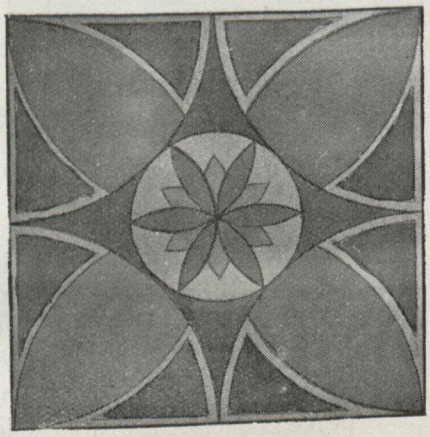


Cadet, aged 16

At the Front, aged 17.

Arthur Cross Goodman.

Son of Edward Cross Goodman and Jessie (Monro) Goodman. Arthur heredited the artistic temperament of his ancestors, as may be seen by a specimen of his mechanical drawing here reproduced, for which branch of work he took high honors at school. Arthur, at this writing, had just passed his examination into the High School very creditably. He is destined, in the years of peace to follow the profession of an architect. He is now in training for the front in Manitoba.



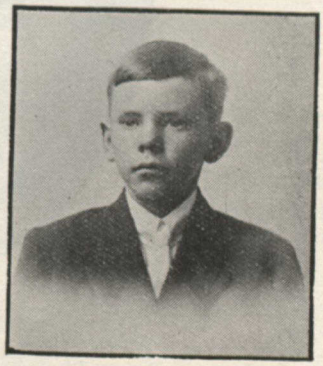
Mechanical Drawing by Arthur Cross Goodman, son of Edward Cross Goodman, at the age of 16 showing the inherited artistic temperament.

Arthur Goodman has joined the University Battalion for the front, and it is altogether likely before these pages are printed he will be in foreign service. Arthur is remarkably bright and intelligent, and is keen to do his bit. Like his brother Monro, he is a magnificent specimen of stalwart manhood, the pride of his parents, and a true Briton.

Elsie Elizabeth (Dolly) Goodman, aged 15.

Daughter of Edward Cross Goodman and Jessie (Munro) Goodman. At this writing Dolly has not only been successful in passing into the high school, but in the examination she was head of her school and all Vancouver, and was third on the list of successful candidates in all British Columbia. She is a tall, graceful, beautiful child, and promises to develop into a charming woman.

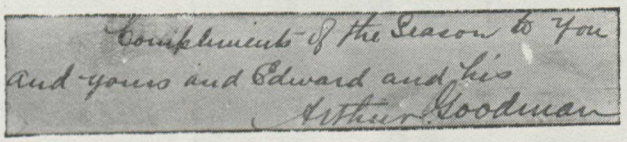
Widow and two daughters of Arthur William Goodman, Perth, Ontario. Emma (Hicks) Goodman; Eunice Elizabeth Goodman; May Ethel Goodman.



James Edward Goodman. Son of Emma (Hicks) Goodman and the late Arthur William Goodman.

The late Arthur William Goodman marreid Emily Hicks of Perth, Ont., anad had issue (1) James Edward; (2) Eunice Elizabeth; (3) May Ethel.

Louisa Caroline Arabella Goodman died unmarried.




---

## UNCLE KENNETH

## THE FOUR BOYS OF FATHER'S DAY.

The Four Boys of My Father's Day.

Left to right:—Henry Goodman, absent; Ambrose Goodman, absent; Colonel Kenneth Goodman, present; Dr. Edwin Goodman, absent.

The Author remembers his uncles. Big men they were, and of great physical strength. Indeed it seemed to his young mind, as if, when in his presence they were usually talking about their lifting capabilities, and tests of endurance.

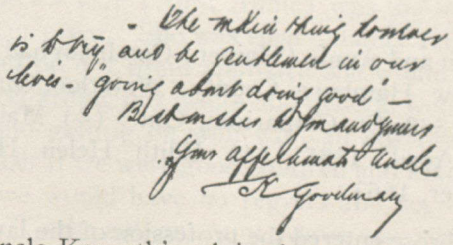
They are all gone, except Uncle Kenneth—the last of his generation. He used to chase the author on sight, and seizing him by the breast of his little jacket, lift him over his head with one arm and he repeated this same "muscular stunt" with his brothers until they got a bit too heavy for him.

Uncle Kenneth took a keen interest in the militia, for which his military bearing, good voice, and fine physique and education eminently fitted him. He rose rapidly in rank in the local volunteer regiments until he retired with the title of Lieut.-Colonel.

The author can distinctly remember when his Uncle Kenneth was studying for his final examination for the bar. He soon acquired a very large practice at New Hamburg, and afterwards at Parkhill, Ont., where he now resides,

Ambrose Goodman, Jr., LL.B. (taken many years ago).

respected, honored and esteemed. Uncle Kenneth was remarkably fond of his nephews and we were all greatly attached to him. Sometimes our early affections are apt to blind our judgment, but the author used to believe his uncles were very handsome men, and as he looks upon this old picture taken of them as he knew them long ago, he knows he was not mistaken.



Uncle Kenneth's advice in a recent letter.

## PART OF THE CITY OF ST. CATHARINES ONCE CONSISTED OF HAINER FARMS—U. E. LOYALISTS.

### GOODMAN—HAINER

Kenneth, the third son of Dr. Henry Riggs Goodman and Arabella (Holloway) Goodman, was married in St. Catharines, Ontario, in 1860, to Annie Hainer, the third daughter of Jacob Hainer, Esq., J.P., of St. Catharines, Ont., born 1803, son of Nicholas Hainer; son of John Hainer and a daughter of Jacob Von Deidrick (later Canadianized into Dittrick), who came from Wurtemburg. Germany, and settled in New York State where they had large possesisons. During the revolutionary war they and their kinsmen and retainers took up arms for the King, and their descendants cherish many tales of the bravery of these people and of their devotion to the British crown in the British army, and later with Butlar's Rangers.

The Canadian Government gave Hainers a grant of 1600 acres of land, part of which lies the present City of St. Catharines.

There is in that city at present, a street named after each of the several members of the original family.

If we feel no pride in kinsmen
We may never have the grace
To so act that we are honored
In the passing of our race.

Annie (Hainer) Goodman.
Wife of Colonel Goodman.
(Aunt Annie) shortly before
her death.

Colonel Goodman, present day.

Lieut.-Col. Goodman and Annie (Hainer) Goodman had issue: (1) Annie Maud, d. aged 11, at New Hamburg County, Waterloo, Ont.; (2) Ambrose Kenneth, b. 25th Fed, 1863, St. Catharines, Ont.; (3) Mabel Alexandra, b. New Hamburg, 18th April, 1865; (4) Edith Helen Henrietta, b. New Hamburg, 28th November, 1867.

Like his father, Ambrose entered the profession of the law, studying in his father's office and at Osgood Hall and Toronto University, at which college he iis a graduate holding the degree of LL.B. He then went to Cayuga, Ontario,

Left to right, sitting: George Wedd; Edith Williams, nee Goodman; and Esther Williams. Standing: Mrs. Geo. Wedd, nee Goodman; Ambrose, son of Colonel Goodman.

Taken many years ago.

Extreme left: Ambrose Goodman; lady in white next to him: Edith Goodman; lady in centre, back row: Mabel Goodman; next to her: (Aunt Annie) wife of Colonel Goodman; on extreme right: Colonel Goodman.

where he entered into the practice of law, his associate being Judge Coulter of St. Thomas. The firm was known as Coulter & Goodman, and he practiced in Cayuga until 1909, first as junior, then as senior member of the firm. When studying in Toronto he met Linn, second daughter of the late Marmaduke Matthews, a scion of an old English family and an artist of repute. Mr. Matthews, who had married a daughter of the famous Irish family —the Bernards—was the founder and the first president of the Royal Canadian Society of Artists, and several of his canvasses were always hung at each exhibit of paintings at Toronto. His work was of a high degree of excellence, especially his landscapes, and did not suffer by comparison with the best work of the famous English and foreign painters hung beside his own.

### FIFTH GENERATION.

Ambrose Goodman and Linn Matthews were married in Toronto, in 1893. They had issue: (1) Harold, destined to follow his father's footsteps in the law, and who, at this writing, is attending the University. Later, commissioned as Lieutenant into Canadian Militia.

Uncle Kenneth's wife (Aunt Annie) was the daughter of Jacob Hainer. She used to visit us often. She was such a dainty refined looking little woman in those days, and on our timid approach she would at once catechise us in a very gentle way regarding our health and general welfare; if we were attending Sunday school and getting on well with all our lessons; and she wanted us always to remember if we were good children and kind to our parents, and were never naughty, we would have no regrets and sorrowful thoughts when we were grown up. To the author, Aunt Annie was always a lovely woman, and the fine characters of her children speak eloquently of the goodness of her own.

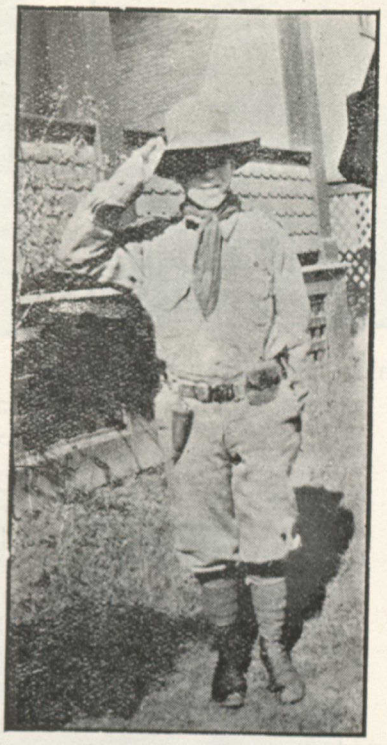
Aunt Annie.
Late Annie (Hainer) Goodman, wife of Colonel Goodman of Parkhill.

In 1909 Ambrose left Cayuga, settling in Toronto, and for some time, while carrying on the general practice of law was Estates Manager of the Union Trust Co. at Toronto. He formed the partnership of Goodman & Galbraith, now practicing law at Toronto.

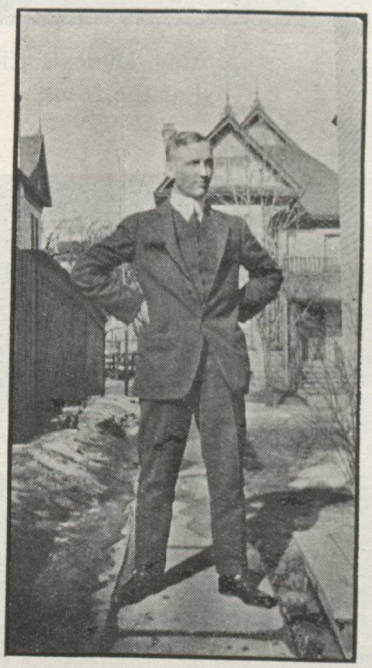
FIFTH GENERATION.

Mabel Goodman, after graduating at Miss Dupont's school at Toronto, was, on the third of October, 1888, at St. George's Church, Parkhill, married to George Maynard Wedd, then accountant in the Canadian Bank of Commerce, at Hamburg, Ont. Mr. Wedd was a son of William Wedd, for many years Classical Master of Upper Canada College and was, through his mother, related to the Maynards, one of the fine old Toronto families. He is also a nephew of the late Dr. Scadding, the author of the well-known *History of* Toronto (See his reference in this history and Mrs. Goodman's famous School). Mr. Wedd is at this writing Manager of the Bank of Commerce at Berlin, Ontario. They had issue: (1) Stanley Musgrave, b. September, 1889 (He entered the bank, and after a rapid rise, at this writing holds a position of trust and responsibility in the Inspector's Department of the Bank of Commerce. He was married in 1913, to Gretchen, dau. of Mr. and Mrs. Van Nostrand; has one year-old child); (2) George Maynard, b. 1891, clerk, Bank of Commerce; (3) Lawrence Martin, b. 1894, employed in the Canadian General Electric Co. offices; (4) Clementina Mabel, b. 1902; (5) Kenneth Goodman, b. 1904.

Colonel Kenneth Goodman.
And his granddaughter
Clementine Wedd.



Kenneth Goodman Wedd
Ten years and eight months,
1916.



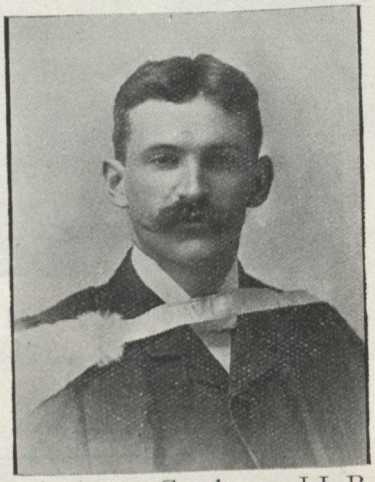
Lieut. Lawrence (Pete) son of
Mabel (Goodman) Wedd.
Commission 1915; b. 1895

George Wedd, Jr., son of Mabel
(Goodman) Wedd.

Stanley Musgrave Wedd.
Born, 1889.

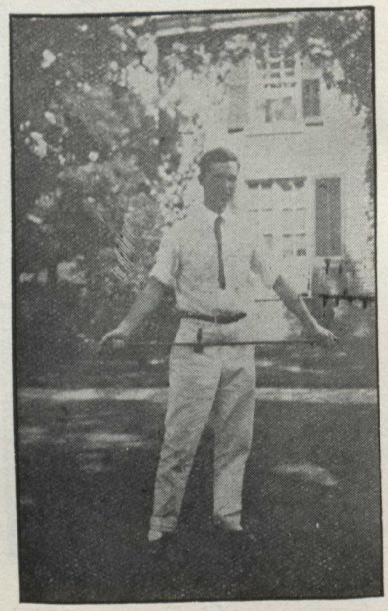
George Wedd.
Husband of Mabel (Goodman) Wedd, and their daughter Clementine.

George Maynard Wedd, Jr.
Born, 1891.

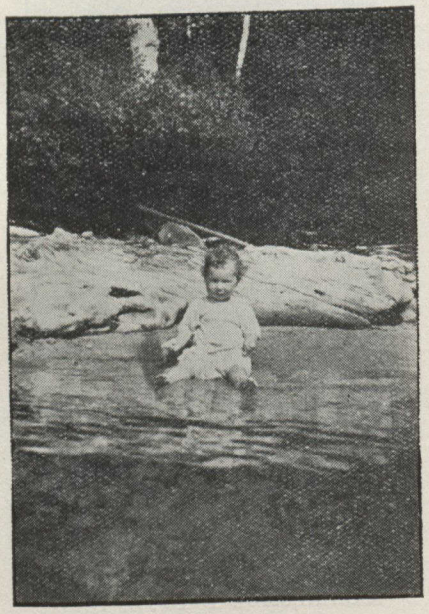


Ambrose Goodman, LL.B.
Son of Col. Kenneth Goodman.

Lieut Shirley Duncan Ellis.
Died at the front.



Harold, son of Ambrose Goodman, LL.D., Toronto. At the writing Harold has qualified for Lieutenant and awaits his commission to proceed to the front.



At this writing, last living representative of the race, born to Stanley Musgrave Wedd and Grethen Wedd.

Edith Goodman, like her sister, was sent to the school of Miss Hainer, and on the same day at the same time as her sister's wedding, she was married to Ester Williams, of Toronto, then a clerk in the educational department of the Provincial Government. They had issue (1) Ester Kenneth, b. 18th August, 1889 (educated at the Public Schools of the Province of Ontario, in May, 1911, and entered the firm of Montgomery Fleury & Montgomery, and practiced with them until ill health compelled him to go West, and in February, 1912, he was called to the bar of Manitoba, entering the firm of Ferguson Tench, Williams & Henry. Subseuently, in 1914, he formed a partnership with Major A. M. S. Ross, under the firm name of Ross & Williams). Mr. Williams has a well trained legal mind, and a strong mentality. Indeed, at this writing a publishing house is financing the publication of a law book from the pen of this gifted young author, intended for the use of lawyers in Canada. He has visited the author in Vancouver, who was greatly impressed with his mental attainments, and other sterling qualities. He married a lady who resided in Point Grey, B. C.; (2) Gretchen, b. January 20th 1891, married, October, 1914, Robert Gourlay Esq., B.Sc. of Toronto (one of the engineers on the staff of Mackenzie & Mann. They now reside in Toronto, and have one child a year old); (3) Owen Rudolph Stenson, b. 1895, (accountant, having held positions with T. E. Cameron, stock broker, Toronto, and the Grand Trunk Pacific, and now with D. E. Davis, civil engineer and railway contractor; (4) Edith Lee, b. 1897; (5) Mabel Lee, b. 1903.

The two younger children are living with their parents at Leduc, Alberta, at this writing.

Esther Williams and Edith (Goodman) Williams on their marriage.

Gretchen Williams and baby daughter of Edith (Goodman) Williams.

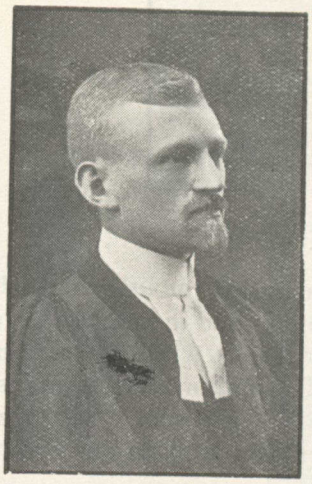
R. M. Gourley and baby, husband of Gretchen Williams.

Lynne Williams, daughter of Edith (Goodman) Williams.

Yetive Gourley, daughter of Gretchen Williams and granddaughter of Edith (Goodman) Williams.

Edith Lee Williams, daughter of Edith (Goodman) Williams.

R. S. Williams, son of Edith (Goodman) Williams.



Esther Kenneth Williams, barrister; son of Edith (Goodman) Williams.

Wife of
Esther Kenneth Williams.

Contributed by E. K. Williams.

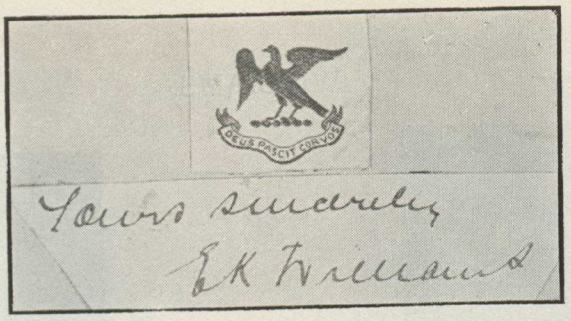
The head of the family in the middle ages was Richard Williams, who, for some reason (intermarriage, I believe) assumed the name of Cromwell. To go back still further the head of our family has a right to the title of "HWFA MON," and is hereditary Arch Druid of Wales, a title that goes back to antiquity, and to my mind the raven crest of our family was originally the vulture of Isis the Egyptian goddess. The present HWFA MON succeeded his father Raby Williams about three years ago, when he died, aged nearly 100.

The Hwfa Williams family are great personal friends of the present King.

Referring again to a later period in the middle ages, Richard Williams (Cromwell) was the grantee of Ramsay Abbey on the dissolution of the monastries by Henry VIII., by whom he was also knighted. He also received a Benedictine, captured from the Spaniards by Cromwell's captaains, Penn and Venables, in 1655. The family has resided at the plantation of Launa. in the Parish of St. Elizabets (otherwise called Government Penn). My Great Aunt Alice married the second son of Scarlett, third Baron of Abenyer—he who lead the charge of the heavy brigade at the battle of Balaclava. My great grandfather came to Canada after the transmission of the Danes. The rest of the family remained there.

Ester Williams, my father, was a son of George Williams, formerly of Spanish Town, Jamaica, and for many years a solicitor practicing at Toronto. More lately local Master of Chancery at Chatham, Ont. My grandmother, whom he married, was Georgia Lee, daughter of Captain Simon Lee, R.N., and grand daughter of the Earl of Devonshire. These Lees are cousins of the Lees of Virginia. Their crest is a bear muzzled with a broken chain, and the motto "*Bear and Forbear.*" The Virginia Lees are the younger branch. The only male survivors of the older branch are my cousins, John Lee and his son Alfred.

They are entitled to the hereditary freedom of the City of London, and to attend the Blue Coat School, and are said to be the descendants of the Lees of Ditchley, keepers or wardens of Rosamond's Tower (vide Scott's *Woodstock*).

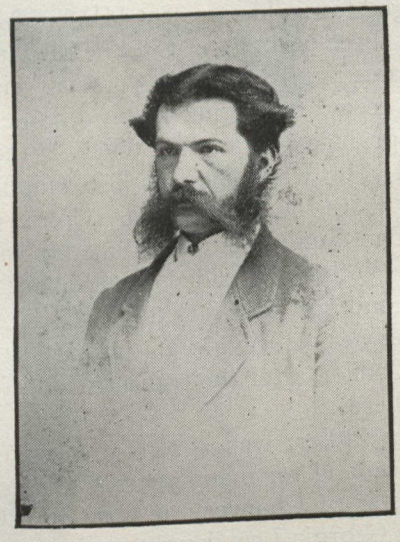



## UNCLE HENRY.

Indians and miners holding knives crosswise in their mouths, and a horse pistol in each hand; and gold, heaps of gold, in bricks and in nuggets stored in caves. This was the vision conjured up in our minds when Uncle Henry's name was mentioned—our Uncle of romance. The author remembers his distinctly, visiting his father's home, from far-off California (See Mercy's letters). He showed to us a solid brick of silver, which made our eyes open wide with wonder.

The author's brother, the late Arthur Goodman, was then about six years old, The Duke of Conaught, then Prince Arthur, was visiting St. Catharines, and all went out to see him, but the author's mother. On our return Arthur created great amusement by saying to his mother, "I saw Prince 'Me'." Uncle Henry took Arthur's jacket off and exclaimed jocularly "throw out your chest," and when Arthur complied, he said, "Take a look at Tom Sayers, Junior." (Tom Sayers being the pugilist of the hour.). Uncle Henry had a distinguished appearance and always dressed in the height of fashion.

## UNCLE AMBROSE.



Ambrose Goodman, Sr.

### WE KNEW WHERE TO GET A NICKEL.

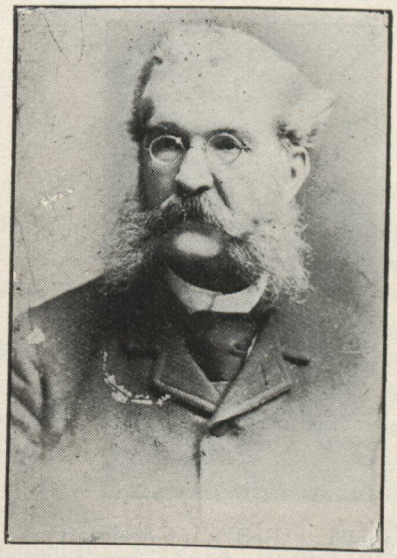
Uncle Ambrose was also a great favorite. We used to run to him on the street, and he would embrace us, no matter how public the place, and the author remembers his peculiarity of always slipping silver coins into our little hands before he dismissed us, so that when we "spotted him," we would shout, "There's Uncle Ambrose! I'm going to get a nickel."

Aunt Helen.
Late Helen (Taylor) Goodman, wife of late Ambrose Goodman, Sr.

The faithful and devoted wife of my Uncle Ambrose, Aunt Helen, was a society belle as a girl. The author can recollect that her marriage was the social event of the season. And when she visited his father's home, he can remember her as a beautiful girl, the photograph reproduced showing but a faint reflection of her charms and grace. Aunt Helen always dressed in such exquisite taste, and, taking the little woman's appearance all in all, she looked like a pretty picture, which, painted by a true artist, one would label "Portrait of a Lady."

According to her surviving children, Helen (Taylor) Goodman was perennially young, and when she passed away time had not touched her forehead with a grey hair, while her face was as free from wrinkles and care and her color was as clear as on the day of her marriage.

The Author had not seen Aunt Helen since she was a girl. Then he remembers she had very bright eyes, a gentle voice, and sweet, but rather wistful, smile.



Ambrose Goodman, Sr., late in life.

Helen (Taylor) Goodman, wife of Ambrose Goodman, Sr.

The Ebbing of the Tide.
Uncle Ambrose and Aunt Helen Goodman. The youthful appearance of Aunt Helen Goodman late in life is here noticeable.

Mrs. Bella Dresser, nee Goodman (daughter of Ambrose and Helen Goodman) and family.

## GOODMAN—TAYLOR.

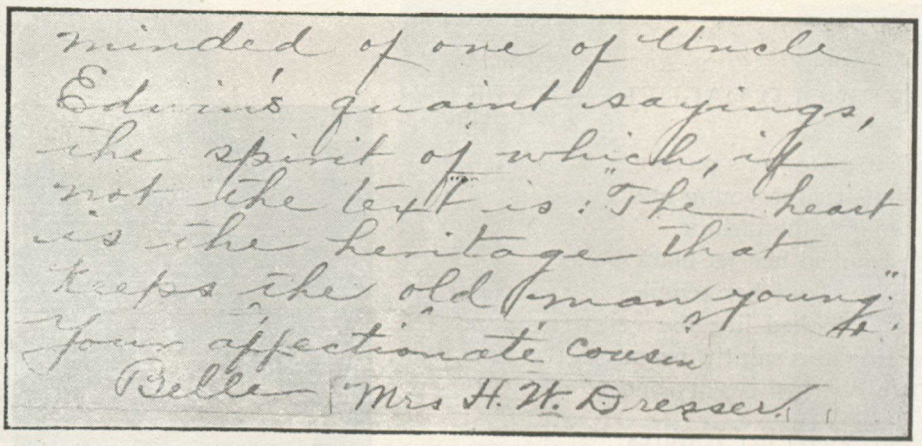
Ambrose, the second son of Dr. Henry Riggs Goodman and Arabella (Holloway) Goodman married Helen Taylor, daughter of a rich St. Catharines brewer on Nov. 28th, 1867. Ambrose Goodman was born August 4th, 1836, and Helen (Taylor) Goodman, July 20th, 1846.

Ambrose Goodman died, January, 1907, and Helen Goodman, January, 1913. Their issue was seven children: Three died in infancy, one reached the age of nine, and one son, Edwin, was killed in a railway accident when nearly eighteen. The surviving children are: Arabella (Bell) Agnes, b. Oct. 22nd, 1868, married Howard W. Dresser, Aug. 22nd, 1895, and lives in Eugene, Oregon, U.S.A.; Helen Maud, born Aug. 31st, 1868, unmarried, and living in Chicago.

The author has had the good fortune to have been visited recently by Helen Goodman, a charming lady, who, in returning to the scenes of her childhood endeared herself in many ways to her relatives, who in the long interval which had elapsed since they had nursed her as a baby, could not realise that the little girl had grown into a beautiful and accomplished woman, capable of making for herself unaided and alone in the great city of Chicago an honored place in society and a comfortable home as will a true daughter of "Martha the Good."

Helen Goodman, daughter of Ambrose Goodman Sr. and Helen (Taylor) Goodman.

Arabella ('Bell') (Goodman) Dresser, taken 1910. Daughter of Ambrose Goodman Sr. and Helen (Taylor) Goodman.


minded of one of Uncle Edwin's quaint sayings, the spirit of which, if not the text is: "The heart is the heritage that keeps the old man young."
Your affectionate cousin
Belle [Mrs H. H. Dresser]

Helen, daughter of Arabella (Goodman) Dresser, aged 17.

Margery, daughter of Arabella (Goodman) Dresser, aged 14.

Frances, daughter of Arabella (Goodman) Dresser, aged 12.

---

## MY FAMILY.

Photographs are human documents, which often portray, more eloquently than words, the character and lives of those in whom we are interested. There is one thing our forebears can bequeath to us, that we cannot buy, and that is their photographs.

There are several hundred in this volume, and I claim that for that reason alone my thirty years' labor has not been in vain.

Mothers sometimes, at the birth of their children, resolve to keep a photographic record of the different stages in their existence; my mother did, and in a measure I have kept it up.

I reproduce these photographs to preserve them in a convenient form for my family. They may, or may not, be of interest to anyone else, but I have decided that they shall form a part of these Memoirs.

## THE OLD DAGUERREOTYPE.

This is my Mother's picture,
  When she was young and fair;
According to the fashion,
  She combed her jet black hair
So closely about her temples
  That it looked like the veil of a Nun,
Enhancing the saintly beauty
  Of this girl of twenty-one.

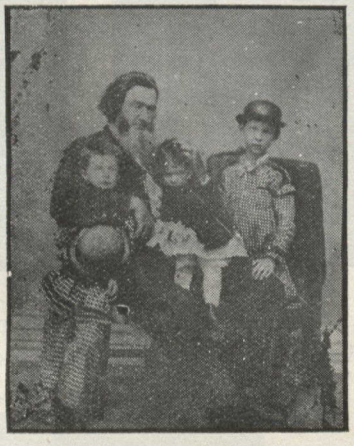
As I gaze upon her features
  I cannot understand
How I, who am the Infant,
  Could have lived as I have, the Man.

I often think of my Mother,
  With the child upon her knee,
And in the stillness of the night
  It sometimes seems to me
I can almost hear my Mother's voice
  And feel the touch of her hand;
Then the Love and Faith of a Little Child
  Returns to the heart of the Man.

The Author enthroned, and his brother Harry also.

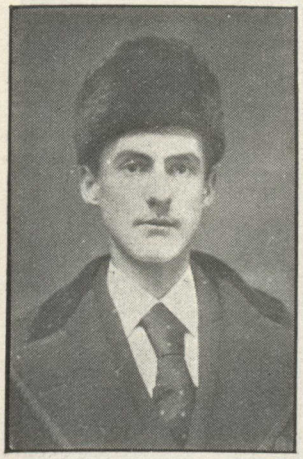
When the above picture was taken it was during the Fenian raid, and my earliest recollection is of being told that the Fenians were hiding in the hay loft.

Mother and Child.



The figety age—My head in chancery to keep me still. My brother Harry and my late sister Louisa

At this time my father went to the front at the Fenian raid, as surgeon in the Nineteenth Battalion Lincoln Volunteers, for which he afterwards received a grant of land, now owned by his grandson, Henry Goodman, Jr. I have tried on his long, blue brass-buttoned coat and peaked cap he wore on that occasion.



Aged Fourteen.

I was to have been a medical doctor, following in the footsteps of my grandfather and my father. Through ill health I was obliged to abandon the idea, and leaving school early, I entered the Imperial Bank of Canada, serving in St. Catharines, Toronto, Montreal, Ingersoll and Woodstock, Ont.

Aged Sixteen.

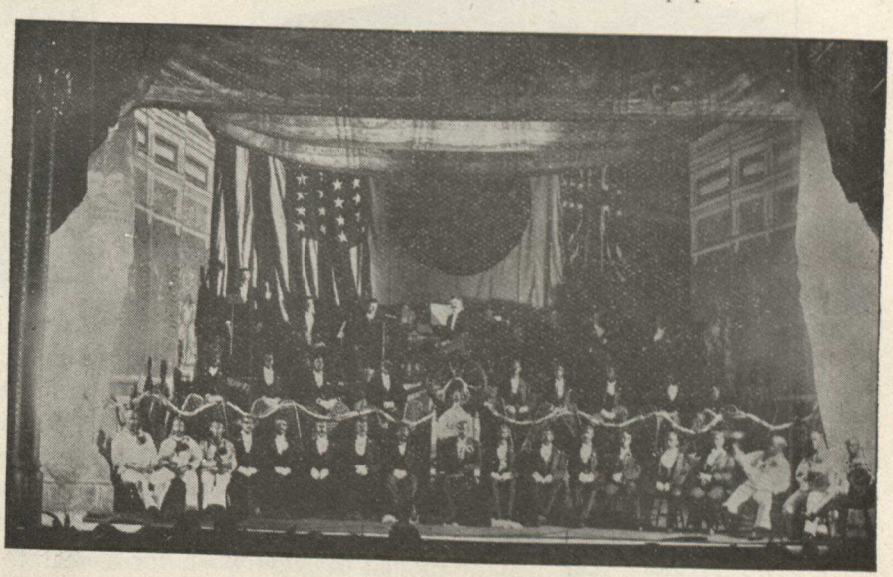
I entered the Bank at 16, after serving several years, my father, quoting the phrase *facile princeps*, said that I showed some aptitude for descriptive writing, and launched me into journalism, purchasing for me a partnership in the "St. Catharines Standard."

At the time I became a newspaper man with W. B. Burgoyne, as a partner, who taught me the rudiments of that calling.

It was about this time I became journalistic manager for the late Senator Gibson, then a rising power in Ottawa. I travelled with him through the country, and reported his speeches, and prepared them for a syndicate of papers.

Aged Twenty.

Took an active part in athletics, having organized the St. Catharines Amateur Athletic Club, in St. Catharines, patronized by every professional and business man in the city. I afterwards assisted in forming a similar association in Vancouver, B. C.



GENTLEMEN, BE SEATED!

The Vancouver Lacrosse Club Minstrels. This club was at that time champion of the World, and was raising funds for a European tour. TheAuthor is seated in the centre, as Interlocutor.

Amateur Athletic Club, organized by myself (seated in the centre, with beard). President of the Club, John R. Monro, short man standing beside me.

As an officer Nineteenth Battalion Lincoln Volunteers, Niagara Camp. During my banking career was also a member of the 22nd Oxford Rifles in Ingersoll, Ontario.

The Author moved to New York for a year to enlarge his newspaper experience. This silhouette was taken on that occasion. It was cut out with scissors by a negro at Coney Island. His advertisement was, "I'll give you your portrait if you will wait a minute." This was done in exactly sixty seconds. It is said that the artistic temperament is heredited. Where did the darkey get his temperament?

## A DEFINITE PLAN FOR LIFE.

Parents should insist upon their children being trained with a definite object in life.

My father, realising that I was unable, through ill health, to undertake any sustained effort, took me from school at 15 and put me in the Imperial Bank of Canada as junior clerk. I remained in the bank for eight years, a period practically wasted. I grew weary of the monotony of keeping accounts, and became restless to try my fortune elsewhere. I was, at different times: Bookkeeper in one grocery store; part proprietor of another; hotel clerk; stock broker in St. Catharines and Hamilton; I was in the book publishing business with Hudson Maxim, brother of Maxim, the great inventor; proprietor of a night school in Victoria; clerk in The New York Life Insurance Co. offices, New York; partner in a country newspaper; reporter; correspondent; editor; secretary of the Employers' Association and other bodies; Librarian of the Vancouver Public Library; real estate broker and speculator; and life insurance man.

On leaving school I had but the rudiments of an education. I have known what is was to be poor, and I have known what it was to be rich; to live scantily and to live sumptuously, and I have suffered much in the past from lack of a technical education, which makes for a permanent success in one's chosen vocation in life.

To the young generation I would say store your mind with theoretical knowledge while you are young, for it will become extremely useful to you in the keen struggle for existence.

After my mother's death, and my father's second marriage, I moved to British Columbia, as a result of an advertising pamphlet I read when employed as clerk of a famous Sanitary Hotel, Stephenson House, St. Catharines. I arrived in Vancouver, October 29th, 1891, and immediately called on Mayor Oppenheimer (a man whose memory is much honored in Vancouver, and to whom a statue is erected in Stanley Park). The Chief Magistrate of Vancouver was very kind. He said the city was struggling to raise her head after being nearly swept out by fire, and he advised me to try Victoria if I was seeking employment.

I did so, and called on Mayor Grant, brother of Robert Grant of Vancouver, a man of strong personality and great friendliness. He was unable to help me, partly owing to the fact that there was some feeling existing in the city against so-called interlopers from Eastern Canada, who were facetiously designated as "North American Chinamen," or "Immigrants from the Cent Belt," the citizens of Victoria not yet having overcome their prejudices arising from the Province having existed so long as an independent Crown Colony, where ten cents, or a "short bit," was the lowest medium of exchange.

At the suggestion of a chance acquaintance whom I met in the Hotel, J. O'Sullivan, who was a skilful educationalist along commercial lines, we formed a partnership and started a night school, which was a temporary success, many of the "older young" men, sons of famous pioneers in the Pacific Province being our pupils, and, who afterwards became eminently successful in life.

C. H. Gibbons, a former St. Catharines boy, who had shown me much kindness, interested himself subsequently to secure me a position on the Victoria Colonist, then the principal newspaper in British Columbia, and Mr. W. H. Ellis, the proprietor, sent me to the mainland of British Columbia as manager for the paper over that wide area.

I found, however, that the position which appeared to me at first to be so attractive, was a difficult one to fill as the sectional feeling was so extreme between the cities of Vancouver and Victoria that the Vancouver residents refused to read a Victoria paper, let alone advertise in one, and if any news was sent to Victoria to the slightest disadvantage to Vancouver, or Vancouver citizens, the correspondent responsible was looked upon as a traitor and a spy, and was bitterly assailed in the local press.

Feeling that my position was quite impossible, I reluctantly sent in my resignation. This was refused by Mr. W. H. Ellis, who informed me that if I "stood by my guns" the Colonist would stand by me. Thus encouraged, I started in to fight against these prejudices, and live them down. In time, both cities grew large enough to sink their petty jealousies, and I was able to live at peace with my fellow citizens, but until that time came it was an uphill struggle, for in doing my duty to my employer, I was looked upon as an alien and an outsider. Many stories of an interesting nature could be told regarding this inter-city sectional feeling. I was present, it might be stated, when the city fire brigade turned out and directed the hose on passengers coming down the gangplank from the Victoria steamer, driving them back into the boat, on the ground that an infections disease was prevalent in Victoria, and no resident of that berg would be allowed to land in their city.

In the light of subsequent events it hardly seems credible that such a feeling prevailed 24 years ago.

While working in the interests of the Victoria Colonist I became correspondent for a large number of outside newspapers in United States and Canada—Vancouver being particularly well situated for news gathering, being the gateway of the west, through which a constant stream of celebrities were passing and repassing to and from the Orient and Australia, and the gathering of news from these travellers required constant vigilance and watching.

For many years as correspondent I lead a very busy and very interesting life, particularly during the Oriental wars.

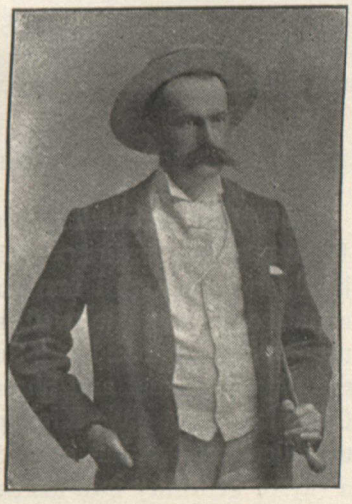
In my newspaper days. Snapped by my stenographer.

The securing and despatch of news stories for such papers as the New York Herald, San Francisco Chronicle, Seattle Times, Chicago Tribune, Cincinnati Enquirer, Montreal Star, and many other big dailies, was more laborious and trying than the uninitiated may imagine, besides being fraught with great responsibility. At length I secured the correspondence and editorship of numerous trade journals, for the purpose of easing off from the more arduous telegraph work, often necessitating all night vigils.

At the age of 35 I married Rose Ellis, sister of the then proprietor of the Victoria Colonist, W. H. Ellis, who had given me my first real start in British Columbia, and had stood by me so loyally.

In looking back, I believe the pleasantest part of my newspaper work was interviewing, for I had the good fortune, during my newspaper career, of meeting many eminent men, among them Sir Henry Irving, Sir Edwin Arnold, Mark Twain, Li Hung Chang, Marquis Ito, Wong the Chinese reformer, Earl Grey, General Booth, and a host of others.

Rose Goodman, nee Ellis, wife of the Author.



1896.
The year of my marriage.

The Author's "send-off," on the eve of his marriage April 15th, 1896.

MEN I HAVE KNOWN.

There are certain individuals whom the world always desires to hear talk. Men who have been born to power, or have gained prominence through their own exertions and talents.

It is the aim of the correspondent to supply to the world, through the medium of newspapers, all that these celebrities have to say, or can be induced to say, and in doing so the greatest diplomacy and skill has often to be used on either side.

Many men of prominence do not wish to talk, as they may inadvertently say something that they are sorry for. They will converse animatedly about the weather, or their travels, but when it comes to leading questions, they become shy, and try to evade the issue without giving offence. It is the business of the correspondent to use his utmost endeavors to induce them to talk, and therein lies his real talent as a newspaper interviewer.

KIPLING WAS IMPOSSIBLE.

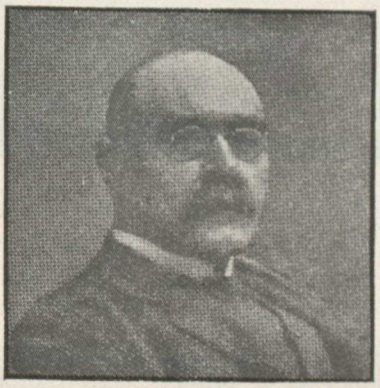
My first impression of this famous poet and novelist was disappointing. He was a very ordinary-looking man, with his close cropped hair, and bullet head, and although I met him when he was angry, I cannot conceive how he could be genial if he tried, so severe a cast of countenance has he. And although he may look like a thundercloud, his face is not strong. With Kipling the physiognamist and phrenologist would be entirely at fault. We, of the Canadian Club, gave Kipling a rousing reception in Vancouver, such as few travellers receive, but even on this occasion it was difficult for him to throw a ray of geneality into his somewhat dull features.

Kipling would not be interviewed. He had made some indiscreet comment on the "vulgar manners" of certain Americans (although he was married to an American wife), and he had been "roasted" by the United States press. In his anger against Americans he had classed all Canadians in the same category (as many a better Englishman has done before him). I received orders that I was to make Kipling talk if possible.

A posse of newspaper men stood in the lobby of the Hotel Vancouver, waiting for the little fellow to make his appearance, as he would not receive any cards in his room.

He finally came along, walking briskly, almost on his toes, as many little men do. His wife was with him. Somehow, before I knew it, I found myself acting as spokesman for the "bunch."

Kipling at first refused to say anything but "no," very emphatically expressed, but as we crowded around him and kept at him, he lost his temper, which is none too good, and what he said was then and there taken down in shorthand, and wired all over the country.



Kipling.

It was a tirade against the newspapers, and American people in general, but owing to the state of mind the people of the United States were in regarding the man Kipling, it answered far better than if he had quietly talked about his wares. Every "florid" word he uttered, so far as correspondents were concerned, was "good copy." Kipling showed a lack of tact in losing his head. On myself (at my approach, stating I was a newspaper man), he turned his back, saying over his shoulder "I'm done with you newspaper men."

---

## MARK TWAIN.

### THE LIGHT OF OTHER DAYS.

The famous American humorist was a companionable man, thoroughly American. His voice was soft, but slightly marred by a nasal twang. He had kind eyes, and a reassuring manner, and strangers instinctively liked him. He was absolutely without reserve or mannerisms of any kind.

As I walked into Mark Twain's bedroom in the Hotel I said: "Are you preparing your lecture for to-night, Mr. Clemens?"

Looking up at the candle on the edge of the bed (the bed having been reversed for the purpose—the candle was used to save his eyes), he said: "I am preparing my entertainment by the light of other days." (It will be remembered that by an unfortunate business venture Mark Twain had lost heavily, and to recoup his fortunes and pay his debts, he had embarked on a world's lecturing tour, which proved a success, artistically and financially).

Interviewed by Candle Light.
Audience with Mark Twain, King of American Humor
By the Light of Other Days.
Syndicate Correspondents: Sam Robb, Author, Billy Harrison.

He was to read that night "Puddin' Head Wilson," the product of his genius years before, or, as he put it, "the light of other days." I cherish the memory of that interview—he was one of Nature's Noblemen.

---

## HENRY IRVING.

Had a very strong personality, and so won the hearts of newspaper men that they were never tired sounding his praises. His was the purest English I had ever heard; a very slight softening of the vowels, but absolutely no accent, and no affectation. Like Kipling, he had suffered from the attacks made on his party by irresponsible American correspondents, but, mark the difference, unlike Kipling, he asked me in the kindest way to be "good enough to deny them." Irving called for tea and cigars on the Hotel lawn, and our interview began.

I asked his opinion on the faculty of memorizing. He replied: "Memory fades with age, although what is remembered in later life is perhaps longer retained." "What is memory?" he was asked. He replied, "No theory is

tenable. We go to our mental storehouse, and, if well ordered, we find what we want. Sometimes we stumble on something that has been mislaid for years."

"To illustrate this," he said, "Arnold, Patti and myself were guests at a feast. I was asked to recite something. I thought for a moment, and suddenly started 'Balchazzar's Feast,' which I had surreptitiously learned underneath my desk at school, 30 years before. I recited it in its entirety, though it had not been in my thoughts all those years.

"Yes," he said, "old age obliterates mental impressions and affects the memory. I had an aged actor, named Mead, once, who, in Macbeth' would insist in saying, in the witches scene:

" 'Scale of DRAGOON, tooth of wolf,
Witches Mummy, Maw and Gulf,'

instead of 'Scale of DRAGON, tooth of wolf, etc.' It was such an annoying mistake that I told the old fellow that if it ever occurred again I would let him out. That night Mead went on with the determination to speak his lines correctly, but when it came his turn he commenced: 'Scale of Dragoon—damn it, I've said it again!' "

---

## STANLEY—EXPLORER.

An offish, stiff, dignified man. His attitude was polite but not friendly. I can recollect him as he made his appearance: Portly, grey haired, and of medium height, and, after taking my card, he walked almost to the other end of the room, putting a wide space between us before asking me to be seated.

This may have been because he had been heckled a good deal, by newspaper men, regarding a rumor that he had been cruel to his native boys in his travels through the jungles.

Stanley is famous particularly in having been successful in finding the explorer, Livingstone, in Africa, after he, Livingstone, had been given up for lost by his friends.

Backed by the New York Herald, he started out with a band of experienced natives, and penetrated into the heart of the unexplored regions. His force contained 200 men, and his trip occupied 234 days. He found Livingstone at Ujiji, in Lak Tanganyika, in November, 1871. In 1887, he entered on his famous expedition to relieve Emin Pasha in Equatorial Africa. He arrived at Lak Nyanza in 1889, and accompanied Emin Pasha to Bagamayo. He returned to England in 1890, and was accused of inhumanity to his men, whom, it was said, he had left behind in the trackless jungle, to perish, that his forced progress might not be impeded.

I interviewed him shortly after his return, at the Hotel Vancouver. I asked him as to the newspaper reports of his alleged cruelty.

He said: "As to the accusation that I abandoned my followers at the end of my line, to save my own life, I would say that the attack is unwarranted. I would further say, that at every stage of our forced marches in a fever-drenched jungle, beset with wild beasts, I looked after my men's comfort the same as I did my own. What did happen was unavoidable, and not as a result of any human action or inaction."

---

## EDWIN ARNOLD.

### *"THE LIGHT OF ASIA."*

The most charming man that I met during my newspaper career. His speech, like Irving's, was pure English, without any affectation, and, unless one was listening intently, the slightest softening of the "a" and slurring of the "r" could not be detected. He was what one would expect a man to be, who wrote *The Light of Asia.* Although he had an ascetic cast of countenance, his eyes beamed with a kindly light, and as we gathered around him in the Hotel Vancouver smoking room, we felt that we had known him a long time, so quickly did we come under his magnetic influence. His presence seemed to radiate peace and goodwill. We approached him hesitatingly, but we hesitated to depart, the charm of the man's presence so held us in its grip. I asked him how he came to write *The Light of Asia.* He replied:

"It all came suddenly. I was sitting, one evening, with my wife—poor soul, she's parted with this existence—when I suddenly rose from my chair, and cried 'Get pencil and paper, write down these words, my dear: The scripture of the Saviour of the world, Lord Buddha, Prince Siddartha styled on earth.' 'What is its purport,' said my wife. 'It is the opening lines of my new poem. I will call it "The Light of Asia."' The poem was inspired by the many strange recollections in my travels among eight hundred millions of Buddha worshippers. When first I saw the sacred Bodhi tree, close to the temple Budhagva, some 50 priests were praying beneath its branches. I was anxious to procure some of the leaves of the tree, and said to one, 'May I have just one leaf?' He replied in Japanese, 'Take the whole lot for all I care.' I plucked off six precious leaves, and as my travels led me, proceeded to Tooth temple in Kandy, Ceylon. I then informed the priest in charge of my possession. 'Stay,' said he. 'I will call a meeting.'

"The result of that meeting was that I divided my precious relics among the five principal temples in Ceylon. The leaf presented to Tooth temple was edged in pure gold and placed upon the altar, a special service being performed over it at stated intervals.

I asked him if he would speak of his new drama, not yet before the public, *Adzuma.*

Very graciously the following lines were then written in pencil and handed to the Author, who sent them to his father, a great admirer of Sir Edwin's:

EPILOGUE TO "ADZUMA, OR THE JAPANESE WIFE."

Lest aught offend you in our Eastern play,
Let me for him that writ it, briefly say
It is a true story of the old Japan,
Where they who will the ceaseless strife may scan
Of fateful mortal passions, and, beside,
See in Adzuma—highly typified—
The patient, faithful, gentle, Nippon wife,
Done to the fashion of a faultless life,
Which those did learn to lead by ancient rules
And manners shut away from Western schools.

Here shall be seen, too, how the doctrine grew,
That past forgotten years constrain the new,
And souls are born with life takes incomplete,
Which start anew, when seeming strangers meet.
But, most and best of all, here may you see
How "dear to heaven is saintly chastity",
And Death himself but friend and minister
To Adzuma, and noble hearts like her.

—EDWIN ARNOLD.

"Will Buddhism imperil Christianity?" was asked.

"Buddhism is no enemy of Christianity, nor of science. India is better for Buddhism," was the reply.

Sir Edwin then spoke of a fire on board ship coming over from India, when he thought the vessel was doomed. He said:

"I stood aloof. I could not aid the brave fellows, and my thoughts turned to the inevitable. I felt the shadow of death, but did not fear. 'Is this the end?' I mused, and the last lines of the *Light of Asia* came to comfort me:

'The dew is on the lotus, rise, great sun,
And lift my leaf and mix me with the wave
Om Mani Padme hum, the sunrise comes,
The dewdrops slip into the shining sea.'

"But we were saved."

---

## SIR GEORGE DIBBS, PREMIER OF AUSTRALIA

ALL RED ROUTE.

A fine well set up man, but just a bit blustering and self opinionated.

Twenty years ago the author asked the Premier of Australia what his sentiments were regarding a closer relation between the Mother Country and her overseas dominions. He said:

"I was in England when Lord Salisbury shook the Empire to its foundation by his Hastings speech. There is a great and growing feeling in England that the colonies should be bound more closely to the mother country. I called on Lord Salisbury at his house shortly before I came away. He assured me he meant every word he hal said at Hastings. Lord Salisbury urged me to proceed on liberal lines toward the accomplishment of that end to which I am at present devoting special attention.

"We hear a great deal of talk about the Imperial Federation leaders. The British Empire is already federated, but I tell you, the free trade policy of England and our exposed coast line in many places, both in Canada and Australia, enables England's enemies in the first instance to rob her to their heart's content, pick her pockets, and taunt her with their evil intentions, and, in the second instance, if they are so disposed, to sweep down on us with their ironclads, and blow the roofs off our houses while we are at breakfast. We rush off to send a cable to England, but the cable is cut—a nice state of things, is it not? Where the carcass is, you know, there will the vultures be gathered together. I am an old man, but I hope I may live to see the day when a British subject can travel throughout Britain's broad dominions on British railroads and British steamers, and not have to rely on Yankee enterprise until the end of their days."

(That day has come.—Author.)

---

## TOM JOHNSON.

### THE BEAVER—THE FIRST STEAMER TO CROSS THE PACIFIC.

I was ordered to find Johnson, the sole surviving member of the crew which brought the first steamer across the Pacific Ocean. Johnson was a sort of hermit living in the Lillooet woods. The author travelled fifty miles to see him, mostly with Indian guide and canoe.

Sketched by the Author, from life. He was one of the original crew which brought over the first steamer to cross the Pacific Ocean.

(When this was written the Beaver was a wreck in the "Narrows [entrance to Vancouver harbor], and she was allowed to pound to pieces and sink. A cane is in my possession, cut from her timbers. I have often climbed upon her slanting deck as she lay off Prospect Point.)

When a lonely shore on the Lillooet river was reached, the Indian guide who accompanied me to find Johnson, gave a peculiar whoop, and Johnson appeared, a man with a long beard and pipe. As he talked he was sketched by me on my shirt cuff. Johnson had the far-away look of a hermit. He refused to talk until the names of old-time friends were mentioned, and then he melted. He said:

"I had been travelling with my father, when a lad, all over the world. He was an engineer, and in those days an engineer was somebody. He went to Germany, France, Italy, Australia, America, every imaginable navigable place on the Globe. When I was not yet in my teens, my father was asked if he would engineer the Beaver around the Horn to the Pacific Ocean. The little three hundred and fifty ton steamer was quite a craft in those days. She was patronized and flattered by royalty, King "Bill" himself being on board her twice. And my father, who was a venturesome man, decided to accept the offer and share the honors of the voyage. I remember my mother and I crying at his departure, when, at last moment, he told me to pack up and come along, and we would sink or swim together.

The "Beaver."

"We got around the "Horn" all right, but when we were off Kilcat, B. C., a tribe of Indians from the interior took objection to our warlike appearance, and prepared for trouble. A scout informed us of our peril, but we determined to stand our ground, and when the first hostile band had made their appearance, for the purpose of frightening them, we fired a gun. Immediately the woods in the vicinity became alive with Siwash braves in fighting order.

ARMED LIKE PINCUSHIONS.

There seemed to me to be 20,000 of them. We beat them off, but had to cut our net and anchor chains to get away before we were boarded."

---

## CAPTAIN SANSOM THE FILIBUSTER

His father was a judge in England and a retired Colonel. He was a veteran of English and Canadian fights. All his relatives were fighting men or the wives of soldiers.

It was at the time that the States deposed Queen Liliuokalani of Hawaii, Sansom wanted to again place her on the throne and call in the aid of Great Britain to keep her there.

His recruiting, strange to say, was done in the United States, where all his strength came from.

I was ordered to find him and interview him. I did so. He talked too freely for his own safety, and it may have been through the publicity given to the interview that pressure was brought on Sansom "to be good."

He had been offered $1,200 for the right to sell his pictures, so notorious had he become, so that it was thought at the time, fortunate for me to be able to get the photo reproduced here.

Capt. Sansom, the Raider.

He told me that he had 500 volunteers, and to prove his assertions, showed me letters from many American Army officers and their sons, offering their services. If some of these names had been published it would have been serious. He said: "I am an Englishman, and they cannot touch me. I am going to Hawaii to put a Queen back on her throne."

He had no success recruiting in Vancouver, and the government went after him strong. He told me they had seized some of his papers and warned him to leave the country or take the consequences. He left.

---

## HUM CID, CHIEF OF THE NAWHITTIE INDIANS.

The Nawhittie Indians had been getting out of hand with the Government. For some years many dark stories had been told of their continuing the evil practices of their forefathers.

It had been said that they were still performing the "Dog Dance"—the last coast tribe to do so.

The dance consisted in driving the young braves into the woods in summer without any clothing or food, and wearing a huge ugly mask. In the meantime, at the dead of night, they would come to the outskirts of the village and howl dismally so as to work the Indians up to the proper pitch of excitement.

When the young men were mad with hunger, usually in the third or fourth day, they would rush into the circle of villagers gathered around the camp fire at night, and after dancing fiercely for a time, they would bite each other until they were streaming with blood. A live dog was then given them, and the braves would tear it to pieces and devour it raw. Of course, after the hideous feast the young braves were loaded with tribal honors, and the peculiar Indian potlatch would take place, on which occasion all the well-to-do Indians, rich in blankets and skins, distributed their wealth to the tribe. (There is, at this writing, a movement on foot to put a stop to potlatches, as it encourages the drinking of liquor and other iniquities). I was sent by my paper to interview Hum Cid, the young Chief of the Mawhitties, and I secured his assurance that the tribe was going to discontinue the big dance and live in peace with the white man, and fish for salmon for his canneries.

---

## LI HUNG CHANG.

### CHINA'S GRAND OLD MAN.

Li Hung Chang was a remarkably picturesque character, a giant in size. His costume set off to advantage his great frame and sphinx-like features.

Always by his side was his obsequious interpreter, chattering, chattering, chattering. As for Li Hung Chang, but for an occasional slight movement of his lips, and the merry twinkling of his small bright eyes, he might have been some wonderful idol of ancient days, whose oracles were recorded in some mysterious fashion by an attendant priest.

They were a very cunning pair, Prince Li and his interpreter, and they certainly turned the tables on the newspaper men out west. With a great show of courtesy and kindness he received them all, but, instead of interviewing the Prince, the Prince interviewed them. The author acknowledges total defeat.

Here is his alleged interview in detail:

Prince Chang, richly robed, in the cabin of a C. P. R. steamship, wearing the regalia of the Order of the Peacock. Author enters.

Interpreter: Be seated.

Author: I should like to speak with His Highness.

Interpreter: His Highness says, certainly, you make speak with him. He desires to know your name and your mission.

Author gives name and list of American dailies represented.

Interpreter: His Highness says it gratifies him to receive the representative of the great American Press. He desires to know your own nationality and your age?

Prince Li Hung.

Author, getting impatient, and rather chagrined, complies with this last royal request.

Interpreter: His Highness wishes to explain that in China age is venerated. The older the man is the greater he is esteemed. His Highness also suggests that your age is rather young for one assuming such great responsibilities. For, after all, the Press often moulds public opinion, and only men of late middle age, and of great wisdom, goodness and understanding and experience should be so occupied.

Author, impatiently: Sir, is it not possible to secure His Highness' views on what will be the next great national advance of his country, China, since the conclusion of war and the tendency of the nation towards reform methods?

Interpreter: His Highness wishes me to explain that he has but two hours before leaving for China by the C. P. R. steamship line. He wishes to express his pleasure at the treatment he has received by that company, and of the splendid modern boats which makes life on the sea so endurable. He says many of your friends desire to converse with him before his departure. His Highness bids you good-bye and thanks you for your visit.

A gracious bow from Prince Li Hung Chang, and the audience is at an end, minus the interview. The only consolation I had was that no one else on the Continent of America obtained Li Hung Chang's opinions on passing events.

---

## WONG, THE REFORMER.

Wong, the famous reformer, leader of the first revolutionary movement, with a price on his head, was a different style of man. If Li Hung was an aristocrat, Wong was a commoner. He could speak good English and could keep the newspapers supplied with abundance of revolutionary talk and recital of horrible acts of revenge on the reformers by the Empress Dowager. He

was in Vancouver because he wished to keep his head on his shoulders. He was a jolly, rollicking sort of a man in spite of the bloody scenes he had witnessed, but the author always regretted having attended a banquet he gave in the Chinese Club to the press. He ate all the dishes set before him, out of politeness, not being able to decipher the Chinese bill of fare. Imagine his horror, afterwards, when he was told by a Chinese friend that one of the delicacies was Chinese birds' nests, highly spiced and perfumed, and another, minced mice and pastry, great delicacies in China—and that Wong, during the repast, was making jocular remarks in Chinese when we were devouring the Mice Pie and Bird"s Nest Salad.

---

## GENERAL BOOTH.

How shall I describe him? As I conjure up his picture after twenty years, I can see little else (in my fancy) than his great bright eyes, and long grey beard.

He seemed not quite like ordinary beings, but as one obsessed with a single thought—the saving of souls. He had a tremendous faith in himself and his divine mission, and his religious enthusiasm drew the multitude to him. He was a human dynamo. He was one of the greatest organizers that ever lived, because, combined with his enthusiasm was his intense earnestness. At our interview I said: "General, I represent a number of leading American newspapers. My name is Goodman."

"Good man," the General repeated.

I did not have to question him. Suddenly, as if inspired, he burst into a storm of eloquence; addressed to me? No. He did not look at me. He was talking for those million readers who would see his words in cold type the next day, and he could not tell what he had to say quietly, but walked up and down the room like a madman, clutching at and tangling his fingers in his long white beard. And he poured out his words so fast I could hardly follow him. I cannot find his interview in my scrap book, and after these twenty years all I can remember is that he said in conclusion "I speak not for to-day, but for all time." Suddenly he came down to the ordinary level of mankind, and with a wonderfully kind smile shook hands, thanked me for calling, and expressed his admiration for the Press, which, in the main, was doing a great good for the cause he had at heart.

---

## FREE AND ACCEPTED MASONS.

I joined the Freemasons in 1902, and subsequently was successful with others in forming a new lodge, called Western Gate, Number 48, on the Registry of British Columbia. This Lodge received its charter in 1908, and

I became its third Master. In time I became a member of the Royal Arch Chapter, and also of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite, having attained the 32nd Degree in the latter branch of Masonry, and filling the chair of the presiding officer in the Lodge of Perfection and the Rose Croix Chapter, and also being elected to official positions in the Consistory, and at this writing holding the honorary position of Grand Orator of the Lodge of Perfection of B. C.

## PUBLIC BODIES.

I figured on the executive of a number of public and semi-public bodies, among them the Canadian Club and Art and Historical Association, Library Board. Vancouver Athletic Association, etc.

## POLITICS.

Conservative. Active in several campaigns.

Ran for Alderman in 1910, and was elected for Ward 1, Vancouver City.

My aldermanic career was during an interesting time, for it was on a year when many distinguished men visited Vancouver, and much entertaining had to be done. This was on the whole, pleasant, but I can recollect one experience rather more vividly than the rest, owing to its unusual nature.

The firm of Messrs. Armstrong, Morrison & Co., Ltd., invited the Mayor and Aldermen to a banquet below the waters of False Creek (an arm of the Pacific Ocean) in fact on the bed of the Creek, while the waters of False Creek flowed overhead. In other words, we were asked to descend into the caisson of the Granville Street Bridge, then under construction by this firm.

I do not think I could be paid at any price to go through the experience again. We were told to climb down and into a steel cage which was then closed tight and lowered into the water, air being supplied from without and pumped in, until the pressure was as great as in the cell below, at the bottom of the creek where the men worked. When this pressure was attained a door was opened below and we were told to climb down, which we did, and stood on the bottom of the creek. The first question I asked was: "How do you keep the water out, for this is dry clay I am on?" The reply was that the pressure of air did not allow a single drop to come in under the walls of the cell. And so we enjoyed the strange experience for some time. But somehow I began to feel light-headed and swimmy from the air pressure. When we had been served with refreshments, however, that feeling seemed to pass away, or we became accustomed to it. The trouble was "the getting out," and the sudden taking off of the high pressure to accommodate the lighter air pressure above. When we climbed into the dark cell and clung to the ladder rungs, a voice said, "Anyone that can't stand it 'squeal' and I'll let her go easy." Gradually the pull was lessened, but not gradually enough. I thought my senses were leaving me. The pain in my head through the ears was intense. I decided to wait for someone else to do the "squealing," but I finally lost my nerve as I felt the pull on my ear drums, and told "the voice" to ease up.

Outside of being partially deaf for a day and bleeding at the nose, there were no other ill effects. It is said that those engaged constantly working under artificial air pressure, while they grow, in a sense, accustomed to it, usually become broken in health as a result. (The life in a submarine must be extremely trying.)

Later on Earl Grey opened this fine bridge for traffic. The photograph at the inauguration ceremony is here produced.

Earl Grey Opens Granville Bridge.

Left to Right: Alderman Crowe; Alderman Goodman; Mayor Douglas; Reporter; Earl Grey; Mr. Morrison (builder of bridge—man with head lowered); City Engineer Clements (man with glasses); late Rev. Father Clinton (Episcopal).

The Man Who Divided the Atom.

Aldermen entertaining the members of the Scientific Society of Great Britain. It was the author's duty to act the part of the host to Professor Robertson, who is known as the "man who divided the atom." Photographs were taken in front of one of the big trees in Stanley Park, where Prof. Robertson expressed great interest in viewing the wonderful giants in Vancouver's natural park.

The author remembers spanning five times around one mighty fir at arm's length before completing the circuit, in an attempt to give an idea of the relative size of the tree.

Left: Self, Prof. Robertson and wife, Alderman (Lieut.-Col.) McSpadden.

Civic Committee Inspecting Penitentiary and Hospital Sites for Greater Vancouver, 1910.
Mayor Douglas with opera glasses; Alderman Prescott on his left; Alderman Goodman, with son.

The Alderman entertains the Japanese fleet, which at that time had arrived from the Orient on captured Russian Men-of-War. The officers were loaded with medals—heroes, every one.

It was the author's duty, at a world's championship lacrosse game at New Westminster, to explain the fine points of the game to a Captain of the Japanese Navy, mostly by dumb show. The Japanese Captain smiled indulgently for a while at these gesticulations, and then quietly remarked in good English: "I can understand you, Honorable, if you will please talk.

Left: First Row—Admirals and Rear Admirals; Mayors of New Westminster and Vancouver. Second Row—Local Militia Officers and Japanese Officers. Third Row—Japanese Officers. Fourth Row—Alderman Prescott, Alderman Goodman; other civic officials and aldermen of both cities.

Strathcona Party Entertained by Aldermen.

Left:—David Robertson, representing City Hospital and University; Reeve McGregor, Burnaby; Mayor Douglas; Alderman McSpadden; late William Murray, banker; Fred Wade, ex-M.P.; daughter of Lord Strathcona; Lord Strathcona; Senato Bowell, former Premier of Canada; the secretary Lord Strathcona; John Hendry, president B. V. and E. Railway, and former president Manufacturers' Association of Canada; Ewen Buchan, president Board of Trade and Canadian Club; J. T. Lockyer, head of Hudson's Bay on Coast, former president Board of Trade; W. H. Malkin, wholesale grocer, former president Board of Trade; Wm. Morrison, contractor, president St. Andrew's Society; J. J. Banfield, president Hospital Board and other philanthropic institutions; J. N. Ellis, former president Canadian Club, and Liberal Association (Author's brother-in-law); Alderman Goodman (on tree—grey hair); Collector of Customs Jno Bowell, son of Senator Bowell (and his son); and J. J. Trorey, the well-known wholesale and retail jeweller.

I have often thought I should like to relate what I know of the early history of the great, or nearly great, in British Columbia, when they did not know what the future held for them, and they were rollicking bachelor friends. These memoirs are hardly the place for such narratives, and yet they make my life story more complete. I can say frankly that I could not possibly predict that some of my friends should have risen to such prominence, while others, although they had the elements of greatness in them, were pushed to one side.

In the early days of Vancouver a sound theoretical training was almost the "sesame" to position and power, if it were coupled with ambition and ordinary intellect and the nerve to speak in public was also a great factor. I say nerve, for a great many men who never rise above mediocre have the ability but not the self control to assert themselves successfully in a community.

The acquisition of wealth was easy in British Columbia. In some years, I can remember, wealth was within the grasp of anyone with a few hundred dollars if they had only known. For a long period settlers in British Columbia had gone through the worst of hard times, and they had their property sold out for taxes. Then the turn came, but the old timers did not see it. They said "we lost before and we will not venture again." The new comers, however, thought differently, they bought madly over the heads of pioneers heedlessly, recklessly. To do this they got money, fairly, if they could, and some of them who could not get it fairly got it, anyway, and fortunes were made overnight.

Still, the old timers said "it cannot last; just wait and see," and they waited. But it did last—for five, ten and fifteen years. Often in a few years values increased a thousand per cent. Not even the extreme optimist dreamed of such a thing. And I say it without any idea that I shall be contradicted, that fortune favored the loud-mouthed, uneducated braggart rather than the canny, shrewd calculating man of education and financial training. For what appeared to be greatly exaggerated stories regarding the manner in which this and that property was going to increase in value, turned out to be not exaggerated at all, and most people came to believe any story that was told them. As money has a direct effect on society, that part of civilization was turned topsy-turvy, and the wealth for a time became centered largely in the hands of those who had no other qualification as citizens, superficially at least, than that of reckless daring in real estate transactions.

For many years property increased so steadily in value that one could have been lead into a real estate office blindfolded, and, putting his finger on the map of the city say "buy there," with the absolute certainty that wherever his finger fell the property mapped beneath it, bought at that time, would net him a handsome profit in the near future. For every hundred dollars invested in those days, if held long enough, made a thousand.

Gradually matters righted themselves. The old-timers woke up at last, and affairs were better organized. Things became a little more normal. Old timers had their innings and assumed their proper place in the community.

But those were mad days while they lasted..

Values had been boosted up too high. There was much bolstering in after years. The City did not seem to realise that a false standard of prices had been set; the change commenced slowly. About 1912 the pendulum started to swing back, and in 1914 came the war. Values toppled, and then the aftermath, which is now on, as I write these words, represented by universal depression, and discontent, and there is no one left to say "I told you so." For, as the years went on, in the good old times, all had cast their fortunes on the "black," or the "red," and all had lost. Where did the money go? Back to the banks, or out of the Province? Perhaps. No one seems to know—they only know they are "broke." A great many reputations were ruined when the bubble burst. For years people wondered—who would be the next.

Will good times come again? I know they will. I have lived through cycle after cycle of good and bad times, and the good times always followed the bad times, as surely as day follows night, but it will not be until about three years after the war. It is a part of the great plan of nature to bring communities to a state of rationalism after the fever-time of speculation, and to enable them to visualise more clearly, before they are entrusted once again with the machinery of progress. And so the pendulum swings back and forth.

---

## OLD TOWN BOYS—FRIENDS OF MY YOUTH.

There is always some sentiment attached to the friendships of our youth, and one should feel a certain pride in heralding the success of the "Old Town Boys."

When I was a boy James Stark was a clerk in Struthers Dry Goods Store, in St. Catharines. In British Columbia, before his retirement from active commercial life, his business interests were very large.

At this writing Mr. Stark, who has endeared himself to every freemason and oddfellow in British Columbia by his many good qualities, bears the title of Past Most Worshipful Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of British Columbia, A.F. and A.M. He is a veteran of the Fenian raid.

J. R. Seymour, who was a druggist clerk in St. Catharines as a young man, is one of Vancouver's most prominent citizens, and is identified with every philanthropic and patriotic movement in the Province, while his sons are fighters for their country at the front. He is a 33rd degree Freemason, and permanent Commissioner in British Columbia for the Supreme Council, 33rd Degree Scottish Rite Masonry for the Dominion of Canada. Mr. Seymour is termed the Father of Scottish Rite Masonry in British Columbia and holds innumerable positions in the gift of the public, including Chairman of the School Board, Vice President Red Cross Society. He has two sons at the front.

W. C. Ditmars was formerly a clerk in St. Catharines store. He is now a member of one of the largest contracting firms in British Columbia—Messrs. Armstrong, Morrison & Co.

If there ever was a case where merit and sticking-to-it has won, it is in the case of Mr. Ditmars. He came west with his firm as bookkeeper and never left them. Others changed their position a dozen times in 25 years, but he "fought it out on the one line right through," and his reward came when the firm, recognizing his extremely valuable services on several big contracts, took him in as partner, the stepping-stone to wealth, comfort and position. Mr. Ditmars is also a Past Most Worshipful Grand Master of Freemasons for British Columbia, and undoubtedly the most popular member of this powerful organization.

Willie Hunter, the little red-headed boy with whom I attended school in St. Catharines when his father was principal was until recently Chief Justice Hunter of the Supreme Court of British Columbia. He has now been promoted to a new dignity on the Ottawa Bench.

I asked Justice Hunter if he remembered how his father used to "whale" him when one of the other scholars was acting up badly. He replied that he and his brother received much vicarious punishment. In fact, his father "licked" him to show the other boys what they might expect if they again committed the offence that he was being punished for in their stead.

Mr. Seath, son of another Principal of the St. Catharines Collegiate Institute, is also a prominent citizen of Vancouver.

"Wee" Macdonald, with whom I went to school in St. Catharines, is now Justice W. A. Macdonald, of the Supreme Court of British Columbia, and was at one time leader of the opposition in the Manitoba Legislature.

John Macdonald, brother of Justice Macdonald, with whom I also went to school in St. Catharines, is a highly esteemed and prominent medical doctor in Vancouver.

Ernie Bodwell, whose father in my childhood was superintendent of the Welland Canal, St. Catharines, hung out his shingle as a lawyer in St. Catharines when he was a young man. I can distinctly remember that the town laughed at the idea of Ernie practicing law.

What changes time makes. Earnest Bodwell is now acknowledged by many to be the head of the bar in British Columbia, being retained on almost all the very big cases.

When I was a boy "Jack" Banfield was clerk in Eckhardt's music store in St. Catharines. He came to Vancouver 30 years ago, and has stayed right with the game through starvation times and times of plenty. His steadfast purpose as a citizen seems to have been to do all in his power to help the needy and distressed, and to give the best that was in him in every public capacity. Mr. Banfield is prominent in all philanthropic work and foremost in every enterprise which he believes will benefit the citizens of Vancouver. Mrs. Banfield, formerly Miss Oille of St. Catharines, actively assists him in his public spirited enterprises.

George Wonder, prominent in the commercial life of Vancouver.

Harry Senkler, another old school fellow from St. Catharines, always par excellence in athletics, became a prominent barrister in Vancouver, and at one time was practically leader of the liberal party here He unsuccessfully ran for Dominion honors.

Captain Senkler is widely popular, as he has been during his entire career, wherever his lot has been cast. He is now preparing himself for active service at the front.

"Pooch" Jukes, another school-boy friend, whom I remember as a leader in athletics, and in fancy I can see him followed by a score of shouting youths in a game of "follow the leader," jumping over forms, clambering through the windows, up ladders, twisting and turning in every direction within school bounds.

Andrew Jukes is still leading and will ever lead, but his vocation is now banking, and he is one of the safest and best authorities of the day in British Columbia on matters of finance affecting the citizens.

Harry Marshall, a brother-in-law of "Pooch" Jukes, is also a prominent citizen and well-known freemason in Vancouver.

William Burns, formerly school teacher in St. Catharines, has risen in Vancouver to be an authority on educational matters.

He is Principal of the Normal School; a very prominent freemason; and a classical scholar of more than local fame.

I came to British Columbia when her towns were emerging from the woods, and it was pleasant to meet so many friends of childhood days. Some came after, but most of them were here already.

On arriving in Vancouver I went into bachelor quarters with George Cowan and "Billy' Bowser. The former was afterwards Member for Vancouver in the Dominion House, and was a writer and barrister of prominence and merit. He delivered the address at the memorial services to Lord Kitchener. The latter is now the Hon. W. J. Bowser, Premier of British Columbia.

To mention others: Hugh Keefer, an old Thorold boy, is the friend of all the pioneers of this province. He is a valued factor in the firm of Armstrong, Morrison & Co.

The late Dr. I. Senkler became prominent in the medical world in B. C. before his untimely death.

Charlie Rykert, son of St. Catharines famous citizen of that name, had the distinction of having a town named after him in the Kootenays.

E. Senkler, brother of "Harry" of that distinguished family has made his mark in this province.

And there are many more, all a credit to the old home town, among them Harry Wilson, of repute down in wholesale mercantile circles.

I hope I may be pardoned mentioning these matters, but I feel they are reminiscent and not altogether out of place. When I was a boy, the late George Riley was a contractor of St. Catharines and Thorld. When I came to Vancouver in 1891, I found that he had become Senator Riley of British Columbia, and his former partner and friend of his St. Catharines days shortly after assumed the title of His Honor Lieutenant Governor Paterson of British Columbia.

This list could be enlarged. It is sufficient to say that the men in power today in British Columbia were all ordinary young fellows when I came to the Coast 26 years ago, with absolutely very little promise of future success, and many of them are from good old Lincoln County, near the banks of the Welland Canal. I feel that it has been a happy chance that has given me an opportunity to study thus the careers of so many men as an interested onlooker.

In the days of our youth we dream dreams: Do we hear of others' mistakes—we shall avoid them. We will learn things, and invent things. We will be thrifty and sober, and by frugality and patience we will become great and wise and powerful. We will become husband and father. All the girls in the world we have to choose from, so we will choose the most beautiful and charming, good, vigorous and strong, and our children will be strong and beautiful and our home a place of joy everlasting.

Who has not had these thoughts in the silent, dreamy hours of adolescence, when we were soon to break away from parental ties and face alone the great world?

But when our trial came we realized that Nature had deceived us—grossly deceived us; that we were hardly masters of our own destiny and

Our lives are like the thistle down,
Which leave their moorings near the ground,
And—willy, nilly going,
Direct their course towards the sky,
But—only hither, thither fly
In random breezes blowing.

Our efforts to rise above the level of ordinary mortals are so often futile, and we can but be sure of one thing: That we, too, must grow old and die, and nothing accomplished. Nature, however, as a rule, provides, as in the case of the thistle down, that we shall reproduce our species, and we shall thus live again as an integral part of the human race—and to what end?

I think the conclusion must have been forced upon some of us who have been through the heat and conflict of a busy life, that we are free agents, but to a very limited extent; that the momentous happenings of our existence have often hinged upon the insignificant incidents in our lives; that our greatest successes have been incidental to the opportunities of chance, and not directly along the line of our concentrated effort. And the rudely framed thought has come to us that our very existence seemed to depend upon the vagaries of other human beings—when they got up in the morning, or what side of the street they walked down, whose friendship they encouraged, and whose amicable overtures they declined—a thousand incidents working out a chance combination resulting in the ego, I am

So like the thistle down in random breezes blowing.

We are, after all, only as we think. We desire, and perchance, by good fortune, our wish is gratified, only, as too often happens, to fill our hearts with bitterness and regret.

Nature would seem to be the past master of irony, for she seems to give birth to desire, which, if not curbed by our will, leads us on to destruction.

From whence does thought spring? Does desire conceive the thought? or does thought come from the eternal ether, and frame the desire? Wherever thought comes from it makes us what we are. Can thought be trained? Does it largely depend on environment? or does it come to us unbidden, compelling us to action?

Are the ways and means with which we must work out our destiny imposed upon us by an occult influence over which we have no control? And so we go beyond the realm of human reasoning, as we sometimes do when we gaze up at the star-lit heavens on a clear summer night—gaze and wonder.

We are as we think. That is a great truism, and if it be in the power of a human being to control his thoughts, and wisdom to direct them, then he may get the maximum of peace and contentment out of his existence.

And what is contentment? We cannot purchase it. Power, luxury and fame are coveted by the human race. But why? They do not bring contentment.

If we go for a walk, we enjoy our outing far more if we have an object in view, even if it is only to touch a mile post and return in a given time. That is why men strive for some goal which is beyond their present reach. It makes the struggle of life tolerable. But when the goal is reached they do not always find happiness, often only ambition urging them on, on, and on, until the silver cord is loosed, or the golden bowl is broken.

Are the rich happy? By their lives we know them, and have learned that their cares have been multiplied a thousand-fold, and their happiness, if it can be called happiness, alone exists in their passion for still greater power, and to hang on tenaciously to what they have. If we gain our prize it loses half its value. If we do not gain it we are distressed.

To most of us who have tried for great wealth, and there are few who have not had that ambition, partial, or utter failure and disappointment awaited us. We cannot, in the naturue of things, lay our plans so well that failure in some form will not overtake us, and thus, by reaching for something we cannot grasp, wo lose often what we could readily have availed ourselves of.

We may do our best cheerfully and heroically, but must ever be prepared to face "the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune," from which no man is immune, and take quick advantage of the turn of fortune in our favor. The argosy sea of humanity is filled with the wrecks of human lives who have refused to make due provision for the goddess of Chance, or yielded to her universal and despotic sway.

If fortune favors the brave, the wise, and the good, she, too often, also favors the dullard, knave, or fool, and in the latter event brings into the world misery, depravity and distress.

We may have wisdom of mind, and have little faith; we may have beauty, grace, and gentleness of disposition, but remain without hope to the end; we may have power and strength of character, but still become uncharitable towards all men. And it is better to lack wisdom, grace and strength than faith-hope, and charity, and the greatest blessing of all which will ever tend towards our earthly happiness, is the possession of charity in its amplest and fullest sense.

These are truisms known to man since the dawn of civilization, and through countless experiences in human life have been proved to be beyond denial. But the perversity of human nature impells men to continue to learn from their own experience why wisdom, beauty, and power or strength, should not be all satisfying to their every ambition wish and desire. If they but live long enough, however, they all learn the solemn truths which Christ the man taught 1900 years ago. May it not be for them too late to rearrange their standard of living so that they may be blessed among men, and have the consolation of knowing when it has come their time to have their accounts checked up, that they have not lived in vain, and that they have left the world a little better for having been in it.

This theme is only suggestive, and I am not prepared to say that by simply professing a belief in Christianity, it will make one happy; but I do claim that those who follow the teachings of the man Christ, are far happier than those who do not do so.

In brief, those who are engaged in good deeds are charitable in act, thought and speech, and do what they believe to be their duty, get the best there is out of life, without taking into consideration the possibility of a reward in the life to come. And so we come back again to my father's religion, which admits of no argument or discourse:

"If you wish to be happy, be good, be good."

---

## MY FAMILY.

Catharine (Harirngton) Ellis, mother of Rose Goodman (nee Ellis).

Rose (Ellis) Goodman descended from a well-known family on her father's side. They came from Yorkshire, and undoubtedly the founder was one Robert Ellis, of Doncaster, in that shire.

Camden says In 1607, in *Travelling Through Yorkshire*: "We came to the Town of Doncaster. There is but one large church there, St. George. In this church was a tomb stone bearing the following inscription:

> *"Here lies Robert Ellis, five times Mayor of Doncaster. He was a philanthropist. He founded the Hospital of St. Andrews, and performed many great acts of charity."*

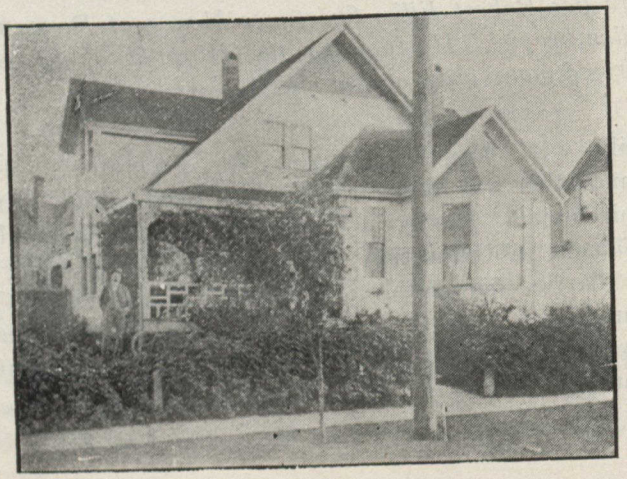
The family were large contractors for generations. Rose (Ellis) Goodman's grandfather was in partnership with Lord Craige, constructing the famous Yorkshire dykes. Her great Uncle John Ellis and her father Abraham Ellis were in Canada in connection with some big contracting work when Abraham Ellis married her mother, Catharine Harrington, of County Cork, Ireland, the daughter of a large family which settled in different parts of America, and whose descendants are well and favorably known throughout the United States and Canada.

### THE ARTISTIC TEMPERAMENT IN THE FINGER TIPS.

The artistic temperament heredited from the Holloways and Thomas Goodman is at the finger tips of the descendants to the third and fourth generations. The Goodmans "never learned to draw:" they just drew. In my family, perhaps, the best work was done by Louisa, my late sister, whose pen aand ink sketches could not be distinguished from copper plate, except on very close inspection. Harry is an artist of merit, besides a mechanical genius of rare capacity. My late brother Arthur's impressionist pictures were much admired by professionals; while the Author's talents were mediocre, he was enabled to often illustrate his own newspaper work, as he has in some instances in these memoirs.

In the last generation the artistic temperament is still in evidence. Many descendants have gained prominence and great efficiency in their chosen vocation. The stock is strong and vigorous, mentally and physically. In the female line marriage has been greatly beneficial to the race. The stock is the same: the name is changed. My contemporaries are still in the fighting ranks of life, in the male line, and there is no doubt as regards their qualifications to hand down our name unsullied and honored from generation to generation. Generally speaking there seems to be no danger of the descendants of Elizabeth Musgrave and Ogle Riggs in the female lines of Martha Riggs, dying out or degenerating.

My Present Home on English Bay.



Rose Cottage

So named in honor of the lady who presided over its interior, and also on account of the profusion of wild roses which surrounded it. This was the home of the author in the newspaper days of 1896, and here his son was born.

The situation was on the outskirts of the city. It is now near to Vancouver's centre, and the site is occupied by a palatial apartment house. Time works wonders in Vancouver. The author bought this half lot for $400; sold it for $4,000. It was resold a year after for $10,000. It cannot now be purchased. The population's advance warranted it. When I arrived in Vancouver there were 5,000 people here; now Greater Vancouver supports 200,000 souls. This, the maddest, loudest-mouthed optimist did not dream of. If they had—well, that is another story.

MY SON.

As these memoirs have been dedicated to my son, so far as the paternal line is concerned, it is only fitting that some reference should be made of him.

Edwin Ellis Goodman was born in 1900, tipping the scales at two and a half pounds. The doctor remarked that he was a husky little featherweight, and would pull through, and he did.

He made up for many disappointments. He was the last of three, the others dying in infancy, and when he waxed big and strong, he brought much happiness into our home.

He was bright and clever from childhood. At two years of age, the author sees by his scrap book, he was noticed in the local paper as having a

vocabulary of 600 words, exclusive of proper nouns. He is now fifteen, an absolutely satisfactory son, weighing about 120 pounds, and standing five feet six in height. Pretty good for a two-and-a-half-pound baby. He is a keen sport, a hard student, optimist, reliant, and manly. He is now in his second year in High School. On his leaving Langara College, I received the following letter, which speaks for itself:

Langara School, Vancouver, B. C.

Friday, 3rd July, 1914.

Dear sir:—

I have received your letter, in reference to the withdrawal of your son Ellis. I regret more than I can say that you find such a step necessary. I still hope you may be able to send Ellis to us again after the holidays. Your boy is distinctly an asset or value in the life and work of the school, and I shall appreciate it very much if you will take up the matter with Doctor McLaren, our Superintendent, to whom I have expressed my point of view, which is that also of my faculty.

I thank you, Sir, for your kind commendation of Langara, and your testimony as to your son's progress and well-being among us.

Signed: ALBERT G. TAIT,

Head Master.

My son is a member of the Seaforth Highlanders, school battalion. In this battalion, as the boys arrive at the age of 17, they are, parents willing, drafted to the Overseas Forces; up to date, from this one batallion, 150 have been so drafted. According to his present intentions, he proposes to go through the British Columbia University, and after attaining his degree, go in for law. If the war lasts, he will enlist for overseas at 17—he is now 16.

The laugh of a boy—a baby boy,

The patter of tiny feet,

A boisterous shout when school was out,
And a whistling down the street.

A child at play just over the way,
And cries of clamorous strife;
And the song in the lane, with its glad refrain,
So full of the joy of life.

Edwin Ellis Goodman. Six years of age.

Edwin Ellis Goodman. Present day.

## EXPECTATION OF LIFE.

FOR THE DESCENDANTS OF EDWIN GOODMAN AND CAROLINE CROSS.

Life Insurance actuaries base their calculations on what is known as the H. M. T. The initials meaning "Healthy Male Table." That is, the Life Insurance Companies of the United States and Canada, have at their disposal the average age at which a healthy male policy-holder dies, and made up from insurance records over a long period of years, under varying conditions, and including hundreds of thousands of lives.

Of the ancestors of Edwin Goodman and Caroline Elizabeth Cross, there are 41, whose age at death has been recorded, as follows:

## MATERNAL

| | Name | Age |
|---|---|---|
| 1. | John Corliss, Sr. | 68 |
| 2. | John Corliss, Jr. | 51 |
| 3. | Nathanial Harwood | 90 |
| 4. | William Harwood | 75 |
| 5. | Elizabeth Harwood | 85 |
| 6. | Esther Harwood | 72 |
| 7. | John Wright, I. | 77 |
| 8. | John Wright, II. | 83 |
| 9. | John Wright, III. | 68 |
| 10. | Jacob Wright | 63 |
| 11. | Abigail, his wife | 65 |
| 12. | Elizabeth Wright (nee Cummings) | 78 |
| 13. | Isaaac Cummings | 76 |
| 14. | John Cummings, Sr. | 70 |
| 15. | John Cummings, Jr. | 55 |
| 16. | His Wife | 63 |
| 17. | William Cummings | 56 |
| 18. | Amos Cummings | 98 |
| 19. | Caroline Cummings (nee Cross) | 84 |
| 20. | Mary Frail (nee Cross) | 89 |
| 21. | Jos Bailey | 87 |
| 22. | John Bailey, Sr. | 59 |
| 23. | John Bailey, Jr. | 64 |
| 24. | His Wife | 64 |
| 25. | C. B. Cross | 95 |
| 26. | Caroline Cross (nee Goodman) | 52 |
| 27. | Captain Brackett | 80 |
| 28. | Richard Swan | 83 |
| 29. | Robert Swan | 70 |
| 30. | Sarah Worcester | 82 |
| | | 2202 |

## PATERNAL.

| | Name | Age |
|---|---|---|
| 1. | Arabella Holloway (nee Goodman) | 85 |
| 2. | Henry Riggs Goodman | 72 |
| 3. | Edwin Goodman | 74 |
| 4. | Thomas Holloway | 68 |
| 5. | Ann Holloway (Broadstreet) | 52 |
| 6. | John Holloway | 70 |
| 7. | Elizabeth (Musgrave) Riggs | 69 |
| 8. | Her husband, Ogle Riggs | 79 |
| 9. | Henry Riggs | 88 |
| 10. | His wife, Sindenia Budden | 83 |
| 11. | Martha (Riggs) Goodman | 59 |
| | | 799 |

## RECAPITULATION

Female Line—2202 years, divided by 30 lives: Average life, 73½ years.

Male line—799 years, divided by 11 lives: Average life, 72½ years.

Male and Female life averages, 73½ plus 72½.

Expectation of Life of the descendants of Edwin Goodman and Caroline Cross, 73 years.

Those who were killed by the Indians have not been included.

Of all her ancestotrs, my mother was the shortest lived but one, dying at the age of 52 years. Out of 41 ancestors, fourteen lived beyond the allotted span; four living to be over 90, Jonthan Cross being one of them, but not recorded here, as there is no record of his death.

Still quoting from the above insurance statistics, only one man in every hundred, who dies at 50, leaves anything but his life insurance (startling figures). A man is at his best at 35. At forty he is below normal, and at 50 he is running half steam ahead, and at 60 he is looking for safe anchorage in some home port.

There are, of course, exceptions to this rule, but it applies in most cases.

Avoid speculation. The result is always the same. A gambler rarely stops until he loses all he may have made, even if he is a crook.

In Vancouver there were 25,000 heads of families and male adults speculated in lands and mines for fifteen years, aand made fortunes running from $10,000 to $2,000,000. To-day, every one of them, still living, is hard pressed for money to meet the necessities and ordinary pleasures of life. And most of them are property poor.

If it had not been for the war, many of them, under the age of 45, would have been in want. They are now at the front.

It is better to be a plodder than a speculator. There is always room in the world for a young man who is bent on establishing a comfortable estate by hard, conscientious work.. But few accomplish their purpose, being lured aside by "wild cat" propositions.

## THE WAR

There was no thought in my mind, up to 1913, that I would have to prepare an eleventh hour honor roll, of heroes, who in our day and time would go forth to battle, for humanity and the right.

The old list of hero ancestors was a long one, and now their children's children, to the third and fourth generation are enduring the supreme test of manhood in the greatest war of all time.

Some effort, I feel, must be made to record in these memoirs the last great sacrifice of members of our race, who, to-day, stand in the trenches at Flanders, unafraid in the face of the enemies of civilization, ready to sacrifice their lives if need be, for the blessing of an enduring peace.

This world's carnival of crime: Is it the work of God, the devil, or of man?

In some measure it has put us out of harmony with our ideals of justice, truth, and right, and changed the whole trend of our thought. "The survival of the fittest;" the creed of the materialist that "Might is Right," is brought forcible to our minds.

Peace seems impossible upon the earth. Man is afraid of man, and one power fearful of the dominion of another power. A nation which does not fight will be absorbed by a nation which does fight. War is as inevitable as destiny, and men have killed each other since Cain's crime in the Garden of Eden.

We cannot think of murder as anything but devil born; and yet Nature permits the beasts of the earth to destroy one another, that brute strength may survive. And what is war, but constitutional homicide!

---

## AND THAT'S WHAT MADE THE DEVIL LAUGH.

Said Cain to Satan, since the hour
Desire conceived the thought of power,
Thy voice and presence thralls my will;
Thou, who doth say 'tis right to kill.
The words, quoth Satan, are not mine.
Thou say'st it, Nature is Divine,
And Nature kills, and so contrives
To linger on the fittest lives,
If thou would'st be a Superman,
Then do thou follow Nature's plan.
If Might is Right, 'tis right to slay
Thy brother Abel's in the way.
But for this accident of birth,
Thou, Cain, could'st now possess the Earth.

. . . . . .

And Cain slew Abel with his staff,
And that's what made the devil laugh.

And Satan has not changed his plan,
He knows the hour, and knows the Man;
Who poses as men do in prayer,
And with a very pious air
Proclaims that those of German birth
Are only fit to rule the earth.
And he and God would so contrive
The fittest only should survive.
Twas thus, through pride and Hell's desire,
The devil set his brain on fire,
And war and famine stalked the land,
And those were slain who stayed his hand.
Abnormal crimes of lust and shame
were done, and in the Kaiser's name,
That Britain, too, should feel his might,
He murders babies in the night;
And drowns their women in the sea—
And God permitted him to be.

. . . . . .

The world was cursed with German "straff,"
And that's what maked the devil laugh.

And as it was in Eden's bower
Desire conceived the thought of power;
So now where peace and "kulture" reigned
There fell the curse, the curse of Cain.
And we at home have sent our youth,
'Midst prayers, to battle for the Truth.
And all our hearts are so inclined
To shield the dear ones left behind,
And cherish those, who, bearing scars,
Return, with hallmarks, from the wars.
We pray to God to give us aid
To keep this vow that we have made.

. . . . . .

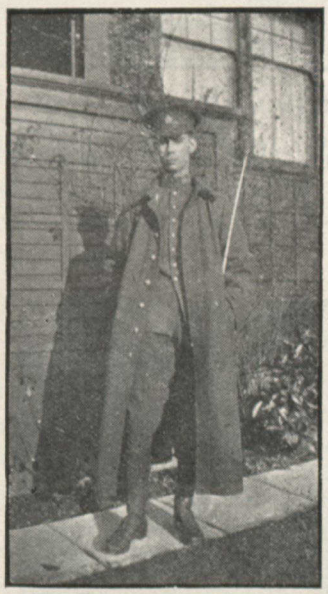
So, in the battle's aftermath,
The devil have no cause to laugh.

---

## HONOR ROLL

**ARTHUR CROSS GOODMAN**
196th Canadian University Battalion. Nearest of kin Vancouver, B. C.

**MAJOR FORSYTH**
Canadian Highland Brigade, from Victoria. B. C.



**EDWIN MUNRO GOODMAN.**
Transport Services, Imperial Forces. Nearest of kin, Vancouver, B. C.

**EDWIN ELLIS GOODMAN**

Seaforth Highlanders School Battalion—250 already drafted to Front.

**LAURENCE M. WEDD**

Lieutenant. Nearest of kin, Kitchener, Ont.

**REGINALD SLANN**

Imperial Forces. Nearest of kin, Bournemouth, Eng.

**HERBERT FAIRFIELD**

Lieutenant. Nearest of kin, St. Catharines, Ont.

**HAROLD GOODMAN**

Lieutenant. Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

**DUNCAN ELLIS**

Cousin Edwin Ellis Goodman. Joined Artist Rifles as Private, promoted to Lieutenant Royal Engineers. Military Cross. Died at front. Nearest of kin, Virtoria, B. C.

**ALEXANDER BRUCE CAMPBELL**

Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

**ROBERT HECTOR CAMPBELL**

Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

**HENRY SIDNEY HAMILTON**

Second Battalion. Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

**ALBAN BUTLER**

Lieutenant. Nearest of kin, St. Catharines, Ont.

**ARTHUR B. PARROTT**

Nearest of kin, Delaware, Ont.

**McCRAE CAMPBELL**

Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

**JAMES McPHERSON McARTHUR**

70th Battalion. Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

**CHRISTOPHER CRAIG**

104th Canadian Battalion. Nearest of kin, Toronto, Ont.

---

During the progress of this work I was frequently assisted by strangers; with some, it gave me pleasure to claim a very remote kinship, and in every case a warm friendship sprang up between us, which was more strongly cemented as the work progressed. I regret to say that many of them did not live until my task was finished.

Those, here chronicled, having died in the last few years: Besides my Father, Mother, Brother Arthur, and Sister Louisa, my Uncle Ambrose Goodman, and my Aunt Helen (Taylor) Goodman, and my Grandfather Calvin B. Cross, and my Stepmother Jessie (McCallum) Goodman, I have lost the following friends, some of them remotely connected with the family, and all of whom took a deep interest in the compiling of these memoirs:

Mrs. (Chase) Cross; Senator Ezra Stearns, Fitchburg, Mass.; Mrs. Purmort; Mrs. Beamer; Elizabeth Julia Slann, Bournemouth, England; Eleanor Slann, Bournemouth, England; Mrs. Bellachey, formerly 62 Lonsdale Road, Oxford, England; Major Webb, England; Mrs. (Holloway) Seabrook, Victoria, B. C.; Arthur Seabrook, Delaware, Ont.; George Riggs, supposedly dead, all letters unanswered (last male descendant of the line.)

I take this opportunity of expressing my thanks to the following relatives and friends who assisted me, and without whom my efforts would have been in vain: My Uncle, Colonel Kenneth Goodman, Parkhill, Ontario; my Brother, Harry C. Goodman, St. Catharines, Ontario; my Brother, Edward Cross Goodman, 965 13th Ave. W., Vancouver, B. C.; Mrs. E. C. Goodman;

Ambrose Goodman, LL.B., 611 Lumsden Building, Toronto; E. K. Williams; Helen Goodman, Chicago; Mrs. Bella (Goodman) Dresser, 995 Hylyard St., Eugene, Ore., U. S.; Mrs. (Goodman) Fairfield, Ontario St., St. Catharines, Ont.; Emma (Hicks) Goodman, Perth, Ontario; Mrs. (Belachey) James, Eng.; Mrs. (Seabrook )Harrison, 1323 Harrison St., Victoria, B. C.; Mabel (Goodman) Wedd, Kitchener, Ont.; Edith (Goodman) Williams, Laduc, Al. Mr. and Mrs. H. Trumper, Delaware, Ont.; Mrs. West, West Lodge, Trusthorpe, Mabelthorpe, Lincs., Eng.; Mrs. Henville, Richmond Court, 4 Richmond Hill, Bournemouth, England; Reginald Slann,At the Front; Miss Mercy Egerton, 355 Euclid Avenue, Elmira, N.Y.; C. W. Eastman, Saluda, Virginia; Miss Jessy Thompson, 170 Albany Ave., Toronto; Miss Elizabeth Riggs, rms. 204, 206, 208 Phoenix Bldg., Holyoke, Mass; Alderman Jacobs, Winchester, England; Countess Malmsbury, England; Mrs. (Scott) Livingston, "The Algonquin", 6, W. 107th St., New York; Miss C. S. Bagster, Willoughby Road, Taunton, England; Mrs. Alban Butler, St. Catharines, Ont.; Miss Grace Cross, room 224 Baystate, Lawrence, Mass.; Mrs. L. F. Cross, same address; Mrs. Elsie Cross, 1485 Alice St., Oakland, Cal.; Henry Rigg, 3 Medeley Road, Ealing, W., England; Francis Riggs, 1311 Massachussetts Cor., Washington, D.C.; Rev. R. T. Cross; Rev. E. A. Bell, England; H. G. Ross, Vancouver, B. C.; Col. Ball,Virginia; and many others, including Municipal and County Clerks, and a number of professional genealogists. whose courtesies extended far beyond the professional labors imposed upon them.

---

## EPILOGUE

My task is finished.

If there is a lesson to be learned in reviewing the lives of our ancestors from generation to generation, it is that duty is with us, always imperative as destiny, and as immutable as the other eternal laws of God.

There is a joy in living, and yet, if reason does not adequately control desire, Nature rebels and warns us of the perils of excess.

Duty, possessed in an eminent degree by our ancestors, is a sure guide to the rational enjoyment of life, individually, and in our relation to others.

I once heard a mother say to her son, when he was leaving home: "Have all the fun you can, my boy, but don't hurt anyone." This homely remark, taken in its widest sense is an epitome of all the sermons on morality ever preached. If we do not hurt others we will not hurt ourselves.

Our ancestors lived in a puritan age, when pious cant was not, I think, taken quite literally, any more than the expression "How do you do?" is taken literally by passing acquaintances. The cant of yesterday was introduced into polite conversation and letter writing, and became the characteristic of the British and American people. The professing Christians of to-day are just as

good men anad women as those of 50 or 100 years ago, but they talk less about it. I am, however, more interested in the fact that some of our forebears professed to have solved the great enigma of existence. Numerous have been their expressions of unqualified belief in their letters that God had given them a new and better covenant. They had a firm conviction of the divinity of Christ; an incomprehensible Christian love and inspiring hope, and a sublime faith, which believed all things are for the best, which endureth all things, and which professeth to see in the calamities of life and nature the wise dispensation of a providing Father, a beneficient source of fruitfulness and parental affection.

Did they, in fact, find the true Word, or were they deceived by the scriptures; for it is written:

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God."

In the days of our more ancient ancestors it was easier to profess the teachings of the dominent priesthood, than to go to the stake; to-day we enjoy freedom of individual thought and speech. We are not punished for our belief, so at this time there are those who declare that the Word has been lost, and that our ancient brethren have but given us a substitute.

They refer to what they allege to be the abominations of Nature, which permit the stronger animals to destroy the weaker; and the birds in the air, and the fish in the sea.

They designate the present war as a carnival of crime, legalized by Christian nations of the earth, while the preachers of the gospel, proclaiming the "True Word" among the belligerent nations, cry "Kill, kill! In the name of God and Humanity, kill!" They point to the wide prevalence of falsehood, cloaking the intentions of nations, peoples, governments, and men, and to the people of every land, who periodically rebel against the alleged weariness and monotony of existence arising from the imposed practice of the cardinal virtues, and often resent the enforcement of laws, which compels the practice of temperance, prudence, justice and fortitude.

Life may be likened to a journey which every man takes in search of the "True Word." He must find the way himself, and proceed on his travels without a compass, and over an uncharted course, along highways and through byways, until he reaches the shores of a great ocean, beyond which is the mysterious bourn from which no traveller has ever returned.

What is Truth and Right? My last words to my kinsmen will be my answer:

AN ALLEGORICAL PRESENTATION OF EVERYMAN IN HIS SEARCH FOR THE TRUE WORD.

THE SCENE IS LAID IN THE FOREST OF DOUBT.

Everyman, wandering in the woods and mountains, has lost his way—the sky is obscured—darkness covers the face of the earth—a storm is approaching. Everyman seeks the shelter of the nearby forest, and seating himself beneath the branches of a widespreading cedar tree, thus soliloquises:

*Storms without—within despair,*
*I'm driven here and driven there,*
*And ever am unknowing*
*From whence I came and hither why;*
*I'm doomed to live and doomed to die*
*And know not where I'm going.*

*There is no peace, no help from pain,*
*No certitude, and love is vain,*
*And dear desire is dying.*
*Swept by confused alarms and fright,*
*I seek the haunted shades of night,*
*Their moaning and their sighing.*

Wail on, ye winds, a fitting dirge
*For souls that swirl upon the surge*
*Of time's tempestuous ocean;*
*I've passed my pilot and too late*
*The Saragossa Sea of Fate*
*May claim a life's devotion.*

The storm increases in violence, and bursting in all its fury, sweeps the swaying cedars from its path. Amidst the din and clamor of the warring elements, Everyman is awakened to a sense of personal danger. He hesitates to appeal to the Almighty, for he had denied God and leant on Reason as his guide. Finally, fear forces him to his knees, and his soul in its agony pours forth its faltering unbelief to Heaven.

*Oh, Lord, I've little faith to pray;*
*But fear doth banish doubt's delay.*
*I seek some sign or warning,*
*If thou wilt set my feet aright,*
*Thy saving grace I shall requite*
*In penitence and mourning.*

Everyman was on his knees, a space removed from the cedar tree, when a blinding flash of lightning, followed by a deafening thunder clap, caused him to reel and fall forward upon his face, as one dead: . . . . . .

. . . . . ,

As the distant thunder rumbles and reverberates through the far-off hills, he slowly recovers his senses, and peering through the darkness is startled by the sight which meets his gaze; for the cedar tree beneath which he had been sitting had been cleft in twain by God' thunderbolt. Thus he had been saved whilst in the attitude of prayer. "Surely," he soliloquises, "this is the hand of God"—and as he realises how near he has been to death he exclaims:—

*Everyman*—
*My Conscience, I am sorely tried:—*

*Conscience*—
*You called me—I am by your side,*
*I'm ever near.*

*Everyman*—
*Then lead me from this haunted wood*
*Where nature in her angry mood*
*Doth harbor fear.*

Following a narrow trail, they enter a cave in the forest.

*Everyman*—Where am I?

*Conscience*—In the chamber of Reflection, and so removed from the storm without.

*Everyman*—It is dark here.

*Conscience*—Aye, even unto the darkness of death which thou hast so narrowly escaped:—

*Though praying more from fear than choice*
*When thundered Heaven's mighty voice,*
*Thy prayer was heard;*
*Here hold communion with Thy soul.*
*In fitting time thou shalt behold*
*The sacred Word.*

*Everyman*—Hear thou my confession:—
*It came to pass, in early youth*
*I started out to find the Truth;*
*In whispered admonition*
*My Conscience bade me watch and pray;*
*I hesitated to obey*
*And yielded to ambition.*

*A thousand fancies filled my brains*
*I'd tread the flowery meads of fame,*
*And on the field of glory*
*I'd BATTLE for the truth and right*
*Like many a brave and valiant knight*
*Immortalized in story.*

*My Conscience urged me to submit*
*Unto the laws of holy writ,*
*Which prophets have propounded:*
*Who leans on Reason as his guide*
*To lead him right whate'er betide*
*Was sure to be confounded.*

I heeded not the admonition, and after many years of labor and suffering, I had proceeded a long distance on my journey in search of the true word when my way took me to the gates of Gotham, where Mammon reigned, and the hoodwink had been removed from the eyes of justice, and for the last time I searched here, but all in vain. So, after long endeavor, I sank by the wayside, weary and oppressed.

One who was worldly wise, and who was journeying in that direction, pitied my condition, and lifting me upon my feet, we travelled together back to the great city; and he said to me, "Hast thou not heard that discretion is the better part of valor? Thou art valorous, but not discreet, and so thou art wasting thy substance, and youth is departing from thee. Know thou, then, that TRUTH is hidden in subterfuge and dissemblement, that Mammon might reign in Gotham. Yield to the primal law of nature, self-preservation; enter the ranks of Mammon, and so obtain that which thou seekest, the source of true happiness. Henceforth let Sophistry and Allurement be thy guides."

It was thus I became a dissembler among men, and I sojourned in the marketplace and bartered for great gain:—

*I have but little more to say;*
*The measure of my yea or nay*
*Was not the understanding*
*Of those with whom I had to deal.*
*I showed the shadow for the real,*
*Where wisdom was demanding.*

*By such contrivement I obtained*
*Some hollow mockery of fame,*
*And pride was high exalted;*
*And then it came to pass—God's hand*
*Was laid so heavy on the land*
*The wheels of commerce halted.*

*And out of chaos truth emerged,*
*For lo, the marketplace was scourged,*
*And Heaven showed no pity;*
*On all alike, the chastening rod*
*Had fallen, by the hand of God,*
*Upon the wanton city.*

. . . . . .

*'Midst hope deferred and sorrows, tears,*
*I struggled onward through the years,*
*My life to toil resigning;*
*But fortune ever served me ill,*
*For naught was fashioned to my will,*
*But left me still repining.*

*My labors had been all in vain,*
*And this there's no denying—*
*I could not have my youth again,*
*But still must go on trying.*

*Conscience*—What of thy boasted wisdom?

*Everyman*—
*My wisdom was of little weight*
*Against the irony of fate.*
*Conscience*—
*Whatever be our portion;*
*'Tis not so much our gain or loss*
*As it is how we bear our cross*
*Or meet our better fortune.*
*Everyman*—
*But fortune does not work by rule,*
*For lack of wit in some great fool*
*She often seems condoning,*
*By raising him to power or place*
*Where virtue, wisdom, skill or grace,*
*She should be so enthroning.*

*Though labor is the lot of man,*
*There is no formula or plan*
*Insuring his ambition;*
*For circumstances, over night,*
*May bring a blessing or a blight*
*To alter his position.*

*Our life is like the thistle down*
*Which leaves its moorings near the ground,*
*And willy nilly going,*
*Directs its course towards the skies,*
*But only hither, thither flies,*
*The random breezes blowing.*

*And whilst its seeds are scattered far,*
*The thistle down is falling.*
*How strange the ways of nature are,*
*Her secrets how appalling.*

*Conscience*—To prepare thy mind for thy forward journey let us proceed to the temple of King Solomon, and give heed to the soothsaying of the wisest of sages, whose proverbs shall endure for all time.

They reach the gates of the Temple, and Everyman is admitted into the presence of the Most Wise Sovereign, and prostrates himself before the throne.

*Solomon*—Who and what art thou?

*Everyman*—I am a pilgrim wandering in the woods and mountains in search of the true word, and I have lost my way.

*Solomon*—Kneel at the altar, place thy hands upon the volume of the sacred law, and say upon thine honor:

. . . . . .

And so it was Everyman confessed to his shortcomings, and they were many and grievous. And Solomon said unto him: "Rise, my son; out of the deep well of my experience, I have drawn for mankind the sparkling waters of admonition and warning. Take heed of my words that they may serve thee against the day of thy transgression." And Solomon spake many proverbs, and long they discoursed together, and he said unto Everyman: "In the Forest of Doubt, when despair and darkness overshadowed thee, thou didst pray for a sign, thus confessing thou didst fear the Lord. Knowest thou, then, that the fear of the Lord is the beginning of understanding? How old art thou?

*Everyman*—One score and seven.

*Solomon*—Thou hast not yet passed the age of folly. Thy wisdom is foolishness with God. Travel for thirty-three years to the north, west and south, and when thou hast reached the age of three score return unto me, and I will teach thee true wisdom, which in thy present state of mind thou wouldst not comprehend. Go, my son, and God be with thee.

And so it was that Everyman found himself alone with his conscience at the outer gates of the temple, where stood the Pillar of Wisdom.

*Conscience*—Pray for Faith to be thy sure guide.

*Everyman*—I do not believe in the efficacy of prayer. And thou, my Conscience—

*You do not think that God will pause*
*To change the course of Nature's laws*
*To please a youth?*
*And by this answer I have made*
*To thee, I have at least betrayed*
*My love of truth.*

*Conscience*—Dost thou believe it is right and proper to humble thyself before God?

*Everyman*—Yes, in the sense that He is the Creator, and we are His creatures.

*Conscience*—Then thou believest in prayer:—

*So do not doubt in solemn tone*
*That thy petitions reach the throne;*
*I have no fear*
*If you should simply bow your head,*
*He'd answer, though no word was said,*
*If you're sincere.*

*And those who contemplate, or plan*
*Against the laws of God or man,*
*If they could say:—*
*"Oh Lord, have pity upon me—"*
*A light would come, and they would see*
*The better way.*

*And is the value of a prayer*
*To be appraised by our own share*
*Of gifts divine?*
*It is not so; our faith confessed,*
*Then He will do as He deems best*
*In fitting time.*

*Everyman*—You have asked me to pray for faith, which is void and without form; intangible as a dream or thought.

*Conscience*—Have I not been your inward monitor since childhood?

*Everyman*—Surely.

*Conscience*—And yet you have not seen me. You have likened faith to a dream or thought. It is a happy expression, taken in its widest sense, for faith, which is thought, is the substance of things longed for. The mightiest inventions of the ages have been the triumphs of man's faith, which is thought. Do not belittle faith. It carries the world upon its back:—

*So from the visions of the brain*
*We work our will, and not in vain—*
*There is no doubt.*
*Before each triumph has been won,*
*Or ere a mighty deed is done*
*'Tis dreamed about.*

*For we are only as we think;*
*We forge our chains, each thought a link*
*To bind us sure.*
*If we have faith in Him above,*
*Our will is bound in bonds of love*
*Which shall endure.*

*And so it is that we are taught*
*All things that are, have been a thought.*
*We cannot cease*
*From thinking good, or thinking ill,*
*But if we've faith to do His will,*
*'Twill bring us peace.*

*Everyman*—As I was listening to the sublime truths, so irresistibly presented to my doubting mind, the voice of Reason was stilled within me, and conviction came upon me, and I earnestly desired that faith might be revealed; when I heard a voice saying unto me: "Dear Soul, beloved of God."

*Conscience*—It was the voice of Faith.

*Everyman*—And I answered: Amen.

*Conscience*—On thy natal day God gave thee gifts, which were to be revealed only when thou hadst arrived at years of discretion. Now is the appointed time.

*Everyman*—Are God's gifts so wonderful?

*Conscience*—

*No flights of fancy overbold,*
*Or phantom stories ever told*
*Could keep apace;*
*With Nature's strange mysterious laws,*
*Which Science calls effect and cause,*
*To guide the race.*

*For every secret nature holds*
*There is a "Se-sa-me" which folds*
*Aside the veil;*
*That we may seize her magic fire,*
*And harness it to our desire,*
*Great heights to scale.*

*The power which guides the finger tips,*
*And yields us art, or shapes the lips*
*To eloquence;*
*That gracious, potent, witching charm*
*Which doth persuade, seduce, disarm*
*All ill-intents.*

*The gift which mortals covet much,*
*Which turns to gold that which they touch*
*With magic wand;*
*But once too often used, its power*
*Reverses, and within an hour*
*Their wealth is gone.*

*A wonderous store doth Nature yield*
*At wisdom's pillar let us kneel*
*And pray that we*
*May use her gifts as best we can*
*To God's own glory, and to man,*
*Unselfishly.*

They kneel in prayer, and on rising Conscience says to Everyman:—

*A constant and a contrite heart,*
*The dower which Nature doth impart,*
*Is thine to share;*
*Lest petty pride and overpraise*
*Bedim the lustre of your days,*
*Beware! Beware!*

*Do deeds of love, in pity's name,*
*Nor seek for profit, praise, or blame,*
*Nor want to know.*
*Who sooths affliction and distress*
*In silence, he is doubly blest:*
*'Tis better so.*

Then they journeyed towards the south, and after many years of trial and difficulty they came to an open country of hill and plain, and Everyman beheld in the distance a lofty mountain. "Look yonder!" he exclaimed. "How inspiring those majestic crags and cliffs, as they appear softened through the diaphanous haze of early day, half veiled from mortal eyes, as if inviting ambition to seek in the mighty storehouses of nature for hidden treasure."

*Conscience*—Yonder is the mountain of Pride, and the building on its slope is called the Castle of Vanity. Go forward at thy peril.

*Everyman*—My blood doth stir strangely within me, recalling the days of my youth, when the red flood coursed like a torrent through my veins. I say unto you, that this night I shall be a guest at Castle Vanity; and before tomorrow's sun hath set I shall have scaled the summit of the Mountain of Pride. Farewell!

*Conscience*—

*You've heard my voice since early youth,*
*And it has ever spoken truth*
*In whispered admonition;*
*Then, this the lesson I'd reveal,*
*That base desire is at the heel*
*Of unrestrained ambition.*

*So, down to hell, in eons past,*
*An high archangel Heaven cast,*
*Celestial powers defending;*
*Thus by ambition, fell from grace,*
*The tempter of the human race*
*To darkest depths descending.*

*Yet man hath ever felt surprise*
*If one he deemed exceeding wise,*
*When crazed with aggrandizement,*
*Deserted every trusting friend*
*And come to ignominious end,*
*When suffering God's chastisement.*

*'Tis not thy will, but mine, be done;*
*The world this day doth know of one*
*This high pronouncement scorning,*
*Who sits upon a tottering throne*
*Whilst war and famine claim their own,*
*With countless thousands mourning.*

*Though nature yields us what we need,*
*She puts a limit on our greed,*
*And so is unrelenting.*
*If we should disobey her laws,*
*Then we shall find abundant cause*
*For sorrow and repenting.*

*And those have found, who, in their pride*
*Would reach the sky, or stem the tide,*
*They do but court disaster.*
*Thus nature's lesson, most profound,*
*If reason venture out of bound,*
*Then ruin follows faster.*

*Everyman*—Your moral platitudes are unconvincing. I do not wish to hear your voice again. I am on my way to wealth and fame and Reason shall be my only guide.

Conscience calls after him, but he turns a deaf ear, and is soon lost in the distance. That night Everyman reached the Castle of Vanity, and was sumptuously entertained. On the following morning the Lord of the Castle showed him the way to the caverns of wealth, and he set forth on his perilous journey.

. . . . . .

Later.—At the foot of a deep cleft in the rock, Everyman is lying senseless and inert. Finally he opens his eyes, sighs faintly and lies quite still.

*Conscience*—I am by thy side; if thou art able, I would have thee relate to me thy experience.

*Everyman*—I reached my goal of high emprise. Directly above me I saw what appeared to be a great store of wealth scattered about in confusion. The sun had broken out, and every crevice and indenture in the rocks scintillated with rainbow lights. I was mad with joy, and desiring a better coign of vantage to view my great treasure, I

seized hold of a jutting rock and must have slipped or fallen. The knowledge that I was alive came to me when I heard your voice saying: "Pray for Faith." I prayed, and Faith abided with me.

When Everyman had recovered in mind and body, Conscience said unto him, "Behold the Mountain of Pride," and Everyman looked and saw that by a convulsion of Nature the side of the mountain had been rent asunder.

*Conscience*—Thy escape hath been providential, for thou wert on the very edge of a great calamity. The Castle of Vanity hath vanished and the city nearby is no more. It will, however, rise again, for Vanity hath many heirs.

. . . . . .

They travelled onward, and at length reached a bridge called the Middle Span of Life, and on the other side, on a rising ground was a building named the Castle of Beauty. At the gates of the castle they were met by three Graces —Gentleness, Amiability, and Harmony.

Everyman was shown through the various apartments dedicated to Art and Science, where were exhibited the wonderful works of man, by the grace of God. There were also many enchanted chambers, including the Hall of Concord, and the Bower of Poesy, and Everyman's soul was elevated and his mind instructed by the influence of his surroundings, and he said unto the three Graces:

"It is a pleasant change after the stress and turmoil to have the senses refreshed by 'all that beauty, all that wealth ere gave' towards the happiness of mankind. Why should I not remain here for the rest of my days, surrounded by so much happiness?"

The Three Graces replied, "Why not? Wouldst thou be pleased to ask gifts of us?"

*Everyman*—I would have my mind purged of vicious thoughts and would be long-suffering and considerate of others.

*Gentleness*—It is granted.

*Everyman*—I would be graceful of speech, of even temper, forbearing the weaknesses of others, and not envious.

*Amiability*—It is granted.

*Everyman*—I would have the gift of song.

*Harmony*—It is granted.

*Everyman*—Have I done wrong, my Conscience, in receiving these gifts?

*Conscience*—Thou hast not done wrong, for thou hast attained thereby beauty of character. Nevertheless, thou wilt be an unprofitable servant if thou dost not use these acquirements to God's glory and

thine own honor. Earthly pleasures wane. I lead thee to a peace which endureth. Let us continue our journey.

They arrive at the outer gates of the castle where stands the Pillar of Beauty.

*Everyman*—I desire to remain here, for I am without HOPE of greater happiness.

*Conscience*—Kneel at the Pillar of Beauty, and pray that thou mayest find that Divine Blessing derived from God by man.

Everyman prays, and on rising expresses his willingness to proceed, for he has found HOPE to be his other guide.

So for many days they journeyed onward.

*Conscience*—Travelling in a wide circle we have again reached the forest of Doubt, which we must pass through on our way to the Temple of the most wise King.

(As they enter the forest Everyman sighs heavily.)

*Conscience*—Behold the smitten cedar where Heaven spoke to thy doubting soul!

*Everyman*—I would fain rest beside its blasted trunk and draw a gloomy conclusion from the fact that my inevitable end is approaching, when I shall strive no more. For all seems unavailing.

*Hope*—Say not so: Death is the heritage of worms and serpents—of rottenness and cold dishonor. Look not upon death, but set thy mind upon life eternal. Behold the heavens, not the earth; and as we go forward to certain success, I shall relate to thee the experience of a fellow pilgrim, who passed from the Forest of Doubt, through the Valley of the Shadow of Death into Life Eternal.

*I knew of one in honest doubt*
*Who tried to think the matter out,*
*And come to a conclusion.*
*If Reason guide the human thought,*
*And Reason should, then Faith was naught,*
*'Twas only a delusion.*

*There still might be another way,*
*And he was not denying*
*A higher power, if he should say*
*I only know I'm dying.*

*He could not sense the power that wrought,*
*The heart, that beat, the brain, that thought,*
*Unless by Faith assisted;*
*The surgeon's knife had probed in vain*
*To find the power that moved these twain,*
*And yet that power existed.*

*And too, the longing of his heart*
*Had helped him in descrying*
*That Faith revealed the greater part,*
*Eternity, in dying.*

*The sweep of science could not find*
*The evidence of things divine.*
*Though Heaven split asunder,*
*The truth would still remain unseen,*
*In sky, or earth, or in between,*
*Or all the waters under.*

*So whatsoever be our plea,*
*How useless to be trying,*
*Unless we had the faith to see*
*The vision of the dying.*

*The world of eosteric thought*
*Had failed to add a single jot*
*To human understanding;*
*Between tomorrow and today,*
*What is to be, we cannot say;*
*And still we go on planning.*

*Shall Faith succeed if Reason fail,*
*In doubt and darkness trying,*
*To lift the great, mysterious veil*
*Between the dead and dying?*

*And he confessed, for he was just,*
*That Nature held his life in trust,*
*That he was on probation;*
*If he believed in Nature's laws,*
*Could he deny a higher cause—*
*The source of their creation?*

*Then, like a child, who, tired out,*
*Doth fear the dark, and so, in doubt,*
*Will lie awake and wonder;*
*Till, crying at its own alarms,*
*It seeks protection in the arms*
*Which rock it off to slumber.*

*In simple trust he sought for grace,*
*In confidence relying,*
*Upon God's promise to the race,*
*Eternal peace in dying.*

*And in that solemn hour it came*
*When he pronounced the sacred name,*
*Until his days were ended:*

*He wore the lamb-skin apron of*
*A blameless life, and Fanth and Love*
*He evermore defended.*

*And when at last he went to rest,*
*His arms were folded o'er his breast*
*In silent salutation*
*To Him Who is indeed most wise,*
*Who lives and reigns beyond the skies.*
*Thus ended his probation.*

Everyman, lost in cocntemplation of the inspiring words of Hope, had been travelling steadily onward, his mind filled with visions of Heavenly beauty, and he thus broke into song, unburdening his soul:

*As I was thinking of thy theme*
*There came to me as in a dream,*
*That other night*
*In childhood, when around my bed*
*There stood the phantoms, Doubt and Dread.*
*I longed for the light.*

*Though fifty years have passed away,*
*Those phantoms still remain today.*
*May Faith assuage*
*The fear of Death, for which I wait,*
*Till time throws wide the outer gate*
*To trembling age.*

*This life's a journey all must take,*
*And every moment's big with fate,*
*'Tis here and gone:*
*When sorrow meets us everywhere,*
*We choose our guides with greater care,*
*And travel on.*

*Adversity hath played its part,*
*And touched with love each erring heart;*
*For we have found*
*That God Himself hath stayed our feet*
*And brought us back, where we may meet*
*On common ground.*

*We cannot understand His way,*
*We see a nation go astray,*
*And Heaven's wrath.*
*But this we know that soon or late,*
*He brings them to a better state*
*By sorrow's path.*

*We do not understand the tears,*
*The bitter memories of the years,*
*We wonder why.*
*We seek to sense them by a word,*
*These mournful echoes we have heard:*
*As well to try*

*To know the language of the soul*
*When we have heard the billows roll*
*Along the deep;*
*Or by some occult sense, succeed*
*The message of the stars to read*
*Whilst others sleep.*

*Explain the yearning that has come*
*To us, when glorious, the sun*
*Set dies;*
*To learn the whispering of the trees,*
*To know the language of the breeze,*
*Or why it sighs.*

*And so my soul, by Doubt oppressed,*
*Can find no place on earth to rest,*
*It looks above;*
*I know that God alone can heal*
*The wounded soul, and thus I kneel—*
*And pray for love.*

*Conscience*—We now stand at the pillar of Strength, at the outer gates of the Temple, where abodeth the Mystic brotherhood of man—and Love, which thou hast prayed for, cometh from hence to be thy sure guide. Thou hast three divine messengers to administer unto thee: Faith, Hope and Charity, whose other name is Love, and the greatest of these is the last.

Everyman leans heavily on his new found guide, and so reaches the Temple of Strength, where, trembling with old age and the infirmities of life, he sinks exhausted to the ground. The Brethren hasten to his assistance, and as he is tenderly borne into the Temple, over the door he sees the motto: "Brotherly Love, Relief and Truth."

. . . . . .

(The Prelate appears.)

*Everyman*—Is this the Temple of God?

*Prelate*—It is not the living Church. The brethren but desire to help weary pilgrims on their way.

*Everyman*—What is the creed of the Brotherhood?

*Prelate*—They've blended all the creeds in one. A greater deed was never done, for "Love" is what they're teaching.

*Everyman*—I see no signs and symbols upon these lofty pillars.

*Prelate*—

*Our ancient brethren carved their sign*
*On massive stone, in sacred shrine,*
*Its permanence insuring;*
*But stone and shrine returned to dust,*
*As everything in nature must,*
*For Love alone's enduring.*

*And now the truths that they'd impart*
*In symbols signifying,*
*They carve upon the human heart—*
*And so they are undying.*

*For signs and symbols are as naught,*
*Unless they clothe a worthy thought.*
*It is the heart they're reaching.*
*And so a thousand things by name,*
*They think, and with a sign proclaim*
*The lesson they are teaching.*

*Everyman*—Your symbolism is copied from Nature herself.

*Prelate*—*Even so.*

*Everyman*—When life was young, and before I knew of your great fraternity which teaches by signs, I knew of Nature's signs. Shall I relate my experience?

*Prelate*—Surely.

---

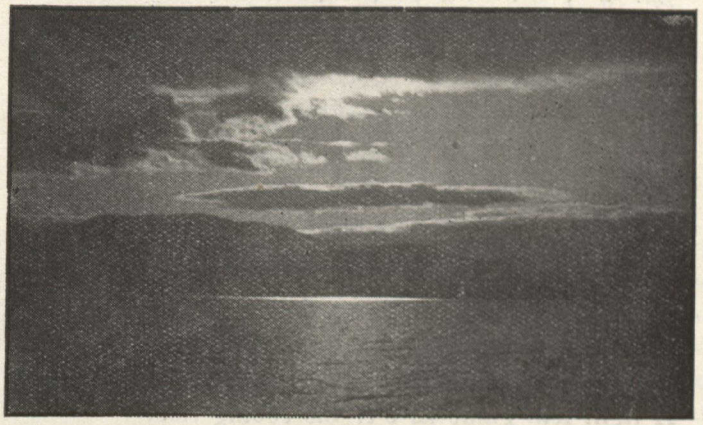
## THE SYMBOLISM OF THE HEAVENS.

*Everyman*—

*I've watched the dying day upon the crest*
*Of yonder mountain in the darkening west;*
*I've heard in measured cadence o'er and o'er*
*The billows break and moan along the shore:—*

*As dies the day, do we go out at last—*
*In darkness and despair do we so pass.*
*Shall hope be hidden by the wings of night,*
*And leave no sign, no glimmering ray of light?*

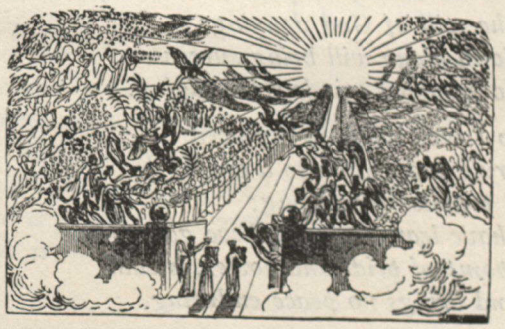
*These were my thoughts, but even as I mused*
*A shimmering radiance o'er the sky diffused,*
*As fitting answer to a doubting mind.*
*A heavenly omen as my thoughts defined.*



*The lowering clouds are lined with golden fleece—*
*A radiant emblem of eternal peace—*
*And as I saw the clouds their glory bear*
*I thought where darkness is yet Hope is there.*

*And up aloft a greater glory now,*
*And all the worlds in veneration bow,*
*Whilst Heaven itself in majesty proclaims*
*Its promise to mankind in glowing flames.*

*And this the message that its radiance brings,*
*The Lord provides for all His living things.*
*The lowering clouds, the sun has broken through,*
*And on the steeple brings the Cross to view.*



*Whilst Heavenly voices linger in the air,*
*"Ye heavy laden, lay your burdens there,"—*
*And o'er the ebbing tide a path is laid*
*The way of life, have Faith, be not afraid.*

*At Heaven's end, 'tis lost in glory deep,*
*Upon the earth it tempts our erring feet,*
*And now 'tis gone, yet fleeting as a thought*
*Another message to the world is brought.*

*'Tis flashed in signals o'er the distant moor,*
*And glares upon the cottage of the poor,*
*To those whose lives are sadder than the rest*
*This mystic sign is sent from out the west.*

*Thy labors done, thy pain and sorrow o'er,*
*Eternal peace is thine—be patient and endure.*
*And slow the curtain of the sky is furled,*
*And we are left in darkness with the world.*

*I can but think; if living as we should*
*We go about our labors doing good,*
*That when our souls may here no longer bide*
*A light will guide us o'er the ebbing tide.*

. . . . . .

Everyman proceeded on his journey and arrived at the Temple of King Solomon, and prostrated himself before the throne. Solomon said unto him: "Rise, Servant of Justice, Truth and Right, and relate to me thy experience." After Everyman had finished, he said unto Solomon:

*So, I have come to think at last,*
*When I review my erring past,*
*Of many truths unheeded;*
*Though Wisdom, Grace and Strength of Mind*
*Are worthy virtues of their kind,*
*Theres something more that's needed.*

*There is no surety of peace,*
*The will of God denying;*
*And Faith alone will bring surcease*
*To troubled minds when dying.*

*And so I turn when in my need*
*From rule and reason to a creed,*
*A promise reassuring;*
*For I have learned that all we gain*
*From pomp of pride and power, is vain,*
*And brings no peace enduring.*

*And Faith abides, whate'er befalls,*
*And Truth is underlying*
*The words that Love embraces all,*
*A solace to the dying.*

*To other faults, if we are blind,*
*Are just and true and love mankind,*
*Our faith is surely founded;*
*And if we bear an honored name,*
*We need nor wealth, nor power, nor fame,*
*Our fortune is unbounded.*

*For who has Faith and Hope and Love*
*May rest his case, relying*
*Upon God's promise from above,*
*Eternal peace in dying.*

After they had discoursed together, long they knelt in prayer, and when they had finished a bright light filled the chamber, and Everyman saw a vision of surpassing beauty, that only the redeemed may speak of—but this much may be said, that with the eyes of Faith, he beheld the divine messengers who had been ministering unto him and they were clothed in robes of light, and grouped about a luminous pedestal on which was inscribed the lost word. Solomon said unto him:—

*Thy faith permits thee to behold*
*The emblem of the living soul;*
*Kneel, Mortal, kneel.*
*The source of happiness and truth*
*Which thou hast sought since early youth*
*Is now revealed.*

. . . . . .

And it came to pass that Everyman reached the allotted span of life, and when it was time to depart, his guardian angels, Faith, Hope and Charity, stood about his bed and administered unto him, and Fear and Doubt were no longer there. And Everyman said unto his Conscience: "Let us continue our journey"; and Conscience said: "Henceforth thou journeyest alone." Everyman answered, "What is the hour?"

*Conscience—*

*The dawn of ever and the life to be,*
*"The dew-drop slips into the shining sea,"*
*The sky is grey;*
*A light is breaking yonder, in the East;*
*A soul is passing to eternal peace—*
*It is the day."*

All of which is respectfully

Submitted

A. E. Goodman

1133 Beach Ave. Vancouver B.C.-1916

## ADDENDA AND ERRATA.

### GOODMAN.

Page 480. Last line: Gretchen, not Grethen.
Pages 481 and 483. Ester (without h) in the three captions.

# INDEX OF CUTS


| Subject | Page |
|---|---|
| Author | b |
| Research Meditation by Cross (Jeremy) | e |
| Research, author unknown | g |
| Mars | h |
| Revenge | i |
| Lawrence Arms | 3 |
| Devereux Arms | 8 |
| Earl of Essex | 8 |
| Home of Essex | 8 |
| Wright Arms. Line drawing by Author | 11 |
| Warren Arms | 12 |
| Concord Bridge | 20 |
| Mariam's Corners (Revolutionary war) | 21 |
| Wright's Tavern (Revolutionary War) | 21 |
| Capt. Pitcairn (Revolutionary War) | 22 |
| Wright Bible | 27 |
| Wright Bible | 27 |
| Wright Bible | 28 |
| Wright Bible | 28 |
| Harwood Arms | 39 |
| Deacon William Cummings, line drawing | 43 |
| Isaac Cummings and Family, line drawing | 45 |
| Sir William Cross, line drawing | 46 |
| Sir William Cross group, line drawing | 50 |
| Sir William at Agincourt | 51 |
| Arms of Charlynch Crosses, line-drawing by Author | 52 |
| Sir Robert Cross Arms | 54 |
| Cross Crest, drawn by Countess of Malmsbury | 58 |
| Elm | 58 |
| Countess Malms'bury's Letter | 59 |
| Countess Malms'bury's Letter | 59 |
| Marriage, Sir Robert; line drawing | 60 |
| Our Bobs; line drawing | 60 |
| Armada Sighted (Sir Robert Cross) | 60 |
| Armada Engaged (Sir Robert Cross) | 63 |
| H.M.S. Swiftsure (Sir Robert Cross) | 64 |
| Parents, Sir Robert Cross; line drawing | 65 |
| Cross Island | 69 |
| Cross Home, Cradle of the race in America | 77 |
| Cross Home | 78 |
| Swan Family; line drawing | 82 |
| Mary Frayle; line drawing | 87 |
| Masonic Apron, Wm. Cross Sr. | 87 |
| Gould Cross Arms | 88 |
| Deacon William Cross; line drawing | 89 |
| Bailey Cross Home | 90 |
| Bagley Arms; line drawing by author | 91 |
| Mrs. Beamer—C. B. Cross, half sister | 91 |
| Grandfather Cross | 92 |
| Grandfather Cross | 93 |
| Grandfather Cross | 93 |
| Grandmother Cross | 93 |
| Grandfather Cross' Last Letter | 94 |
| Cross Home | 97 |
| Mother's Bible | 98 |
| Mother's Bible | 99 |
| Mother's Bible | 100 |
| Mother | 100 |
| Father | 100 |
| Kingsley Arms; line drawing, author | 101 |
| Amos Cummings | 101 |
| Amos Cummings' signature | 101 |
| Cross Home | 106 |
| Cross (Pioneer Home) Indians | 108 |
| Indian War | 109 |
| Indian War | 110-111 |
| Indian War—2 scenes | 112 |
| Research | 115 |
| Ancient Cross | 116 |
| Ancient Cross | 116 |
| Ancient Cross | 116 |
| Naval War—Cross | 117 |
| Naval War | 117 |
| Napoleon | 118 |
| Captain Holloway | 119 |
| Admiral Holloway | 119 |
| William Cross; line drawing | 120 |
| Sir Robert Cross | 120 |
| Old England | 120 |
| Concord Bridge | 121 |
| Spirit of 1775 | 121 |
| Pious Pioneers | 123 |
| Our Ancestors Travelling | 124 |
| Our Ancestors Travelling | 124 |
| Witchcraft | 125 |
| Eliza Cross | 128 |
| Sam Cross' Home | 131 |
| Mrs. Berry Cross | 132 |
| Mr. Berry Cross | 132 |
| A. D. Cross | 133 |
| A. D. Cross, Jr. | 134 |
| Elsie Cross, Jr. | 134 |
| War Picture | 137 |
| T. B. Phebey | 138 |
| Mrs. A D. Cross | 138 |
| Mrs. A. D. Cross' Arms | 139 |
| Joe Fox American Navy | 143 |
| Mrs. L. F. Cross | 148 |
| Mrs. L. F. Cross' Signature | 148 |
| George Cross | 149 |
| Grace Cross | 150 |
| Late Ada Cross-Chase | 150 |
| Robert Cross, Jr. | 150 |
| Whitney Arms | 151 |
| Rev. R T. Cross | 154 |
| Old Cross Signatures | 157 |
| Jeremy Cross | 158 |
| Jeremy Cross | 158 |
| Masonic Apron | 158 |
| Cross Curios | 165 |
| Cross Curios | 166 |
| Author | 168 |
| Maria Abbott | 170 |
| Maria Abbott | 170 |
| Home of Squire Riggs, Easburn | 172 |
| Hollist House | 173 |
| Tom Goodman and Martha Riggs —Line | 173 |
| Ruins of Hollist House | 174 |
| Michael Musgrave; line drawing | 177 |
| Ball Arms | 186 |

| Subject | Page |
|---|---|
| Musgrave Arms, by Author | 187 |
| Queen Ann Coach | 189 |
| Musgrave Bible | 189 |
| Musgrave Bible | 190 |
| Tombs of Riggs | 192 |
| Governor Musgrave | 193 |
| Riggs Arms, by Author | 194 |
| Riggs Arms, by Author | 195 |
| Nurses, Edward Riggs time | 196 |
| Edward Riggs; line drawing | 196 |
| Thomas Ridges | 197 |
| Making the Will | 197 |
| Rafe Riggs; line drawing | 199 |
| Rafe Riggs' Marriage | 201 |
| Alderman Jacobs' letter re Arms | 201 |
| Westminster Cathedral | 203 |
| Ogle Riggs | 204 |
| Riggs' graves, Easburne | 204 |
| Squire Henry Riggs | 206 |
| Mrs. Hy. Riggs | 206 |
| Janet Scott (Mrs. Livingston) | 207 |
| Sindenia Budden Riggs' letter | 208 |
| Tombs of Henry and Sindenia Riggs | 210 |
| William Riggs | 213 |
| William Riggs, Masonic Demit | 219 |
| William Riggs' writing | 223 |
| William Riggs' writing | 224 |
| Mary Riggs Book | 226 |
| Mary Riggs Book | 226 |
| William Riggs' signatnre | 228 |
| William Riggs' recommendation | 229 |
| James McCallum, Sr. | 230 |
| Maria Spooner | 233 |
| H. C. Goodman's signature | 234 |
| Chas. Baldwin's letter | 234 |
| Mercy Egerton | 235 |
| Marion Scott | 236 |
| Harry Scott | 236 |
| Mercy Egerton's letter | 237 |
| Mrs. Baldwin's signature | 237 |
| Harriet Riggs' signature | 237 |
| Mercy Egerton's signature | 237 |
| James McCallum, Jr. | 238 |
| Mrs. Baldwin | 238 |
| Arabella Goodman | 238 |
| Dr Baldwin | 239 |
| Cuthbert McCallum | 239 |
| Abigail Baldwin's letter | 240 |
| Geo. Riggs' letter | 241 |
| Augusta Baldwin's letter | 242 |
| Ada Ellen Arnold | 246 |
| Henry McCallum | 248 |
| Harriet Riggs | 251 |
| Elizabeth Riggs | 251 |
| Michael Riggs | 251 |
| Michael Riggs' third wife | 251 |
| Michael Riggs' house | 252 |
| Michael Riggs | 252 |
| Geo. Riggs and Family | 252 |
| Three McCallum Sisters | 252 |
| Alfred Riggs | 252 |
| Arabella Goodman | 252 |
| Fred McCallum | 253 |
| Georgina Miller | 253 |
| Hamilton Arms | 253 |
| Louisa Barrett McCallum | 253 |
| Eloise Hamilton | 253 |
| Mrs. Thompson and Boys | 254 |
| Walter Barrett | 254 |
| Florrie Barrett Knudson | 254 |
| Michael Barrett, Jr. | 254 |
| Mabel Thompson Hutchinson | 254 |
| Jessy Thompson Hamilton | 255 |
| Clara Jessy Thompson | 255 |
| Dr. Clarence Barrett | 255 |
| Christopher Thompson, Jr. | 255 |
| Mrs. Barrett | 256 |
| Dr. Barrett | 256 |
| Caroline McCallum Arnold | 256 |
| G. D. Arnold | 256 |
| Mrs. Cobbald (Aunt Mercy) | 256 |
| Savage Cobbald, M.P | 256 |
| Pictures of McCallum descendents | 256A, 256B |
| Maria Abbott | 282 |
| Cheque for $14,000, left to Grand-Grandfather | 290 |
| Aunt Mercy's letter | 295 |
| Aunt Mercy's last letter | 295 |
| Mrs. Trill (Louisa Riggs) | 301 |
| Mrs. Trill's last letter | 302 |
| Head of Venus, by Thos. Holloway | 313 |
| William of Wyckham | 317 |
| His Tomb | 317 |
| Holloway Arms | 319 |
| Study of Head, Thos. Holloway | 321 |
| Louise Baumstadt (Mrs. Jno. Holloway) as a girl | 323 |
| Ann (Broadstreet) Holloway | 324 |
| Jno. Holloway | 327 |
| Late Eleanor Slann | 329 |
| Julia E. Slann | 329 |
| Julia E. Slann | 329 |
| Mrs. West, nee Slann | 329 |
| Her signature | 329 |
| Reginald Slann | 329 |
| His signature | 329 |
| Letter from Mrs. Henville, on the death of her mother, E. Julia Slann | 329 |
| Letter of E. Julia Slann | 330 |
| Violet Lillian Henville | 330 |
| Her siguature | 330 |
| Flora Adelaide Slann | 330 |
| C. B. Slann | 330 |
| Elizabeth, his wife | 331 |
| Mabel E. Slann | 331 |
| Gertrude E. Slann | 331 |
| Mary Beatrice Slann | 331 |
| Signatures of Wife, Mother-in-Law and Brother-in-Law of Captain Thomas Slann | 334 |
| Signatures of Eleanor Slann and John and Thomas Slann | 334 |
| Signature of Captain Thos. Holloway | 335 |
| Letter, Mary Peace (Holloway) Bellachey | 336 |
| Mrs. John Holloway | 337 |
| Eleanor Holloway's book | 337 |
| John Holloway's letter | 339 |
| John Holloway's letter | 342 |
| Doctor Alfred Holloway | 344 |
| His letter | 345 |
| His sketch | 346 |
| Dr. Alfred Holloway | 346 |
| His Sketch | 346 |
| Augusta Hololway | 346 |
| Alfred Holloway, Jr. | 346 |
| Holloway group at Delaware | 347 |
| Daughters of Alfred Holloway, Jr. | 347 |
| Mrs. Arthur Seabrook | 348 |
| Mrs. Arthur Seabrook | 348 |
| Arthur Seabrook and Grandsons | 348 |
| Ernest Leslie Holloway | 349 |
| Elizabeth (Holloway) Bateman | 349 |

| Subject | Page |
|---|---|
| Julia Holloway Fox | 349 |
| George, son of Augusta (Sawyer) Holloway, and Ernest, son of Alfred Holloway, Jr. | 349 |
| Alice Holloway | 350 |
| Lilla (Holloway) Ridgeway and children | 350 |
| Louisa Annette (Holloway) Seabrook | 354 |
| Louisa Annette (Holloway) Seabrook | 354 |
| Roads Seabrook | 354 |
| Judge Harrison | 357 |
| Mrs. (Judge) Harrison, nee Seabrook | 357 |
| Mrs Seabrook, nee Roads | 357 |
| Harrison Arms | 357 |
| Eunice Bagster | 357 |
| Coote Arms | 358 |
| P. P. Harrison | 358 |
| H. R. Harrison | 358 |
| Bernice May (Harrison) Forsythe | 359 |
| Major C. A. Forsythe | 359 |
| Edith Sawyer | 361 |
| Late W. E. Sawyer | 361 |
| Augusta Bagster Sawyer, nee Holloway | 361 |
| Harriet Sawyer | 362 |
| Mr. and Mrs. H. Trumper and son Cornelius | 363 |
| Cornelia Bagster | 363 |
| Her letter | 363 |
| Julia Bateman | 364 |
| Ernest Holloway and sister Julia | 364 |
| Fred and Lilla (Holloway) Ridgeway | 365 |
| Four children of above | 365 |
| Eunice (Berch) Bagster | 368 |
| Bagster Bag | 369 |
| Bagster Bag | 369 |
| Lace by Eunice Bagster | 369 |
| Lace by Eunice Bagster | 369 |
| Samuel Bagster | 370 |
| Cornelia Bagster's writing | 370 |
| Mary Peace (Holloway) Bellachey | 373 |
| Riggs-Holloway curios | 374 |
| Riggs-Holloway curios | 374 |
| Captain Thomas Holloway | 375 |
| Thomas Holloway, engraver | 391 |
| Engraving after Raphael, by Thos Holloway | 402 |
| Admiral Holloway | 402 |
| Admiral Holloway cemetery plot | 406 |
| Holloway gravestone | 408 |
| Holloway gravestone | 408 |
| Martha (Riggs) Goodman's letter | 426 |
| Martha (Riggs) Goodman | 427 |
| Henry Riggs Goodman, diary | 429 |
| Henry Riggs Goodman | 435 |
| Arabella (Holloway) Goodman | 435 |
| Grimsby home of Goodmans | 436 |
| Letter, H. R. Goodman | 436 |
| Grimsby home of Goodmans | 438 |
| Gravestone of Mrs. Jno. Holloway | 438 |
| Codicile to will of Arabella Goodman | 440 |
| Ambrose Holloway letter | 441 |
| Jessie (McCallum) Goodman | 443 |
| Jessie (McCallum) Goodman, her signature | 443 |
| Elizabeth Riggs' signature misplaced | 443 |
| Thomas Slann | 444 |
| John Slann | 444 |
| Gurney Railroad Engine, first to run | 444 |
| The old Goodman Homestead, St. Catharines, Ont. | 445 |
| Edwin Goodman, M.B., at age 19 | 446 |
| Edwin Goodman, M.B., at age 24. | 446 |
| Letter, Edwin Goodman, M.B. | 447 |
| Letter Edwin Goodman, M.B., age 15 | 448 |
| Edwin Goodman, Mayor | 449 |
| Elizabeth Crolen (Cross) Goodman | 449 |
| Family Group | 450 |
| The "Pater" | 450 |
| Father and the Boys | 451 |
| Father, at the time of his marriage | 455 |
| Page from Mother's autograph album, 1857. Father's immortal message | 459 |
| Father's newly made grave | 460 |
| Mother at time of marriage | 460 |
| Letter from Mother | 462 |
| Late Louisa Goodman as a girl | 463 |
| Poorly reproduced specimen of her wonderful talent at etching | 463 |
| Henry Murray Goodman | 464 |
| Lawrence Holloway Goodman | 464 |
| Lawrence Goodman and his nephew baby, Herbert Goodman | 465 |
| Edith (Waters) Goodman | 465 |
| Dorothy Elizabeth Fairfield, nee Goodman | 466 |
| Herbert, son of Dorothy (Goodman) Fairfield | 466 |
| Herbert Fairfield at the front | 467 |
| Herbert Fairfield and his dug-out | 467 |
| Herbert Fairfield and his gun crew | 468 |
| Edward Goodman's signature | 469 |
| Edward Goodman's New Jersey residence | 469 |
| Edward Goodman and family, taken years ago. | 470 |
| Monro Goodman at the front | 470 |
| Munro Goodman, Australian Cadet, aged 17. | 470 |
| Munro Goodman at the front, aged 18 | 470 |
| Arthur Goodman as cadet, aged 16 | 472 |
| Arthur Goodman, at the front, aged 17. | 472 |
| Mechanical drawing by Arthur Goodman | 472 |
| Elsie (Dolly) Goodman. | 473 |
| Widow of Arthur Goodman, with daughters | 473 |
| James Edward Goodman | 473 |
| Signature of late Arthur Goodman | 474 |
| Four boys of Father's day | 474 |
| Ambrose Goodman as a boy | 475 |
| Col. Kenneth Goodman's immortal message. | 475 |
| Late Annie (Hainer) Goodman | 476 |
| Colonel Goodman, present day | 476 |
| Faded photo family group, Williams and Wedd | 477 |
| Col. Goodman family and friend; old faded photo | 477 |
| Annie (Hainer) Goodman, about time of marriage | 478 |
| Col. Goodman and granddaughter | 479 |
| Kenneth Goodman Wedd | 479 |
| Lieut Laurence (Pete) Wedd | 479 |
| Geo. Wedd, Jr. | 479 |
| Stanley Musgrave Wedd | 480 |
| Geo. Wedd, Sr., and daughter | 480 |
| Geo. Maynard Wedd, Jr. | 480 |
| Ambrose Goodman, LL.B. | 480 |
| Harold, son of Ambrose Goodman | 480 |
| Baby Wedd | 480 |
| Lieut. Ellis, | 480 |

| Subject | Page |
|---|---|
| Ester Williams and Edith (Goodman) Williams | 481 |
| Gretchen Williams and daughter | 482 |
| Her husband Ren Gourley and baby | 482 |
| Lynne Williams | 482 |
| Yetive Gourley | 482 |
| Edith Lee Williams | 482 |
| R. S. William | 482 |
| Ester Kenneth Williams | 483 |
| Mrs. E. K Williams | 483 |
| Williams' Crest | 484 |
| Ambrose Goodman | 484 |
| Helen Goodman at marriage | 485 |
| Ambrose Goodman, late in life | 485 |
| Helen Goodman, late in life | 485 |
| Faded photo of Ambrose and Helen Goodman | 486 |
| Family group, the Dressers | 486 |
| Helen Goodman, Jr. | 486 |
| Arabella (Goodman) Dresser | 486 |
| Her signature | 486 |
| Her daughter Arabella | 486 |
| Her daughter Mayus | 486 |
| Her daughter Frances | 486 |
| Mother and Child—This picture spoilt in reproducing from old photograph | 488 |
| Myself and brother Harry | 488 |
| Author, aged 14 | 489 |
| Author, aged 16 | 489 |
| Myself, Harry and Louise | 488 |
| Author, aged 20 | 489 |
| Author and commercial newspaper career | 489 |
| Author as interlocutor of Minstrels | 489 |
| Author as organizer of St. Catharines' Athletic Club | 490 |
| Author and officer 19th battalion | 490 |
| Silhouette of Author | 490 |
| Author in newspaper days | 493 |
| Author at time of marriage, aged 35 | 493 |
| Rose Goodman, day of marriage | 493 |
| Author's send-off, time of marriage | 494 |
| Kipling | 495 |
| Author interviewing Mark Twain | 496 |
| Survivor of Beaver | 500 |
| Steamer "Beaver" | 501 |
| Capt. Sansom | 502 |
| Li Hung Chang | 504 |
| Author and Earl Grey | 507 |
| Author and Prof. Robertson | 507 |
| Author and son on tour of inspection | 507 |
| Author with Japanese Naval Men | 508 |
| Author with Lord Strathcona | 509 |
| Mrs. (Harrington) Ellis | 516 |
| Author's present home, English Bay | 518 |
| Author's home, 25 years ago | 518 |
| Ellis Goodman | 519 |
| Author and son | 519 |
| Author and son | 520 |
| Ellis Goodman | 520 |
| Ellis Goodman | 520 |
| Ellis Goodman | 521 |
| Ellis Goodman, present day | 521 |
| Honor Roll—Arthur Goodman | 525 |
| Major Forsyth | 525 |
| Munro Goodman | 525 |
| Edw. Ellis Goodman | 526 |
| Lawrence Wedd | 526 |
| Reginald Slann | 526 |
| Herbert Fairfield | 526 |
| Harold Goodman | 526 |
| Duncan Ellis | 526 |
| Sunset | 545 |
| Angels | 545 |
| Author's signature | 548 |


(A total of 460 cuts.)

A. H. Timms, Printer — Vancouver, B. C.